



RETURNING FROM THE IMMORTAL WORLD

BOOK 01

Jing Ye Ji Si

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Returning from the Immortal World

(仙界歸來)

by

Jing Ye Ji Si

(靜夜寄思)

Synopsis

A supreme expert in the Immortal World had died, and a strand of his soul returned to its original body on Earth.

Tang Xiu discovered with amazement that ten thousand years passed in the Immortal World, yet only a single year passed on Earth.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: November 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by FlowerBridgeToo, MirageKiddo @ [ALittleMirage Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: I'll Keep Playing With You

“Tang Xiu, where did you hide the money? Take it out right now!”

“Tang Xiu, even if you need money you can't just steal it! As they say, ‘Stealing needles when young, stealing gold when old’. You cannot make a habit out of stealing, or else your life will be finished.”

“Tang Xiu, I believe you owe the school three thousand dollars of tuition fee. Are you planning to take that money to pay for it?”

[TN: Using dollars in place of yuan for better flow.]

Roughly a dozen or so people surrounded Tang Xiu and spoke endlessly. Doubt and disgust filled their eyes, and their tones were full of impatience.

Tang Xiu's face swelled with red, and signs of blood could be seen as he bit on his lips. His eyes became misty, but he firmly said with his neck raised, “I didn't steal any money!”

“Shangwen, Meiyun, you've seen Xiu'er grow up! He's always been honest from a young age, his studies and personality has always been excellent, and he never lies! Since he said he didn't steal any money, then the three thousand dollars lost definitely isn't related to him,” Su Lingyun said. She was begging a middle-aged man and woman in a house as she tightly hugged her son in her embrace.

“Lingyun, we never said Xiu’er stole any money. We just think he hid the three thousand dollars possibly because he wanted you to be less worry.” The middle-aged man turned his head to the side. He didn’t even dare to look straight at Su Lingyun.

“His studies and personality has always been excellent? Hoho. Indeed, before your son entered Starcity Secondary School, his studies and personality had been excellent, but after impressively staying there for only a single year, his marks fell dramatically. He’s placed first in the entire grade if you count backwards, and if it weren’t for your pleading, your son would have probably been kicked out, right?” said the middle-aged woman coldly. She completely ignored Su Lingyun’s eyes of near absolute despair.

After hearing her younger brother, Su Shangwen, and her sister-in-law, Zhang Meiyun, Su Lingyun’s complexion turned pale. Her eyes also became dim and lifeless, but after seeing her son in her embrace, she had no choice but to force up courage and once again attempt to defend her son’s innocence.

However, this time, before Su Lingyun even had a chance to speak, she was interrupted by two sharp voices.

“Aunt, don’t protect Tang Xiu anymore. You can defend him for a moment, but you cannot defend him for his entire life. There are only so many people in the family. You say he didn’t steal the three thousand dollars, so that means the money just flew away on its own?”

“Aunt, the reason why we suspect Tang Xiu is because he’s the most likely who will steal in this house. In your eyes, naturally Tang Xiu’s the most excellent. But you also know the horrible things he’s done in school this year. Copying homework, cheating on tests, starting fights . . . As his cousin, I can’t even raise my head proudly at school.”

The ones who interrupted Su Lingyun were the son and daughter of Su Shangwen and Zhang Meiyun. If one were to say Su Shangwen’s and Zhang Meiyun’s words were spoken rather empathetically and that they knew to soften their tone, then son and daughter clearly didn’t.

“Su Yaning, Su Xiangfei, you are both speaking nonsense and spitting false accusations!” Tang Xiu nearly shouted his throat out.

“Shangwen, Meiyun, please, don’t make things difficult for him! If the money can’t be found, then just act as I’m borrowing it! You also know ever since the car accident a year ago, he became a bit disoriented and can’t take any agitation. If something truly happens to him, I won’t be able to continue living on my own!” she powerlessly begged. When oppressed by her little brother’s family, the tears falling from Su Lingyun’s eyes were akin to connect pearls.

Speaking those words made it seem Su Lingyun used all of her breath.

Thinking the treatment her son received in the past year, she couldn’t help feeling sorrow as she wept soundlessly.

Although her son had lost his father from a young age, he had always been very obedient growing up. Moreover, his grades were particularly excellent, and two years ago, he even entered Starcity Secondary School with the grades of first place in the entire city. During first year, he remained outstanding in various exams and contests, including being placed first in all subjects.

However, due to a car accident during second year first semester, his son's brain received a powerful collision. As a result, it heavily injured his memory and comprehension skills, and he was even diagnosed to have a mental disability by a doctor. If it weren't for her pleading, and that the school seemed to have in him a hint of hope, his son would have likely been expelled by the school already.

Seeing Su Lingyun's heartbroken appearance, the house sank into a short period of silence. Su Yaning and Su Xiangfei even looked at each other, their expressions showing they could not bear looking at that scene.

When everyone's attention was attracted by Su Lingyun, Tang Xiu, who was held in her embrace, slightly trembled. A tinge of light was also emitted by his eyes.

"Where is this place? Didn't I die after failing the tribulation? What is going on?" Tang Xiu puzzledly examined his surroundings, his eyes filled with confusion.

Tang Xiu remembered he stood at the top of the Immortal World.

He was passing the tribulation of divinity, and as long as he succeeded, he would be able to become a god in the Immortal World, and obtain the qualifications to cross the gate of eternal life.

Doing his best to recall what exactly happened, Tang Xiu's facial muscles distorted as an extremely painful expression flashed into his eyes. Before reawakening, the last scene he was aware of finally appeared within his mind . . .

It was the most crucial moment of Tang Xiu's tribulation: when he was near the end, when all of his soul and heart was concentrated on fighting back the divine tribulation. His back was open; he nearly lacked any protection. He was in a completely defenseless state against several good friends of his whose cultivations were just a bit inferior, who were also at the peak of the Immortal World, and who possessed countless divine armaments and god-level talismans.

Immediately after, just as he barely endured the nine levels of lightning tribulation, what he faced was a formless yet most terrifying tribulation of the heart—coincident with the Demonic Tribulation, the good friends of his who were initially protecting him actually, in absolute coordination, sent a fatal strike towards him.

Of those people, outrageously, it included his lover of several hundred years, Xue Qingcheng.

Under their coordinated attack, Tang Xiu's fate was nearly already decided. Even, before his body completely shattered and

his consciousness was completely lost, those people had already impatiently rushed up to take the dropped mysterious ancient book that he incidentally found within an ancient demonic remains—the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space.

“Human nature is so revolting. Before an absolute secret divine art, camaraderie and affection are all so!

“But, since I failed the tribulation, I shouldn’t have had any chance to survive. My body should have become dust, and my soul should have scattered away. Yet now, what is happening?”

Within a daze, a familiar woman’s fragrance wafted into Tang Xiu’s nose.

Inhaling, when he smelt that fragrance, an expression of extreme enjoyment appeared on Tang Xiu’s face. His emotions too gradually calmed down.

He only slowly turned his head around after a good while, facing the woman who was hugging himself.

A gentle countenance clearly appeared in front of Tang Xiu. It was familiar and close, and in comparison to the complexion in his memories, there seemed to be a trace of a faint mark of a “fishtail” at the corners of her eyes.

“Inner demon! Damned inner demon! I’m already died, so how can I be disturbed by this inner demon!” Tang Xiu quickly shook

his head, and forced himself to avoid looking at the face he thought of for over ten thousand years.

But when he looked at the others in the house, he couldn't help but be taken aback.

Of the myriad of years within the Immortal World, Tang Xiu had experienced countless sentimental tribulations, both big and small. However, after so many, even though Tang Xiu severed himself from all of his relatives, the only one he could not give up was his mother. So, in future sentimental tribulations, only Tang Xiu's mother appeared, not any other relatives.

“Are the ones in front of my eyes not my inner demons?” Tang Xiu looked at his surroundings suspiciously. He also started muttering.

Then, after a huge explosion went off in his brain, the memories Tang Xiu didn't touch for ten thousand years instantly opened. At the same time, enigmatic memories appeared in his mind.

“I've actually returned to the Earth I so long desired? Ten thousand years passed in the Immortal World, but only one year passed on Earth?” Only after a long while did Tang Xiu understand what happened.

The enigmatic memories that appeared in Tang Xiu's mind was all of his body's accumulated memory in the year that had passed.

In the car accident a year ago, although Tang Xiu's physical body was fine, his soul was injured. That caused his intellect to drop which in turn caused him to experience horrid days at school. He was absorbing information like an observer, but he would very rarely participate in activities.

However, all of the information was stored in Tang Xiu's head, letting him clearly know what had occurred in the past year on earth.

The single strand of Tang Xiu's injured soul had traveled to the Immortal World, and entered the body of a wealthy grandson of the Immortal World's Vermilion Bird Holy Sect's manager. There, he lived a life of ten thousand years, all full of excitement. He lived a life of a dream-like ten thousand years!

He just had never expected when he was schemed against and died in the Immortal World that the strand of soul would once again return to the body on earth. At this moment, only a year had passed since the accident.

“Fairy Wanhua, Emperor Danqing, Zither Demon Jiuyao, on the day I return to the Immortal World will be the moment you will all die!”

Recollecting the bits and bobs of his life in the Immortal World, and when the final section of memory reappeared in his brain, Tang Xiu nearly screamed out with gritted teeth.

Tang Xiu's furious roar broke the silence in the house, attracting

everyone's gaze over.

"Xiu'er . . . You . . . What happened?" Su Lingyun was the first to react to it. She hugged Tang Xiu in panic and asked him with an anxious face.

Seeing Tang Xiu's facial muscles twisted, then recalling his body's state, the people in the house all revealed regretful expressions, then all cast their blaming gazes and Su Shangwen's family.

Clearly, they never expected Tang Xiu to suddenly "go mad", and judging by the present circumstances, it was even caused by his own family. They couldn't help looking at one another, feeling a pang of guilt.

"Tang Xiu, don't bother acting here. Fairy, emperor, demon? You think you're playing a game? I've never heard of any game that has bosses like Fairy Wanhua, Emperor Danqing, Zither Demon Jiuyao." Just as the entire house's people were all lost at what to do, a cold snort rang out. It was from Tang Xiu's cousin, Su Xiangfei, as he sneered.

"You damn retard, you now know how to feign insanity? I was almost tricked by you. Don't think we'll ignore the three thousand dollars by pretending to be pitiful. I'll say this clearly to you mother and son: if you don't take out the three thousand dollars today, don't even think of stepping out of this door!" After a brief moment of panic, Zhang Meiyun secretly looked at Tang Xiu. After a short instant, she became furious and fiercely shouted at him.

After Tang Xiu's roar, he himself knew he lost a bit of control. Then, he felt his mother's anxiousness and panic, so he hurriedly organized his emotions and quickly consoled her, saying he was fine. That scene coincidentally entered Zhang Meiyun's eyes, and naturally, it infuriated her.

"The offsprings of a rat continue digging holes." Tang Xiu coldly glared at Zhang Meiyun, then his eyes landed onto Su Xiangfei's body. He said indifferently, "Su Xiangfei, are you certain you want to keep on playing this game? If you feel that this is rather interesting, I won't mind playing with you!"

Chapter 2: Transformation Of The Nature

Only when you lose it, will you know how to treasure it.

Only when you lose it, then will you know what is precious to you.

In the ten thousand years in the immortal world the one that Tang Xiu yearned the most was his mother, and she became the inner demon in his heart that threaten to stop him in the path of cultivation. Now that he had his mother again, Tang Xiu was ecstatic, but in his heart he vowed that he must protect his mother no matter what happens.

Tang Xiu was already blaming himself for losing control which startled his mother, but after hearing Zhang MeiYun and Su XiangFei ridicule and hurling abuses at them he naturally flew into a rage and chided out loud.

When the strand of his soul return back to his body from the immortal world, even though there seem to be no changes happening on the outside, a revolting change was actually happening in Tang Xiu's body. The change was not as simple as gaining back his intellect from one year ago due to his soul returning back. His whole self, from head to toe, from inside to outside, had a change in constitution.

Firstly, Tang Xiu's senses had improved over 10 times, while his brain processing speed had increased almost 100 times. Every action that happened in the house were all caught by Tang Xiu's

eyes and ears, and his mind was done processing all that information in an instance.

Following that, Tang Xiu's control over his own body had reached a frightening level. It was as if a rope that was always constricting him had suddenly snapped apart, freeing himself from the constraint, presenting a whole new world in front of him.

Lastly, in the ten thousand years that Tang Xiu was in the Immortal World, whether was it being the grandson of the Holy Sect Head or a supreme expert, he was always in a high position and was used to ordering people around. The long years of accumulation of imposing manner was not imaginable by normal people, and when the strand of soul returned back to Tang Xiu's body on Earth, he naturally possess such imposing manner.

As Tang Xiu chided, the temperature in the room suddenly seem as if it dropped to a freezing point, and everyone started to break out in a cold shiver uncontrollably. Zhang MeiYun and Su XiangFei even seem as if they were strangled by the neck as they were unable to utter a word.

“Tang Xiu, who allowed you to make a ruckus in front of us, do you still have any respect for your seniors? And you still dare to be rude after stealing money?” Su ShangWen stood out after a brief moment of silence and retorted back, giving off a strong front even though he was actually afraid. He could faintly sense that there were some changes on his nephew and this change made him feel extremely uncomfortable, even giving him a sense of danger, however he was unable to pin-point exactly what that change was. When he saw that his wife and son was being suppressed by his

nephew, he was forced to speak up.

“Su ShangWen, what rights do you have to speak to me about respecting our seniors?”

“Owning an asset of over several million, yet you abandon grandpa and grandma and did not care for them, leaving them to live a hard life with uncle in the rural village. What’s more, all their medical bills and living expenses were equally divided and split among the few uncles and aunts, is this what you call respecting your seniors?”

“Whenever we have a family gathering, Su YaNing and Su XiangFei these two siblings will always be beating and scolding the seniors, you and your wife will also put on an arrogant air, bossing people around and showing off your wealth, you call this respecting your seniors?”

“Whenever your family holds a party, grandpa, grandma, uncle, mother and I will always contribute our share of the cost, but your family always comes up with excuses saying that there are too many people. We don’t even have the qualification to sit at the dining table, is this what you call respecting your seniors?”

Tang Xiu cast a sidelong glance and ignored Su ShangWen’s fierce gaze as he pointed at him while criticising.

Su ShangWen had gone through the ups and downs in the commerce industry for over 20 years, and he had accumulated some power and influence. Su ShangWen was used to bossing

people around in front of the family, so he thought that his stern scolding would cause Tang Xiu to stammer and not know what to say. But never in his wildest dream would Su ShangWen have known that even after facing his stern scolding, Tang Xiu would dare to oppose him instead of cowering back timidly. Moreover Tang Xiu's imposing manner was not any weaker than his, even faintly suppressing his own imposing manner.

Su ShangWen was caught off guard by Tang Xiu's criticism, his face was as red as a monkey's bottom, and an indescribable fury rose from within.

"This bastard, you were given life but you have no morals, since your mother was unable to discipline you then I will!" With no way to defend his argument, Su ShangWen flew into a rage out of humiliation. He raised his hand and gave a slap towards Tang Xiu's face.

Seeing that Su ShangWen actually dare to take action on him, Tang Xiu subconsciously gave a cold smirk. In the ten thousand years that he was in the Immortal World, whoever that tried to fight him were all grind into fine dust.

With a flicker of a mind, Tang Xiu subconsciously tried to unleash skills from the Immortal World to punish this mortal ant that dares to be so arrogant. However in that moment, his face became deathly white.

Tang Xiu was used to his Immortal World self, but he forgot that the him on Earth right now was just an ordinary human being. It was not only that his body lack any trace of power, but even more

so, the body he had right now was so weak that it could not even be compared with an ordinary human being.

Su ShangWen revealed an arrogant sinister smile when he saw Tang Xiu's startled actions and his slap was less than 10cm away from Tang Xiu's face.

Seeing that Su ShangWen's slap was about to fall onto his face, Tang Xiu subconsciously revealed an indignant expression. He had never taken a loss in the ten thousand years when he was in the Immortal World, yet he was actually going to get slapped by an ordinary human being?

"Su ShangWen, you dare?!" Tang Xiu shouted hysterically, eyes releasing a terrifying radiance.

"What..... What do I not dare to do, as your uncle, don't I have the qualifications to discipline you?" Su ShangWen was shocked by Tang Xiu's stern glare as his hand movement hesitated briefly. After saying his line, Su ShangWen was enraged with Tang Xiu opposing him. He did not retract back his hands but increased more strength as he continue to slap in the direction of Tang Xiu's face.

However the moment of hesitation from Su ShangWen gave Tang Xiu an opportunity to dodge. As Su ShangWen was retorting back to increase his courage, Tang Xiu had already dodge to one side in a flash.

Just when Tang Xiu had thought that he had managed to escape

this situation, a loud “PAAA” sound resounded beside his ear, causing his heart to skip a beat. He turned back his head in shock and realised that the slap that Su ShangWen gave actually landed on his mother’s face.

That is when Tang Xiu suddenly recalled that he was in his mother’s embrace not too long ago, and naturally she would be standing behind him closely. When he dodged, Su ShangWen’s slap would naturally have landed on his mother’s face.

Remorse, pain, rage, self-blame. In that instance, Tang Xiu’s heart was swallowed up by all kinds of negative emotions.

“No that’s not right, judging from where Su ShangWen was standing and the length of his arms, the slap just now could not have reached his mother’s face. He must have flew into a rage out humiliation because of me dodging, and purposely took the chance to hit my mother.” The scene from just now replayed itself in Tang Xiu’s mind at lightning speed, following which he stared at Su ShangWen coldly.

As Tang Xiu saw the corner of Su ShangWen’s mouth display a mocking smirk as he was still faintly leaning forward from the slap, Tang Xiu’s furry reached an extreme point.

He subconsciously almost wanted to rush forward and stake his life to fight him. But looking at Su ShangWen’s strong bear-like stature, and thinking back on how extremely weak his body was, Tang Xiu forcefully suppressed his impulses. However, that did not mean that Tang Xiu was going to let it go and suffer in silence. If it was to say that the ridicule from Su ShangWen’s family angered

Tang Xiu, then the intentional slapping of his mother by Su ShangWen had touched on Tang Xiu's taboo, causing him to feel a sense of hatred and disgust towards Su ShangWen's family.

“Having no godly items and no cultivation, coupled with such a frail body, how am I going to tide over this impeding situation?” Tang Xiu's mind was processing at the speed of light even though he was staring at Su ShangWen coldly.

“That's it!” Tang Xiu's eyes shone with radiance in that instant. In the ten thousand years that Tang Xiu was in the Immortal World, the martial skills that he had practiced before were uncountable, and the martial skills that he had accumulated was even as boundless as the vast sea. He vaguely remembered having a manual called [Origin Ignition Art] that was able to resolve the situation at hand.

[Origin Ignition Art] was a common energy circulation technique in the Immortal World, similar to a breathing technique. It does not require any cultivation foundation and even ordinary humans will be able to fully utilise it. Although it will consume a little amount of life force from one's body, it will not cause harm to the user. Of course, the [Origin Ignition Art] have its limitation. Even though it can boost the user's strength, it would only last for a short duration.

Even though Tang Xiu was unable to fully contend against Su ShangWen due to his weak physique, but if he were to store up and concentrate his strength while waiting for a chance to strike explosively at a critical moment, he was confident that he would be able to crush Su ShangWen with his close combat prowess.

“Su ShangWen, what rights do you have to hit my mother, I will fight you!” Tang Xiu’s strength had accumulated to a certain level after a few breath, but he realised that Su ShangWen did not have the intention to apologise to his mother, furthermore, his mother was also silently tolerating the slap from Su ShangWen. He bellowed once and dashed straight into Su ShangWen’s direction.

Tang Xiu’s loud bellow and rashness was seen as him losing his rationale due to anger, but this reaction was what the 16 year old Tang Xiu would possess.

After a short period of adjustment, Tang Xiu was already fully accustomed to his own body on Earth, and made the most accurate reaction thus far.

“Such an idiotic guy, do you think I’m afraid of you?” seeing Tang Xiu that was as skinny as a bamboo rushing towards him, a contempt smile rose from the corner of Su ShangWen’s mouth. Using a stern voice, he berated “I was just going to discipline you but you actually when to dodge, causing your mother to get slapped by me. If you want to blame somebody, blame it on yourself, don’t blame it on me”.

As Su ShangWen was speaking, he casually stretched his hands, thinking of pushing Tang Xiu’s body to one side. But only a clear loud “Kachaaa” sound was heard as Su ShangWen’s elbow got dislocated.

Before Su ShangWen had the chance to scream in pain, he felt an

indescribable immense strength lunging onto his abdomen, almost causing him to throw up the food and drinks that he ate in the afternoon, but Tang Xiu was still using both hands to stab randomly at his body making him unable to throw up. He felt as if being struck by a dizzy spell and was in so much pain that he felt like dying.

Under the immense pain, Su ShangWen's head wavered seemingly like a weak drowning person, his hands danced frantically as if trying to grab hold onto something that could save him.

“Help! A murderer!”

“So much blood, quickly call the police”.

“Just because of a mere \$3000 dollars, the birthday party became like that, was it worth it?”

Before losing consciousness, Su ShangWen could vaguely hear the horrified screams and sobbing sounds echoing in his ear, but he could not figure out what had actually happened.

Chapter 3: The Truth Is Revealed

No one in the house could have imagined that a simple dispute would result in such a bitter ending.

Seeing that both Tang Xiu and Su ShangWen were lying weakly in a pool of blood, everyone lost their minds as screaming, wailing, and cries of help could be heard in successions. Nobody had the mental capacity to find out who was in the right and who was in the wrong anymore.

In a matter of minutes, the police had arrived.

Strangely, when the police had just arrived at the scene, Su ShangWen who was still unconscious a moment ago woke up, following which a groaning sound could be heard coming from Tang Xiu. Seeing that the house was filled with police officers, Su ShangWen was taken aback in shock. As he took a glance at Tang Xiu who was lying on the floor, Su ShangWen's eyes turned red momentarily as he immediately recalled the scene where he got struck by Tang Xiu before he passed out.

“Officers, \$3000 was stolen from my family and I suspect that it was this stupid rascal who stole it, I trouble you to arrest him.” Su ShangWen couldn't be bothered with the pain in his finger as he pointed at Tang Xiu's nose, gnashing his teeth as he said those words.

“Just now I received a report saying that there was a murder case here, who was the one that made the report?” A voice seemingly

like a silver chime resounded through the house. The one leading the squad was actually a valiant looking female officer.

The female officer ignored Su ShangWen's words as she sweep her eyes over to everyone in the house and finally resting her eyes onto Zhang MeiYun as she lowered her voice and asked.

Under that female officer's stern gaze, Zhang MeiYun lowered her head as she felt guilty, stammering as she answered "officer, I was the one who made the report. I thought that my husband had died when I saw him bleeding and not breathing at all so I became flustered and said the wrong thing when I made the report."

After listening to Zhang MeiYun's explanation, Cheng XueMei's facial expression soften a lot.

"Officer, you definitely have to arrest this person, not only did he steal \$3000 from us, he even use brute force to clash with me and broke my arm." Just when Cheng XueMei bend over to seriously inspect the condition of both Tang Xiu and Su ShangWen's injuries, Su ShangWen started to make a ruckus again.

Cheng XueMei gave Su ShangWen a stare without saying anything as she continued doing her own stuff. At the same time, she commanded other officers to seal off the area.

"Officer, I'm a close brother of Captain Wang from the Public Security Division, and have also had some drinks with Chief Commander Deng before. Furthermore, I have sponsored your City Police Headquarters on numerous occasions." Seeing that

Cheng XueMei was not giving him any attention, Su ShangWen felt that he had lost face and hurriedly tried to inform her of his backings.

“Why don’t you say that the City Police Headquarters was opened by you so that I will arrest whoever that you ask me to arrest?” Cheng XueMei was already annoyed with Su ShangWen’s bossy attitude and after listening to what he had said, her face was like a cold frost as she lifted her head and ridiculed him.

Su ShangWen evidently didn’t expect that even when he revealed his connection with the Chief Commander, this female officer in front of him did not buy it and furthermore felt more disgust towards him. He can’t help but to be loss for words in that moment.

Without Su ShangWen disturbing her, Cheng XueMei had quickly finished up with inspecting the condition of Su ShangWen and Tang Xiu’s injuries. Cheng XueMei discovered that other than a dislocated elbow, Su ShangWen was hardly injured. On the other hand, there were multiple injuries on Tang Xiu’s waist and abdomen, and he seems to be in a semi-conscious state.

What made Cheng XueMei puzzled was the cause of such a large pool of blood on the floor. She could confirmed that although the injuries on Tang Xiu looked terrible, it was in fact not that serious. However, everybody on scene said that Tang Xiu was the one who coughed out the whole pool of blood on the floor, causing her to question if there were any problems with her eyes.

“Do you feel unwell anywhere?” Cheng XueMei took a glance at

the deathly pale Tang Xiu and inquired, feeling concerned.

“Sis, I’m alright, I don’t need to go to the hospital, I don’t want to let my mother worry.” Tang Xiu shook his head as he used a delicate voice, seemingly like the buzzing of a mosquito, to answer back.

Cheng XueMei gazed at Tang Xiu for a brief moment before giving a quick glance at Su LingYun who looked deeply worried. In an instant, she fell silent.

“Captain Cheng, do we need to hand this case over to Captain Wang?” After making sure that there was no murder case or even any case of serious injury, although it was just a normal public security case, but the few officers that followed Cheng XueMei out for this operation had the intention to dodge the work.

“At the mass immobilisation convention yesterday, Chief Commander Deng was still telling us to economise our manpower, do we need to mobilise our City Police force twice just because of such a small matter?” Cheng XueMei stared at the police officer who asked that question as she replied in displeased.

After finishing her lines, Cheng XueMei felt that her whole body had relaxed. However the few police officers that followed Cheng XueMei out for this operation were all dumbstruck and they all thought that there were some problems with their hearing. Based on their understanding Cheng XueMei was not someone who will meddle into other people’s business. Whenever she met this kind of public security cases in the past, she would distant herself from it as far as possible, needless to say taking the initiative to handle

it. But after recalling the conversation that Cheng XueMei had with Su ShangWen when they had just arrived at the scene, they seem to vaguely understand what was happening.

In the City Police Headquarters, Cheng XueMei seemed to be filled with enmity as she especially disliked Captain Wang Hao's working style. Yet Su ShangWen mentioned that he was a close brother of Wang Hao which unintentionally dug his own grave.

Under Cheng XueMei's command, a few policer officers quickly went to work.

Seeing that the police officers were doing a search in the house, Su YaNing and Su XiangFei's expression became deathly white and their body trembled. They wished that the police officers would stop investigating on the missing \$3000, but at this moment both of them have already lost the courage to speak up.

"YaNing, XiangFei, the police officer said that I only have my elbow dislocated so two of you need not worry." Seeing that both his children had an abnormal expression, Su ShangWen thought that his two children were still frighten from him fainting from just now and comforted them while smiling lightly.

Listening to their father comforting them, Su YaNing and Su XiangFei almost burst into tears. They did not dare to explain to their father as the police officers were still around.

Very soon, the police officer found the \$3000 in the house. The money was found on top of a wardrobe in a bedroom and at the

time when the officers found the \$3000, they also discovered a distinct handprint. The top portion of the wardrobe had not been cleaned for a very long time causing a thin layer of dust to be settled there, and the person who hid the money had accidentally left a trace behind.

Cheng XueMei stared at the handprint for a while before sweeping her eyes onto everybody, and lastly fixating her eyes onto Su XiangFei.

“Su XiangFei, can you explained to me what had happened to cause this handprint?” Cheng XueMei sternly questioned Su XiangFei the moment she stared at him.

“It’s not my fault, it was big sister who screamed at me to hide the money. Big sister said that she hated Tang Xiu, and Tang Xiu was also a stupid rascal that was notorious for his misdeeds, even if we accused him, he would not be able to defend himself.” Su XiangFei was already feeling guilty conscience and when he heard Cheng XueMei’s stern questioning, his tensed mental state had collapsed and push the blame away in a flurry.

“I..... I I only wanted to tease Tang Xiu a little, I never had the intention to steal the money.” Seeing that everyone in the house had their gaze concentrated on her, Su YaNing became flustered as she hurriedly explained herself.

After listening to Su XiangFei and Su YaNing’s explanation, even if Cheng XueMei didn’t say anything, everybody in the house could understand what had exactly happened.

“After all that ruckus it was actually the thief calling other people the thief, this family is indeed exquisite.”

“This family doesn’t even lack that \$3000, why do they want to unjustly accuse this single-parent child and widowed mother?”

“The mother-son duo must have been struck with bad luck to have such relatives. If I were them I would have sever all connection with this kind of relative since long ago and not continue to keep in touch, suffering humiliation for no reason.”

“.....”

Today was Su ShangWen’s 40th birthday celebration and although a large number of guest had already left after the lunch banquet, there will still quite a number of guest staying behind to continue with the dinner banquet.

Initially only the few people that was in the bedroom knew of the matter, but when Tang Xiu blew the matter up, all the guest knew of what had happened in an instance. After all watching a good show was human’s nature, and even more so when the main lead of the celebration was closely involved in it. The arrival of the police had undoubtedly attracted all the guest over and even all the people in the neighbourhood had rushed down to joined in the ruckus.

Initially everybody had believed that it was Tang Xiu who really stole the \$3000 as he was poor and in desperate state. However

when the truth was unveiled, they felt that the matter was extremely outrageous. While they were sympathising and pitying Su LingYun and Tang Xiu, the look towards Su ShangWen's family were filled with loathe and despise.

Su ShangWen and Zhang MeiYun had obviously not anticipated that the truth would be as such and both of them can't help but stared blankly.

Hearing the discussion and criticism from the surrounding people and feeling the mocking and disdain gazes from them, Su ShangWen's family could feel their faces burning in pain.

"Officer, it's not stealing if we hide our family's own money right? Sorry that we have caused you all to make a wasted trip." After spending much effort, Su ShangWen had somewhat managed to calm his emotions down and with a forced smile, he walked towards Cheng XueMei and softly begged.

"It's indeed not a crime to hide their own family's money away. However according to the regulation of our country's criminal law, to use violence or other methods to publicly insult someone or to fabricate lies to slander someone, in the event of a serious case, he will be sentence to imprisonment for 3 years and below, detention, supervision or to have his political power stripped off."

"Additionally, according to our country's criminal law regulation, intentionally injuring other's body would render imprisonment of 3 years and below, detention or supervision. To cause serious injury to other people would render imprisonment of 3 years and above, 10 years and below; because of your assault,

Tang Xiu suffered multiple injuries and even threw up blood and fell unconscious. Even if you're not sentenced to 10 years of imprisonment, 3 to 5 years of imprisonment is unavoidable."

Cheng XueMei sneered as she saw that Su ShangWen was still not aware of his own mistakes and even nonchalantly defended his son's actions.

Ignoring the pleading gazes from Su ShangWen's family, Cheng XueMei waved her hand as she said in a clear voice, "bring all the relevant people involved back to the station to take their statement and interrogate them!"

"Officer, it was a misunderstanding, everything was a misunderstanding, Tang Xiu is our nephew, we would never slander or even intentionally injure him." Seeing that Cheng XueMei was truly going to arrest him, Su ShangWen panicked as he pulled onto her sleeves and started begging loudly.

Su ShangWen looked towards Su LingYun with pleading eyes as he was explaining to Cheng XueMei. Zhang MeiYun had also realised that at this moment, only Su LingYun and Tang Xiu this mother and son would be able to help their family. She pulled onto her daughter's sleeves and slowly walked over to face Su LingYun.

"LingYun, as the saying goes, if the citizens don't sound out the government won't investigate, we are all one family so let's speak behind closed doors. The joke that YaNing and XiangFei had played did indeed crossed the line, but both of them are still children so they were just playing around. So how about going over to tell the police officers that we will settle the issue in

private?” Zhang MeiYun pleaded as she gave an apologetic smile.

As Su LingYun heard Zhang MeiYun avoiding the main issue and speak only of the trivial, she directly turned her head away.

“Second Sis, today was indeed XiangFei that did wrong and I will let him apologise to Tang Xiu, after that this matter will be resolved. If you really want to make things difficult then we will sever all connections with you.” Su ShangWen coldly snorted and gave a threatening gaze as he saw that Su LingYun actually dared to put on airs in front of his wife.

“Don’t forget that Tang Xiu is still studying in Star City High School, if he do not have me as a backing in the school, based on his grades and character he may be kicked out of school anytime!” The chilling words coming out from Su ShangWen’s mouth caused the temperature in the whole house to drop over 10 degrees. Su LingYun’s body shivered as well and had no choice but to turn her head to look towards Su ShangWen.

Chapter 4: The Supreme Art Of Quintessential Space

Su ShangWen's words not only shook Su LingYun, it also caused everyone in the house to be left dumbstruck. Never would they have guessed that Su ShangWen could be this shameless, not apologising when his son was in the wrong, not having the right attitude when begging to people, and even using a higher status to threaten other people.

However, thinking back on Su ShangWen's influence in Star City, everyone can't help but lament in silence for Su LingYun and Tang Xiu.

Even if Su ShangWen's character was detestable, it was an undeniable truth that he owns an asset of over a few million and the connections that he had build up over the years in Star City could make one lose hope.

Just when everyone thought that the weak-natured Su LingYun would submit to his threat, a smile suddenly surfaced from Su LingYun's expressionless face as she lightly tiptoed, raising her hand and ruthlessly gave Su ShangWen a slapped on his face.

That slapped was so loud and clear that everyone in the living room had thought that there were problems with their hearing.

In everyone's eyes, Su LingYun was a refined and composed, good-tempered and agreeable kind of person, to say that she had a weak character was also not disagreeable, there were only

instances of her getting bullied and not once was she the one bullying other people. However for the first time in her life, she actually dared to slap someone, and the one getting slapped was even the strong and robust Su ShangWen. This caused everyone's jaw to drop.

Seeing Su ShangWen getting slapped by his mother, Tang Xiu was feeling extremely satisfied and couldn't resist laughing out loud, but the joy was short-lived. Tang Xiu's body on Earth was extremely frail to begin with. The sudden returned of his soul, the overwhelming sorrow and happiness in that short period of time and coupled with the usage of the breathing technique from the Origin Ignition Art which burns away the user's life force had cause him to faint after merely three big laughs.

When Su ShangWen realised that he was given a slapped by his younger sister who was shorter than him by a huge margin, a vicious glint flashed past his eyes as he bellowed in rage and wanted beat Su LingYun up. But never would Su ShangWen have thought that before he had the chance to take action, a pair of ice cold handcuff had landed on his hands. Cheng XueMei who was standing at the side observing the scene had already prevented him from flying into a rage and harming people.

“Me and Hu WenXu will send Tang Xiu to the hospital, Mdm Su LingYun will follow us along. The rest of you will bring the relevant people that was involved to the police station!” Cheng XueMei glared at Su ShangWen with disgust, and with a wave of her hand, she concluded the operation for today. (TLN: I assume that Hu WenXu is another police officer, the random names appearing is really quite confusing)

Su ShangWen was like a deflating rubber ball withering away in an instance as he looked at the silhouette of the departing Cheng XueMei.

Similarly, Zhang XueMei would never had guessed that the joyous celebration banquet would end in such a tragic manner due to the misdeeds of their own family. Even if they could get released easily after the arrest, but their reputation among their friends and neighbours were tarnished.

On the other hand Su YaNing and Su FeiXiang were stupefied since a while ago. They could clearly not comprehend how a simple prank could land them in such a desperate state.

“It was Tang Xiu who manipulated the whole event, he blew up the matter on purpose!” Tang Xiu’s devious smile and his words on wanting to continue playing along with Su XiangFei abruptly surfaced in his mind as Su XiangFei cried out hysterically. But sadly at this point in time, nobody would bother about the agitated Su XiangFei anymore.

Meanwhile in the Star City hospital where the night grew deeper.

The night sky was glittered with stars as a ray of moonlight shines through the glass window onto the scrawny-pale but refined face of Tang Xiu.

“With the gods in the sky, and the demons on land, the universe had determined the gods and demons to be separated. If gods are holy beings, are demons the lowly ones? If demons are superior,

are gods the inferior ones? The universe is always moving, strength and weakness are hard to separate, Yin and Yang will eventually meet. When both forces gather, fusion occurs and the form of good and evil will coexist as one. This is the Dao of yin and yang.....” (TLN: Yin = Dark, Yang = Light)

A string of words that was difficult to understand abruptly spilled out from Tang Xiu’s mouth which woke Su LingYun up who was resting beside his bed.

Initially, Su LingYun had thought that her son was having a nightmare due to the traumatising incident that happened in the afternoon and wanted to wake her son up. But when she saw the complexion of her son through the dimmed lights, she got rid of that thought.

Although Tang Xiu said a bunch of words that was incomprehensible, his facial expression displayed an unusual calmness and his two nice looking eyebrows were curved into a crescent-moon shape as if he was smiling lightly.

“Was my son reciting a classic?” Remembering that her son was going to be in the third grade of high school, Su LingYun felt relieved.

In the next moment, Su LingYun’s eyes suddenly opened wide.

She was astonished by the sudden burst of radiance coming from the stars outside the window which later turned into tiny bits of starlight, passing through the window and projecting onto her

son's pale face. The bits of starlight then silently assimilated into his body.

After a while, a faint layer of white mist was slowly produced and lingered around her son's body which seem like a fantasy-like illusion in the dark night.

Seeing that her son's pale complexion slowly turning rosy and a layer of holy light covering his forehead, Su LingYun unhurriedly reached out to that white mist with her hands, wanting to confirm that she was not hallucinating.

However the moment she touched the white mist, all of it disappeared into thin air.

"It seems that today's incident must have given me a huge shock for me to be hallucinating." Su LingYun smiled bitterly as she helped Tang Xiu lay his blanket properly before lying down to rest again.

What Su LingYun didn't notice was that with the disappearance of the white mist, Tang Xiu's eyelashes quivered lightly for a brief moment.

"The Supreme Art of Quintessential Space, I actually managed to successfully cultivate the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space?" Tang Xiu had a face filled with disbelief as he laid on bed silently feeling astonished after checking his own body condition.

The Supreme Art of Quintessential Space was a mysterious cultivation technique unintentionally recovered by Tang Xiu at an ancient remnant of the gods and demons, and this cultivation technique was passed down from the Ancient era.

It was said that during the Ancient era when heavenly energy was not formed yet, the world was filled with formless energy. The human race were like ants while the world was dominated by the god and demon race where their martial skills could move mountains and drain the seas.

The ancestors of the god race had extremely powerful insights, thus their cultivation technique were mostly on cultivating the mind. On the other hand the ancestors of the demon race had extremely powerful physique, thus their cultivation technique were mostly on cultivating the body. Although the cultivation technique of both the gods and demons were extremely powerful, but it clashes with each other mutually, making it impossible to cultivate both technique at the same time.

It was also because of the god and demon's overly powerful cultivation technique that caused the extinction of both race, leaving behind only traces of the battlefield and fragments of secret techniques.

The Supreme Art of Quintessential Space that Tang Xiu had found was claimed to be a supreme cultivation technique that allowed both the geniuses from the god and demon race to cultivate it.

After getting the cultivation technique, Tang Xiu went frenzied

with joy as he began studying the technique. However, after a 100 years he had no choice but to admit that he was unable to cultivate it.

The reason was that this cultivation technique requires the cultivator to have his physical and mental state returned back to the initial point when the cultivator was given life, which means, returning back to the state when they were just a fetus. Not only does it require the body to be in the purest form, the mind also had to be in the purest form. This was simply impossible to achieve.

Tang Xiu went into seclusion to thoroughly study the art for 100 of years, but he was still unable to find a solution to it. Out of disappointment, Tang Xiu threw the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space into his storage ring as if it was rubbish. He did not share it with his lover and close friends as he felt that it would be useless to them. Not only would it waste their time and effort, it may even result in cultivation deviation.

But it was exactly this decision that caused his lover and close friends to breed hatred in their hearts and in the end joined hands to deal with Tang Xiu, causing his soul to be shattered and dying with resentment.

“How did I managed to cultivate the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space in just one night on Earth even when I had failed cultivating it after spending 100 of years in the Immortal World? Was it because the body I had on Earth had a better cultivating aptitude than the body I had in the Immortal World?” Tang Xiu fell into contemplation.

Very soon, Tang Xiu rejected that notion.

As the grandson of the Holy Sect head in the Immortal World, he was nourished with all kinds of heavenly treasures even when he was still in his mother's womb, and even after he was born, he was strengthen externally and internally. His intelligence and cultivation aptitude was also extremely monstrous. Not only was his cultivation progressing at a very fast pace, the amount of spiritual pills, martial skills, cultivation tools and talismans that he possessed also caused other people to be green with envy.

On the other hand, the body that Tang Xiu had on Earth was malnourish since young. Furthermore, he was so focus on his studies that he neglected on training his body. After the car accident, he became very clumsy and often hurt himself. Thus it was not logical that his body on Earth would have a better cultivation aptitude than his body in the Immortal World.

“Since the problem was not in cultivating aptitude, then what was the problem?” Tang Xiu fell into contemplation once more as he felt a thread of energy from the stars and also a weak but distinct life force coursing through his body.

The Supreme Art of Quintessential Space requires the cultivator to have his physical and mental state returned back to the initial point when the cultivator was given life, which means, returning back to the state when they were just a fetus...

It was said that during the Ancient era when heavenly energy was not formed yet, there was only formless energy.

Coincidentally, the current Earth practically do not have any heavenly energy in its environment.

As for physical and mental state.....

After throwing up blood and being unconscious, my body was in a paralysed state where i couldn't control my own body and this could barely fulfil the requirement of starting from scratch. My soul had also just returned back which caused my mental state to be untainted, so to say that it was starting from scratch was also undeniable.

After deciding to try it, Tang Xiu took a leap of faith as he recklessly charged ahead, recalling through the contents that he had painstakingly memorised for over a hundred thousand times and began on his first phase of cultivation.

The first stage of the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space, Transcendence of the Stars!

“With the gods in the sky, and the demons on land, the universe had determined the gods and demons to be separated. If gods are holy beings, are demons the lowly ones? If demons are superior, are gods the inferior ones? The universe is always moving, strength and weakness are hard to separate, Yin and Yang will eventually meet. When both forces gather, fusion occurs and the form of good and evil will coexist as one. This is the Dao of yin and yang.....”

As the chant was recited line by line, Tang Xiu discovered that his consciousness started to extend out rapidly until he saw a sky full of stars.

For the first time in his life, Tang Xiu felt that the stars were rather cute and familiar, causing him to have the urge to gently caress and care for it.

With a flicker of mind, Tang Xiu's consciousness began to reach out towards one of the star which suddenly brighten up majestically as if it was calling out for Tang Xiu. It then shattered into countless starlight before sprinkling towards Tang Xiu's consciousness and entering his body.

When all the starlight was absorbed by Tang Xiu's body, his consciousness started to reach out to other stars again.

Just like this, he started to play hide and seek with the stars as he gradually forgot that he was in the middle of cultivating.

“Ahhh.....” Suddenly, Tang Xiu let out a scream and withdrew from his cultivation after an unknowing amount of time.

Chapter 5: I Will Protect This Family

“Xiu’Er, did you have a nightmare?” Su LingYun was woken up from her sleep by Tang Xiu’s miserable shriek and her heart tighten up as she saw that Tang Xiu was drench in perspiration. (TLN: Xiu’Er = Tang Xiu, just a Chinese way of calling their children or someone dear to them by adding an ‘Er to their name)

The immense pain nearly caused Tang Xiu to lose consciousness and he spent an enormous amount of effort to gradually control his breathing. Seeing the nervous and concerned look from his mother, Tang Xiu hesitated a while before nodding lightly to acknowledge her conjecture.

Tang Xiu did not want to tell anyone about the matters regarding the Immortal World. An ordinary person will not have any trouble, but if they had hidden a treasure then trouble will befall upon them, so he did not want to be put in any danger.

Although Tang Xiu believed that his mother would not harm him, but he was afraid that the people who wishes to harm him would make use of his mother or cause disturbance to her tranquil life.

“You little rascal, still being dishonest when you’re sleeping, look at the amount of perspiration you’re having, it’s making you smell bad. I will go fetch some warm water to wipe your body.” Su LingYun monitored her son for a while before giving a light smile and left.

After checking that his mother had went off to someplace further away, Tang Xiu collapsed and inhaled a breath of cool air as he can't help but shriek miserably in pain again. However, his face was filled with delight.

“Tyrannical, its indeed tyrannical! The Supreme Art of Quintessential Space that came from the ancient era of the Immortal World which lacks heavenly energy actually retrieves energy from the sun, moon and stars for its own usage. Initially I lacked the qualification to cultivate this Art, but luckily I subconsciously cultivated the Supreme Art of Quintessential space when I was in a paralysed state after throwing up blood and fell unconscious. This barely fulfilled the requirements of the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space, giving me the qualification to cultivate it. Or else I would not have been able to cultivate this mysterious cultivation technique based on the mental state that I had when I'm awake and the frail body that I possessed! I'm truly in luck!”

Feeling a thread of star energy and also a weak but distinct life force coursing through his body, Tang Xiu was unable to contain his joy.

But in the next instance, the smile on Tang Xiu's face froze momentarily as he entered into a deep thought.

The anguishing pain from just now had left a deep lasting impression on Tang Xiu as the pain was similar to the one in the tribulation of the heart when undergoing the tribulation of divinity in the Immortal world – the Demonic Tribulation. Tang Xiu did not wished to experience this kind of pain anymore.

The only fatal weak point of this Art was that the cultivator must possess a substantially strong physique to withstand the abundance of energy from the universe.

The creator of the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space had emphasised time and again that if cultivators wished to cultivate the first stage of the Art, Transcendence of the Stars, they would have to prepare enough rare medicinal herbs, minerals, and also internal organs of ferocious beast like blood essence, tendons and many more to strengthen the body.

The cultivation of Transcendence of the Stars includes training of stamina, toughening of the skin, growing of muscles, strengthening of bones, strengthening of tendons, strengthening of organs, and improvement in blood circulation. It was created to emulate the body constitution of the demon race to resolve the issue on the disadvantage of having a weak body constitution for the god race. Every small part of the cultivation process requires different innumerable rare materials.

The Supreme Art of Quintessential Space requires the cultivator to have a strong body constitution. Even if the cultivation progress for this technique was fast, if the strength of body constitution did not reach the requirement, the cultivator would explode and die on the spot from absorbing too much star energy.

“It was not easy for me to return back to Earth, I do not want to just explode and die. I wanted to cultivate the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space back when I was in the Immortal World because its was a chaotic world of slaughter and I needed a strong cultivation to keep my life. However, the world on Earth pays

more attention to law and harmony, there is no need for me to have high combat prowess.”

Tang Xiu gradually calmed down after a brief moment of delight, and at the same time, firmly decided to give up the thought on cultivating the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space.

One reason was that he may face the risk of self-exploding if he continues to cultivate it. Another reason was that the memory of his lover and close friends who joined hands to deal with him was too painful.

“Since there is no need for me to possess high combat prowess and there is danger from cultivating the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space, I could just cultivate other cultivation techniques.” Tang Xiu felt more at ease after putting down the enormous load that he had carried for 100 of years in the Immortal World.

As the grandson of the sect head in the Immortal World, Tang Xiu possess innumerable cultivation techniques and martial skills belonging to the Vermilion Bird Holy Sect, and had also purchased and exchanged countless of legacies and secret techniques.

Tang Xiu even went to raid the whole of the Immortal World just to root out cultivation techniques and martial skills after becoming one of the top few supreme expert in the Immortal World. Therefore, the cultivation technique and martial skill that Tang Xiu could choose from was simply too many.

Art of Golden Sworn, Sapphire Flame Art, Art of Frozen

Heart.....

Other people may fret over the lack of cultivation techniques and martial skills to train, but what Tang Xiu was fretting over was the choice of cultivation techniques and martial skills to train.

“Xiu’Er, I’m sorry, I shouldn’t have slapped your uncle just now, although it helped released my pent up anger but it may caused you to get kicked out of Star City (Grade 1) High School.” When Su LingYun came back after fetching a pail of water, Tang Xiu was still fretting over the matters regarding his cultivation, so when she saw the frowning look on Tang Xiu’s face, she thought that Tang Xiu was worried about the problem regarding his school.

“Mum its alright, what’s done is done, its fine even if we lose this relative or else we will always suffer humiliation for no reason.” Seeing the guilt on his mother’s face, Tang Xiu had no choice but to hide his emotions away as he gave a light smile and consoled her.

“But.....”

“Mum, lets not worry about the things that have not yet occur, maybe I will still be able to continue studying in Star City (Grade 1) High school. Even if I’m not able to remain there, Star City (Grade 7) High School should be willing to accept me I guess? By then we would have to see if mum is willing to continue spending money on me.” Su LingYun wanted to say more but was interrupted by Tang Xiu. (TLN: Hi guys, I made a bit of mistake regarding the name of the school:/ the raws are “星城一中” which directly translate to “star city one middle”. Previously I translated it as just

“Star City High School” but it seems that the letter “one(一)” had a meaning to it, I can’t think of a nice name for it so I just bracketed and put it as “grade 1” hahahaha)

“You little rascal, you’re the only son that mum had, how can I not be willing to spend money on you!” After staring at her son intensely and realising that her son really had no intention of blaming or resenting her, Su LingYun relaxed subconsciously.

When Su LingYun was helping Tang Xiu to wipe his body, Tang Xiu was still racking his brain on what cultivation technique and martial skills to train on and did not notice anything inappropriate. However, only when he felt his pants being pulled down and a cool breeze brushing around his groin did he came back to his senses.

“Mum I will do it myself, just go over to one side to rest!” Tang Xiu pulled up his pants at the speed of light while snatching the warm towel away from his mother’s hands as he exclaimed with his face flushed red.

“You little rascal, I was the one who gave birth to you, which part of your body have I not seen before.” Su LingYun was laughing and scolding Tang Xiu at the same time, but she did not insist on helping Tang Xiu to wipe his body and instead turning around to pack their stuff. “Xiu’Er, the doctor had told me that there was no issue with your body and that the repercussion from a year ago had actually been cured miraculously, how do you feel?”

“After throwing out a few mouthful of blood at uncle’s house, I feel that my whole body had loosen up and my mind is more active

now, my disoriented intellect in the past have also seem to be straighten out. Mum, I have a feeling that I will be able to reclaimed back the top ranking in my cohort that used to belong to me.” Under Su LingYun’s nervous gaze, Tang Xiu spoke with his face ‘filled with excitement’.

Tang Xiu naturally understood what his mother was worrying about , so he spoke entirely in accordance to his mother’s thought process. Of course, what Tang Xiu had said was not exactly lying to his mother but more of covering up the truth with good intention.

After his soul returned back to his body, Tang Xiu had realised that he had a lot of blood clot accumulated all over his body and knew that it was the repercussion from the car accident.

Initially, Tang Xiu wanted to give Su ShangWen a gruesome beating when he activated the Origin Ignition Art, but when he took action, he suddenly recalled that he was now on Earth where world peace takes precedence and not the vicious slaughter of the Immortal World. Su ShangWen was just a relative that he loathed and not a murderous enemy, so Tang Xiu retracted a lot of energy back and used this energy to clear all the blood clots in his body.

Therefore the repercussion in Tang Xiu’s body did not just get cured miraculously but was due to Tang Xiu curing himself. As for his studies, Tang Xiu had already recovered back his initial intellect after his soul returned back to his body, and coupled with the ten thousand years of scholarly knowledge and godly skills, if he did not obtained the top ranking in his entire cohort then he would have spent ten thousand years in the Immortal World in vain.

After making sure that there were no issues with Tang Xiu's body, Su LingYun went to do the outpatient procedures.

When they reached home and did a simple clean up, Tang Xiu had no choice but to head over to school due to his mother's insistence.

"Xiu'Er, your uncle shouldn't have made things too difficult for you since we are still his blood relative. If you really can't stay in Star City (Grade 1) High School then mum will try to squeeze you into Star City (Grade 2) High School, worst come to worst there is still Star City (Grade 7) High school." Before stepping onto the school compound, Su LingYun was fixing up Tang Xiu's uniform as she was reluctant to part while speaking in a gentle voice.

"Mum I got it, I will concentrate on my studies and not think of other stuff, because I still have you." Tang Xiu lightly hugged his mother, using a delicate voice and said, "You have to take care of your body too, or else I would get distracted."

Tang Xiu turned around and left after saying his lines, leaving Su LingYun there with eyes seemingly red.

"Such a bear-like child, suddenly being so loving, I'm really not used to it." Feeling the great change from her son, a sense of satisfaction began to well up while feeling deeply moved.

What Su LingYun didn't know was that Tang Xiu had not gone far, as he reached a turning point of the school building, he made

sure that his mother could not see his figure before hiding at a corner at lightning speed, silently gazing at her.

When Tang Xiu saw that there were tears at the corner of his mother's eyes with a face full of smile and delight, Tang Xiu's nose soured as two streaks of tears surge out uncontrollably.

Nobody could imagine how deep the relationship between Tang Xiu and Su LingYun were, including Su LingYun herself.

Separated for ten thousand years, and yearning for ten thousand.

In the ten thousand years in the Immortal World, Tang Xiu was always thinking about his mother and was also the greatest inner demon in his heart. No matter how hard he tried, he was unable to put down his longing for her.

Even though Tang Xiu have not seen his mother for ten thousand years, but in his heart, him and his mother had been together for countless of reincarnation, Su LingYun would always be his mother and Tang Xiu would always be her only son in every reincarnation.

Luckily the ten thousand years in the Immortal World had let Tang Xiu to possess a strong control on his emotions, coupled with the fact that he was feeling downcast from being betrayed and harmed by his lover and close friends, or else Tang Xiu would have hugged his mother and cried in bitterly when he returned back to Earth.

“Mum, you were the one that protected our family for the past seventeen years, from now onwards let me protect this family of ours!” Tang Xiu thought to himself silently as his mother’s figure walked further away and disappeared into the crowd.

Chapter 6: Humiliation

When Tang Xiu arrived at the classroom, most of his classmates were engrossed in their studies as they plough through pages after pages of past-year paper, while a hand full of them were reciting out loud their textbooks. A tense atmosphere filled the entire classroom.

As the final-year examination was only three months away, their main class teacher and subject teachers emphasised on the importance of this examination time and again. With wave after wave of weekly and monthly test given to the year three students, this bunch of seventeen years old youth can't help but feel nervous.

Seeing the eye-catching countdown number for the final-year examination on the blackboard and all his classmates studying intensely, Tang Xiu felt that he did not fit in with this world.

“Since I’m here just to fulfil my mother’s wish and not here to really study, I need not be too bothered about my surrounding.” Tang Xiu quickly retracted his gaze as he walked to his desk.

What Tang Xiu didn’t expect was that just when he stepped into the classroom, all his classmates that were initially busy doing their revision stopped what they were doing and turned to look at Tang Xiu.

Those looks were filled with despise, ridicule, disdain and loathe which Tang Xiu could not discern the reason for it.

“Tang Xiu, we don’t welcome you here, get out!” Suddenly, a tall and skinny youth with a face filled with despise pointed his finger and ordered Tang Xiu with a broken gong-like voice which resounded throughout the classroom. (TLN: gong = a metal disc with a turned rim, like those big round disc that produces a “gong” like sound when you hit them, like the ones you see in historical Chinese shows)

Feeling the strong hostility coming out from the tall and skinny body, Tang Xiu’s gaze turned cold as killing intent surfaced out from his body.

The tall and skinny classmate was called Yang Jian and he was a member of the class revision committee. He was always opposing Tang Xiu because he resented Tang Xiu for scoring better than him during the entrance exam, and when Tang Xiu’s academic performance deteriorated, Yang Jian grabbed the chance to ridicule and suppressed him.

“Tang Xiu, we don’t welcome you here, get out!”

“Tang Xiu, we don’t welcome you here, get out!”

“Tang Xiu, we don’t welcome you here, get out!”

Before Tang Xiu had the chance to question Yang Jian, a clamor resounded throughout the classroom as wave after wave of perilous loud shouts caused Tang Xiu to freeze momentarily while still at the entrance.

Just when he wanted to clarify exactly what was going on, a loud “clang” sound echoed throughout the class. When Tang Xiu looked over, he saw that a fat guy at the last row had smashed his chair onto the table.

The strength that the fatty had used was simply too great that the classroom tremored slightly. After the loud smashing sound, the uproar abruptly stopped and the classroom became dead silent as the classmates who were actively bashing Tang Xiu seemed as if they were strangled by the neck.

“Its just Tang Xiu’s grade being a little bit poorer and its not his intention to be like this, is there a need to go against him?”

“Tang Xiu is my tablemate and I have seen him put in so much effort in the past one year. I dare to say that Tang Xiu is the most diligent in his studies out of everyone here, if not for the car accident one year ago all of you here would not even have the chance to be able to catch up to his silhouette, so what qualifications do you all have to reproach him.”

“This matter aside, so what if Tang Xiu’s grades is not good, its not as if whatever you all say counts, he can come and go whenever he wants to so its none of your business!” The fatty indignantly defended Tang Xiu after seeing that everyone was looking at him.

Fatty was very plump and had a height of over 1.8 meters, his tummy was so round that it looked like a lady who was pregnant for 10 months, and his already small eyes were compressed by his

fats on his face that made it look like a straight line, unable to see his eye ball.

It may be that fatty's stature had given everybody a huge pressure or that his murderous fierce look was too intimidating, because the whole class was startled by him.

“Yuan ChuLing, what rights do you have to be so arrogant? The reason why our class's average marks is the last in the cohort is all because of two of you being such a disappointment. As the saying goes, a piece of rat feces spoils the whole pot of congee, furthermore our class has two rat feces, that's why its hard to raise our average marks even if we want to.” Yang Jian retorted back unconfidently after being silent for so long.

“Yang Jian, who is the rat feces, I dare you to say it again!” With a “clang” sound, Yuan ChuLing kicked over the table and glared at Yang Jian with his eyes seemingly wanting to devour him as he yelled back.

Yuan ChuLing's action had frighten Yang Jian as his face became deathly pale and avoided making eye contact with Yang ChuLing.

“Yang Jian, its not that I want to pick on you but even if your grades are exceptionally well, a useless scoundrel like you would only be fated to work for others once you step into society, and you actually think that you are that great just because your grades are good. If me your grandpa wishes to deal with you then its just a lift of a finger to me.” Seeing that Yang Jian had admitted defeat, Yuan ChuLing did not bother with him anymore and gave a cold smirk before seating down after arranging back his chair and table.

Not sure if its because of the wear and tear from the long years or that Yuan ChuLing's previous action being too violent, but the initially strong chair was actually damaged. So when Yuan ChuLing sat on the chair, a "kacha" sound could be heard and he fell onto the floor with his hands and legs dancing wildly in the air and a heart-tearing, lung-splitting shriek was produced.

With Yuan ChuLing making such a scene, the tense and silent atmosphere disappeared in an instance and there was even someone who could not resist laughing out loud.

Even Tang Xiu himself almost burst out laughing, but thinking back on how Yuan ChuLing had stood out to speak up for him, he forced back his laughter and walked towards Yuan ChuLing to pick him up from the floor.

On the other hand, most of the people that was on Yang Jian's side did not dare to laugh because they did not want to anger Yuan ChuLing who had an extremely intimidating temper.

"Are you all done? If you're done then shut up!" Just when everybody's attention was focused on Yuan ChuLing, a cold voice resounded from the front of the classroom.

Upon hearing the imposing voice, the classroom became dead silent in an instance and even Yuan ChuLing stopped screaming in pain.

During this time Tang Xiu had a face filled with shock when he

saw that the chair on floor was perfectly undamaged and that Yuan ChuLing was even unharmed.

As if seeing through what Tang Xiu was thinking about, Yuan ChuLing gave Tang Xiu a few wink. If not for Tang Xiu's soul returning back which improved his eyesight, the wink that Yuan ChuLing gave from his seemingly straight-line eyes would have been a waste of effort.

“This fatty is actually a genius.” Seeing the winking expression that Yuan ChuLing gave, Tang Xiu immediately understood the reason why Yuan ChuLing fell and can't help but praise his high EQ. (TLN: EQ = emotional quotient, which also means emotional intelligence)

Yuan ChuLing only wanted to go against Yang Jian and not the whole class, but his actions previously was too arrogant which may easily cause the rest to detest him. But after acting out his slapstick self-torture performance, the effect of Yuan ChuLing's arrogance and despotic actions had clearly been dissolved, and the favourable impression that he brings to the rest of the class would also be fresh in their minds.

“The whole school could hear your argument, even if you don't feel ashamed, I feel ashamed. Do all of you still have the image of a student?” Seeing that he had successfully intimidated the sixty over students in his class, Hu QiuSheng's expression soften slightly.

He took a look at everyone in the class, causing the students to panic as they all lower their heads in guilt. Only Tang Xiu, Yuan

ChuLing and Yang Jian had their chest held up without being intimidated by Hu QiuSheng.

Hu QiuSheng had a look of disgust as he cast his sight from Tang Xiu to Yuan ChuLing, and when he lay his eyes on Yang Jian a smile appeared, “Yang Jian, what exactly happened just now, why did the class made such a big ruckus?”

“Teacher, Tang Xiu did not attend last night’s self-study session and was even late for the morning self-study session as well so I just told him off a bit, but after that Yuan ChuLing went to smash the chair and kicked the table, and even started criticising us that no matter how good our grades are we will only just be an employee working under someone. Furthermore he still said that dealing with us would only be a lift of a finger to him.....” Yang Jian became very confident having the main class teacher backing him up, giving Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing a side glance and started explaining the situation, adding oil to fire as well.

Hu QiuSheng did not like Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing in the first place, so when he had finished listening to what had happened the expression on his face when he looked at Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing was filled with even more disgust.

“Tang Xiu, the results for last month’s monthly test are out and do you know how much you got? 37 marks!” Hu QiuSheng’s eyes locked onto Tang Xiu as he started reprimanding Tang Xiu.

“Its 37 marks, and the total marks for the test is 750 marks but you actually got 37 marks, you are the first in the cohort if we count the ranking backwards, do you know how how many people

laughed at me because of this? If not for your mother kneeling down and begging me several times, do you really think that I will let you stay in this class?” Hu QiuSheng scolded Tang Xiu loudly.

“Every time you assure me that you will work hard and score better on the next test, but every time when the result comes out you are always the lowest in the cohort, and your results are getting worst and worst each time!”

“Tang Xiu, I have already send in a request to the principal to have you expelled or at least have you switched to other class, our class is never going to continue having you here or else I will quit my post as the main teacher of this class!”

.....

Hu QiuSheng was roaring when he said those words, his facial muscles were warped up and his eyes turned blood red as if Tang Xiu did an unpardonable crime.

When facing Hu QiuSheng’s scolding, Tang Xiu’s lips trembled for a brief moment. He wanted to explain himself but gave up on that thought after he observed Hu QiuSheng for a while and stood on the spot quietly, letting Hu QiuSheng reprimand him.

However Yuan ChuLing who was standing beside Tang Xiu had his face turned totally red as if he had suffered a huge humiliation. His body kept on fidgeting while his mouth opened up a few times wanting to defend Tang Xiu, but he was suppressed back by Hu QiuSheng’s imposing manner and was not able to speak up.

After scolding Tang Xiu non-stop for about 10 minutes, Hu QiuSheng's pent up anger had almost subsided and following that, he cast his eyes onto Yuan ChuLing.

When he saw the indistinct mocking smile on the corner of Yuan ChuLing's mouth, Hu QiuSheng choose to ignore his existence before criticising other students that were not performing well. Only when the bell for the end of morning self-study session rang did Hu QiuSheng stop his scolding and left hastily.

Although Hu QiuSheng had left, the classroom still had an intangible heavy atmosphere. Other than a few students who needed to go to the toilet, majority of them were busy revising.

Chapter 7: Kicked Out Of Class

Tang Xiu laid his eyes on his study table as well, just the test papers alone was stacked 2-foot high and the amount of reference books was even more.

It was not only Tang Xiu's table that was like that, at a glance, all the tables in the class was like that. If there was really a need to point out one difference, then it would be that all the books and test papers that was on Tang Xiu's table looked brand new and neatly arranged, while the rest of his classmates' table had their books and test papers piled up in a mess, looking like a disaster.

Tang Xiu randomly pulled out a few test papers to take a look and found out that he could not understand most of the questions. The numerous fresh red zeros on his test paper even made his face turned red.

“It seems that I must resolve the issue with my studies first before resolving the issue with my cultivation technique, or else I would really be expelled from school due to my grades and mum would definitely be sad.” Tang Xiu whispered to himself softly before taking out a book from his table and seriously skimming through it.

After having his soul damaged, although Tang Xiu's intellect on Earth was damaged, but his attitude towards his studies was very proper. All his study materials from year 1 to year 3 were neatly arranged underneath his table and Tang Xiu therefore would not need to waste his time and effort gathering studying materials.

As he was from a single-parent family, Tang Xiu was extremely obedient and was diligent in his studies. Since primary school to high school, Tang Xiu had always been the dictator in academic results. He was ranked first in the entire cohort for his entrance exam into Star City (Grade 1) High School, and subsequently in year 1, Tang Xiu had also dominated the entire cohort by ranking first in his final year examination.

However due to a car accident in the first half of school term in year 2, Tang Xiu's soul was damaged and this caused his memory and comprehension skills to fall drastically and would always lose focus randomly from time to time. No matter how hard he tried, he was not able to catch up with the pace in class, thus his results kept on falling until he became the last in his cohort.

If Tang Xiu wants to improve his results, he would not only have to self-learn the content from year 2 and 3 but also relearn all the content before year 2. If it was the previous Tang Xiu, it would be impossible to take back all the glory that should have belong to him using three months, but this wouldn't be of any issue to the current Tang Xiu now.

“Boss, don't bother wasting your effort, us brothers are just not fit to study, it wouldn't be of any use no matter how hard we try.” Tang Xiu had only flip a few pages of his book before he felt a hand over his shoulder and a low voice resounded beside his ears.

The one who was speaking was naturally his tablemate Yuan ChuLing. He had still thought that Tang Xiu was affected by Hu QiuSheng's words and can't help himself from looking through his study materials, so he wanted to console him.

Yuan ChuLing was one of Tang Xiu's good friend that was hard to come by and was considered his brother in arms.

Yuan ChuLing's result was also extremely outstanding when he first entered school. However during the second half of the term in year 1, his parents got divorced and after that, Yuan ChuLing began to frantically skipped classes, getting into fights, getting into relationships, and even skipping examination. From an exquisite model student, he became a bad student that teachers hated in a short period of time.

Two years had passed and although Yuan ChuLing had calmly accepted the fact that his parents had divorced, but the harm inflicted onto him by his parents was unable to be salvaged and his enthusiasm towards his studies was also unrecoverable.

"Fatty, let's just study properly, or else....." Tang Xiu stopped his sentence halfway and was not able to continue. The reason why he was willing to go back to school to study was to fulfil his mother's wish, but Yuan ChuLing hated his parents and so would do anything thing that would make his parents feel miserable.

"Ai, forget it, our situations are different, you better study hard and not let down on your mum's expectation. For me it will always be like this for the rest of my life." Seeing that Tang Xiu had stopped speaking further, the smile on Yuan ChuLing's face gradually disappeared as he became downcast.

"Fatty, since you still persist to come to school for lessons on

time everyday then this says that deep down you still have the passion of learning. You are only doing this because you want your mum and dad to feel miserable and regret, that's why you are giving up on yourself, am I right?" Tang Xiu stared at Yuan ChuLing as he asked.

After hearing Tang Xiu's words, Yuan ChuLing's expression changed and avoided Tang Xiu's gaze with guilt.

"Fatty, even though I do not know why your parents decided to file for divorce, but during this two years I have seen how much they care for you, they did not divorce because they do not love you anymore but because they feel that they are not suited to be together. If you still continue giving up on yourself, you would suffer and your parents would be in pain as well, so why the need to be like this?" Seeing that Yuan ChuLing was properly listening to him, Tang Xiu took the opportunity to advise him.

If the bunch of experts from the Immortal World saw how earnest Tang Xiu was giving advice to a mortal ant to reflect, then their jaws would definitely dropped to the floor.

This was because the Tang Xiu in the Immortal World was simply too arrogant. Even to his lover and good friends, he did not bother talking to them much, and he was even colder towards strangers.

It was only because Yuan ChuLing had stepped forward to speak up for him in the most critical moment that made Tang Xiu feel touched and caused Tang Xiu to acknowledged and accept this friend of his.

Tang Xiu simply had nothing on his side, his family was so poor that he had trouble with his family expenses, he even had trouble gathering enough money for his school fees, his results were atrocious and was even suspected to be mentally handicapped. Even under all these circumstances Yuan ChuLing was still willing to help and protect him, so this only proves that Yuan ChuLing really treats Tang Xiu as a friend.

“I’m also aware that my parents have their predicament on why they divorced, but I’m still not able to get over it.” Yuan ChuLing had an agonised expression when he explained after staying silent for a while.

“Ai, let’s not talk about my issues. Previously Tiger Hu had said that he wants to kick you out of this class or expel you from the school, but why do I feel that you are not worried about this at all?” Yuan ChuLing did not want to continue talking about the issue regarding his parents’ divorce, so he simply changed the topic.

“My results are simply too atrocious so it was normal for Tiger Hu to be this agitated. Furthermore, don’t you think that this class totally lacks sympathy for others? Maybe a change of environment would be good.” Tang Xiu smiled as if nothing had happened as he did not put this matter to heart.

“Why do I feel that you have become another person today?” Listening to Tang Xiu’s reply, Yuan ChuLing almost thought that his hearing had problems, following that, he can’t help but size Tang Xiu up from head to toe.

Gradually, Yuan ChuLing's eyes started getting brighter as his face revealed an excited expression and asked nervously, "your..... Your..... Your mind has become brighter!"

"That's right, my mind has recovered back to normal, thank you for always taking care of me this past two years. As a way to express my gratitude, I have decided to let you seat on the throne of being the last in the class." Seeing the sincere smile of joy on Yuan ChuLing's face, Tang Xiu felt very warm deep in his heart as he punched his fist onto Yuan ChuLing's chest with a light smile on his face.

"Damn..... I'm just simply too happy now, let's go, I'll treat you to some beer, we need to celebrate." After he got a confirmation for his suspicion, Yuan ChuLing was overjoyed and grabbed onto Tang Xiu's arm as he pulled Tang Xiu to the exit of the classroom, ignoring the ridicule behind Tang Xiu's back and also the clear lesson bell that was ringing.

Tang Xiu had the intention to resist but could do anything as Yuan ChuLing stature was three times as big as his. Yuan ChuLing's strength was not something that the current Tang Xiu could contend against.

"Two of you stop where you're going, it's time for lesson so go back to your seats." Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing was stopped by Hu QiuSheng just when they reached the exit.

Yuan ChuLing clearly didn't expect that Hu QiuSheng would

return after going away. He can't help but froze momentarily as he let go of Tang Xiu's arm hastily and looked at Tang Xiu with an apologetic expression.

One must know that even though Tang Xiu's result was not satisfactory in the past one year plus, but his discipline in school was well-known to be good. He was never absent from any class or play truant, and there was never even an incident of him being late for class before. But right now, he was being dragged by Yuan ChuLing to skip class, so Yuan ChuLing would naturally feel bad about it.

"Teacher, Tang Xiu isn't feeling very well so I want to accompany him to the sick bay, can I take half an hour leave from you?" Yuan ChuLing immediately sprouted out some nonsense as an excuse.

Hearing that excuse, Hu QiuSheng swept his sharp gaze on Tang Xiu from head to toe and asked in a mocking tone, "Yuan ChuLing, do you need me to accompany you to send Tang Xiu to the sick bay together?"

"It's alright teacher, we will persevere for a while and head to the sick bay during the break!" Hearing Hu QiuSheng's bone-piercing cold tone, Yuan ChuLing shook his head in a flurry and pulled Tang Xiu back to their seats.

Seeing that Yuan ChuLing and Tang Xiu had returned back to their seats, Hu QiuSheng made his way slowly to the teacher's desk.

Following Hu QiuSheng's light cough, the whole class turned silent in an instance.

"After discussing with the teacher-in-charge of year 3 in the principal's office, Tang Xiu would no longer be a student of class 5, in the next three months, Tang Xiu would go to class 10 to continue his studies." Hu QiuSheng took a glance towards Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing's direction before reading aloud the file in his hands.

Upon hearing Hu QiuSheng's words, Tang Xiu's heart contracted as his face turned deathly white. Although he said that he did not mind, but being kicked out of class and leaving the class on his own accord was two different matter. Furthermore Hu QiuSheng had read out the notice in front of all his classmates, not sparing any consideration for his dignity and feelings. This was like giving Tang Xiu a tight slap on his face, causing Tang Xiu to have an indescribable rage and despair.

Yuan ChuLing also didn't expect that Hu QiuSheng would stop them from going out just to announce Tang Xiu dismissal from the class. This made Yuan ChuLing pant in anger as his face was flushed red, but taking a glance at Tang Xiu's deathly white face, he resist the urge to retort back.

"This is simply too good, with Tang Xiu leaving our class average marks would definitely go up!"

"I have calculated it seriously before, if Tang Xiu were to be

absent from the exam then our class 5's average marks would be the highest among the rest of the class. It was because of Tang Xiu's existence that caused our average marks to fall by such a large gap."

.....

After Hu QiuSheng finished reading the announcement, the class was silent for a brief moment before a thunderous applause burst out with some the students cheering loudly.

Hearing the heated discussion in the class, Yuan ChuLing clenched his fist tightly. However Tang Xiu's expression was very calm and did not change at all, as if nothing had happen.

"Teacher, Tang Xiu have already recovered completely from his repercussions from the car accident so his results would improve soon, I plead you to help say a few words in the principal's office to retract back the decision." After staying silent for a while, Yuan ChuLing suddenly stood up and pleaded loudly.

"I have already listened to this kind of promise for many times now so I will not trust any kind of promises from both you and Tang Xiu. Furthermore the principal and the year 3 teacher-in-charge's approved decision cannot be easily changed or retracted. Besides, I do not believe that Tang Xiu have the ability to pull up his grades in just three short months." Hu QiuSheng calmly replied as he glared at Yuan ChuLing.

Chapter 8: The Dumbest Decision

Hu QiuSheng's eyes were always on Tang Xiu when he was talking, the corner of his mouth slightly hooked up as he revealed a mocking smirk.

Hu QiuSheng initially felt that it was a great pity when Tang Xiu's result fell, after all, Tang Xiu was ranked first in the entire cohort during the entrance exam and Hu QiuSheng had also spent a great amount of effort to snatch Tang Xiu into his class.

During year 1, Tang Xiu had indeed brought honour to Hu QiuSheng by doing extremely well in any small and big exam or competition. However everything changed after the car accident in year 2. Even though Tang Xiu was still as passionate to learn as before, but Tang Xiu always forgets the things that he learned previously after learning new things, causing his results to be worst and worst, paper after paper.

Furthermore, as Tang Xiu's results deteriorated, incidents such as copying of homework, cheating in exams, and getting into fights were all happening to him one after another. Even when Hu QiuSheng did not investigate on the truth with regards to those incidents, but seeing that there was really no hope in Tang Xiu's results, Hu QiuSheng had already taken Tang Xiu out of his radius of attention.

"Teacher, if you really insist on kicking Tang Xiu out of class, then I would want to apply to be changed to class 10 together with Tang Xiu." When Yuan ChuLing noticed that Hu QiuSheng had already firmly decided on this matter and would not retract back

the dismissal, he stubbornly glared at Hu QiuSheng as he said loudly.

Hearing Yuan ChuLing's words, Tang Xiu who was silently packing his stuff froze momentarily as he turned to look at Yuan ChuLing, feeling astounded.

Tang Xiu knew that Yuan ChuLing's circumstances were completely different from him. Even if Yuan ChuLing's result deteriorated, nobody could force Yuan ChuLing to leave the class if he do not want to because his parents' influence in Star City was simply too great. That was why Hu QiuSheng did not want to offend Yuan ChuLing.

"Yuan ChuLing, I will need to seek your parents' opinion with regards to you wanting to change class first, if your parents agree to it then I won't stop you." Hu QiuSheng knitted his brows as he saw how Yuan ChuLing kept on provoking him because of Tang Xiu, so he spoke in displeased, "please seat down now, we are starting class."

Yuan ChuLing froze momentarily as he did not expect Hu QiuSheng to straight-forwardly agree to his request. Only when Tang Xiu gave him a tug did he gradually sat down.

Using only a few minutes, Tang Xiu had already packed all his stuff from his table and stood up as head towards the direction of the exit.

"Boss, where are you going?" Yuan ChuLing was still racking his

brains on how to let Tang Xiu remain in class 1 but never would he have expected Tang Xiu to behave in such a manner, so he can't help but asked feeling startled.

“Going to where I should be going.” Tang Xiu waved the bag on his hands as he gave a splendid smile towards Yuan ChuLing.

Yuan ChuLing's startled sound had caught the attention of Hu QiuSheng who was still writing on the blackboard. When he saw that Tang Xiu had already walked to the classroom exit, he slammed his fist onto the teacher's desk with his face filled with rage, “Tang Xiu, we are having lessons now, who allowed you to walk around freely?”

“Tiger Hu, I'm already not a student in this class anymore, do you think you can still control me around?” Tang Xiu glared at Hu QiuSheng coldly as he gave a subtle smile.

During the self-study session in the morning, Tang Xiu did not utter a word when Hu QiuSheng was scolding him, Tang Xiu also did not utter a word when Hu QiuSheng announced Tang Xiu's dismissal in front of the whole class just now, but this did not mean that Tang Xiu had no temper, it was just that Tang Xiu did not want to be so calculative with Hu QiuSheng.

If Hu QiuSheng had allow Tang Xiu to walk out of class freely, then he wouldn't have bothered taking the initiative to provoke Hu QiuSheng, after all, Hu QiuSheng had also taught Tang Xiu for more than two years and was also the main teacher-in-charge of his class, so Tang Xiu did not want to be seen as a person who do not respect his elders.

Yet, Hu QiuSheng had choose to impose his authority to berate Tang Xiu, and thinking back on all the humiliation that Hu QiuSheng had brought to him and his mother in the past 1 year, Tang Xiu naturally could not bear it anymore.

After finishing his sentence, Tang Xiu had stepped out of the classroom without giving Hu QiuSheng the chance to speak.

What Tang Xiu did not know was that when he said the word “Tiger Hu”, not only did he cause Hu QiuSheng to freeze on the spot, he had also cause the rest of the class to be left speechless.

Even though all the students had called Hu QiuSheng “Tiger Hu” behind his back, but nobody would dare to say this nickname out in public, or even more so in front of Hu QiuSheng because they did not dare to face his furry.

“I’m going to deal with you, I’m so going to deal with you, I do not believe that I can’t deal with you!” Hu QiuSheng managed to regulate his breathing after a long while. By this time Tang Xiu was no where to be seen and Hu QiuSheng could not help shivering in anger.

“Tiger Hu, I will take it that you have already agreed to let me switched over to class 10 to study, bye bye. Oh and before I leave I would just like to say this to you, letting Tang Xiu leave this class is the dumbest decision that you have ever made in your life, you will definitely regret it!” Just when Hu QiuSheng wanted to walk out of the classroom to chase after Tang Xiu, another voice resounded in

the classroom.

When Hu QiuSheng looked over, he saw that Yuan ChuLing was actually carrying his study table and chair heading out of class, winking at him while he was at it.

“Yuan ChuLing, you... You leave and never think of coming back!” Thinking back on how Yuan ChuLing’s parents’ had kept an eye on him, Hu QiuSheng could not help but threaten Yuan ChuLing.

“Tiger Hu, since me your grandpa have decided to leave then I have never thought of coming back, even if you begged, your grandpa would still not come back.” Seeing that Hu QiuSheng was so angry that his soul seem to be flying out, Yuan ChuLing had an indescribable satisfaction as his steps became more joyful.

Very soon, Yuan ChuLing disappeared from Hu QiuSheng’s line of sight.

Hu QiuSheng did not attack with mean words when it comes to Yuan ChuLing because he was well aware of Yuan ChuLing’s circumstances; any mean words would be useless against Yuan ChuLing and may even backfire, getting himself humiliated.

When both Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing left the class, Hu QiuSheng who got heavily provoked by them could also not continue on with explaining the answers to the questions in the practice paper. With his mind preoccupied, Hu QiuSheng mumbled to himself as he hastily left the class and headed to the

principal's office.

“Principal Wei, I strongly request that we expel Tang Xiu. Not only is his studies poor, he also do not respect his elders and even lead others astray, if we continue to tolerate him and let him stay in this school then it would only tarnish our reputation!” In the principal's office, Hu QiuSheng earnestly pleaded as he narrated and exaggerated the entire incident that happened in the classroom.

“Old Hu, I would also like to expel Tang Xiu, but you should also know that Teacher Han is always protecting Tang Xiu, he have even made a compromise to you by letting you dismiss Tang Xiu from your class. If you really want to make things difficult for Tang Xiu and wants him to be expelled then it's nearly impossible.” Principal Wei slowly poured a glass of tea for Hu QiuSheng before smiling lightly and explaining to him.

“But... But...” Listening to Principal Wei, Hu QiuSheng felt suffocated and unbearable in his heart as he do not know what to say. Hu QiuSheng could not understand why Han QingWu, the teacher-in-charge of class 10, would protect Tang Xiu.

If not for Han QingWu protecting Tang Xiu, Hu QiuSheng would have already kicked Tang Xiu out of his class one year ago when his results deteriorated. As for agreeing to the pleading of Tang Xiu's mum, Hu QiuSheng actually went along being a benevolent person even though he could not really kick Tang Xiu out of his class.

“Principal Wei, do you know the reason why Teacher Han is so protective of Tang Xiu? I have already investigated numerous

times on Tang Xiu's personal information, family members and also key social networks but I could not find any connection between him and Teacher Han, furthermore I have never seen Teacher Han interacting with Tang Xiu in school before." Hu QiuSheng asked, feeling perplexed.

Logically speaking, Hu QiuSheng was the teacher-in-charge of the gifted class and was also an old teacher who have been teaching in Star City (Grade 1) High School for almost 20 years, whereas Han QingWu was just a teacher-in-charge of the normal class and had just entered the school for a only little more than a year, so Hu QiuSheng could have totally not put him in his eyes.

However the truth was that Hu QiuSheng had to be cautious when speaking in front of Han QingWu and also with a respectful attitude. This does not apply only to Hu QiuSheng but every teacher in school as they seem to be threading on thin ice whenever they were in front of Han QingWu, including Principal Wei ZhenTai himself.

The reason was actually very simple. Han QingWu's father, Han Fu, is actually the chairman of the Ministry of Education in Star City, so if any teachers wants to continue climbing up or wishes to continue their career in teaching, then they could not afford to offend Han QingWu and must even treat him well.

"Old Hu, is knowing the relationship between Tang Xiu and Teacher Han really that important? As long as Teacher Han wishes to protect Tang Xiu then you can forget about kicking Tang Xiu out of school. Actually its not only you who wishes Tang Xiu to be expelled, I received a called this morning and that person also

wishes Tang Xiu to be expelled from the school, and I bet you would never be able to guess who that person is.” Wei ZhenTai gave a weird smile and looked at Hu QiuSheng as he said softly.

“Who?” Wei ZhenTai’s words had successfully caught the attention of Hu QiuSheng as he asked involuntarily.

“The Chairman of ShangWen Organisation, Su ShangWen.” Wei ZhenTai lowered his voice as he replied.

“Su ShangWen? You mean the owner of the rapidly expanding organisation who donated a large dormitory to the school just to let his son enter into Star City (Grade 1) High School? How did Tang Xiu manage to offend such a person? That’s not right, him and Tang Xiu belong to two different world, unless it was because Tang Xiu and his son had some conflict with each other?” Su ShangWen’s past achievements began to surface in Hu QiuSheng’s mind as he heard Su ShangWen’s name.

“Old Hu, didn’t you say that you have investigated numerous times on Tang Xiu’s list of family members? Don’t tell me you don’t know the surname of Tang Xiu’s mum?” Wei ZhenTai had a face filled with doubt after hearing Hu QiuSheng’s words.

“Tang Xiu’s mum?” Hu QiuSheng did not understand why Wei ZhenTai had asked him this question, but he still recalled the simple lady who kept on knelling down to him, and in the next moment, Hu QiuSheng’s pupil shrank abruptly and asked, “Principal, you are not going to tell me that Su LingYun and Su ShangWen are related right?”

“That’s not right, if Su LingYun and Su ShangWen are relatives, then why are both Tang Xiu and his mother so poor that they could not even afford to pay for the school fees? As long as Su ShangWen is willing to slightly leaked a bit of money from in between the gap of his fingernails to Su LingYun and Tang Xiu, then this mother and son would not even need to worry about food and clothes.” Hu QiuSheng was confused.

“This matter is already not within our scope of investigation.” Wei ZhenTai did not acknowledged or deny Hu QiuSheng’s doubts but only continued with what he wanted to say, “Although Su ShangWen had contributed a lot to the school, but with Teacher Han backing Tang Xiu, I naturally could not fulfil his unreasonable demand. Even so, he should have been contented with me agreeing to switch Tang Xiu to class 10.”

Listening to the principal’s words, the corner of Hu QiuSheng’s mouth twitched uncontrollably for a brief moment.

Hu QiuSheng already had the intention to chase Tang Xiu out of his class since a long time ago and had already mentioned it to the principal and the teacher-in-charge of year 3 numerous times, but both of them have always been pushing this matter in circles.

When the principal and year 3 teacher-in-charge had agreed to switch Tang Xiu out of his class, Hu QiuSheng had still thought that it was his persistence that won him this battle, but never would he have thought that Su ShangWen had played a critical role in this decision and that he had taken all of Su ShangWen’s glory.

Thinking back on the mocking look and words from Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing before they left the class, Hu QiuSheng suddenly realised that although he had won, but he had also lost as well.

Chapter 9: Fierce Beautiful Girl

“Boss, why are standing outside the classroom and not going in?” Yuan ChuLing noticed that Tang Xiu was standing silently at the corridor and not going in when he carried his table and chair over to class 10, so he asked curiously.

“Based on Tiger Hu’s character, he must have brought the folder containing my dismissal over to class 10 to read out when it was just released, so I’m guessing that class 10 still do not know that I will be coming over, that’s why I’m waiting for Teacher Han to arrive before going in or else I would only interrupt them studying if I entered rashly.” Although Tang Xiu was stunned from the table and chair on Yuan ChuLing’s hand, but he still answered Yuan ChuLing’s question.

“Studying?” Yuan ChuLing took a peek through the window to see the movements in the class and laughed, “Studying my ass, class 10 is not like the gifted classes, just look at them making a din, it’s as if they can’t wait for us to join them to play!”

Yuan ChuLing wanted to push opened the door after he finished talking.

“Fatty, I appreciate your kind intentions but you should go back, class 5 suits you more, it will only hold you up if you come over here.” Tang Xiu put his hands on Yuan ChuLing’s shoulder as he said with a face filled with sincerity.

“No way, I heard that the people in class 10 are all lawless devils,

I'm afraid that you would suffer so I need to stay here to protect you!" Yuan ChuLing's eyes shone resolutely, "I have never been afraid since young when it comes to fighting, I could still walk out alive even if I have to face the entire class."

Tang Xiu laughed bitterly as he heard Yuan ChuLing's words.

Yuan ChuLing's parents were successful businessman with an asset of over 100 million, but because Yuan ChuLing lived a simple life and was very low-profiled, causing Tang Xiu to almost forget that Yuan ChuLing's had a status like that.

"Fatty, you can come over to class 10 to study but you have to promise that you will concentrate on your studies for this last three months and not give up on yourself like how you used to, or else you better go back to class 5 now." Tang Xiu said earnestly after staying silent for a brief moment.

Yuan ChuLing subconsciously wanted to shake his head to reject when he heard Tang Xiu asking him to study hard, but when he saw the serious look on Tang Xiu's face, he had to forcefully suppress his urge to shake his head.

After a long internal struggle, Yuan ChuLing raised his head, "boss, you are right, it's not that I don't want to learn but I'm giving up on myself purely because I want to take revenge on my parents. I also don't want to ruin the rest of my life just like that, and I'm not resigned to be a bad student. Since boss wants to put in your best effort in this last few months then I shall accompany you to put in my best effort together."

“Yi, are you two the students of this class? Why are you two standing outside of the class and not going in?” Just when Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing were busy talking with each other, a girl had ran to the entrance of the classroom door panting hard, and after giving Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing a curious glance, she called out to them.

The girl had a short hair at the neck level. Her hairstyle was very neatly cut and her low-tone coffee coloured hair made her overall hairstyle looked in-trend, with a refreshing and energetic look, without losing the feel of a student.

Yuan ChuLing gave the girl a glance before his eyes became a straight line, even Tang Xiu was captivated by the girl’s exquisite complexion and her sunshine smile.

The girls in class 5 either wears thick spectacles or tie their hair up into two pony tails and have an atmosphere of heavy lethargy due to stress. They also do not take the initiative to call out to people, so don’t even mention about dyeing their hair.

“Hi pretty lady, I’m Yuan ChuLing and this is my best friend Tang Xiu. We are previously from class 5 but from today onwards we are classmates.” After losing focus for a brief moment, Yuan ChuLing hastily stretched out his meaty hands to the short hair girl.

“I was transferred to this school a month ago. I’m called Cheng YanNan, it’s my pleasure to know you two.” Cheng YanNan gave a

broad smile before reaching out her hand towards Yuan ChuLing.

“You two must be waiting for the teacher, then I will head into the classroom first.” Cheng YanNan waived her hand at Tang Xiu before stretching out her hand to push open the door.

Seeing Cheng YanNan’s action of pushing the door, Tang Xiu’s heart was raised to his throat.

With the returned of his soul, Tang Xiu’s senses and brain processing speed far exceeds normal people. Tang Xiu had clearly noticed that when he had arrived outside of class 10, all the students in class 10 had an excited expression when they looked at him, as if he was their prey. This situation had caused him be more on guard.

As he was standing outside the classroom, he could hear all the whispers happening inside the classroom with his super-human hearing and subsequently knew what was going on.

It turns out that the student of class 10 had set up a trap at the top of the entrance door using a broom and a dustpan, so when someone pushes open the door and enters, the broom and dustpan would smash onto them.

Tang Xiu would naturally not walk right into the trap after finding out about the existence of it, so he simply stood outside of the classroom to wait for the teacher to come and also to see how the students would clear up the mess when the teacher arrives.

When Cheng YanNan came, Tang Xiu could hear the suppressed cheers coming from inside the classroom and also saw that everyone revealed a look of excitement and anticipation. It was also this moment when Tang Xiu understood that the trap was probably set up to deal with Cheng YanNan.

“Cheng YanNan, are you always late for class?” Tang Xiu could not bear to see Cheng YanNan getting smashed by the broom and dustpan, so he purposely disrupted Cheng YanNan’s action of pushing open the door.

“Why would you ask me this question?” Cheng YanNan looked at Tang Xiu with a curious gaze as her hands movement went sluggish.

In the next moment, Cheng YanNan had a face of realisation as she quickly took two steps back before raising her beautiful long slender legs and giving the classroom door a kick.

After that a “peng” sound could be heard, a “kang dang” sound resounded incessantly as dust was flying all around.

Yuan ChuLing was left dumbstruck when he saw the broom and dustpan that was all over the floor and suck in a breath of cool air as he celebrated internally that he did not pushed open the classroom door just now.

“My god, this bunch of grandsons from class 10 are really sinister to play such a big prank.” After staring blankly for a long time, Yuan ChuLing can’t help mumbling to himself when he finally got

hold of what was going on.

Tang Xiu had his gaze fixed on Cheng YanNan as her reaction was simply out of Tang Xiu's expectation. Furthermore her last action of raising her leg and the kick's arc and strength gave Tang Xiu a breathtaking impression.

“Tang Xiu, Yuan ChuLing, you guys don't have to be afraid, their trap was meant for me so its not related to you guys.” Cheng YanNan smiled as she saw the dumbstruck look on Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing, and used a soft voice to comfort them, “you two seems not bad, I would take care of two of you next time in class.”

After Cheng YanNan finished talking, she took big steps into the classroom.

Tang Xiu could clearly hear that when Cheng YanNan successfully avoided the trap, the students in the classroom were heaving sighs in successions and a few students who were sitting at the front hastily cleared up the broom and dustpan, making it seem as if nothing had ever happened.

Just when all the students had gotten back to their seats, a rhythmic “da” “da” sound echoed through the corridor and was obvious that it was someone wearing high heels that was walking over.

Looking at the direction of the footsteps, a woman wearing a typical female working attire was heading over towards the classroom of class 10. She was wearing a black and white checkered

short-sleeved shirt revealing her snow white skin on her arms, a bright red skirt, and a bright silk stocking.

This lady had a long and straight beautiful hair which was elegantly captivating, a standard goose-egg shaped pretty face, a bright and clean forehead, skin as white as snow, refined long eyebrows, a sharp nose, lips with an exceptionally gentle and beautiful curve that was so tender that makes people want to take a bite on it, and a sharp and smooth chin. In other words, it was a perfect and flawless face.

If previously Cheng YanNan was as beautiful as a wintersweet flower who was graceful and proud, then the lady in front of their eyes was like violet flower, simple, elegant and noble, breathtaking but not overwhelming.

“Tang Xiu, you’re here early, I was still thinking of going over to class 5 to fetch you over once this lesson ends.” While Tang Xiu was staring at this lady blankly, her cherry lips opened and revealed a set of pure white teeth as she called out with a light smile, her voice so soothing and pleasant to listen to.

“Hel... Hello Teacher Han!” Tang Xiu got back to his senses only when Han QingWu called out to him and replied to her with a face blushing red.

The reason why Tang Xiu was staring at Han QingWu blankly was not because of her captivating looks but because Han QingWu had a very similar look as his lover in the Immortal World which made him dumbfounded for a moment.

If not for him checking that Han QingWu did not possess even half a spiritual energy on her, Tang Xiu would have thought that his lover from the Immortal World had followed him back to Earth.

“Tang Xiu, the principal and Year 3 teacher-in-charge had already spoken to me with regards to your matter, if you do not mind being in class 10, then you will be with me for this few months.” Han QingWu seemed to be satisfied with Tang Xiu’s reaction as her smile on her face got even brighter.

“I will still need to ask teacher for your care and guidance.” Tang Xiu adjusted his emotions as he silently observed Han QingWu.

Tang Xiu felt that Han QingWu was being too overly enthusiastic with him but he could not think of any instances where he had interactions with her. Furthermore, Han QingWu looked really similar to his lover in the Immortal World which made Tang Xiu feel uncomfortable, but he could only choose to avoid it.

“Tang Xiu you’re being too polite, you are the one who got the first place during the entrance examination into Star City (Grade 1) High School, so I’m still pinning my hopes that you would give me a miracle during the final year examination.” Han QingWu did not notice anything unusual on Tang Xiu as she continued to encourage him in a gentle voice.

Tang Xiu went into contemplation as he touched his nose while listening.

“Teacher Han, I’m Tang Xiu’s best friend in class 5 and I would like to apply to join class 10 to continue my studies, so I would like to ask teacher Han to accept me in.” Yuan ChuLing noticed that Han QingWu had her eyes focused on Tang Xiu the entire time and not once did she looked at him, so he waited until Han QingWu had finished up her conversation with Tang Xiu and hurriedly spoke up.

Chapter 10: Insensitive

Han QingWu only realised that Yuan ChuLing was here when she heard his voice.

Seeing that Yuan ChuLing had actually brought his table and chair along, she let out a laugh with a mesmerising smile on her face. Her round and ample chest was also moving up and down, causing Yuan ChuLing's eyes to form a straight line instantly.

“As long as Teacher Hu permits, then I would naturally welcome you.” After looking at Yuan ChuLing for a brief moment, Han QingWu turned to look at Tang Xiu at the side and nodded her head with a light smile, “You and Tang Xiu go to the back of the classroom to sit down, I will introduce the two of you to everyone.”

Seeing that Han QingWu was willing to accept him in, Yuan ChuLing was unable to contain his joy as he quickly walked into the classroom first.

After Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing settled down at their seats, Han QingWu begin to introduce Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing to the class.

When Han QingWu was introducing Tang Xiu, hissing sound could be heard in the classroom as everyone was whispering to one another in discussion.

Clearly hearing the discussion happening around, Tang Xiu

turned a deaf ear to it, but Yuan ChuLing's face became green in anger, if not for Tang Xiu tugging at the corner of his shirt tightly, Yuan ChuLing would have jumped in anger.

Luckily Han QingWu was strong at handling situations, with a light cough, the classroom returned back to its former serenity. Han QingWu gave an apologetic look towards Tang Xiu before asking the class to take out their monthly test paper to go through.

However what made Tang Xiu astonished was that Han QingWu was actually using English to conduct her class without even using half a Chinese word, so much so that Tang Xiu did not understand a single word that Han QingWu was saying even after a few minutes into the lesson.

It was not that Tang Xiu's English was poor or that his hearing had problems, but it was purely because he was not used to it and that he did not expect any teacher to use English to conduct their class at high school level.

Yuan ChuLing was also puzzled after hearing it, he wanted to cut off Han QingWu's lesson for a while or ask the student next to him on what was going on, but seeing that all the student were eagerly paying attention to the lesson, he could not help but forced himself to pay more attention to the lesson.

After three minutes, Tang Xiu had dejectedly given up on listening to the lesson and decided to take out his English dictionary to read. This was because although Tang Xiu was able to hear every word that Han QingWu was saying clearly, but he was unable to understand every word that Han QingWu had said, so he

realised that the amount of vocabulary that he knew of was very limited and decided to learn more vocabulary first to fill up his vocabulary list.

When Yuan ChuLing saw that Tang Xiu wasn't concentrating his attention on the lesson but reading the dictionary, he was delighted and immediately followed what Tang Xiu was doing by taking out a very thick Oxford dictionary and began putting on an act of reading it.

Although Han QingWu was explaining the solutions to the test paper, but her attention was always focused on Tang Xiu. When Han QingWu realised that Tang Xiu could not even persist for more than ten minutes and gave up on listening to the lesson, her face involuntarily revealed a dejected expression as her initial high spirits were dropped to the lowest point.

Throughout the whole lesson until it ended, Han QingWu had took a few glances on Tang Xiu, but Tang Xiu had buried his head in the dictionary the whole time and not once did he lift his head up, causing Han QingWu to be thoroughly disappointed.

When the bell for the end of class rang, Han QingWu left the classroom hastily at almost the same time.

Following Han QingWu's departure, the previously quiet classroom became lively in an instance.

"Listening to Teacher Han's lesson is both a pain and an enjoyment. Although we could not understand what she was

explaining at all, but we have to act as if we understand so as to not disappoint Teacher Han.”

“You’re right, even if we can’t understand anything that she had just said, but just listening to Teacher Han’s voice is a kind of enjoyment. Furthermore we still have the opportunity to see Teacher Han’s wonderful figure.”

“Yi, why are these two bastard so insensitive by not paying attention when attending Teacher Han’s lesson!”

The students of class 10 was still discussing on the “Art of listening in class” when they unintentionally saw that both Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing were actually holding up their English dictionary to read, angering them as they indignantly surrounded Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing one by one.

Yuan ChuLing had wanted to join in the conversation when he heard his classmates discussing on the art of listening in class, but never would he have thought that the students of class 10 would suddenly picked on him and Tang Xiu and felt that he got stabbed in the back even though he was lying down.

“Newcomer, we are talking about you, why are you acting deaf?” Yuan ChuLing opened his mouth and was about to acknowledge his mistake as he was in a new environment and did not want to stir any trouble, but before Yuan ChuLing could utter a word, a peculiar voice resounded beside his ear as the English dictionary in his hand was slapped onto the floor.

“You!” Yuan ChuLing was already hot-tempered to begin with and could not stand this kind of attitude, making him sprang up on his feet, breathing heavily.

The student who provoked Yuan ChuLing clearly did not expect that Yuan ChuLing’s temper would flare so easily because when Yuan ChuLing stood straight, his suppressive stature caused the student to stagger and stepped back a few steps. If not because of someone standing behind that student to prop him up, he would have already fell sitting on the floor.

“Fatty, do not forget the things that you told me when you were at the corridor.” Just when Yuan ChuLing wanted to kill the chicken to warn the monkey by properly trashing out with that student, Tang Xiu’s calm voice suddenly resounded beside his ear.

“Hey coward, they are bullying you and you’re still shirking back, go and fight back if you have the guts.” Just when Yuan ChuLing was prepared to cease his actions, a piercing voice resounded once again in the classroom. This cause Yuan ChuLing who had just cooled down to fly into a rage instantly.

However, Yuan ChuLing had a weird expression on his face when he stared at the person who shouted and gave a puzzled look towards Tang Xiu.

This was because the person who mocked and ridiculed Tang Xiu was not a stranger but his cousin Su XiangFei.

Yuan ChuLing would have already slapped him if he was other

people, but because the other party was Tang Xiu's cousin so Yuan ChuLing naturally needed to seek Tang Xiu's opinion.

Only when Tang Xiu saw Su XiangFei did he remembered that Su XiangFei was studying in class 10. Seeing the rage on Su XiangFei's face, Tang Xiu can't help but laughed, "Su XiangFei, are you sure you want to continue playing this game? If you think that it would be more interesting this way then I don't mind continue playing this game with you."

Listening to those words, Su XiangFei's body quivered uncontrollably as he subconsciously remembered the scene of him being brought to the police station in the afternoon yesterday.

At that time, Tang Xiu seemed to have said the exact same words to him before the incident became uncontrollable, causing his whole family to be brought to the police station.

Su XiangFei wanted to retort back but under Tang Xiu's sharp look, Su XiangFei froze and did not dare to utter a word. The incident yesterday afternoon had left a deep traumatic experience on Su XiangFei by Tang Xiu.

"Why are all of you still standing there, asking for a beating?" A clear and loud shout suddenly resounded behind Su XiangFei as he was still hesitating whether to continue fighting back with Tang Xiu.

"Cheng YanNan, I did not provoke you this time so don't meddle in other people's business!" Su XiangFei retorted back like a

conditioned reflexed as he heard the voice from his back.

“If you didn’t provoke me then what was with the broom and dustpan doing lying on top of the classroom door just now? Don’t think that I couldn’t guess it was you!” Cheng YanNan swiftly grabbed onto Su XiangFei’s collar at the back as she gave a cold snort.

Su XiangFei did not expect Cheng YanNan to take action without saying more as his face turned white the instance his collar was grabbed, and said loudly, “Cheng YanNan, if you continue to touch me I will find people in the society to deal with... ahhhhh...”

Before Su XiangFei could complete his sentence, he heard a cold snort from Cheng YanNan and following next, his body was brought into the air as he flew backwards uncontrollably.

After a few seconds, Su XiangFei landed heavily on the floor with a loud thud with dust flying all around.

“Cheng YanNan you this bitch, you threw me beside the rubbish bin again!” Just when everyone was worried if Su XiangFei was injured from the fall, two “pui pui” sound could be heard from him as he started hurling abuses at her.

“If your mouth continues to spew out such degrading words then i don’t mind throwing you into the bin next time!” Cheng YanNan said harshly as she glared at Su XiangFei coldly.

Hearing Cheng YanNan's words, Su XiangFei seem as if he was strangled by the neck with his face flushed red, not daring to utter a single word.

With Su XiangFei, their leader, being dealt with, the rest of the students were angered but did not dare to say anything, the looks in their eyes when staring at Cheng YanNan were as if they spewing out fire.

Cheng YanNan seemed to be satisfied by the effects of her killing a chicken to warn the monkeys and swept her gaze through the rest of the students as she said loudly, "Every single one of you here better remember this, Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing are my good friends so if anyone dares to confront or tease them next time I will definitely go for good round of sparring with them."

After she was done saying her piece, Cheng YanNan casually slapped Tang Xiu's shoulder and said with a clear voice, "As a guy, you must be more aggressive or else you can't survive in society!"

"But not to worry, as long as there is me around, I would guarantee that no one in class would bully the two of you. If there is anyone that bullies or ridicule the two of you, just feel free to tell me and I will definitely help settle the score for you!" Cheng YanNan started talking by herself again even before waiting for Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing to reply.

Cheng YanNan's words were like a toothache for Su XiangFei as he looked at Tang Xiu with eyes filled with jealousy.

Su XiangFei could not understand why there was always people helping Tang Xiu whenever Tang Xiu was in trouble.

When there was no way out for Tang Xiu at his own house yesterday afternoon, the police came over to help him; when his father wanted to kick Tang Xiu out of school, Teacher Han was there to protect him; even this time when Tang Xiu was transferred over to his own class today and wanted to give Tang Xiu an unforgettable lesson, Cheng YanNan actually stood out for him.

The farce came and go like the wind, when the bell for the start of lesson rang, the students surrounding Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing dispersed and returned back to their seats. At this moment, Yuan ChuLing had still not reacted to what was going on.

“Boss, did I become a little more handsome again? If not why did Cheng YanNan stood out to save us?” After a good long while, Yuan ChuLing started to tug on Tang Xiu’s arm with a narcissistic expression.

“Just wait and go to the toilet when the lesson ends and you will know if you have gotten more handsome or not.” Tang Xiu shot Yuan ChuLing an eye as he replied with a disgusted tone.

There was a smile on Yuan ChuLing’s face after hearing Tang Xiu’s words and just when he wanted to counter-attack, he realised that Tang Xiu had once again brought his attention back to the English dictionary, so he could only give up on that thought.

Chapter 11: A Kiss To Qing Cheng

Maybe it was due to Cheng YanNan's intimidating words, or because the final-year examination was getting nearer and nearer, but everyone gradually lost the desire to fool around. During this time, nobody went to disturb Tang Xiu and Yuan ChuLing.

With the returned of his soul and especially after successfully cultivating the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space, Tang Xiu realised that his memory was really terrifying. As long as he glance through any book once, it would be deeply imprinted in his mind and would not be able to forget even if he wanted to.

Together with his memory being astonishing, his comprehension skills was equally hard for normal people to catch up to.

Tang Xiu had only used two days to devour a ten over centimetres thick English dictionary and stored them all in his mind completely. The rest of the students, including Yuan ChuLing, had still thought that Tang Xiu was only flipping the dictionary for two days out of boredom.

After that, Tang Xiu spent another day's time to finish flipping through the English studying materials from year 1 to year 3 and thus, finally able to stop revising English as a subject.

When his mind had contained all the information from the whole book of Oxford dictionary and all of the high school English studying materials, Tang Xiu realised that he could actually completely understand Han QingWu's lesson that was in English

and was also confident that he could converse with Han QingWu in English.

Next, Tang Xiu began to flip through all the Literature textbook once and at the same time, can't help but look through all of the Literature past year papers and outstanding compositions that was on his desk. After that, he was surprised to find out that doing Literature questions were becoming an enjoyment to him.

After finish revising English and Literature which requires a large amount of memory work as a subject, Tang Xiu then placed his energy on Physics, Chemistry and Biology. Relying on his powerful memory, terrifying comprehension skills, and also his initial foundations, Tang Xiu was able to use less than 10 days to grasp back this three subjects.

Tang Xiu was enjoying the quiet and calm days which he was unable to live back in the Immortal World. There were no endless training and no endless slaughter, every day was only about going to school, going to the cafeteria and going back to the dormitory.

This was the first time Tang Xiu had tried spending his time and effort on things other than cultivating which was a new and strange feeling to him.

In just half a month, Tang Xiu began to feel bored.

This was because Tang Xiu realised that there was nothing for him to learn anymore. Any practice paper that was on his desk could be easily completed and could even attain full marks, any

Olympiad-level questions could be mentally solved by Tang Xiu, and even all the theories and formulas from the given studying materials could be counter-argued by Tang Xiu.

“The knowledge that I have learned so far is enough for me to handle the final year examination, I could even snatch back the first place that initially belonged to me without any problem if I want to. So what should I do to spend away the remaining two more months?” After sweeping through all the studying materials and practice papers on Tang Xiu’s desk, Tang Xiu felt disappointed and frustrated.

When Tang Xiu’s gaze unintentionally landed on Su XiangFei, he realised that Su XiangFei was glaring at him with eyes filled with hatred. In that instance, Tang Xiu quivered and immediately became more awake.

“How could I have forgotten about the matter on cultivating? Although the world on Earth isn’t filled with bloodshed and slaughter like the Immortal World and not too high a martial skill is needed, but I should at least have the ability to defend myself right?” Tang Xiu smacked his head and after that began to select the most suitable cultivation technique from his enormous memory bank.

The first cultivation technique that surfaced in Tang Xiu’s mind was the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space. In this short period of time, although he did not intentionally cultivate the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space, but he realised that ever since he successfully cultivated this cultivation technique subconsciously in the hospital, cultivating this technique seemed to be his instinct.

Every time he went to sleep, his body would involuntarily start cultivating the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space.

The good thing was that this kind of subconscious cultivation was rather slow and would not cause any harm to Tang Xiu. On the contrary, Tang Xiu would feel very refreshed, full of spirit, and could even vaguely feel that his mental strength was gradually becoming stronger.

However, recalling back on the pain from the first time cultivating the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space, the corner of Tang Xiu's mouth twitched violently as he firmly decided to filter out the Supreme Art of Quintessential Space cultivation technique.

Art of Golden Swarn, Sapphire Flame Art, Art of Frozen Heart...

The amount of cultivation technique and martial skills for Tang Xiu to select was simply too many. Other people may fret the lack of cultivation technique and martial skills to train in but Tang Xiu was fretting over which type of cultivation technique and martial skills to select.

However Tang Xiu quickly realised that he was thinking too much.

In this ten days, Tang Xiu was thinking through all the knowledge and experiences that he had gathered and in the end realised that all the countless secret martial skills and top notch cultivation technique that had let the people in the Immortal World shed blood and lose their lives were like worthless

ornaments.

This was because all these cultivation techniques and martial skills was created for those whose physiques were already very strong and have a decent foundation to cultivate. Tang Xiu already had a decent foundation when he first crossed over to the Immortal World, therefore improving tremendously by relying on those cultivation techniques and martial skills.

The body that he had now was extremely feeble, his cultivation aptitude was also horrible, adding on to the fact that there was barely any spiritual energy around on Earth, thus there was no way to train using all those cultivation technique and martial skills that was contained in his mind.

However Tang Xiu was not discouraged as he tried to briefly recall his deeper memories captured from his other body back when he crossed over during that body's younger days. Although recalling from this two memories were very difficult, but in the end he still managed to recall back on some elementary chants that does not have a high requirement on spiritual energy and aptitude.

During this one week, Tang Xiu was patiently trying out these outstanding basic chants one by one, but his body that was born on Earth with no existence of spiritual energy was simply too atrocious. If it was put in the Immortal World, his body may even be put below that of the half-demon human race.

As time continues to flow, Tang Xiu's knitted brows were getting deeper and deeper after half a month and he gradually felt anxious.

“Calm down, I must calm down, there is a broad and wide amount of techniques in the Immortal World so there is definitely a cultivation technique that is suitable for me, just that I have not recalled it yet. Just what cultivation technique have I not tried yet...” Tang Xiu kept on comforting and encouraging himself as he continued to rack his brains.

However what Tang Xiu did not know was that when he suddenly stopped looking at his books to learn and sat on his seat “daydreaming” every day and even frequently ignoring Yuan ChuLing’s question, Yuan ChuLing’s heart sank straight down as he looked at Tang Xiu feeling worried and anxious.

Not only was Yuan ChuLing feeling this way but even Han QingWu and Cheng YanNan who secretly cares for Tang Xiu were worried.

Although there were people who were worried about Tang Xiu, but there were also people who subconsciously breathe a sigh of relief and rejoicing.

“That scared me, Tang Xiu was always reading books and doing practice papers all day long, not leaving his seat when he just came into our class. I still thought that his mind had recovered back to normal and would pull up his grades during this last three months.” After reaching home, Su XiangFei took off his shoe, threw his bag to one side and jumped onto the wide and soft sofa.

“You’re saying that Tang Xiu isn’t looking at his books and doing

practice papers anymore?” Hearing Su XiangFei’s words, Zhang MeiYun who was paying attention to the television program became energetic instantly.

“Either he can’t continue acting anymore or that he has no more energy to continue studying even when he wants to. Every day he is just sitting at his seat with his mind somewhere else, he would even daydream when the teacher calls his name, angering the teacher.” Su XiangFei’s mouth twitched as he said in disdain.

“Mum, you’re thinking too much, how could Tang Xiu’s mind could have recovered. The incident last month was definitely a coincidence, most probably it was due to us pressuring him too much, that’s why he would ramble all that to dad. If Tang Xiu’s mind was really recovered then why would he use his head to knock onto dad? Su YaNing said without much thought as she peeled a pine and put it in her mouth.

Su ShangWen kept feeling that there was something wrong when he recalled being knocked and stabbed all over by Tang Xiu. Although one month have passed, but Su ShangWen could not forget that incident as he have never felt so ashamed before in this ten over years.

“Was it really just all a coincidence?” Su ShangWen gradually began to believe their judgement when he couldn’t think of any possible reason after thinking for a long while.

“ShangWen, stop being suspicious already. Did you really believe Su LingYun this bitch when she said that her son’s mind had recovered? With our son monitoring Tang Xiu every day, do you

still need to worry that he will escape from our hands? As long as he dares to walk out of the school compound, even if his mind had really recovered, we would also be able to make it not normal again!” Seeing the worried expression on her husband’s face, Zhang MeiYun walked to her husband’s side and pursed her lips as she whispered softly beside his ears.

Even though Su ShangWen did not like Tang Xiu, but he still felt uncomfortable inside when he heard his wife spew out words like bitch and bastard from her mouth.

When Su ShangWen heard that his wife had already found people to deal with Tang Xiu, his heart skipped a beat and subconsciously wanted to open his mouth to stop her, but after thinking back on humiliation given by Tang Xiu, he stopped immediately.

A month’s time flew pass unknowingly and the second monthly test for year 3 students were coming. During this time, Tang Xiu had still not found a suitable cultivation technique for himself. It was not that Tang Xiu did not want to recover his cultivation that he had in the Immortal World as soon as possible, but it was because he simply could not do it.

Compared to the Immortal World that was concentrated with spiritual energy, Earth was like a barren wasteland with spiritual energy being too sparse.

When Tang Xiu was in the Immortal World, he had collected countless cultivation techniques and martial skills, and had also bought and exchanged countless heirloom and secret manuals.

However with Earth having such sparse spiritual energy, Tang Xiu realised that not a single cultivation technique and martial skill could be trained after trying all of them.

“Tang Xiu, you must really work hard for this upcoming monthly test. I just had a gamble with Teacher Hu in the office that if your results drop again this time then my next month’s pay would be given to him, and if your result is not the lowest in the cohort then his next month’s pay would all be given to me. Whether I could hold onto my pay would depend on you.”

When Han QingWu realise that Tang Xiu was still daydreaming and not in his right state of mind even though the test was coming soon, she could not help calling Tang Xiu into her office to plead him, almost flirtatiously.

Listening to Han QingWu’s close whispering voice and looking at her playful expression, Han QingWu’s face and Xue QingCheng, his lover in the Immortal World, gradually combined into one. With a sudden realisation, Tang Xiu embraced Han QingWu’s body as he lightly imprinted his kiss on Han QingWu’s ice cold cherry lips.

Chapter 12: I Will Take Care Of You For Life

Han QingWu clearly did not expect that Tang Xiu would kiss her when she went to find him to talk.

Other than being with her dad when she was young, Han QingWu had never been so intimate with someone of the opposite gender before, thus, when she was embraced by Tang Xiu, she froze momentarily, unable to react to the situation.

While smelling the light soap scent from Tang Xiu's body and feeling his strong arm, Han QingWu fell into a daze and forgot to resist.

Only when Tang Xiu's action was being more inappropriate where he forcefully stuck his tongue into her mouth and grabbed her butt and chest with his hands did Han QingWu realise what was happening.

Feeling ashamed and angry, Han QingWu slapped Tang Xiu's face fiercely.

"Tang Xiu, you're too much!" Han QingWu's tears uncontrollably trickled down as she recalled that her first kiss she had preciousely preserved was gone just like that.

"Shouldn't you repay what you owe me?" These words subconsciously came out of Tang Xiu's mouth.

Only after Tang Xiu finish saying his lines did he awoke from his frenzied kiss and realised that this was not in the Immortal World but on Earth. The woman in front of his eyes was also not his lover Xue QingCheng who had once betrayed him but his class' teacher-in-charge Han QingWu, causing Tang Xiu to uncontrollably freeze at that moment.

The reason why Tang Xiu mistook Han QingWu for Xue QingCheng was because during this period of time, he has been trying to select different kinds of cultivation techniques and martial skills that belong to the Immortal world. Having been living in the memories of the Immortal World for a whole half a month, he often mixed up the Immortal World and reality.

Under Han QingWu's gaze, Tang Xiu looked down with guilt as he did not dare to look at Han QingWu.

Just when Tang Xiu was prepared to apologise, his peripheral vision unintentionally landed on Han QingWu's delicate and slender thigh and the faintly discernible panty mark under her pink short skirt, his nose suddenly felt a hot surge.

After touching his nose a few times and confirming that he did not have a nose bleed, Tang Xiu let out a breath of relief as he revealed a self-mocking expression.

Han QingWu seems to have just washed her hair as her damp red hair was sticking onto her cheeks, appearing mesmerising like a flower. Her body was releasing an indistinct sexiness that was more impactful than her beautiful looks, causing Tang Xiu to be unable to control his body's natural reaction.

“Tang Xiu, so you already knew?” After listening to Tang Xiu’s words, Han QingWu’s tender body quivered as her the anger on her face instantly dissolved, replaced with a face filled with guilt, “Tang Xiu, I’m sorry. You saved me one year ago but I did not dare to reveal myself due to some predicaments that were hard for me to speak, and after that because of my own selfishness, I did not come forward to apologise to you.”

Just when Tang Xiu was worrying that his vile conduct would cause him to be expelled from school, Han QingWu’s words abruptly startled him.

Shouldn’t Han QingWu be scolding me sternly or finding the principal to lodge a complaint while crying? Why did she apologise to me instead?

After thinking over Han QingWu’s words once more, an old memory suddenly sprang up in Tang Xiu’s mind as a dismayed expression unconsciously surfaced on his face.

“It’s you, so you’re that person from one year ago...” Tang Xiu’s gaze was fixated on Han QingWu. After a brief moment, his pupils contracted and his mouth opened widely as he subconsciously cried out in alarm.

Before Tang Xiu could finish his sentence, his mouth was covered by Han QingWu’s hand.

“I beg you, don’t say anymore, please don’t tell anyone about this

matter.” After hearing the first few words that Tang Xiu had said, Han QingWu’s expression changed drastically as she pleadingly replied.

However, Han QingWu was puzzled by Tang Xiu’s action as she pleaded Tang Xiu not to reveal her identity out.

Unless Tang Xiu did not recognise me before I went out honest with him... then why did he say that I should repay what I owed him?

What Han QingWu did not notice was that because she was flustered right now, her position with Tang Xiu was very ambiguous. Her body was literally sticking in Tang Xiu’s embrace with one hand over Tang Xiu’s neck and the other hand covering his mouth as if she was seducing Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu felt both pain and happiness during this time. With only a thin clothing separating them, Tang Xiu could feel Han QingWu’s warm and astonishingly elastic body. Even if he wanted to take a step back, there was no space. Han QingWu was almost the same height as Tang Xiu while wearing her heels, and with their eyes less than 10 centimetres apart, he could almost see the watermarks in Han QingWu’s eyes, seducing people’s soul.

Both of their faces accidentally touched slightly and they could feel the warm breath on their ears. Having a sudden urge, Tang Xiu looked down and saw a plump chest being squashed out of shape. Looking passed the collar, he could even see a big patch of snow-white skin as well as a very eye-catching deep valley.

Tang Xiu wanted to kiss Han QingWu again but thinking back of that slap from before and of the status of Han QingWu, Tang Xiu who is now vigilant did not want to defile the goddess in front of him.

Only when she noticed that Tang Xiu's breathing was becoming more restless and the way he looked at her was becoming more hectic did Han QingWu realise that she had lost control in that moment. She let go of Tang Xiu's mouth hastily as her fair and exquisite face gradually grew intoxicatingly red and her eyes radiated an alluring expression.

“Tang Xiu, I am not the type to be ungrateful to someone whom I'm indebted to. It wasn't convenient for me to find you during that time but when I wanted to find you to explain myself, there had been some problems with your mind, that's why I could only secretly take care of you in the dark.” Seeing that Tang Xiu's feverish gaze was gradually dissipating, Han QingWu let out a breath of relief while her heart felt a little disappointed.

Under Tang Xiu's inquiring gaze, Han QingWu narrated the incident that happened that time.

Two years ago a college entrance exam fraud incident in the province of ShuangQing had shocked the whole nation, warranting a thorough investigation from the top management all the way down in ShuangQing province's education system. During that time, the deputy head of Star City's ministry of education, Han Fu, was also implicated and was directly sent to prison.

Han QingWu strongly believed that her father was innocent but

at that time she had just stepped out of her university compound and all of her father's friends went missing, even their relatives hid away from them.

With no solution on hand, Han Qing Wu could only think of a solution herself.

Alas, the heaven did not disappoint people who persevere. Under Han QingWu's many days of tracking down and gathering information, she finally understood the truth behind the incident. After that, without any regards, she dressed up in a sexy and seductive manner to get close to a key witness, seizing a very important evidence from him.

But never did she think that the key witness would be so vigilant as he felt that something was amiss just when Han QingWu had taken the evidence away, therefore chasing after her.

Agitated, Han QingWu crossed the road without much thought and before she knew it, she was already in a sea of cars.

Even if the speed of the cars in the city area were rather slow, generally, there would still be an exception in any situation. When she realised that a car was swerving its way towards her direction rapidly, she screamed in fright as she could not react in any other way.

Luckily, Tang Xiu stepped in during the critical moment and saved Han QingWu, but Tang Xiu was hit and sent flying by the car.

After being rescued, Han QingWu was afraid that the evidence in her hand would be snatched back, thus she quickly concealed herself in the crowd and fled without even taking a look at Tang Xiu.

With this key evidence, Han QingWu's father, Han Fu, was cleared of all his grievances while the head of Star City's ministry of education, who was initially sitting at the side watching the storm, was thrown in jail. Even a few of Han Fu's strong competitors went inside as well, thus Han Fu sat on the throne of being the head of the ministry of education without many obstacles.

When Han QingWu's consciousness had calmed down from her father's incident, two months had already passed. It was also at this time that she recalled back on her saviour during those critical moments, making her search frantically for him after that.

Han QingWu knew that if this person did not step in to save her in those critical moments, then not only would she have lost her life but her father would also be locked in jail for many years and her initially happy and blissful family would be shattered.

Although the incident happened two months ago, Han QingWu still managed to pick out the case of the car accident from the traffic police easily.

The taxi driver that swerved and drove the car towards her was drunk that night. He mistook the oil pedal for the break and

steered the steering wheel in the wrong direction out of panic, thus causing the accident.

The person who saved her was a student from Star City (Grade 1) High school and was even ranked first among the whole cohort when he entered Star City (Grade 1) High school.

Han QingWu pestered her father and managed to fight for Tang Xiu the award of being a good student in ShuangQing province, and at the same time, made the traffic police give out a certificate and a medal for being courageous through her connections.

Just when Han QingWu wanted to thank Tang Xiu in person, she heard some news that almost made her collapse from the doctors: Tang Xiu's brain got severely impacted during the car accident, leaving behind a repercussion that was almost impossible to recover from. In the next few years, not only would Tang Xiu's intelligent seriously fall, his memory would gradually disappear. In the end, he would gradually be reduced to a vegetative state.

Han QingWu could not accept this cruel reality and she did not even dare to meet Tang Xiu.

However, the gratitude and guilt in her heart could not let her walk away just like that. After agonising for a month, the haggard Han QingWu gave up on her high paying job and chose to enter Star City (Grade 1) High School to accompany Tang Xiu.

After a year of observation, Han QingWu found out that not only did Tang Xiu's intelligent dropped severely but his memory also

became atrocious. His understanding and thinking capabilities were only barely passable, however, the difference, compared to the time he just entered the school, was like heaven and earth.

The worse Tang Xiu's condition becomes, the guiltier Han QingWu feels. She did not dare to get close to Tang Xiu nor dare to disclose the truth of the car accident to Tang Xiu or Su LingYun.

Han QingWu did not know how she should repay or compensate Tang Xiu, the only thing she could do was to pay attention to Tang Xiu secretly, and if she hears anybody bad mouthing Tang Xiu, she would lightly berate them.

Han QingWu even almost fell out with the principal regarding the discussion on the issue of expelling Tang Xiu by the school and cohort team. The original mastermind, Hu QiuSheng, had even been blacklisted by Han QingWu.

“Tang Xiu, I'm sorry, I was the one being too selfish. I should have apologised to you long ago but I was afraid that my reputation would be tarnished so I hesitated for a very long time and did not dare to say the truth out. It was really hard for me to bear deep inside my heart.....” Han QingWu felt relaxed immediately after saying finish her lines.

Ever since the accident happened, Han QingWu would be woken up from a nightmare almost every day.

Over the past one year plus, Han QingWu had always carried a heavy moral chain.

The guilt in her heart had tortured her, making her toss and turn, unable to fall asleep. She even despised and loathed herself.

“Tang Xiu, I can finally stop experiencing the inner criticism towards myself in my heart from today onwards. I will always be by your side protecting you and if you really become a person in a vegetative state then, I will take care of you for the rest of your life!” As if saying an oath, Han QingWu stared at Tang Xiu’s face as she said those words, one word at a time.

By this time, Tang Xiu was completely dumbstruck.

Chapter 13: Monthly Test Began

Tang Xiu was very clear about the unique position of Han Qingwu in school. He also faintly heard the story of Han Qingwu's life, but he did not think of how there is such a relationship between Han Qingwu and him.

Knowing the truth of the matter, he figured out the answers to some questions that Tang Xiu was confused about before.

He got high marks but did not get the best student of the province when he was in grade one in high school. However, he got the award when he had low scores in grade two.

After the car accident, he clearly got treatment and compensation, but later he somehow gained another ten thousand yuan of courageous bonuses.

His mind clearly had a problem, Hu Qiusheng also hated him, the school did not expel him but to let him still study in chief classes.

Although the younger uncle Su Shangwen took all the credits so that all of his family had a good impression on him and his mother was grateful to him, couldn't wait to take out her heart and gave it to him, but Tang Xiu always felt that his younger uncle Su Shangwen would not help him without propagating.

"Miss Han, did you say you will protect me from now on?" Silently watching Han Qingwu for a moment, he suddenly felt that it was particularly funny when he saw Han Qingwu looking sacred

and serious.

“Mhm.” Han Qingwu was immersed in the decision that she made. She heavily nodded her head without feeling anything is abnormal.

“Miss Han, you also said that you will take care of me forever?” Tang Xiu continued to ask.

“Mhm!” Han Qingwu continued to nod her head.

“Miss Han, what if I got the last place in this examination?” Tang Xiu asked her again.

“I...I...I will not want the salary this month.” Reminding the bet with Hu Qiusheng, Han Qingwu was unable to be calm, however, she was also afraid that she will put too much pressure on Tang so although it would be suck, she helplessly said that.

“Miss Han, you should always remember what you just said, this time I will take the exam seriously, and ensure that Hu Qiusheng will regret his decisions.” Watching Han frowning, Tang Xiu finally did not have the heart to continue to tease her.

After saying the words, Tang Xiu was already gone and left Han Qingwu to be in a trance alone.

“That’s not right, this guy was just clear-minded when he talked to me as if he was deliberately tricking me. Not to mention his

previous frivolous look, how does that look like a guy who has something wrong in his mind?”

“Yuan Chuling also told me that Tang Xiu’s hidden disease because of the car accident has been cured and Tang Xiu’s academic performance will soon be better.”

“But after my observation in this month, he hardly looked up at the blackboard, and did not listen to the teacher lectures, or as before, read the book by himself. In the second half month, he did not even turn the pages, sitting there in a daze for whole days.”

Han Qingwu tried her best to figure it out but did not understand what was going on. At last, a scene unconsciously emerged out in her mind, when she was kissed by Tang Xiu. She suddenly blushed with shame and involuntarily put her hands on her hot cheeks.

Yuan Chuling looked nervous when she saw Tang Xiu went back to the classroom, “Boss, did Miss Han criticise you?”

“No, Miss Han just encouraged me to try my best to take the exam and ask me how did I prepare for it?” Tang Xiu shook his head, and immediately answered him carefully.

“After changing the environment, there is no more pressure from before and with the protection of Cheng Yannan, there was almost nobody to disturb us, so I had a good study efficiency in this month. Basically, I have mastered all of the knowledge of grade one of high school. I am sure I can be admitted to junior college if I continue to study for two more months.”Yuan Chuling

contemplated for a moment and said loudly.

“Junior college is not enough, our target is key university or even famous university.” Tang Xiu patted Yuan Chuling’s shoulder and said softly.

Yuan Chuling could not help to make a supercilious look. He would like to refute Tang Xiu but thinking of the situation of Tang Xiu this month, he was silent.

In the expectation of a student of grade three, the second monthly test already started and Tang Xiu would take his first exam after his soul came back into his body.

Although it was only an ordinary monthly test, but whether it was the high school students or the teachers of grade three they all took it very seriously. After all, the type of test questions and difficulty were completely similar to the college entrance examinations from over the years. To a large extent, the monthly test scores can be reflected the college entrance examination scores and can be regarded as the exercise before the college entrance examination.

Only some students who had bad performances and are totally hopeless to get high scores paid no attention to the exam.

There were two classes of students who were cross-sitting in the examination room and they were liberal arts class and science class students, so it was very likely to put an end to the possibility of plagiarism cheating.

“Tang Xiu, do not look around, take the exam. Oh, if you counsel in the fight and get a bad scores of the exam, I will look down on you.” Tang Xiu looked around the candidates. There was a crisp sound behind, but it was Cheng Yanan sitting in his back seat.

“Come on!” Tang Xiu smiled and then took out his own test equipment.

Tang Xiu fainted to hear someone talking about him and also felt that someone was pointing at him, but he did not care.

“When the scores of the monthly test come out, you are going to be shocked.” Tang Xiu took a deep breath and adjusted his state of mind to the best condition.

Soon, two invigilators came into the classroom, holding thick exam papers.

The invigilators did not immediately hand out the papers, but instead swept the classroom again with their eyes and stressed the examination discipline. They were unhurried to hand out the papers to each candidate’s hands.

When walking in front of Tang Xiu, one of the invigilators obviously stopped for a moment, then his face revealed a disdainful smile.

Tang Xiu forced a smile when seeing this situation because the

teacher was the Physics teacher Xia Mingjie when he was studying in class five. He did not think that he would come over to inspect his basic language.

Getting the papers, Tang Xiu did not write at once, but swept it again from start to finish, to confirm that there no mistakes of the questions. At the same time, he recalled of all the knowledge for the test over again.

Next, Tang Xiu quickly wrote down the answers on the paper one by one.

Just half an hour, Tang Xiu finished all the questions besides composition writing.

“Everyone says that a father’s love like a mountain, then what’s like a mother’s love? Spring’s soft breeze, summer’s clear spring, autumn’s fruit, winter’s sunshine, or warm light in the dark night? Please use mother love as the title to write a composition which not less than 1000 words.”

After reading the title of composition, Tang Xiu suddenly stood in amazement and then his emotion crashed. Tears welled out of her eyes.

When Tang Xiu was still three years old, Tang Xiu’s father died and he was raised by his mother.

In Tang Xiu’s memory, there was simply not an existence of a

father. It was his mother bringing him up, and also his mother who taught him how to behave. After Tang Xiu's mind became handicapped, it was his mother that did not become the slightest bit disgusted and impatient and stubbornly took care of him.

There is too much memory of the mother and in the thousands of years in the immortal world, those memories had deepened again and again, so that Tang Xiu would not forget.

Tang Xiu immersed in the memory of his mother for a long time and was unable to extricate himself. He did not notice that he has become the focus of the examination room.

“Did you see that? That guy who is tearing is Tang Xiu. He was once be admitted to our school in the first place, but now he is the last one in the grade.”

“Oh, it is no need to cry even though not know the answers, that is too much of a shame, it seems to be something wrong with his mind.”

“Since his brain has a problem, he needs to leave school to go home, why is he still staying in school, what if he suddenly hurt others?”

Two invigilators also found Tang Xiu abnormal, in fact, they were the first to find Tang Xiu's abnormal emotions, but seeing Tang Xiu only torn silently and did not affect the other candidates, they did not say anything.

When the behavior of Tang Xiu caught more and more attention of candidates, they would like to remind Tang Xiu and even expelled him from the examination room.

When one of the younger invigilators angrily went to the seat of Tang Xiu before hitting him, Xia Mingjie gently sighed and quickly caught up with the young invigilator to prevent his behavior.

“Tang Xiu now is the examination time, but please seize the time to seriously answer, or you may miss the exam.” Xia Mingjie gently knocked the seat of Tang Xiu and softly reminded.

Heard the reminding of Xia Mingjie, Tang Xiu unknowingly discovered that the time was over an hour in the past. He was sitting in the classroom for an hour without doing anything and seeing that the time left is only less than half an hour, he quickly began writing his essay.

“Old Xia, with Tang Xiu’s ability, no matter how long he sat in the examination room, it will not affect his scores.” As Tang Xiu began to seriously answer, the young invigilator Ran Pan stressed the exam time and examination discipline and then left, but he could not help complaining to Xia Mingjie.

“What a pity for the child, if not for the car accident that happened a year ago, his future would be absolutely bright.” Xia Mingjie watched filled with sympathy and regret.

“Oh, this is life. To enter into our school in the first place of our city, and now even reduced to the penultimate grade, this gap is

too big.” Thinking of the performance for Tang Xiu, Ran Pan also sighed.

“Yes, I still remember this child’s speech when he won the first prize in the Olympic Physics Competition, his tolerance, vision, ambition, I am proud to be his instructor and teacher. I do not think he would fell to the present situation. Really unfortunate.” Xia Mingjie sighed with regret.

“Old Xia, do you think that it’s possible for Tang Xiu to return to normal in the last few months, and then catch up, to win his honor once belong to him?” He swept the essay written by Tang Xiu seriously, Ran Pan asked.

Xia Mingjie lit up his eyes when he heard the words, then they became sad, “This year, I have been looking forward to a miracle that day. Unfortunately, miracle does not appear, and now Tang Xiu has been moved to Class 10. The time for the college entrance examination only leaves a short period of about two months. Even if his mind is really back to normal, it would be difficult for his scores to catch up.

Actually, Ran Pan felt it was pleasant to say that, finding Xia Mingjie seriously discussing this problem with him. He could not help smiling and shaking his head, quickly changing the topic.

Chapter 14: Frigid Irony And Scorching Satire

When the basic language examination ended, Tang Xiu subconsciously let out a breath of relief. Although he didn't answer with the standard answer, Tang Xiu had the confidence to get more than 140 points in the basic language test.

After lunch, Tang Xiu did not go back to the dormitory to rest, but instead left school and went to the provincial library opposite to the school.

As early as two weeks ago, Tang Xiu was no longer satisfied with the knowledge of the textbooks and went to soak in the school library all day long.

Later, Tang Xiu learned that he could enter the provincial library with the school library card, and the collection of books of the provincial library is hundredfold of the school library. Then, he decisively abandoned the school library and lingered in the provincial library every day.

Tang Xiu going to the provincial library was not only to study but also to improve his ideas generated from his mind to ensure the training direction for the future.

In the math exam in the afternoon, Tang Xiu only spent half an hour for it. He then handed over the paper and left.

Tang Xiu's behavior caused an uproar. In order to increase the learning pressure on the high school students, the school specifically increased the difficulty of the examination.

But Tang just spent half an hour to finish the paper, which made the others think of one possibility, which was that Tang Xiu thought the exam paper was too difficult and abandoned the test.

“Although this math test is very difficult, Tang Xiu should not abandon the test, or else he would let Miss Han down.

“Oh, Miss Han will definitely lose this time. Although she does not care about that salary, I would feel uncomfortable when I think of the savage smile of Hu Qiusheng.”

As the two invigilators watched Tang left, they could not help whispering.

When the first day of the examination ended, the students of grade three intensely discussed, which Tang did not participate in. Instead, he tried and revised the exercise of practice which occurred in his mind.

When the idea of the last power law and tactics are declared a failure after practice, Tang could not help but have the look of decadence.

“Do I only practice the universe tactic? But where to go to find those rare herbs and minerals?” Tang Xiu felt very puzzled.

“Boss, I feel that my performance of the examination this time was okay. If tomorrow’s performance of the exam will be like today, then it’ll be good.” Yuan Chuling touched the arm of Tang and said excitedly.

“Come on, there are still two months left, I believe that you can certainly get good marks.” Tang Xiu glanced at Yuan Chuling and said with absentmindedly.

“Hey, I did not think I could master the knowledge I abandoned for so long and it’s all thanks to your teachings and incentives. By the way, how was your test today?” Yuan Chuling smiled then asked curiously.

“I think it is okay?” Tang Xiu hesitated for a moment and whispered.

“Tang Xiu, you are bragging, aren’t you? Afraid that it will expose after several days?”

“You cried for an hour in the basic language test and even abandoned the math test. You still think it is okay?”

“The students of the key class are really powerful, not only do they have good scores, their bragging skills are also first-class.”

After Tang Xiu said that, he heard of a burst of ridicule.

Cheng Yannan who was sitting in front of Tang was also puzzled and felt disappointment as she watched Tang Xiu.

Whether it is the language exam in the morning or the math test in the afternoon, Tang made a big influence in the examination room. Thus, many people knew about the performance of Tang Xiu in the examination room, which made the people who originally hate Tang hate him more and the people who originally had hope in him be completely disappointed.

See Tang was teased by his classmates because of his words, Yuan Chuling was anxious to slap himself heavily on his face.

Yuan Chuling subconsciously looked at Cheng Yanna for help. Although Cheng Yanna entered Class 10 earlier than Yuan Chuling and Tang Xiu, Cheng Yan Nan successfully conquered the classmates of Class Ten with her sturdy combat effectiveness and metamorphosis of learning, completely securing her big sister position.

Because of Cheng Yanna's care, Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling had a very moist life in Class 10. Not only did they get a good learning environment, but they also got Cheng Yanna's care and greetings from time to time, which made the classmates of Class 10 be more envious and jealous of Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling while they were enjoying their life.

In the past, if someone dared to tease on Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling, Cheng Yanna would already stop them, however, this time Cheng Yanna directly escape from the eyes of Chuling and continued to write on her papers, as if she knew nothing.

“Aha, these two gutless cowards. You two have bad scores and yet you don't even recognize it, are you still a man, mhm?”

“Are they men? If they are men, then why do they always hide behind the woman. If I were them, I would’ve already been dead.”

The classmates were worried that Cheng Yannan would protect Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling, so their words were soft. When everyone found out that Cheng Yannan’s attitude to Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling had changed, their language became more and more unscrupulous.

Under the ridicule and abusiveness of the crowd, Yuan Chuling’s breath became more and more rapid and his face became red. When Yuan Chuling could not help to pound the table and stand up, Tang Xiu gave a quiet cough to prevent Yuan Chuling’s impetuous behavior.

“In fact, it’s none of your concern whether our monthly test results are good or bad. You are not eligible to ridicule. If your academic performance is very good, you will not have to sit in this classroom, right?” Tang Xiu glanced at the classmates who liked having a fight in the blood and said lightly.

Tang Xiu’s simple words were as if it lit the powder keg, instantly boiling up the classroom.

“Tang Xiu, you have no sense of class honor and your monthly test scores have something to do with us. If your test scores are good, then the total scores of class 10 will go up and will not at the bottom of grade three. If you are poor, aren’t we affected by you?”

“Tang Xiu, your test scores every time are almost zero, how can you have the courage to take the exam? If I were you, I would

abandon the test to not trouble others!”

“Tang Xiu, Miss Han let you stay in class 10 with great pressure. In the No.1 Middle School of Star City, except Miss Han, it is estimated that no class dares to accept you. Without Miss Han, you would have been expelled from the school long ago. Miss Han is so good to you yet how do you not understand Miss Han?

Tang Xiu apparently did not think that his own words would become a target for public criticism. However, when he heard these words, Tang Xiu did not angry but instead showed a smile on his face.

Tang Xiu knew that these people did not have much malicious intent as their understanding and care for Han Qingwu were true and their class sense of honor were also true.

“The Book of Songs goes: ‘cast me with papaya, repay you with peach. ” When Tang Xiu talking, he got up and left the classroom.

After he left, the classroom became deadly silent.

After a while, everyone became sober from Tang Xiu’s words.

“What did he say? Did he say he want to get the first place in the monthly test?”

“We certainly got it wrong. It is fair for him to get last place as for first place, he can only get it in a dream.”

In the classroom, only two people did not speak. Although his face showed a look of contemplation, Yuan Chuling was a little excited.

Fiercely staring at the crowd, Yuan Chuling left the classroom with his things as he was afraid he would beat someone if he continued to stay in the classroom.

“I heard that after he was seriously damaged after the car accident, not only is he unable to remember the new things but his knowledge also have been forgotten quickly. When he entered class 10, his basic knowledge was almost blank. Can he get No.1 after a month? ” Cheng Yannan whispered.

In the second day, the monthly test continued.

In the examination room, Tang Xiu's was still gloomy because of the basic language test.

In the comprehensive course test, as the other candidates were still scratching their head with the papers, Tang Xiu got up and left indifferently.

In the English test in the afternoon, including the time of the listening part, Tang Xiu only spent half an hour for the test and then handed it over. At the mean time, the others were still trying to finish the other questions.

The No.1 Middle School of Star City carried out closed teaching

and they usually did not have any holidays. They would only have a holiday of two or three days to go home at the end of each month. This was called the monthly leave.

After the monthly test, the students had a short time to rest.

After the end of the month test, Tang Xiu did not stay in the school to continue to study hard like the other high school students nor did he go to the library. Instead, he waited to walk along the River Street because he knew that his mother must have got a lot of delicious food waiting for him.

Tang Xiu was living in rural areas before he was admitted into the high school. Until he got the first place in the exam and was admitted to No.1 Middle School of Star City, this was the first time for him to go out of the countryside.

In order to take care of Tang Xiu, Su Lingyun Tang lived in the city with him.

As Su Ling Yun was a rural woman, it was easy for her to do farm work but to find a job in the city was difficult. Thus, in the three years in Star City, Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu had suffered a lot.

Fortunately, Su Lingyun worked hard. However, she has always tried to do it the dirty work. After a few years, she finally accumulated a little money and borrowing ten thousand yuan, they rented a place and led a peaceful life.

Chapter 15: The Restaurant Was Smashed

“Mom, I’m back!” Tang Xiu sincerely smiled and could not help but loudly shout from far away, when he saw the words on the restaurant which was next to his house.

Soon, his smile disappeared.

His mother would usually come out of the restaurant to meet him when he loudly shouted, but this time she did not. Instead, the surrounding neighbors sighed and showed a sympathetic look at him when they heard his shout.

“Did anything happen to the restaurant?” When he saw neighbors’ reactions, he quickly ran into the restaurant.

When Tang Xiu went inside, he saw the restaurant was in ruins. Food, soup, and broken dishes filled the entire hall. The dining tables and chairs were all kicked to the ground, the walls and floors had been damaged beyond recognition.

Smacking sound of “bang bang bang” was coming from the kitchen, faintly mixed with crying.

Hearing the voices in the kitchen, Tang Xiu’s blood boiled instantaneously, and a spark of anger flashed in his eyes.

“Black, please do not smash these things anymore, all of these things in the kitchen are all we have. If you break them, My

business would be ruined.” When Tang entered the kitchen, he saw his mother holding the arm of a middle-aged man while crying. Tears were pouring down her face.

“You are now asking me for mercy? What happened now? I asked you pay 5,000 yuan before the middle of this month for the protection fee and its already the end of the month, you still have not paid. You took my words as passing wind. Just break! If I do not give you a lifetime of unforgettable lessons, you will never remember our words in your heart!” The middle-aged man lifted his arm, pushed Su Lingyun to the ground, and then kick the front of the steamer.

The huge steamer fell onto the ground, hot steam and water splashed all over the floor.

“Mom, be careful!” Seeing that the boiling water in the steamer was going towards his mother, Tang Xiu rushed into the kitchen to help her up.

“Xiu, you’re back. Are you hungry? I’ll make something delicious for you now!” After being lifted by Tang Xiu, Su Lingyun burst out of trance then said quickly.

At that time, she was reminded of the situation of the restaurant and felt a bit of helpless.

The dishware were all broken by the seven bullies led by Black Three. Su Lingyun cannot make any food for Tang Xiu, even something as simple as a fried egg rice.

Tang Xiu felt sad, seeing the helpless and hopeless look in his mother's eyes.

In Tang Xiu's heart, Su Lingyun not only did the work of a mother but she also perfectly played the role of a father, taking care of him in every possible way.

For more than ten years, his mother has been working hard. She propped up the the sky for him so that he could live a carefree life and have a healthy growth. He had almost forgotten the fact that not only was his mother a woman, but also a powerless and a lonely woman.

Widows were a subject of interest for a lot of gossipers. Tang Xiu felt pained, thinking of the suffering his mother has gone through over the years.

Tang Xiu's eyes were red as he tightly embraced his mother's thin body and said: "Mom, I'm not hungry, we will go home for dinner."

"Go home? You want to go home? If you do not hand over 5000 yuan today, you two cannot leave this place!" The middle-aged black man said coldly, interrupting the conversation between them.

Hearing the words said by the middle-aged man, Su Lingyun was scared and trembled. She hurriedly hugged Tang Xiu in her arms and said while shaking: "Black Brother, this matter has nothing to do with my son, please let him go. Give me a day, and at this time

tomorrow, I will hand over the five thousand yuan!”

“Today, you can solve this problem with 5000 yuan, but tomorrow, it might not be this number.” Black three glanced at Su Lingyun once and said cynically.

“Brother, I remember we only required two thousand yuan for the protection fee before, why did it rise to five thousand this month?” Unconsciously Tang Xiu came over between the middle-aged black man and his mother.

The man did not expect Tang Xiu to suddenly stand up to speak and dare to question the changes over the amount. Remembering Tang Xiu’s silly look before, he froze for a moment without saying anything and then looked at Tang Xiu surprisingly.

“Fuck you, Who are you to question us?.” Seeing that black three seemed to be intimidated by Tang Xiu, a green haired bully behind black three shouted out loud, and raised his hand, trying to slap Tang Xiu.

However, when the hand neared Tang Xiu’s face, a broken glass abruptly flew from the ground, mercilessly striking the green-haired bully’s wrist, blood started gushing out of his wound.

The poor green-haired bully just wanted to be a bit more domineering, Who would have thought he would instead be injured like this, it was so painful that not a single word came out of his mouth.

Green-hair couldn't hit Tang Xiu, but it didn't mean that Tang Xiu would let him go.

No matter how the students of class 10 bullied their own. Tang Xiu never said anything, not because he had a good temper, nor was it because he was a coward, but because in the eyes of Tang Xiu, they just could never really harm him.

But these bully are not the same, they not only destroyed his mother's efforts, but also pushed his mother to an impasse, both physically and psychologically harming her, nothing could make him more angrier than this.

The most critical thing was that his mother was the only emotional entanglement in Tang Xiu's heart.

So the moment they smashed the restaurant, Tang Xiu already decided to kill them, not to mentioned his mother was pushed to the ground.

The other bully was not able to react to what was going on. Tang Xiu took a step forward, instantly appearing next to the side of the green-haired bully, landing a hard kick to his knee, and stepped on the face, so that he could not speak.

The actions of Tang Xiu were too fast, so fast that by the time the other bully realized what has happened, the green-haired bully was already on the ground struggling for a while.

“Little bastard, you dare to beat us, you don't want to live?”

“Bastard, quickly take your feet off my brother, or I will scrap your dog leg!”

Seeing that Tang Xiu was beating their own people, a group of bullies outside were furious and rushed at Tang Xiu all at the same time. Only black three stood in place and did not move, but curiously looked at Tang Xiu.

Black Three has lived in the old river street area for more than twenty years; he knew about everything happening around the old river street. Even though the restaurant was opened less than six months, black three knew everything about the restaurant.

According to black three, Su Lingyun of the restaurant was from rural areas, had a young son. Before opening the restaurant, she had done various other types of work, such as moving bags, picking up garbage, or as a saleswoman, as long as she could get money for it, this woman would rush to do the work.

A month ago, a man wearing sunglasses came looking for Black Three; he paid 100,000 yuan to him to deal with Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu.

Although black three felt sympathy towards Su Lingyun, he, after all, had no relationship with Su Lingyun. Being given a choice between Su Lingyun and 100,000 yuan, Black Three did not hesitate to choose the latter.

“Is this Tang Xiu normal?” Watching his actions, Black Three really thought Tang Xiu’s brain had a problem, the rational way he

spoke, and also the way he ruthlessly beat his men, “He definitely wasn’t dumb?”.

The commission by the sunglasses man for the harassment of the restaurant was only a bait, bullying Su Lingyun was also a trap. The real purpose was to lead force Tang Xiu out. The one they wanted to deal with was Tang Xiu; Black Three had to check what was special about Tang Xu.

“We have seven adults on our side, he is a weak little boy but he actually dares to take the initiative to attack us, Is he looking to die?!” Soon, black three shook his head, staring at Su Lingyun.

Before, black three had never seriously looked at Su Lingyun. He just felt pity for Su Lingyun’s situation, a person worthy of being respect. Looking carefully at Su Lingyun today, he realized Su Lingyun was quite a beauty, more beautiful than most women he had ever seen, which made some other thought to flash on his mind.

“If Su Lingyun was willing to live with me, I would have been reluctant to deal with her, but unfortunately Su Lingyun was too stubborn, and did not agree.” Thinking about the desperate way Su Lingyun resisted him this month, black shook his head, a burst of impatience rose in his mind.

When the other five bullies ran towards Tang Xiu, Tang Xiu did not show any kind of fear, but in fact, he was thrilled.

Tang Xiu made a moment with his feet, the green-haired bully

flew up, directly rushing toward the other three bullies. Then Tang Xiu swept out with his other leg, kicking the guy to the ground who was trying to sneak attack him. The guy landed on the boiling water started giving off painful wails.

When the last person's fist was about to hit Tang Xiu's forehead, Tang Xiu sneered, while suddenly stretching out two fingers, poking at the other person's wrist, and freezing his fist in the air.

Effortlessly dealing with the five bullies by himself, Tang Xiu looked toward the black and strong looking middle-aged man, and said icily, "Black Three, the things in our restaurant have almost been totally destroyed by you, lets now discuss the compensation!"

Chapter 16: Barbarism Must Be Met With Barbarism

“You have guts to talk about compensation with me? Are you nuts?” Although he was surprised to see the battle prowess of Tang Xiu, Black Three was not afraid of him. However, the look on his face was serious and fierce. The smile on his face showed that he found the whole situation fascinating.

Even though Tang Xiu showed some brilliant skills in the battle, in the eyes of an ordinary person like Black Three, Tang Xiu was just a youth with some extraordinary brute force.

“I crushed your restaurant, but in return, you beat up my people. Do you believe the restaurant is more worth more than my men??!!” Black Three shouted out loud while closing towards Tang Xiu step by step.

“Black, he is still just a young boy. We apologize to you; please forgive us.” Seeing the ferocious look on Black Three’s eyes, Su Lingyun stood up covering Tang Xiu behind her, just like how a hen protects its small chicks.

“Too young? Do you want to fudge by using just this word?? You think we are all idiots?” Black Three almost touched Su Lingyun and wanted to push her aside.

Before his hand could close in on Su Lingyun’s body, Tang Xiu gently embraced her mother in his arms and softly said: “Mom, it’s all right, let me handle this, you just move aside a little. ”

While Tang Xiu was speaking, he held his mother's hand. His thumb gently pressed Shenmen Point on her hand.

Pressing on the Shenmen Point would usually help a person fall asleep. Su Lingyun had been worried and exhausted for over a month because of the harassment of Black Three. Due to the huge pressure of this whole issue, she has gone through countless sleepless nights.

The kneading of Tang Xiu, instantly made her fall asleep.

Falling asleep, her wrinkled eyebrows gradually relaxed, a serene and sweet smile appeared on her face.

"You.....you....." Witnessed the way Tang Xiu had somehow hypnotized Su Lingyun, Black Three eyes went wide, his mouth was also slightly open, rendering him speechless.

Tang Xiu's leisure hypnotic trick on Su Lingyun really shocked Black Three, even more than when Tang Xiu crushed his six men.

Su Lingyun was under a lot of stress and tension today. In such a state, no matter how tired she was, she would never be able to sleep so calmly, not to mention the loud crying noises the bullies were making.

But Tang Xiu didn't even take a minute to make Su Lingyun fall into a deep sleep. The kind of ability was really fantastic. The smile

on Black Three's face was gone.

“My mom is sleeping, let's get back to the compensation, how do you want to sort this out?” Tang Xiu asked ignoring his reaction.

“Shorting it out??” Black Three was afraid of Tang Xiu, a simple touch of his can make him fall asleep. He felt there was no longer any way to get out of this situation safely without giving a compensation, in his mind he already decided to compromise.

“You decide it, if you don't show enough sincerity, I don't mind giving you another reminder!” Tang Xiu snapped his fingers with a cold look on his face.

“You!” The domineering attitude of Tang Xiu again made Black Three angry.

Staring at Tang Xiu for a long while, Black Three was so angry that he started laughing. He pointed at the nose of Tang Xiu and said: “Kid, you really got balls... Don't be fearless just because you know some Kong Fu moves... Do not think you can be afraid of nothing because of some Kong Fu moves... I have been in the underworld, long before you were even born!!”

“I originally intended to forgive you, and perhaps we could even have been friends, But since you are so ungrateful, then do not blame me for being ruthless!!” While saying this, a butterfly knife appeared on his hands and killing intent flashed on his eyes.

The dazzling butterfly knife was dancing in the hands of Black Three, the whistling sound of the wind gave off a sense of oppression while giving a ridicule and disdain look towards Tang Xiu.

A butterfly knife was not considered as a lethal weapon. Martial artists usually preferred daggers, bayonets, rejection stick, even knives and machetes more than a butterfly knife.

But Black Three extremely loved butterfly knife, spinning the knife was cool as f***. He has been practicing butterfly knives for more than 20 years; he even has a huge collection of butterfly knives for himself.

In the eyes of other people, a butterfly knife was usually just practiced for tricks, these 20 years of practicing, on the hands of Black Three, the simple looking knife has become a lethal weapon.

Under the aggressive oppression of Black Three, Tang Xiu dodged back little by little.

The kitchen was quite narrow. Stepping just six steps back, Tang Xiu was already against the wall, leaving him no space for retreating.

“Boy, I think you are quite normal unlike what the rumors outside says, but I believe you are a very assertive person, Why not convince your mother to live with me, and I will protect your mother and you from now on, how is it?” Tang Xiu was in a tight spot, Black Three on the other hand got more ferocious.

“Saying such words, now no one can save you!” Tang Xiu sighed, and then slightly moved his feet. The green haired bully who was the first to be knocked down onto the ground actually flew up, directly heading towards Black Three.”

Unconsciously Black Three drew the butterfly knife in his hand, but realizing what was actually thrown at him, he tried to recover his own attack, if not his own guy would be injured severely, instead he tried to actually catch the guy with his arms.

Thinking that stopping the body would be simple, Black Three was relaxed. However, in the next moment, when he made contact with the body, his face went pale.

Who would have thought, that the green-haired bolly was thrown with such speed and force.

Underestimating the impact had actually dealt a fatal blow to him.

The impact was as if a rapidly running train had mercilessly crashed at him, and directly knocked him in to the air.

The sound of bones breaking was clearly heard.

That wasn't all, green-haired guy's body did not halt after hitting Black Three, instead they both flew back quite a distance.

After a long while, with a thud sound, crashed into a wall, and powerlessly fell to the ground.

Just one hit, and both of them directly fainted.

“Wake UP!! If you pretend that you cannot stand up, then you will never get to stand up again!” Tang Xiu snapped. After Tang Xiu kicking Black Three, he glanced at the other five bullies who were awestruck and stunned on the floor.

The moment Tang Xiu spoke, the all jumped up all at once.

However, instead of listening to Tang Xiu’s order of waking up Black Three and Green-Haired Guy, the five bullies rushed towards the direction of the kitchen door, trying to escape from this hell.

“Trying to escape? You think you can escape so easily??” After shouting, Tang Xiu moved his hand very quickly, five chopsticks directly pierced into the thighs of the five bully’s, paralyzing and making them fall on the ground.

Dominating the Immortal World for thousands of years, Even after returning back to earth, Tang Xiu still naturally had an arrogant aura about him. Even though he did self-cultivation in school for a month, The arrogance and domineering personality he had in his bones was not even slightly reduced. When he faced the bullies, he felt as if he has returned back to the Immortal World.

“If you continue to act, the chopsticks in my hands will penetrate

your brain next time, not your thighs, do you want me to try!” Tang Xiu spoke indifferently, ignoring the pitiful situation of the five bullies.

Hearing the words spoken by Tang Xiu, the screams immediately stopped. There was fear and panic in the eyes of the five bullies.

These people usually frightened the old and the weak, they have never actually seen bloody stuff. They dared to come and harass the restaurant, because they knew the background of it, that only a weak woman and a student with something wrong with his brain were the only ones there.

The five people never imagined that a “stick” would be this hard to break.

Under the stare of Tang Xiu, the five bullies crawled back to Black Three and the Green-Haired Guy. Enduring the pain they were suffering, they sprinkled some water on their face, which immediately woke them up.

“Go! Beat that little bastard. If he were to die, I will take responsibility!” As soon as Black Three’s eyes opened, he began to shout.

Pia! The moment the words came out of his mouth, he heard a brisk sound, and then he felt extremely painful.

Feeling that some kind of salty liquid was coming out of his

mouth, along with some solid fragments, Black Three touched his lips. His fingers turned red, the solid fragments were pieces of his teeth.

He no longer knew what he was feeling, was it helplessness, anger, hatred or just embarrassment?

“Was I beaten?”

“I was beaten by him without even getting to fight back???”

Chapter 17: Demon

“Black Three, are you sure you want to be responsible for his life?” Tang Xiu said indifferently and watched him coldly.

“Tang Xiu, you should consider clearly. What you do is operate a business, we are just a bunch of idle bullies so unless you kill us, you will not be making a living in Star City!” Black Three said in a low voice.

From Tang Xiu’s words and manner, Black Three already judged that Tang Xiu was the type of man who was ruthless and was the kind of man who could not be offended.

However, Black Three would absolutely not apologize to him, so he started to play rogue.

Black Three used to play rogue as his trump card, this trick was extremely useful against ordinary people, but it was obviously a failure against Tang Xiu.

Before Black Three finished his words, a few chopsticks shot out from Tang’s hand landing directly into Black Three’s thigh.

Black Three jerked up in the air showing the huge amount of pain he was in.

In the next moment, Black Three made loud noises of agony as his body became paralyzed and fell to the ground.

“Black Three, don’t say that I did not give you a chance, you can call for help now, and you will see that I have control over everyone, I would like to see how you try to prevent us from making a living.”

After living in the Immortal World for more than a thousand years, Tang Xiu would typically destroy his enemies with the full potential of a thunderbolt. He would never let his enemies have any chance for a comeback.

The people Black Three had led who harassed the restaurant didn’t do so for only several days, but did it for about six months straight, and this month it intensified, even making the restaurant impossible to operate, which had touched a nerve in Tang Xiu.

Since Tang Xiu had turned against Black Three, it would be problematic if he let Black Three leave. So he had to solve the problem right now.

“You.....” Black Three was completely shocked when he heard what Tang Xiu had to say.

Black Three wasn’t thinking about how his approach did not intimidate Tang Xiu, but rather how it brought shame onto himself.

“I will only give you ten minutes, if no one arrives after ten minutes, then I will kill you!” Tang Xiu said, glancing over to Black Three. He made sure to pace his words to increase impact.

Although Black Three could call many people to help, distant water couldn't quench present thirst. Tang Xiu only needed to control him, it was useless to call other people to help.

“Tang Xiu, we are neighbours, we will meet each other every day, so no need to say it in absolute terms-”

Black Three was not able to finish speaking. Tang Xiu rose his hand, and fiercely punched him in the face. (ED: Translation says slapped, but men don't slap each other. It also makes more sense in the next few lines)

“So now you regard us as neighbours? Do you know what you did last month?” Looking at Black Three who was astonished, Tang Xiu questioned him indifferently.

“Tang Xiu, do not forget your business is to operate a restaurant, no good will come from insulting us!” Black Three said fiercely as he spat out saliva mixed with broken teeth and foul blood. (ED: How would a slap break teeth? Hence the punching instead of slapping.)

“Is that so? Then I want to see what's the result of my transgression!” Tang Xiu laughed without anger, and then punched Black Three in his face a few more times.

Poor Black Three had dominated the old river street area for more than twenty years. Before today, he had never received any troubles. However, today completely stunned him, for the first

time he was being punched in the face multiple times.

Previously, Black Three couldn't feel any murderous intent from Tang Xiu, which made Black Three think that Tang Xiu was merely a harmless sunny boy.

But after he was beaten by Tang Xiu, Black Three carefully looked at Tang Xiu again, his impression of Tang Xiu had changed drastically.

But now Tang Xiu gave off a slight scent of murderous intent. However, Tang's eyes were indifferent, which was a kind of indifference to life. This kind of attitude was far more terrible than a murderous look.

"There is something wrong with Black Three, are you guys normal? Just hurry up to call for help, it won't be long until time is up." Tang Xiu watched others, and urged them impatiently.

There were a few other people who saw Black Three beaten to a pulp, they were nervous. When they found that Tang Xiu suddenly turned his eyes on them, they were shivering. They hurriedly turned their faces one by one, pretending not to hear what Tang Xiu said, while praying Tang's eyes did not fall on any of them.

"It seems everyone's mind has a problem, because of that, I will not show mercy." Tang Xiu sneered at everyone he saw in the kitchen. Tang then proceeded to shove Black Three onto the ground.

There was only a muffled sound as Black Three fell into the trash.

The trash bin in the restaurant was full of oil and water. Black Three and others thought that the trash bin was dirty, so they deliberately avoided the trash bin when they went to the restaurant to ransack it. So the trash can was full of various oil and leftovers, emitting a burst of foul odor.

When Black Three got smashed into the trash can, he screamed a burst of oppressive pain, at the same time, he “danced” and spilled water everywhere in the room

Because his hands were broken, Black Three’s attempt to escape the trash bin failed even though he tried with all his might. The more he struggled, the more oxygen he consumed. He came close to suffocating. His body’s movement slowed down as the oxygen depleted and soon his voice disappeared.

Black Three’s body twitched from time to time and there were bubbles constantly popping from the liquid’s surface. The other people stared at Tang Xiu. He was standing beside the trash bin looking indifferently. The six other bullies had no way of pretending that they didn’t hear Tang.

Before today, the six bullies had been blindly worshiping Black Three, they thought that Black Three was invincible and in their hearts he was unbeatable.

But when they saw Black Three being beaten up by Tang Xiu

again and again, not even having the chance to fight back. The demonic image of Tang Xiu deeply imprinted into their minds.

“6 minutes has passed, you still haven’t called for backup, it seems like you do not want to go back” As the bullies looked at the trash bin abstractedly, the sound of hell breaking loose suddenly screamed into their ears, instantly waking them up.

Two of the bullies were timid. They fell on the ground when they heard Tang Xiu’ voice. The others were also shaking. The eyes looking to Tang were full of fear and horror.

“Everyone should pay for their own mistakes. Since you do not need help, then you all can stay in the trash bin with Black Three.” When Black Three no longer made any noise and had no sign of fighting back, Tang Xiu wrinkled his brow. He then grabbed the feet of Black Three and dragged him out of the trash bin.

Tang ignored the other bullies pleas and proceeded to kick the green haired bully into the trash bin.

The green haired bully’s hands were not broken. He struggled to climb out from the trash bin when he was pushed into it.

Green Hair had no time to breath. He heard a sharp piercing sound and then felt a sharp pain in his hands. His hands ceased to function as they were pierced.

The green haired bully watched Tang Xiu in fear, realising that

Tang was staring back.

At the critical moment, Tang Xiu pierced the green haired bully's arm with two chopsticks.

Not waiting to hear the green haired bully's screams of pain, Tang Xiu kicked him back into the trash bin.

This time, he did not attempt to get out since he did not have the strength to get out.

Watching the green haired bully twitching in the trash can and Black Three who was lying on the ground motionless, the other five bullies lost all hope. They never imagined that Black Three and the green hair would have been beaten up this badly today.

Thinking that the fate of Black Three and the green hair would be theirs soon, the other five bullies collapsed in prostration. After they exchanged glances, they did not hesitate to kneel in front of the Tang Xiu.

“Tang.....Tang Xiu, you cannot blame all of us. Someone else gave us money to only attack your restaurant.”

“Brother Tang, we were here by the order of others. You have scolded and beaten us, please forgive us. We are just the bottom of the society, and sometimes we are forced to do these actions.”

“Brother Tang, although we did ransack your restaurant, we

swear to the God, we never hit your mother, we haven't even touched her. Only Black Three and green hair are extremely cruel and merciless, the others just for backup."

When the first person asked for mercy, the few other people spilled out their beans and spoke out their difficulties.

The bullies looked much older than him, but called him brother. This felt slightly weird for Tang.

However, of the thousand years inside the immortal world, Tang Xiu had come across more ridiculous things, so it didn't really shock him when they mentioned it.

Everyone has their own way of survival. The people who are the high rollers of society have their own way and so do the people who were living as the scum of society.

Several people were crying and begging. However, they did not forget to secretly look at Tang Xiu and observe his reactions.

When these bullies realized it was useless for them to flatter and respect Tang Xiu, The status of Tang Xiu in their hearts increased, whilst becoming very mysterious.

Because according to their survey, Tang Xiu was just an ordinary high school student in Star City coming from a remote rural town, he even had a car accident.

But from what happened today, the information provided was vastly different than reality.

After a long silence, the bullies continued to watch Tang Xiu in fear. Tang Xiu snapped, “Who bribed you to ransack our restaurant?!”

Chapter 18: The Hidden Mastermind

Tang Xiu originally wanted to end the bullies' lives.

Just looking at the mother in his arms, Tang hesitated. It was not difficult to murder someone, but the aftermath was a big problem.

If his mother was not here, Tang Xiu wouldn't hesitate to kill, as he did not have to worry about any repercussions.

With these fetters in his mind, Tang Xiu wouldn't dare kill people recklessly like in the immortal world.

What the bullies said had evoked Tang's sympathy.

Although these poor people must have been hateful, they only smashed things in the restaurant, they did not beat his mother. They did not deserve to die, regardless it seemed that there was someone pulling the strings.

"Tang, it was a middle-aged man wearing sunglasses, he paid us money to harass you, but only Black Three talked with him, we do not know the true identity of the sunglasses man." Said one on the bullies. This topic in particular successfully attracted Tan Xiu's attention.

"I do not know the identity of sunglasses, but I happened to heard a conversation between sunglasses man and black Three. Sunglasses man seemed to hate Brother Tang a lot, the purpose of

harassing the restaurant was to infuriate you and then to kill you. He even offered a price..." Another bully did not hesitate as he was speaking, but his voice became softer and softer as he was speaking.

"Ding Zi, Ban Shou, if you want to die in right now, just say it. I promise I will make it quick!" Black Three's voice unexpectedly came up in the house.

Black Three did not know when the best time to wake up was. He stared at the two bullies with threatening eyes. That was why Ban Shou did not continue to speak.

Realising that Black Three would still be trying to cause troubles at this time caused Tang Xiu to feel nauseous.

In the next moment, the green haired bully was dragged out from the trash bin and Black Three was thrown back into the trash bin by Tang Xiu.

Right now, the green hair bully was unconscious, lying on the ground foaming out the mouth and the nose.

"Ban Shou, continue." Tang Xiu wiped his hands with a piece of cloth.

Ban Shou glanced at Black Three who was flailing about in the trash bin, then looked at the green hair who was bubbling in his mouth. He swallowed hard and stammered gradually.

“Tang... Tang Xiu, that sunglasses man said... if we cut off your hands, he will add 100 thousand yuan. If we cut off your legs, he would add 200 thousand yuan... This is what Black Three promised.” Ban Shou said with difficulty.

After hearing what Ban Shou had to say, Tang could not help to frown. He really could not figure out who hated him so much, to the point where he wanted to cut off Tang’s hands and feet.

Staring at Ban Shou for a moment Tang confirmed that he did not lie. Tang Xiu then kicked down the trash bin, so that Black Three had the opportunity to breathe fresh air once again.

“Who ordered you to attack me?” Tang Xiu snapped at Black Three whilst kicking him harshly.

Black Three seemed to be in a semi-conscious state, his eyes stirred, but he did not answer Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu was not anxious. He glanced at the kitchen, and saw a steaming stove pot. He went to pick up the pot with a wide grin. Soon boiling water poured down on Black Three.

As the boiling water was poured on him, Black Three fiercely twitched up with resounding screams of pain.

“Who told you to attack me?” Finding Black Three finally became fully conscious, Tang Xiu continued to ask.

Black Three hatefully looked at Tang Xiu. He would have liked to say a few words out of spite, but thought of the result from his previous experience. He had to swallow what he wanted to say.

Black Three had made a living in the underworld for more than 20 years and he had worked with all kinds of people, but he had never met a person as cold blooded as Tang Xiu.

Black Three knew that if he was ignorant about the current state of affairs, Tang Xiu would murder him.

Black Three felt extremely depressed because a high school student was forcing him to admit his mistakes.

“Still keeping quiet? Then you never speak again!” A pot of boiling water was poured to Black Three while he wasn’t thinking.

“I’ll talk... I’ll talk... ” Watching the cold and uncaring eyes of Tang Xiu, Black Three was thoroughly awake. He was crying for forgiveness while he was writhing in pain.

We need to say that human potential is infinite. Even if Black Three was seriously injured, he dodged the boiling water to avoid the fate of being scalded at a critical moment, but some boiling water still splashed on him, injuring him slightly.

“The sunglasses man is Xu Kun, the sales manager of the Shangwen Real Estate Company. It seems that you have offended

his boss, and brought shame onto him, so the person who wants to deal with you is Xu Kun's boss." Black Three was afraid that Tang would continue to torture him if he spoke slowly. Therefore, he told all the information he knew to Tang Xiu.

"Shangwen Real Estate Company?" Tang had doubts in his mind. When his guess was confirmed, he could not help being angry, outrage burst from his mind.

Because of a variety of high-profile and show-off behaviors of his uncle's family, Tang Xiu naturally knew who was the boss of the Shangwen Real Estate.

It really didn't occur to Tang Xiu that he had let his uncle's whole family go due to the blood relation with them, while they would coerce he and his mother until death in turn.

"Su Shangwen, you will pay for your ruthlessness" Tang Xiu said as he looked in the direction of the Shangwen Real Estate Building, Tang Xiu started to have murderous intent raise up from within his heart. It was the first time he had this intention

Tang Xiu was so agitated he actually forgot about Black Three.

The bullies were afraid of Tang Xiu and did not dare make a move while Tang Xiu was lost in a state of mind, after all , they got beaten by Tang Xiu more than once.

"Tang..... Brother Tang, these are the worthy things that all we

have. If not enough, we will try our best to get you more.” as Tang Xiu pondered on how to deal with his uncle whilst also not making his mother’s sad, a weak voice was sounded in his ears.

Hearing the voice of Ban Shou, Tang Xiu just noted that there were several people still waiting on what he was going to say next.

Ban Shou was holding a stack of cash, jewelry and a bank card as well.

The cash was worth about fifty to sixty thousand, the value of the jewelry was ignored by Tang Xiu however, instead the gold bank card caught Tang’s attention.

“You think this is enough compensation?” Tang Xiu did not reach out for the money Ban Shou was holding, but instead sneered at him.

What Tang said suddenly made Black feel gloomy. At that moment, Black Three felt regretful for what he had done.

He looked at the restaurant he had smashed up, Black Three knew that the money he brought out wasn’t enough.

“In three days, I would like to see a brand new restaurant, or there will be consequences.” Tang Xiu coldly glanced at the bullies and then walked out of the kitchen with his mother. They finally left the restaurant.

The kitchen was too dirty and smelly. After staying in the kitchen for a long time, Tang Xiu had reached the limit of bearing the smell, as he had a slight cleanness. He really did not want to entangle with them, so he decisively left.

After a long time after Tang left, Black Three and other people recovered.

“Did the demon leave?”

“He should have. If he hasn’t left, I would break down!”

“Good, the demon is too scary, I don’t want to meet with him again.”

Confirming Tang had left, Black Three and the others cried with joy and felt relaxed. Everyone smiled and sat on the ground, completely ignoring the dirt on the ground.

“Ban Shou, just now you were saying something, you actually wanted to betray me?” Black Three said to Ban Shou who was really nervous.

Ban Shou lowered his head his emotions were volatile. After a long while, his eyes flashed a firm look and said, “Black, you have controlled this area over twenty years, however it is about time to retire.”

“You!” Black Three did not expect that Ban Shou dare to

challenge him without Tang Xiu. He frowned and then wanted to scold Ban Shou, but just as he was about to speak, he found the atmosphere was a bit abnormal.

Besides the green hair, the other five bullies stood around Ban Shou. They all looked at Black with aggressive emotion.

“Black Brother, thank you for sheltering us in our most helpless time and gave us meals. We did so much for you, it was enough to repay your kindness. But we do not want to continue to follow you, because you are too cruel, too selfish and there is no bottom line at all. ” Ban Shou said word by word.

“Even we are just make a living in the underworld, we still need to follow the rules. But you never follow the rules. Those are not what we want.” Ban Shou put all the money, jewelry and bank card into his own pocket, said solemnly, “from now on, I don’t want to see you again in Old River Street Area, behave yourself.”

After saying the words, Ban Shou left the restaurant.

“Black, You cannot resent us, just blame yourself for your own unreasonable and selfish.”

“Black, you’d better not to wish to take back the leadership. In these two years, when you had fun all the time and regarded us as coolies, Ban Shou got the recognition of everyone long before.”

If Tang Xiu’s attack on Black Three was only physical, then the

strike by the bullies was at a psychological level.

As the bullies left one by one, only the green hair stayed as he did not know what to do. Black Three seemed soulless, sitting in the kitchen motionless.

Chapter 19: Debt Collection

Ten minutes later, Tang Xiu and his mother appeared in a low shanty house.

Because they were short on money, they did not have their own house in Star City, but instead rented the cheapest flat in the shanty area as a temporary residence.

Gently putting his mother on a small plank bed, Tang Xiu started to do some chores inside the flat.

During the thousands of years in the immortal world, Tang Xiu had gotten used to an easy life where others had served him. Sometimes he even had no problems with not eating or drinking for hundreds of years at a time. He was obviously unaccustomed to this when he had to clean the house.

Within moments, Tang had gradually become skillful, and his face gradually produced a smile.

The room was small, only forty square meters. It was divided into four rooms. The living room with the dining room adjacent to it, there was a worn-out sofa separating the spaces, then there was the kitchen, bedroom, and bathroom.

Tang Xiu looked at the clean pillow and old quilt on the sofa, this made him sad all of a sudden.

As the room was too small and there being only one bedroom, Su Lingyun left the bedroom to Tang, she then slept on the sofa. Even when Tang Xiu was schooling, Su Lingyun insisted on sleeping on the sofa, refusing to step into the bedroom.

In Su Lingyun's words, Tang Xiu had grown up, he must be allowed his own space.

It was precisely this kind of Su Lingyun's meticulous care and spoiling that made Tang Xiu unable to cut off his attachment and yearning toward his mother for thousands of years in the immortal world, Tang Xiu yearned for mother's love.

Half an hour later, the house was clean and tidy. Without a spec of dust neither top nor bottom, inside and outside. Just like a brand new house.

As it was late in the day and knowing his mother still had not eaten, Tang Xiu crept into the kitchen.

While Tang Xiu was cleaning the house, a human tragedy drama was unfolding in Lingjia Restaurant.

An hour ago, after Yuan Chuling handed in the paper, he happily went to the examination room where Tang Xiu had the exam. He was looking for Tang to share his joy, but he did not expect that Tang Xiu had already left the school.

Since Yuan Chuling was familiar with the whereabouts of Tang,

he did not hesitate to rush to Lingjia Restaurant and the scene in front of his eyes made him shocked and infuriated. The restaurant, which was regarded by Tang Xiu and Su Lingyun as part of their lives was smashed beyond recognition.

Suddenly, Yuan Chuling was crushed by remorse. He blamed himself for his selfishness. He clearly had the capabilities to help Tang Xiu improve his life, however, he had not yet done anything to help.

Yuan Chuling was about to call the police, but he faintly heard some chatter coming from the kitchen, Yuan Chu Ling did not hesitate to rush inside to investigate.

In the kitchen, Black Three and the Green-Haired bully did not notice Yuan Chuling's arrival. They were still cursing Tang Xiu and his mother with clenched teeth while planning on how to exact revenge on them.

Today, Black Three and the Green-Haired were beaten badly by Tang Xiu. Following that, the rest of their own men had betrayed them. These events had given them a huge psychological trauma, completely blinded by hatred, there was only the need for revenge in their hearts.

While the two of them were discussing how to abuse Su Lingyun, Yuan Chuling walked into the kitchen with an angry face.

Staring blankly at Black Three and the Green-Haired bully, Yuan Chuling grabbed a chair and started mercilessly beating it against

them.

Had Black Three and the Green-Haired bully not already been injured, Yuan Chuling could never be considered an opponent to either of them due to their experience and skills in combat. Unfortunately, Black Three's hands were fractured by Tang Xiu, and a few ribs of the Green Haired bully were also broken. Currently, the two of them were like disabled people, at such a pitiful state even an ordinary person could beat them, much less a stronger person like Yuan Chuling.

Yuan Chuling beat them up for more than ten minutes till he got tired. Black Three and the Green-Haired bully had already fainted long before Yuan Chuling stopped. They were totally covered with blood, gaping wounds, and injuries all over their bodies.

“Did I.....did I kill them?” Yuan Chuling finally woke up from his frenzy and realized the shocking scene on the ground he had caused, his face immediately turned pale. He then turned around and ran away.

Just as Yuan Chuling left the restaurant, Ban Shou and the other bullies came back.

When Ban Shou inadvertently saw a line of blood-stained footprints coming from the kitchen to the front door, his complexion changed greatly and he rushed into the kitchen.

Following Ban Shou, Ding Zi and the others could faintly guess what happened as they rushed inside.

Seeing Black Three and the Green-Haired bully lying on the bloody floor motionless, the bullies were shocked and their faces turned pale.

“Quick, they are still breathing, call the ambulance! Hurry!” Ban Shou shouted in a condescending tone. After carefully checking the condition of Black Three and the Green-Haired bully, subconsciously he felt relieved.

Hearing that Black Three and the Green-Haired bully were still alive, the other bullies relaxed and then quickly left.

However, they were sorrowful after they saw the miserable condition.

They knew that if they had not chosen to follow Ban Shou and Ding Zi before and continued to follow Black Three and the Green-Haired bully, they would have also ended up in the same state.

“Ban Shou, who beat them up like this? They nearly killed them.” Ding Zi said with fear, staring at Black Three and the Green-Haired bully on the floor with their deathly pale complexion due to losing an enormous amount of blood.

Ding Zi knew that if they hadn't come back to the restaurant in time, Black Three and the Green-Haired bully would have definitely passed away.

Upon hearing what Ding Zi had to say, Tang Xiu's figure subconsciously appeared in Ban Shou's mind, he shivered suddenly, but did not dare say who he thought the culprit was.

Although Ban Shou did not say anything, Ding Zi and the others understood.

Outside the restaurant, Yuan Chuling had run a long way, but he turned back. Watching people move in the restaurant, he did not dare to go back inside, but instead he hid outside. When he heard the news that they were not dead, he felt at ease.

River Street Old Area, Shanty Area

After busying himself for nearly an hour, Tang Xiu finally tossed out a full table of dishes, showing a sincere smile.

In order to make the dishes, Tang Xiu even had to visit to the market twice.

The first time was to the food market. Tang Xiu only bought some common vegetables. But when Tang Xiu checked the condition of his mother again, he found that his mother was in a serious overdraft state and had multiple hidden diseases, so he could not help going to the market to buy some Astragalus and red ginseng.

He then carefully tasted the meals on the table again to confirm that there were no flaws and then went into the bedroom to wake

up his mother.

“Xiu, weren’t we in the restaurant? Why am I at home and in bed?” When Su Lingyun opened her eyes and figured out where she was, she felt light-headed.

“Mom, you are too tired and still dazed from this whole incident, you passed out.” Tang Xiu explained with a smile.

“Mom, the issue about the restaurant has been solved. I have negotiated with Black Three and the others. They have promised not to harass us again and will help us to renovate the restaurant.” Not waiting for his mother to ask, Tang Xiu told all the things that his mother would be worried about.

Su Lingyun’s complexion changed to that of disbelief after hearing what Tang Xiu just told her, she hurriedly lifted up Tang Xiu’s clothes, and checked Tang Xiu’s body. After confirming that Tang Xiu was not injured, she began muttering in amazement, “Black Three and other bullies are from the underworld, how could they possibly let go of us that easily?”

“Mom, as the saying goes, everything has its conqueror. They might consider me as a nobody. But when I showed them the name of the cards of police officer Cheng Xuemei and Hu Wenxu and they were scared, just like a mouse meeting a cat. They feared that I would tell the police officers, so they promised to help in restoring the restaurant, they also gave me a lot of money and jewelry.....”

In order to completely reassure the mother, Tang Xiu had to rack up his brain to make up a believable story.

Tang Xiu was surprised at his ability to make up a story which could even convince himself, let alone his mother, who trusted him a lot.

“Xiu, you did a good job. I will visit police officer Cheng and Hu when it is convenient. We have to get close to the police so that the bullies will fear us. You are far better than me at doing this.” Su Lingyun softly said as she affectionately touched Tang’s head.

“Mom, we should talk about this later. Let’s first eat or the food will get cold.” When Tang Xiu saw that his mother wanted to continue with the talk, he had to push her out of the bedroom.

Su Lingyun was confused and didn’t really pay attention to what Tang Xiu just said. She subconsciously went into the kitchen to cook a meal. She could not help but exclaim when she saw the table full of food, “Oh, why there are so many dishes? Did you order the take-out food?”

“Mom, I spent an hour on cooking these dishes, they are all your favorite food. Does it suit your tastes?” Tang Xiu said nervously as he pressed his mother to the seat. He then gave her a bowl full of food.

Tang had cooked four dishes and a pot of medicine. The four dishes were taro chicken, steamed fish, fried rapeseed, daylily soup and a porridge of medicinal to supplement her weak body and to

help her pneuma.

Smelling the delicious flavors, Su Lingyun moved her fingers. She could not wait to hold the bowl and begin eating.

“Mom, eat slowly, do not choke. If the food is not enough, I’ll cook more for you.” Seeing the way his mother was swallowing down the food, Tang Xiu’s heart was filled with a great sense of success. This sense of success made him feel more excited than a breakthrough during practice.

“Xiu, don’t just watch me eating, come join me and have some.” Su Lingyun said after eating for a while. She realized her son was watching her eat in such a manner and felt embarrassed.

“Alright, let’s eat together.” This was the first time that Tang Xiu see his mother forgetting herself. He smiled and then immediately started to eat.

While they were happily enjoying the warm dinner, a loud bang suddenly came from outside. The house violently shook a bit and then three strong men clad in western suits and leather shoes stormed into the house.

Seeing Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu were enjoying a meal, the man with a buzz-cut hair grinned fiendishly and then heavily kicked the low wooden table downwards.

With a loud bang, the old looking wooden table was broken into

pieces. The meals on the table were all dispersed all over the floor.

“You have money to pay for your food, but have no money to repay us. Do you fucking think we are stupid!” After kicking the table the buzz-cut haired man shouted angrily. He then raised his hand to slap Su Lingyun.

Chapter 20: Severing All Ties

Su Lingyun was completely immersed in the cozy atmosphere Tang Xiu had created, so she didn't expect someone to pay them a visit at this time and in such an unusual way.

After clearly seeing the three men's faces, Su Lingyun's heart skipped a beat, and her immersion was shattered.

Because she was in a trance, Su Lingyun didn't even notice as the buzz-cut man kicked over the table.

Su Lingyun didn't react until the guy was grinning and was about to slap her face. When she finally caught up, she screamed and wanted to escape.

However, Su Lingyun was still seated. If she wanted to escape from the slap of the buzz-cut man, she would have to stand up before she could start running. And since the man would not wait to let her escape, Su Lingyun could not dodge that slap.

Watching as the palm closed in on her face, Su Lingyun desperately closed her eyes.

At the next moment, Su Lingyun heard the sound of someone groaning. Su Lingyun thought she recognized the voice as it came from the buzz cut man.

Su Lingyun was stunned when she opened her eyes. She found

that the vicious-looking man with spiky hair, who was so ferocious just now, was already squatting on the ground. A chicken bone was stuck in his forehead, blood was flowing out of the wound along the bone before dripping to the ground.

“You dare attack him!?”

“Are you an idiot!?”

“Do you want to die!?”

The other two men in suits looked at their companion on the ground and then looked at Tang Xiu who was sitting on the chair, motionless. After a long time, they finally realized that their companion was hurt by Tang Xiu with a chicken bone. Seething with rage, the two shouted and rushed towards the youth.

“No, please don’t hurt my son! He didn’t mean to hurt your companion, we are willing to compensate for it!” Su Lingyun hysterically shouted whilst rushing towards Tang Xiu. She also understood what had happened and tried to bare the pain.

Seeing his mother’s frightened expression, Tang Xiu’s cold expression lightened. He stretched out his arms and embraced his mother. At the same time, he lifted his legs and readied for an attack. Two pieces of shattered porcelain from a bowl flew up from the ground and were cast towards the two men’s forehead.

The two pitiful men had only just raised their thighs, and had not

even moved a step, but they had received the same result as their companion. Then fell to the floor, howling in pain.

“They... they... Xiu’er, what’s going on?” Su Lingyun had thought that they must have been brutally humiliated. Realizing that everything had happened so abruptly, she was completely shocked.

“Mom, it’s ok, don’t worry, just let me handle this.” Tang Xiu pinched his mother’s palm and comforted her softly.

This time, Tang Xiu did not make his mother blackout.

Tang Xiu was not willing to let his mother live in fear, so he wanted to show off his strength and capabilities, letting her know that he had the ability to protect his family.

To appease his mother’s emotions, Tang Xiu went to the three suited men and coldly asking, “If I am right, my mother has already repaid you including interest, why do you have to harass us?”

Tang Xiu was familiar with the three men in front of him.

His mother was short of money when she opened the restaurant, and even after borrowing money from relatives, she was still short of 50,000 yuan. Therefore, she had to get money from a small loan company.

They thought that if it was only a loan of 50,000 yuan, they could repay the debt if they worked hard.

However, they did not think this small loan company was a loan shark. They changed the loan contract. The original interest was 3.3%, but as time progressed, the final loan had stunningly increased to 7.33%.

The plan was to repay by dividing the 50,000 yuan loan into six months, but due to the change of interest, the actual price repaid every month was 12,000 yuan.

Tang Xiu and his mother could only painfully and helplessly endure the debt. They tried to put up some fierce resistance, but it ended in failure.

They did not think that the loan shark with high interest was only the beginning of their nightmare. In the times to come, they almost always lived in a waking nightmare.

In the first month, the restaurant was operating at a loss, Tang Xiu and his mother were unable to repay the loan. As a result, the small loan company ignored their pleas and ransacked their home. The loan shark company also threatened them to repay the principal money and interest, otherwise, they would start to attack the restaurant.

There was no way to plead their case, their only option was to borrow money from relatives and friends. In three days, they finally gathered enough money to pay off the debt.

The loan sharks seemed to think that they were easy to bully. So within the next few months, the loan sharks pushed them for more money every month, and harassed Tang Xiu and his mother for pleasure.

In order to avoid the bullying, Su Lingyun would prepare the payments. Even in cases where the restaurant's profit wasn't enough.

Su Lingyun's restaurant is situated on Old River Street Old Street. Their neighbors also had similar businesses. This made for tough competition and prevented Su Lingyun from earning a lot each month.

After half a year, Su Lingyun was finally able to repay the entire debt to the loan sharks. However, after repaying all the money, Tang Xiu and his mother had no savings left. There was no money left to pay for Tang's tuition. Su Lingyun was also losing weight due to this.

That is why when Su Lingyun saw the three suited men, she looked pale, which was also a reason why Tang Xiu was this merciless.

"Tang Xiu, you son of a b***h, you dare attack us? We are members of the Tianlang Society. Do you think that we can't kill you and your mother whenever we want?" The buzz cut man cursed and clenched his jaws as he pulled the chicken bone out of his head.

“We have been in contact for half a year, you should know there are some problems with my brain. Are you saying that killing you three would be illegal?” Tang Xiu grinned as he grabbed a chair and started to strike the buzz cut man with it.

There was a crisp “crack” as the shoulder bone of the buzz cut man broke. He was in far too much pain to talk.

“I will ask you again, we have already repaid the debt, why are you still harassing us?” Tang Xiu, this time, directed the question to the two other people.

“Err... Tang Xiu, you did repay your debt, but someone signed a debt transfer contract with us last month, so you have to create a new loan relation with our business.” Under the sharp eyes of Tang Xiu, another man was about to call Tang Xiu a son of a b***h but swiftly stopped.

“Xiu’er, it is your younger uncle. We borrowed 50,000 yuan from your uncle. Maybe what happened last month made him angry out of shame, so maybe he went to Eternal Growth Trading Co. and made a transfer to them.” Su Lingyun added when she noticed that the suited man could not fully explain the situation.

After hearing what Su Lingyun had to say, Tang Xiu became silent.

Reminded by the words said by Ban Shou and Ding Zi in the restaurant, his anger was ignited.

Tang Xiu didn't understand why his younger uncle would act so heartlessly because they were family.

"Mom, why did you only tell me this after all that has happened?" Tang Xiu complained after a moment of silence.

Su Lingyun only touched Tang Xiu's forehead indulgently but did not speak. However, Tang Xiu got the answer from his mother's eyes.

His mother did not tell him about the harassment in the restaurant and at home. The reason was that she didn't want it to affect his performance at school. Another reason was that it would only make Tang Xiu worry more.

For a moment, Tang Xiu slightly hated himself for not showing his strength earlier. That way, perhaps his mother would have discussed the difficulties she faced, rather than bearing it in silence.

"This card has 50,000 yuan. Take it and get out. If you dare to continue harassing my mother, I will make sure your business will have no future in Star City!" Tang Xiu shouted.

While he was thinking about how to solve the problem with Eternal Growth Trading Co., a muffled voice came from outside the house. Moments later, Yuan Chuling's obese body squeezed into the house.

“Fatty, why are you here?” Tang Xiu asked in surprise.

Even though he had known Yuan Chuling for a long time, Tang Xiu did not think about letting Yuan Chuling visit his home because of his low self-esteem. So he didn’t expect that Yuan Chuling would come here of his own volition.

“Brother, you didn’t even tell me about the problems you have with your own family. It seems you don’t see me as your brother.” Yuan Chuling grinned, punching Tang Xiu lightly on the chest.

“Mom, let me introduce him to you, this is my classmate, Yuan Chuling. He is my only buddy in school. When I shifted from Class 5 to Class 10, he also followed me and transferred to Class 10.” Tang Xiu explained with a smile as he noticed his mother’s eyes were full of questions.

“Oh, it is Tang Xiu’s classmate. Welcome to our family.” After listening to the introduction, Su Ling Yun’s face showed a warm smile, but when she saw the bodies of the three suited men lying on the floor, her complexion turned gloomy as the smile on her face faded slightly.

“You’re still not leaving yet? Are you waiting for me to send you back?” Yuan Chuling snapped at the three suited men when he noticed the reaction in Su Lingyun’s eyes.

“Young Master Yuan, I am sorry, I didn’t know Master Tang was your friend. If we knew Master Tang was your friend, we would

not have harassed him.”

“Young master Yuan, this is your card, please take it back. We had accidentally ruined Boss Su and Young Master Tang’s dinner. This way, the 50,000 yuan debt will be paid off. We also wish Young Master Yuan to put in some good words for us to Boss Yuan, so that we may still work in the company.”

The two remaining suited men fearfully said. They then fled the scene as fast as possible, carrying the unconscious buzz cut man with them.

Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu originally thought that Yuan Chuling’s hot temper would provoke contradictions and stir up more troubles, and had already planned to stop his impulses. They would have never thought that after he spoke, the things that happened next would make them stunned.

Tang Xiu and his mother could only stand there for a long time.

Chapter 21: So Pleased As To Lose One's Sense Of Measure

“Fatty, how could it be that they are awfully afraid to see you?” Although he had long been friends with Yuan Chuling, Tang Xiu had never asked about Yuan Chuling’s family situation. On the other hand, he also never raised the subject about his family in front of Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu only faintly knew that Yuan Chuling’s parents did have hundreds of millions in assets and, but he was quite clueless about other things. Having been through the previous matter, Tang Xiu found that his buddy’s identity was quite mysterious.

Having heard Tang Xiu’s question, a scarlet blush covered Yuan Chuling’s round face. And with eyes full of an awkward expression, he answered, “Eldest Brother, since things have been resolved, could you not dig any further?”

Upon hearing his answer, Tang Xiu didn’t speak and instead stared straight at Yuan Chuling.

“Eldest Brother... I’m afraid... if I say it...” Under Tang Xiu’s questioning gaze, Yuan Chuling was quickly defeated as he told everything with an embarrassed and ashamed expression, about his relationship with the Eternal Growth Trading Co.

Five years ago, when the country vigorously cracked down and rectified the illegal usury company, Yuan Chuling’s uncle seized the opportunity to purchase the Eternal Growth Trading Co. and

then became the company's boss.

However, the kind of opportunistic, lazy, and irresponsible Yuan Chuling's uncle, Zhao Tielin, proved to have no ability. Even though he became the Eternal Growth Trading Co's owner, he didn't know how to run a business, and instead let the previous company's staff run the business. Resulting in turmoil within the company. Although Yuan Chuling's parents had lent a hand, it took quite a long time to clean up his mess.

Because Yuan Chuling often went in and out the Eternal Growth Trading Co, coupled with the unusual doting Zhao Tielin had toward Yuan Chuling, over time, everyone from the top to the bottom of the Eternal Growth Trading Co. knew about his relationship with Zhao Tielin. They even regarded him as the crown prince master.

Having heard that the Eternal Growth Trading Co.'s true owner turned out to be Yuan Chuling's parents, a kind of died down feeling sprouted out from Tang Xiu's heart, making him almost vomit blood as he looked at Yuan Chuling with an unspoken bitterness which even words were unable to convey.

Thinking about as to how he and his mother had long been forced into a desperate situation for 6 months because of this Eternal Growth Trading Co., Tang Xiu could only feel that he had been wronged.

Mixed feelings also enveloped Su Lingyun's heart, but at the next moment, with some effort, she was able to adjust her mood and then warmly greeted Yuan Chuling and asked him to sit, serving

some tea and then skillfully cleaning up the house.

“Eldest Brother, I’m really sorry. After my parents divorced, I rarely go to the Eternal Growth Trading Co. anymore. Also, I haven’t paid any attention to their specific businesses. Otherwise, this matter wouldn’t have happened.” Yuan Chuling was also perfectly aware of the inner circumstance within the Eternal Growth Trading Co, even at a glance, it could be seen that it was a complete mess, making his heart full of guilt and shame.

“This thing does not have anything to do with you. You don’t need to blame yourself.” Upon seeing Yuan Chuling’s apologetic and regretful expression, Tang Xiu’s heart also melted as he patted Yuan Chuling’s shoulder before he curiously asked, “Anyways, as long as I’ve recalled, I have never given my address to you or anyone, how did you find it?”

“Eldest Brother, what about the matter at the restaurant? That group of thugs had bashed the restaurant without reasons or cause. Do you need me to deal with it?” As he simply shifted to the matter with the restaurant, Yuan Chuling asked in an excited manner.

“The restaurant matter has been resolved, but thanks for your concern though. Anyways, it’s the second day of our month vacation, you’re not going back to accompany your father and mother?” Seeing his mother become motionless and speechless after having heard of the matter with the restaurant, Tang Xiu didn’t hesitate to shift the topic.

“I... I... Eldest Brother, I have yet to prepare my mind and heart, I just want to wait until the end of the college entrance

examination, and then I will consider this matter afterward.” Having raised the subject about his parents, Yuan Chuling’s mood suddenly became gloomy and dejected.

Ten minutes later, the room had been cleaned up and got a new look from Su Lingyun, and then the three of them took the leftover dishes in the kitchen and had dinner.

At the dinner table, Su Lingyun threw full praises towards Tang Xiu’s cooking skill while Yuan Chuling was devouring it as he himself almost wolfed down more than half of the dishes. Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu could only look at him with dumbfounded expressions.

With Yuan Chuling’s funny gags, the originally cold, dull, and sad atmosphere soon became cheerful and lively.

“Eldest Brother, I remember that yesterday you said that this month you’ll take the first grade, and now since all the tests have been finished, how much of a chance is there that you will take first grade?” The topic unknowingly shifted around to the Monthly Test, Yuan Chu Ling asked with a nervous expression.

“Don’t worry, when have I spoken empty words to you?” Seeing Yuan Chuling’s caring looks, Tang Xiu nodded and answered confidently.

Just when Tang Xiu’s words had finished, “clang” sounds were heard.

As Tang Xiu followed the sound's direction, it turned out that the bowl suddenly fell from his mother's hands as she stared blankly at him.

"Xiu'er, did what you say just now is true? You can take this Monthly Test's first grade?" Su Lingyun didn't clean up the bowl on the floor as her hands grabbed Tang Xiu's arm and asked with an excited expression.

"Mom, the Monthly Test's results should be coming out in 3 days, you will know the results then." Tang Xiu was naturally aware of the concern in his mother's heart.

Tang Xiu knew that his mother had basically pinned almost all of her hopes on him. The car accident more than a year ago had almost devastated all the hopes his mother had.

For more than a year, his mother had always been looking after him with meticulous care even though she had never shown any restlessness in front of him, but Tang Xiu also knew that his performance grades fell rapidly. The one who truly suffered from the pressures was not himself, but instead his mother, who was unconditionally bearing the pressure.

And now, having suddenly learned that his performance grades had returned to his previous achievements, it was only natural for his mother to be excited.

"So you only need a month to catch up to your previous grades?" Upon hearing Tang Xiu's affirmative answer, Su Lingyun was

more excited.

“It’s a given though. Whose son you are looking at anyway?” Tang Xiu put on a smug face and replied.

“Great, great, I know that once your body is back to normal, your grades would soon also be coming back. Then, your father’s soul in heaven will rest in peace.” As Su Lingyun said these words, two lines of tears welled up although a smile covered her face this time.

Having thoroughly understood Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu’s expression from their eyes, Yuan Chuling at the side seemed to want to speak but hesitated as worries were drawn on his face.

In this month’s time, Yuan Chuling was also fully immersing himself into study. He was perfectly aware of the difficulties of how to improve one’s grades. He had originally wanted to speak to Su Lingyun about the difficulty degree of improving the Monthly Test’s grades from the bottom grade to reach the first grade. However, after seeing the joyful tears from Su Lingyun’s face, he didn’t have the heart to say it.

When he saw Su Lingyun’s pure concern and happiness for Tang Xiu and seeing the caring attention of a mother and child between Su Lingyun with Tang Xiu. at the same time, a slight envy filled Yuan Chuling’s heart.

It reminded him about when his mother decided to leave home. Gradually, Yuan Chuling’s eyes became moist.

When the students in the Star City were enjoying a rare two days' holiday this month, the high school's teachers for the third year had already reviewed the test papers.

For these third year's teachers, this was a painful and joyful pleasure.

It's painful because they had to sacrifice their time and holiday time with their family to mark the test papers. It was joyful because they could see little improvements from their students' results. They were seeing the College Entrance Test, like a bonus to entering higher education.

"Yang Jian's results are really good, his Literature and Languages' test scored 128 points, Mathematics 135 points, his Comprehensive Science test also got 242 points, if he can get more than 120 points in his English test, then he could pick most of the country's major universities." Hu Qiusheng read a few top students' statistics' grades in the class with a satisfied expression.

Actually, it was almost impossible for the third year's teachers to completely review the examinees' tests' papers in one day. But this didn't prevent the teachers in charge of their respective class to review the top students' tests in advance.

"Yang Jian's English results came out, 128 points; his total score has reached 633 points. Teacher Hu, congratulations! The two months he has spent working hard on this one finally bears fruit. Yang Jian is likely to be admitted to the Tsinghua University." Quickly, the Class 5 English teacher handed Yang Jian's English exam paper to Hu Qiusheng.

Upon hearing Yang Jian got 633 points in the second Monthly Test, other teachers in the office could not help but look toward Hu Qiusheng with envious eyes, and then spoke words of congratulation to him one after another.

“Hey, Tang Lijuan from our class only got 610 points, it seems he only got second place again.”

“Teacher Xiao, you don’t need to sigh, even the first genius in our class only got 598 points, I don’t know whether he would be able to enter the top ten or not.”

“This time, the difficulty degree for this Monthly Test was really raised too high compared to the last month’s. Its degree of difficulty is already close to the College Entrance Test. The students who are able to get more than 550 points should be able to enter prestigious universities.”

During most of the time today, these third year’s teachers had arranged the last month’s highest scorer in the forefront on top of test’s papers that had been marked, they also basically knew quite well about this time’s Monthly Test’s results.

All the tests’ papers had been marked, and there were 27 students who got 550 points or more, of which 12 of them came from Class 5, which was almost half of the total number. This made everyone become more envious to Hu Qiusheng’s good luck, and at the same time, they also had no choice but to congratulate him one by one.

“Everyone still remembers my bet with Teacher Han, right?” Having been flattered by numerous teachers for a while, Hu Qiusheng then spoke with a smug and conceited tone with a face full of an excited expression.

Hu Qiusheng’s words were like a pair of giant invisible hands that grabbed down on everyone’s neck, making the office instantly quiet down.

Looking at Hu Qiusheng’s expression which was seemingly blown up with success, everyone in the office subconsciously frowned with knitted brows. Never did they feel so disgusted with someone like this before.

“Oh, my wife has been calling me several times that I should go home quickly for dinner, see you everyone.”

“It’s too late today, if I don’t go home, my girlfriend will be angry again. I can’t continue reviewing the test papers again, see you everyone.”

“Since the marking for top 20 students for each classes’ test papers have basically been completed, let’s review the rest of the test papers tomorrow. Today everybody has worked hard, so let’s go home to rest first.”

Under Hu Qiusheng’s stunned and dumbfounded gaze, the room

which was previously full of people, was instantly emptied by the people who went home, leaving only him and Han Qingwu.

“Teacher Hu, you want to go home with everyone now, or do you want to personally mark Tang Xiu’s test paper, and then rig it again?” Han Qingwu looked at Hu Qiusheng and faintly smiled, with ridiculing expression.

“You... you...” Hu Qiusheng was almost unable to breathe from a few words from Han Qingwu, as he sprouted out this “you” words and pointed to Han Qingwu’s nose for a long time. Unable to speak a complete sentence, he finally gasped for a breath and slammed the door when he went out.

Chapter 22: I'll Become Number One

These last two days were undoubtedly the happiest time for Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu completely put aside his practice as well as studying.

All day long, he was beside his mother, indulging himself to enjoy his mother's spoiling without the slightest restraint.

Tang Xiu had long been longing such a wild hope, that one day he could have this day after living for ten thousand of years in the Immortal World. And now, his long-cherished wish had finally come true. Therefore, Tang Xiu truly cherished each second he spent together with his mother.

No matter what time, regardless of any place, Tang Xiu's eyes were unable to even lose sight of his mother's face even for a second.

"You sonny, why do you always watch attentively and look at your mother's face, is there any flowers growing on my face?" Having felt her son fondly attached to her, joy filled Su Lingyun's heart, even though she couldn't help but scold him as well.

"Mom's face must be more beautiful than flowers." Tang Xiu blurted out without even thinking.

"Oily mouth and smooth talker, you certainly have a girlfriend at

school.” Hearing the praise from her son, happiness blossomed in Su Lingyun’s heart, as she then scolded him with a happy expression.

“I do want to have a girlfriend, but unfortunately nobody looks at your son.” Tang Xiu curled his lips and spoke in disdain.

Han Qingwu’s figure involuntarily flashed through Tang Xiu’s mind after he said these words, as well as his intimate scene with her.

“That’s because they are blind, they will regret it one day.” Looking at her son’s content and happy smiling face, Su Lingyun felt touched that her son was happily smiling. Su Lingyun affectionately stroke Tang Xiu’s head and then hugged him.

However, happy times have always been short.

The 2 days of the monthly vacation had fled.

Although Tang Xiu was extremely reluctant to go, he had no choice but to return to school since his mother urged him to.

“Have you heard that this Monthly Test’s results have all come out? I heard that there are some students from our class that entered the top 20.”

“I’ve heard that also, I didn’t expect that apart from her outstanding abilities in sports and outside activities, Cheng

Yannan also excelled in studying, I've completely fallen for her."

"In the previous Monthly Test, Cheng Yannan only got 400, how could her points suddenly increase by 100 points?"

When he just walked and entered the classroom, Tang Xiu heard everyone discussing the Monthly Test's results.

Tang Xiu didn't participate in the discussion, but was racking his brains about some ways to make money.

Having gone through the restaurant's smashing, followed by that loan shark debt collectors matter, Tang Xiu became more aware of the importance of having formidable strength.

Tang Xiu knew that if he lacked strength just like when he had his rebirth, then, not only would have he and his mother been humiliated by those several bullies headed by Hei San, but those debt collectors from the Eternal Growth Trading Co. could also have beaten them. It was too horrible to even imagine the consequences.

It was precisely because he was lucky enough to fit the cultivation requirement and practice the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, which caused his physical body to undergo an earth-shaking transformation, that he had the strength to face and defend himself against all kinds of crises at that time.

However, practicing this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis also gave excessive and overbearing side effects. Tang Xiu didn't dare to actively practice this cultivation technique this month, and instead tried to find an alternative substitute for the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis with other martial skills and cultivation techniques.

However, after having spent one month, even though Tang Xiu had tried every cultivation technique and martial skills in his memory, he despairingly found out that all those cultivation techniques and martial skills from the Immortal World had harsh requirements regarding the need of heaven and earth spiritual energy. They simply were not suitable to be practiced on Earth.

Having realized that he had no means to practice all those cultivation techniques and martial skills in any situation, if Tang Xiu wanted to have the strength to protect his family and himself, moreover wanting to return to the Immortal World to have his revenge, then, he must choose to practice this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis.

But, in order to practice Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, Tang Xiu naturally had to find a way to find and buy all kinds of precious herbs and minerals in order to refine his bodily liquids and use it to temper and refine his own body. This certainly would need massive amounts of money.

“If I were to draw magical charms and sell it, could it be regarded by people as snatching God's stick?”

“Also, I don't know whether there are any other cultivators on

Earth or not. If there are, it actually wouldn't be bad if I built a formation array and sold it to them to make money, would it?"

"Or concocting pills and then selling them?"

Tang Xiu spent the whole night trying to find ways to make money only to find out by himself that the grand and sophisticated way of making money in the Immortal World couldn't be applied on Earth.

"Eldest Brother, even if we failed this exam, it really doesn't matter. There are still 2 months left till the College Entrance Test, so if we are willing to work hard, we can take the Unified Examination and be admitted to a university." Having seen Tang Xiu studying in the evening with his brows wrinkled, sighing voices, and wailing breath, Yuan Chuling was under the impression that Tang Xiu had already known about the Monthly Test's results and thus gave this kind of response. He gently spoke these comforting words as his side.

"Fatty, do you know any good way to make money?" Upon hearing Yuan Chuling's words, Tang Xiu eyes turned bright as he caught Yuan Chuling's arm, and asked with an excited expression.

Tang Xiu knew that the reason why he couldn't come out with any good way to make money was because he himself was only a bumpkin and had no business sense. On the other hand, he had been living for ten thousand years in the Immortal World, and since he was only here for a little while, he still was unable to keep

up with the senses and thoughts of the living rhythm on Earth.

But Yuan Chuling was different. His parents were successful businessmen. Having grown up and been influenced by such a kind of business environment, both of his business sense and talent were certainly incomparable to his.

“Eldest Brother, how much money do you want? I can lend you.” Seeing an eager expression from Tang Xiu, Yuan Chuling froze for a moment, and then quickly replied in a bright tone.

“I don’t want to borrow money, but want to make money. You tell me which is the world’s most profitable business, or what is the fastest way to make money.” Tang Xiu knew that Yuan Chuling misunderstood his words and replied while shaking his head.

“The quickest way to make money is certainly robbery; robbing a bank or jewelry shop. It doesn’t need any business and could be built from nothing, it’s enough to cover your current problems.” Yuan Chuling blurted out and talked without even thinking.

Upon hearing Yuan Chuling’s remarks, Tang Xiu couldn’t help but give him a supercilious look, then heavily slapped his shoulders, and snappily spoke, “I’m serious dammit! I’m dead serious in asking for your advice.”

“If you don’t want to rob or don’t dare to rob, then you can only buy lottery tickets, it could even make you a billionaire overnight. However, this is being too reliant on luck.”

“There is also speculating the stock market, albeit it needs a huge amount of capital as a support for the deed, but you also need to spend enough time and energy to study it meticulously. And this obviously doesn’t suit you.”

“Tang Xiu, if you want to make money then you can talk to me, eh. I know a lot of ways to make money. Now, the most suitable for you is to become a top scorer in this year’s provincial College Entrance Test. As long as you can be a top scorer on the College Entrance Test for our Shuangqing province, those kinds of bonus, endorsements, and advertisements will definitely roll in. Ordinary people could never make that much money in their entire lives.” When Tang Xiu was happily talking with Yuan Chuling, an ill-timed voice abruptly stuck in and interrupted their conversation.

Tang Xiu looked up and found that the one who was interrupting was Su Xiangfei. His brows wrinkled, and subconsciously, he had the urge to beat him.

But Su Xiangfei’s words nevertheless had him palpitate, sparking his interest. It caused him to repress the anger inside as he then asked Yuan Chuling, “Fatty, does the top scorer of the College Entrance Test for the Shuangqing Province really make a lot of money just like he said?”

“Eldest Brother, becoming the top scorer in the provincial’s College Entrance Test is definitely worth the money, the point is that we couldn’t even become a top scorer in the provincial College Entrance Test. It has been 13 years and not even one student from our Star City First High School is able to become the top scorer in

the provincial's College Entrance Test. And if you can be the highest scorer for the provincial College Entrance Test, I think our school will even reward you 1,000,000 in cash." Under Tang Xiu's eyes that were full of inquiries, with a face full of an agonized expression, Yuan Chuling nodded his head.

"Hahaha, I will die laughing. He actually really wants to take the top scorer for the College Entrance Test?"

"Hey, it seems the rumors really are true, Tang Xiu's mind really has a problem."

"He said before that he must be number one on the test, and now he said he will become the top scorer for the provincial College Entrance Test. Maybe a few days later, he will proclaim that he will rush out of the universe."

Upon seeing Tang Xiu's serious and earnest expression, Su Xiangfei, lead the other students in Class 10, as they couldn't help but burst into laughter.

Yuan Chuling's face flushed red in shame at the side, while Cheng Yannan, who was sitting in front of Tang Xiu, also slightly knitted her delicate eyebrows.

Only Tang Xiu who still had a light expression and sat undisturbed in the same place, didn't even move his a*s. He only swept his eyes over the loudly laughing classmates surrounding

him at the side with a calm and tranquil expression. There wasn't even rippling waves in his deep eyes, as if the one who was being ridiculed was not himself.

“Tang Xiu, the English and Math exams' papers have already been issued in advance. How many points did you get from these 2 preliminary subject tests? I suppose it would be unlikely that all completely got a salted duck's egg, right?” Having been out of breath due to laughing for quite a while, Su Xiangfei then asked.

“What? The exams' papers had been sent down? How could it be that I didn't know about it eh?” Tang Xiu looked around with a blank expression, and then found that the Monthly Tests' papers were really being put on everyone's desk.

Tang Xiu, at this time, was only thinking about one thing, and since he was too single-mindedly and drowned in the thought about making money, he didn't even notice that the English and Math exam papers had been issued in advance.

“Fatty, have you seen my Monthly Test's exam papers?” Tang Xiu turned toward his desk, and also looked at the floor, but he didn't find his Monthly Test's exam papers. He couldn't help but ask to Yuan Chuling at his side.

“Eldest Brother, I haven't seen your Monthly Test's exam papers. I thought you had received it.” Yuan Chuling replied quietly just like the sound of mosquitoes.

From the beginning, after the exam papers had been sent down,

Yuan Chuling's attention was fully glued to the eye-catching-bright red result on his results, and he didn't pay attention to whether Tang Xiu got his Monthly Test's exam papers or not.

However, to Yuan Chuling's understanding about Tang Xiu, he didn't think that Tang Xiu was playing with him, but he knew that Tang Xiu might really have yet to get his Monthly Test's exam papers. So, Yuan Chuling was also confused and puzzled.

“Hahaha, I really could die because of laughing. You solemnly vowed to take the first grade before the test, and now you even afraid to show the Monthly Test's exam papers to everyone. It can truly be called as a misfortune to me. Could it be that the English test with the Math turned out to be as I have predicted and feared, that all the tests got the ‘salted duck's eggs’?” Upon seeing Tang Xiu's and Yuan Chuling's appearances that looked like they were pretending, Su Xiangfei couldn't help but laugh again.

“For each preliminary exam you only used less than half an hour to hand your exam paper and then leave. Other than making noises to get the attention from almost nearly the entire school, that our class has presented such a genius, I really don't know what to call it otherwise.”

“Seizing the limelight to the extreme only to make a fool of yourself, and now you're also playing dumb. Tang Xiu, you haven't disgraced yourself enough in Class 5 and actually came to our Class 10 to disgrace yourself again, your face is really very thick.”

Under Su Xiangfei's lead, the other students of Class 10 let out an extreme ridicule to the highest degree of their abilities as they gathered around Tang Xiu, denouncing and sneering at him one sentence after another, missing only the cursing that pointed at Tang Xiu's nose.

"Tang Xiu, you come out." When Yuan Chuling was unable to bear it any longer and was about to come forward bravely, a crisp and sweet voice suddenly rang from the classroom's door.

Hearing this familiar and full of majesty voice, the noises in the classroom abruptly ended, and everyone went back to their seats quickly, taking out pen and paper, pretending to calculate something.

Chapter 23: It's Not The Most Shameless, Only More Brazen

The one who suddenly appeared at the classroom's door was Han Qingwu.

Han Qingwu's prestige had been firmly established after more than a year in charge of Class 10, and every student had extreme respect and love for her.

"Tang Xiu, do you know why teacher is calling you out?" In the corridor outside, after staying silent for a moment, Han Qingwu asked in a soft voice.

"If my guess is right, it should be related to the Monthly Test, right?" With his brain's processing speed far surpassing average people's, the moment Han Qingwu called him out in a loud voice, Tang Xiu had already understood about the matter, and naturally knew how to deal with it.

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's answer, Han Qingwu fell into silence again as her round pair of beautiful eyes stared at Tang Xiu and watched him attentively.

At the beginning, Tang Xiu also returned the gaze toward Han Qingwu with eyes full of s****l intentions.

After a long while, Tang Xiu was finally defeated.

Han Qingwu's expression was too pure with not even the slightest ill-meaning intention and anger, and Tang Xiu simply was unable to have the heart to blaspheme her pureness.

"Teacher Han... Aren't my English and Math exam papers being confined by you? Could it be that after seeing my tests' results, you think that I have cheated on the exam and you don't want me to make a fool of myself in front of the whole classmates, so you want to cover me?" Although Han Qingwu hadn't said a word, Tang Xiu could read it from Han Qingwu's eyes.

"You... you really didn't cheat?" Hearing Tang Xiu's words, Han Qingwu's tender body trembled while a disappointed expression flashed in her eyes.

"Teacher, do you remember the words I told you before the exam?" Tang Xiu didn't answer Han Qingwu, but rather asked an irrelevant question.

Han Qingwu's delicate white face suddenly turned rosy when she heard Tang Xiu's words. She clearly remembered that night before the exam, not only was Tang Xiu kissing her, he also deliberately baited her with words. So, she told him that she would be protecting and taking care of Tang Xiu for a lifetime.

"Teacher Han, before the exam, I've said that I will take this monthly test seriously to ensure that Hu Qiusheng will regret it and even make him deeply regret. You shouldn't have forgotten it." Seeing the puzzled and not understanding expression from Han Qingwu's garish and beautiful face, Tang Xiu knew that Han Qingwu's thoughts were straying as he then smiled and reminded

her.

“Do you also remember that you said such words? Then why did you make such big scene when you took this monthly test? You were bursting into tears and were in a daze in the Language and Literature exam room. Why did you hand over the exam papers after answering the test for less than half an hour? Did you want to make teacher disappointed?” Upon hearing Tang Xiu’s words, Han Qingwu was unable to suppress the restlessness in her heart, even her voice imperceptibly increased by several decibels.

When Tang Xiu heard it, he only smiled wryly and couldn’t help but touch his nose, while an embarrassed expression was fully drawn on his face.

“Teacher Han, the process is not important, but the results are. As long as the results are very good, everything is alright, is it not?” Tang Xiu faced the classroom with a pouted mouth and replied in a soft voice.

“The results are very good, ah, you big-headed demon! Your scores are too fake. The Language and Literatures exam got 140 points, 150 points for English test, 150 points for Math test, and Comprehensive Science test is 272 points, with total score reaching 712 points. You’ve even surpassed the genius Yang Jian who successively became the top scorer on the Monthly Test who only got 633 this time. Yours are 79 points higher than him!”

“This shows that I am more of a genius than him. Ah, Teacher Han, shouldn’t you be happy for me? So why do you look like you’re very angry?” With a puzzled expression, Tang Xiu asked

back.

“I AM very happy, and even too happy. However, that bastard Hu Qiusheng said that you were cheating on the test. When I insisted on watching the surveillance video in the exam room, he even said that someone was lying. He, from the very start, never believed that you might get such results from the test. Let alone him, even the whole third year’s teachers, no one believes that you can get this kind of result on the test!” Upon seeing that Tang Xiu seemingly hadn’t truly realized the seriousness of the problem, Han Qingwu couldn’t help but roar.

“Teacher, be calm, you need to be calm.” Seeing that not only several heads were popping out from his classroom, but also some people from other classrooms were attracted to see the commotion due to Han Qingwu’s shout, Tang Xiu quickly reminded her.

“You’re the one who should be calm, big demon! Now Hu Qiusheng even insisted that because you got such good results at the test, it’s entirely because you had read the test papers questions in advance, but also made oblique charges that since I couldn’t afford to lose, then I deliberately leaked the test papers questions to you. Now you tell me, what’s to be done with this matter?” Han Qingwu stared straight as she approached Tang Xiu, angrily appealing him with a charming and loveable expression.

Han Qingwu didn’t realize that her manner at this time she had completely forgotten her own self.

In front of Tang Xiu, Han Qingwu seemed not like a teacher, but more like a pair of friends.

“What, he was so shameless?” Tang Xiu apparently had never thought that his sudden outbreak would result in such a counterproductive effect.

Previously, Tang Xiu thought to hide his strength and then improve his test scores bit by bit, making it seem natural. Thus, it would be easier for everyone to believe it.

But every time Tang Xiu thought of that snob—Hu Qiusheng’s—face, anger filled his heart, not to mention there were also Yang Jian, and another group of people such as Su Xiangfei who were cynical, mocking and ridiculing him. Which then made Tang Xiu suddenly change his previous thought.

Even if he got a moderate score on the test, as long as he was progressing, he would certainly be suspected of copying and cheating.

Besides, their test’s results were average in general, so everyone could have suspected that he was copying someone and cheating. Thus, he might as well leap up in a single bound. Therefore, the others would be unable to suspect that he was cheating and copying other’s tests. But since he got the highest score, who else could have been his target for copying?

After having listened to Han Qingwu’s explanation, only then did Tang Xiu realize that for people with noble nature, even if you shot him from behind, he would only suspect that the gun was only being shot accidentally. But for people without shame, even if you

do better, they could and would always find countless reasons to discredit you.

“Tang Xiu, if you and teacher ensured that your test scores are true and valid, I have a way to clear up your name, so that bastard—Hu Qiusheng—has to apologize to you!” Upon seeing Tang Xiu’s excited expression, a trace of strange expression flashed from Han Qingwu’s eyes; she had unexpectedly believed Tang Xiu’s words.

Han Qingwu was speaking in English for this sentence. Although she believed Tang Xiu’s words, she still couldn’t help but want to test Tang Xiu and find out if Tang Xiu was really as he said, that he had already achieved the first-grade standard.

“Teacher Han, in fact, I wanted to tell you that after the accident. Although there was a problem with my brain, but my performance actually didn’t fall. I just become tired of the tests, so my grades became so bad, do you believe me?” Tang Xiu was perfectly aware that jumping up from the bottommost grade to the topmost grade was also a little bit too unbelievable, so he simply weaved a lie.

Of course, Tang Xiu also replied this sentence in English.

Seeing that Tang Xiu not only fully understood the content in her English sentence, but also used such authentic and fluent American-English to reply to her with confidence, Han Qingwu’s eyes instantly brightened.

“Tang Xiu, are you really not joking with teacher?” After having been lost in words for a moment, Han Qingwu responded back to

the of Tang Xiu's previous words while couldn't help feeling overjoyed.

“Teacher Han, I can lie to you for once, but I couldn't deceive you the next. Whether what I've said is true or false, you can find out in the next two monthly tests, right?” Tang Xiu blinked his eyes and replied with a smile on his face.

“Good, great, I can imagine that Hu Qiusheng would regret it, and even vomit blood at once tomorrow.” After having gotten positive answers from Tang Xiu's mouth, Han Qingwu couldn't help but burst into a happy laughter, and then handed over the English and Math exam papers to Tang Xiu.

After taking the exam papers, Tang Xiu then leisurely returned back into the classroom as Han Qingwu left with a relieved and eased feeling.

When Tang Xiu had almost entered the classroom, the evening bell indicating the end of studying time ringed in the school, causing the previously still and quiet school to be thrown into rocks of a lake, and instantly boil up.

Tang Xiu cleaned up his desk and then quietly left school.

Previously, Yuan Chuling had told him a lot of ways to make money. Although Yuan Chuling himself didn't seem to be reliable, but Tang Xiu really considered his words.

Of course, Tang Xiu didn't come out this time for robbing, neither was it to buy lottery tickets, nor to speculate the stock market.

Half an hour later, Tang Xiu's figure appeared in a Game Hall called "Health and Prosper Club".

Tang Xiu had long known the existence of this Game Hall, and even repeatedly passed this place, albeit he had never entered. He only knew that there were many boys in the school who were addicted to the game hall and often spent their pocket money in this place, as well as always coming out from this place cheerfully.

When he had just stepped into the Game Hall, Tang Xiu couldn't help but cover his nose. Even his straight and nice looking brows were wrinkled upwards and slanted.

Tang Xiu was almost suffocated since the Game Hall was very noisy with shouts and screams, filled with lingering smoke with a bad stench; it was completely a different world compared to the outside.

But remembering his goals, Tang Xiu held back his impulse to run out.

The Game Hall was about 400 square meters large, and had all kinds of slot machines, with a variety of slot machine designs inside. There were all kinds of large and small slot machines ordered in 6 rows, for a total of 100 pieces.

Almost every slot machine was surrounded by a few people, or even a dozen people standing there. It was truly unexpected that such a small Game Hall could actually gather over a thousand people.

And to Tang Xiu's surprise, he even found that amongst these more than 1000 people, even less than a half were wearing uniforms and mostly were from neighboring schools.

“With regards to minors, gambling machines are way too deceptive for them. At first, many minors were thinking that they were only playing games. The results were that they finally became addicted to them and abandoned their studies. This Game Hall was opened in the middle of the downtown area and didn't even ban students from entering, this bad influence is really too much.” Silently observing the crazy and lively scene in the Game Hall, a disgusting feeling rose in Tang Xiu's heart toward the Game Hall.

Tang Xiu didn't immediately start, but silently watched the method to play with the slot machine.

With such amount of people inside the Game Hall, Tang Xiu's behavior didn't cause any attention.

An hour later, Tang Xiu went to the new waiter and exchanged 10 coins before he lined up behind a slot machine.

The basic operation of the slot machine was very simple, one only needed to insert the coin and then pull down the handle. If the symbols in the box in the middle were matched, then one could

get the reward money, while the sum of money was related to the odds with the symbols' occurrences.

Sometimes even if it didn't match, if a specific symbol jumped out, you still could have a certain reward, and this symbol was usually a cherry. Sometimes, the machine will set a "universal" symbol that could substitute and match any other symbols, and the reward for this "omnipotent" symbol was greater than the usual reward.

However, making money out of slot machines was very difficult, and Tang Xiu had been observing it for an hour. Most people playing slot machines basically didn't get much yield. Even if some people occasionally had small wins, they would soon lose the money they had won.

With his fast brain's operating speed that was far above ordinary people's, Tang Xiu already familiarized himself with the rate of return for each slot machine from this hour of observation. He also knew the rules of each slot machine in his mind.

"Tang Xiu, it's actually really you! I thought I had seen the wrong person. You have no money to pay your tuition, but you're rich enough to play slot machines in the Game Hall. Just wow! You are really awesome!" Just when Tang Xiu's turn was about to come, someone's barks suddenly came out of nowhere and bursted near Tang Xiu's ears, causing Tang Xiu to have no choice but to shift his attention from the slot machine and look back.

Chapter 24: The Good Luck That Makes People Jealous

The someone that suddenly appeared at Tang Xiu's side was Su Xiangfei.

In order to pressure the third year students to study more, the Star City First High School purposefully increased the difficulties for the last Monthly Tests' questions, so the average results for the Star City First High School's students in this Monthly Test were far from ideal.

Su Xiangfei's results were also only average. When the last Monthly Test's results came out, it almost made him cry without tears. Only until he found that the class's average results were also low did he feel relieved.

But, despite this fact, after having seen his own marks, Su Xiangfei's mood plummeted into an unprecedented abyss. He endured to stay and study with great difficulty until the end of the first studying session, and then he immediately pulled the other 2 students to come to the Health and Prosper Club to vent his feelings.

But Su Xiangfei had never thought that he would encounter a familiar face in this Game Hall, much less that this familiar person was the most improbable person that was likely to appear in this place.

Tang Xiu only glanced once at Su Xiangfei before he retracted his

sight again, because the person that lined up in front of Tang Xiu had spent all of his money and it was his turn to play this slot machine. Tang Xiu didn't want to delay his money-making project only because of Su Xiangfei.

All slot machines' programs had been pre-set beforehand and only produced random prizes, so it was difficult to find a way to win steadily. However, through careful observations and calculations, Tang Xiu found that there were still some ways to increase the odds of winning, or at least to win a certain prize.

In most cases, when the slot machine had been used for a certain amount of time, it would be out of a symbol pattern, and there was a great chance to twist around the prize symbols from the symbol pool.

For Tang Xiu's financial state, he naturally couldn't have many game coins to play. However, this didn't prevent him from winning the prize.

One thing that must be known was that many people in the Game Hall were lining up only to have fun with the slot machine, not to mention that those people obviously only played to vent their feelings or came here to test their luck. They neither read the symbol table nor studied the symbol's occurrence odds and rate of return.

Tang Xiu had spent a full hour to observe the symbol table, while also thoroughly analyzing the game coins' accumulative rate from hundreds of slot machines in the Game Hall inside his mind. After he silently observed and calculated the number of queues in front

of the slot machine, as well as the numbers of game coins they had, Tang Xiu decisively chose to line up in front of this slot machine.

When the person in the line in front of him had spent his game coins, Tang Xiu subconsciously felt relieved.

Even though there was a little deviation in Tang Xiu's calculation, and this slot machine's symbols' prizes in the pool were twisted, but it would be unrelated to him. Because he only needed to insert 5 game coins to play and win the prize from this slot machine.

For fear that someone would cut the line, the moment the person in front of him had just left, Tang Xiu didn't hesitate to insert his game coins in the slot machine, and then immediately pressed the spin button.

Because of Tang Xiu's action, the three patterns in the slot machine's glass frame quickly spun, and if specific patterns (such as three identical patterns) would appear, then the prize money that it gave would be higher.

After a few seconds, the pattern stopped spinning, but the slot machine didn't ring anything.

“Hahaha, you country bumpkin, why did you move that fast? You have never played a slot machine it seems. Playing with slot machines is not dependent on the movement, but on luck!” Seeing Tang Xiu carelessly throwing his game coins and failing, Su Xiangfei couldn't help but burst into a loud laughter.

Tang Xiu was too lazy to look at Su Xiangfei as he inserted the game coins and then pressed the spin button again.

After a few seconds, the pattern stopped spinning again, but the slot machine still didn't ring.

“Hey Buddy, this machine seems to have gone bad, it only swallows money but won't spit any. I have been seeing it for half an hour and not even once have I seen it give out any game coins. I say, you don't need to waste your game coins on this slot machine.” Having seen that Tang Xiu had inserted the game coins for two consecutive times without any response from the machine, someone from the crowd loudly reminded him.

Tang Xiu glanced at that youth gratefully and then continued to dig the game coins from his trousers.

“Tang Xiu, bah, your mind indeed has a problem. He said that this machine has a problem, but you still throw your money on this machine. You don't have any other place for you to spend, do you?” Clearly looking at Tang Xiu's reaction from his eyes, Su Xiangfei couldn't help but mutter.

Tang Xiu ignored Su Xiangfei, and continued inserting the coins on the coin's slot.

This time, Tang Xiu didn't immediately press the “spin” button, but pressed the “raise”, and then inserted another coin into the machine again.

Having repeated this action twice, Tang Xiu's fingers then grabbed the "spin" button above.

The most exciting feat from the slot machine was the prize accumulation (jackpot). Not every slot machine had a jackpot. Generally, if you play the English version of the casino game machine, you could see "progressive slot" that was a cumulative prize pool. But if you wanted to win the pot, it would need 3 chips for each bet.

Once it hit the marked symbol on the prize pool, then all game coins in the slot machine would be spat out.

The reason why Tang Xiu inserted 2 game coins in front was exactly due to it being the most appropriate time to get the biggest bet.

"Your brain indeed has a problem, and not light it seems. Let's go play there, looking at this idiot only gives me a heart attack." Upon seeing Tang Xiu repeatedly ignore him, he was unable to vent his anger, so Su Xiangfei turned around and left after muttering to himself.

In the next moment, Su Xiangfei's body was felt like it was struck by paralyzing technique, as he stood motionless.

Su Xiangfei had almost turned his body when, in a split second after, crisp and clear tinkling sounds passed into his ears.

Having often come to the Game Hall to play, Su Xiangfei clearly knew that this was the sound of winning the prize money, and also the heavy winning one.

Subconsciously, Tang Xiu's action of filling coins for 2 consecutive times flashed through Su Xiangfei's mind.

"The jackpot, he actually hit the jackpot!" An absurd thought boiled from Su Xiangfei's mind, making him subconsciously yell out loudly.

When the slot machine issued sharp and crisp tinkling sounds, not only was Su Xiangfei stunned, but the crowd who was standing around the slot machine to watch was also shocked.

Because the sounds exuding from this slot machine was a bit too long.

The sounds coming from this slot machine really caused a big stir. Not only did it attract the people who played games nearby, but also attracted the Game Hall's boss.

"What happened, what happened, who broke my machine?" A short and plump, full of fat middle-aged man, shouted and squeezed in front of the slot machine.

His mouth was slightly twitching when he saw a lot of game coins everywhere on the floor, and then immediately laughed loudly,

“Ah, congratulations to you, little brother, this machine hasn’t given a prize money for a month yet. But you actually have run into good luck, it is estimated that it hit up to tens of thousands, yes?”

Facing the boss’s cordial smile, Tang Xiu was quite unable to give any respond first, since the boss didn’t reveal any painful expression at this time. Or maybe he was simply pushing the excuse that the slot machine was having a problem, and then denied him of winning a lot of game coins?

Tang Xiu immediately understood the reason in the next moment.

The boss was all smiling after Tang Xiu had said something, after which he immediately turned around to everyone in the Game Hall, “Everyone, you all can see that our slot machines in the Health and Prosper Club are 100% okay, small investment and huge returns. It’s simply investing a dime to earn a million. Except for robbery, never will you find any job that could make money like this compared to this one!”

Upon hearing the Game Hall’s boss’s words, Tang Xiu sneered in his heart endlessly.

According to Tang Xiu’s observation, the Game Hall’s slot machines were obviously tapped and machinated by the boss, not only did it have low winning odds, but the prize money was also much lower.

The reason why the slot machine being used by Tang Xiu gave this abnormal result was because too many people had played this slot machine today, which was already beyond the boss's control.

Under the boss's misleading enticement, the Game Hall instantly boiled.

People who originally intended to watch the fun also ran to the counter to buy game coins, while people who previously only intended to buy a few game coins to test the water were now also increasing their purchase amount without hesitation. As for the veteran-addicted hardcore players, they waved stacks of paper money and ran to the counter.

For a moment, a smile blossomed on the Game Hall's boss's face.

"It's only 18,000 game coins, damn, this Game Hall's boss is really stingy." After Tang Xiu clearly estimated the game coins in his hands, he couldn't help but pout his mouth, and then went to the counter to convert those coins into money.

However, Tang Xiu didn't completely convert all game coins into money, but left 100 pieces of game coins and continued to play in the Game Hall.

"Yo Buddy, you don't have any game coins, then I'll give you some, and anyways, thanks for your kind reminder before." When he accidentally passed a slot machine, Tang Xiu saw someone who was sighing in a vexed tone and was about to leave the slot machine. And since Tang Xiu was in a buoyant mood he threw 20

game coins to him.

The reason why Tang Xiu still vividly remembered this man was because this youth was bald-shaved, and second, because this bald youth was the only one that kindly reminded him amongst so many onlookers at that time.

“Ha... Ah, it’s you, thank you buddy. If I win then you can have half of the money.” This bald youth obviously had never expected that he would get such a surprising joy. When he saw Tang Xiu clearly, he just brazenly took the game coins and turned around to play again with full spirit.

This bald youth obviously had been drowned in a deep addiction, because he almost put the biggest bet for each gambling stake.

Saving only 6 coins, he fully threw all of his game coins given by Tang Xiu into the slot machine.

The bald youth was thinking that this time, he was really in vain and only wasted all of his money to the Game Hall’s boss, when suddenly, clear and loud clinking sounds exuded from the slot machine as game coins spit out from it at the next moment.

“This... This... Hahaha, I made it!” Looking at the game coins on the floor, the bald youth loudly cheered and then rushed up.

Although the game coins won by this bald youth at this time were not as many as Tang Xiu’s, it was around 4,000 game coins. Not

only was he able to win back all the money he had lost, but he also had a slight surplus, of which naturally made him excited.

Of course, the thing that made this bald youth most happy was that he finally won a game from the Game Hall, rather than usually making him lose and become a bottomless pit. The anger and vexed feeling in his heart finally got vented.

“Buddy, these game coins are yours, we’ll play again later.” The bald youth casually grabbed some of the game coins, and then put the rest of the game coins into Tang Xiu’s hands.

Tang Xiu wanted to refuse, but found that the bald youth had already gone in a flash. He couldn’t even find his shadow. He reluctantly received and took the rest of the game coins, then went to the counter to convert a large numbers of game coins to paper money.

Su Xiangfei was behind Tang Xiu with a foolish expression in his eyes.

Su Xiangfei usually refrained from drowning himself in the Health and Prosper Club. But almost all of his pocket money was spent in the Game Hall, and although Su Xiangfei sometimes won some game coins, he soon lost it once more.

But in just a few minutes, Su Xiangfei had been watching Tang Xiu’s track, as he not only won nearly 20,000 game coins, but also received gifts of several thousands of game coins, which made Su Xiangfei jealous.

Chapter 25: Refusing The Toast, Only To Be Forced To Drink

Su Xiangfei wasn't the only one who had a foolish expression in the face. The other two classmates behind him also fell into the same predicament.

“Tang Xiu does really go out of the door and tread his step on. He could actually win so much money in the Game Hall. I have visited the Game Hall so many times, but this is my first time seeing someone win so much money in the Game Hall.”

“This is what's called an idiot's luck. If Tang Xiu's brain was normal, he couldn't have won so much money.”

Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan were watching Tang Xiu with a face full of envy. They wished that the one who had won the money was not Tang Xiu but them.

“What does Tang Xiu have to deserve being envied, huh? His grades are the bottommost for the entire year. With the problem with his brain, not only would he fail to enter university, he would also face problems in the future. Don't tell me that you think these 20,000 game coins could let him eat and drink for a lifetime?” Su Xiangfei stared at his two followers and spoke out of disdain.

Su Xiangfei didn't notice that he was talking with a voice mixed with a sour taste.

Although Tang Xiu also noticed Su Xiangfei and the other 2 classmates' presence, and even heard that they were talking about him; however, Tang Xiu didn't put their words in his heart, since he simply didn't have time to pay attention to them.

A few minutes later, Tang Xiu's vision locked to another slot machine inside the Game Hall.

Judging from this slot machine's rules to win the prize money, it would need to swallow at least another 100 game coins before it can spit out game coins. But Tang Xiu had long calculated the odds of this slot machine would give.

"100 game coins in exchange for 8,000 game coins, this seems to be a quite a worthwhile transaction." Tang Xiu murmured and then unhurriedly stood behind the slot machine's queue.

If Tang Xiu had just entered the Game Hall, he would be reluctant to spend 100 game coins to play slot machines, but Tang Xiu had won 18,000 game coins today and then received more than 3,000 game coins, so he simply didn't care about these 100 game coins.

Since Tang Xiu's action had stirred up the Game Hall and attracted a lot of people's attention, it made many people subconsciously encircle around Tang Xiu when he began inserting game coins again; even Su Xiangfei's trio were no exception.

Regarding the onlookers who were standing in a circle and watching, never once did Tang Xiu care about them. He just slowly

filled the game coins into the slot machine in front of everyone, and then pressed the spin button.

At first, everyone also had wild expectations from Tang Xiu, since they thought that because Tang Xiu could win twice, and then he would be sure to win the third time.

But when everyone saw Tang Xiu continuously insert coins into the slot machine for 20 times, and didn't hear nor see any sounds, the onlookers gradually scattered.

“I thought a God of Gamble came here, but I didn't expect he was also trying his own luck.”

“It's because we were thinking too much, playing slot machines is, of course, dependent on luck. How the hell could it depend on skills to win? Otherwise, the boss would be in extreme deficit.”

“Bah, pretending to be so unpredictable, as if he's like the God of Gamble's reincarnation. Damn, I really wasted my feelings in vain.”

Upon hearing the incoming comments, voices, and complaints in his ear, Tang Xiu mouth slightly pouted upwards even though his face also exposed a trace of a teasing smile expression, because this was precisely the effect that he wanted.

He knew that amongst those onlookers that stood around

watching him, not only were real onlookers there, but several employees from the Game Hall must also be mixed in amongst them. And they obviously wanted to watch as to how he used his tricks to hit the jackpot.

Along with Tang Xiu's repeatedly losing game coins, nobody suspected anything about Tang Xiu's jackpot winning.

But this fact also made Tang Xiu alarmed, this Game Hall was obviously not like how its boss had shown the generosity on the surface. On the contrary, this Game Hall was very stingy and narrow-minded, and it seemed that the Game Hall's background was even more complicated.

When Tang Xiu had inserted 113 game coins into the slot machine, it finally exuded pleasant cheers, and then a large number of game coins sprayed out.

“What the hell, it couldn't be, right? He hit the jackpot again?”

“How could he be so awesome?”

“If we also count the baldy who won the prize money before, this dude has hit the jackpot for 3 times today, this luck is way too ridiculous!”

After Tang Xiu hit the jackpot, the previously scattered crowd once again flocked to his side and looked at him with burning hot

eyes.

It had to be said that of Tang Xiu's first jackpot was but only luck, then Tang Xiu's help for the baldy to hit the jackpot could be called as a coincidence. But Tang Xiu's third jackpot's hit definitely couldn't be explained as only luck and coincidence.

“Eldest Brother, you are my Eldest Brother. Can you teach me how to play the slot machines?” When Tang Xiu was cleaning up the game coins leisurely, the baldy suddenly squeezed out from the crowd and grabbed Tang Xiu's arm as he began to beg excitedly.

Previously, when Tang Xiu was on that slot machine, this baldy only grabbed dozens of game coins and had long spent all of it, then he suddenly saw that Tang Xiu won again. This baldy started to see Tang Xiu just like a celestial being, and immediately pestered Tang Xiu without hesitation.

Regarding this baldy's brazen and familiar behavior, Tang Xiu subconsciously knitted his brows and was slightly regretting helping that baldy before.

But Tang Xiu also quite appreciated this baldy's fervent and frank attitude, so he didn't make things difficult for him and instead joked and teased him, “Ah, the casino certainly will lose its brilliant light because of your baldness. If you can keep your hair, you also will be able to win.”

Having finished his words, he didn't wait for the baldy for the answer. Tang Xiu got up and left.

Behind Tang Xiu, the baldy slowly stroke his smooth and slippery bald head as he saw Tang Xiu leave and looked at his back, while his face showed a thinking expression.

“I’ve won 30,000 game coins from this Game Hall. In the end, should I continue playing, or quit while I’m ahead?” After he exchanged more than 8,000 game coins in his hands for paper money again, Tang Xiu glanced at the Game Hall’s boss, whose face was fully covered with a tense expression, as if he was falling into a tangle.

“Little Brother, this is my little regard, please receive it.” When Tang Xiu had yet to make up his mind, the Game Hall’s boss—Li Kanglong—quickly took out a stack of paper money from the drawer and handed it to Tang Xiu, with a face full of a pleading expression.

Tang Xiu was frozen for a moment and then understood the boss’ thought.

“Are you insulting me, or insulting yourself?” Having swept the paper money on his hand, Tang Xiu asked with a disdained tone.

It was because Tang Xiu saw that the stack of paper money in the hands of the Game Hall’s boss was too thin, and he could easily determine that the money in his hand would be no more than 2,000 yuan.

If Tang Xiu were to continue playing in the Game Hall, he

certainly could sweep away the entire Game Hall, of which wouldn't amount to 2,000 game coins, but it possibly could be 100,000 to 200,000 game coins.

But the Game Hall's boss actually wanted to use 2,000 yuan to kick him out, which made Tang Xiu unable to throw away his previous thought and vanish, and instead gave birth to a trace of anger out of nowhere.

“Brat, if you're smart and tactful, then take our boss' money and get the f**k out. Otherwise, not only must leave behind all the money you have won in the Game Hall, but you also must stay here.” Just when Tang Xiu's words had just finished, a gloomy and probing-like voice suddenly sounded in his ear.

Tang Xiu turned around and followed the voice's direction and saw from the side a tattooed youth with sinister and fierce look was glaring at him like a tiger watching its prey.

There were also several punk-styled youths standing next to the tattooed youth. These punks' hair cut was peculiar as well as clad in exaggerated attire, and they faintly blocked the game hall's entrance, encircling Tang Xiu in the middle.

“Boss, is this your way to entertain the patrons?” Tang Xiu looked at the boss's face with a proud expression and asked in a sharp and stern voice.

“What? Do you have any complaints?” Li Kanglong sneered.

“I was thinking that I also wanted to quit while I’m ahead. But since the boss says otherwise, then it seems that I have no better options than continue playing.” Upon seeing the Game Hall’s boss’ expression that seemed like wanted to eat him, Tang Xiu couldn’t help but let out a sneer, and then turned around and walked to the center of the game hall.

Those few punk-styled youth were merely only blocking the Game Hall’s entrance, and they absolutely didn’t even expect that Tang Xiu still had the mood to continue playing the slot machines in this kind of situation. For a moment, they couldn’t help but stand still and stare blankly.

Until Tang Xiu had finally slipped into the crowd, Li Kanglong, the tattooed youth and the others could only reveal a ‘how could it be?’ expression on their faces.

“From what background does this brat come from? He really got the balls. How did I never hear there was such a character on the streets?” Recalling Tang Xiu’s neither humble nor arrogant manner just now, and coupled with Tang Xiu’s words when he turned away, an uneasy feeling suddenly gushed out from Li Kanglong’s heart.

“Boss, the Ensemble Heroes Street is our turf, while you and the City Council’s Public Security Division’s Chief Wang Hao are sworn brothers. Don’t tell me that you are afraid of a smelly brat that has even yet to grow his hair?” Having heard the boss’ whisper, the tattooed youth spoke in a disdainful tone.

“Who said I was afraid of him? I’m just curious about the identity

of this brat. He can still talk and laugh even though he's surrounded by us. Either he's really awesome or not, but we haven't heard of such a character on the Ensemble of Heroes Street. So he IS obviously one. Why the hell all of you staring at me? If you let him take the advantage to slip away out of chaos, all of you get the f**k out!"

Li Kanglong fiercely stared at the tattooed youth, immediately straightening his chest, and then yelled his orders out loudly.

On the other side, the baldy youth thought for a long time before he came over and responded to Tang Xiu's jokes at him before. When he chased him to the counter at the office, he happened to see the conflict between Tang Xiu and the Game Hall's boss.

Having eavesdropped the conversation between the Game Hall's boss with the security guards, a happy smile emerged from the baldy's face.

"Li Kanglong, I heard that you want to deal with my Eldest Brother, eh?" Not waiting for the security guards to be dispersed, the baldy youth then went over to the counter while smiling and greeted Li Kanglong with a condescending tone.

"Y-y-you... you are Young Master Long, you honor me to visit my small shop..." When he heard someone was shouting his name in such exceptionally arrogant manner, Li Kanglong couldn't help but carefully look and size up that person. However, in the next moment, Li Kanglong's eyes instantly turned wide while surprise and excitement covered his face.

Because this person's background was really big, and even a few words from him could decide the life and death of Li Kanglong's Game Hall.

However, the youth in front of him was usually very low-key, to the extent that only a small circle of people knew about his existence. Even Li Kanglong only happened to see this person a few times due to chance and luck. He didn't dare to continue sizing him up before and was not especially familiar with this person.

But since this person greeted Li Kanglong on his own initiative, and also stared at him with a teasing expression, Li Kanglong absolutely couldn't think how this condescending person would come to play at his Game Hall.

"Young Master Long, you must be mistaken, even if you lend me 100 gallbladders, I wouldn't even dare to deal with your Eldest Brother..." Recalling Long Zhenglin's previous remarks, Li Kanglong hurriedly apologized.

Li Kanglong hadn't yet finished speaking his words but Long Zhenglin raised his palm and fiercely slapped Li Kanglong's face, "One thing that I really loath is the kind of people like you who only want to win but can't afford to lose to others. If others also open a Game Hall and acted like you, then people could only enter and can never get out. Do you think we're also some f*****g idiots, hah?"

Long Zhenglin's slap to Li Kanglong's face made him stare

stupidly, since he had never thought that Long Zhenglin, who had been usually a smiling like youth from next door, could have such a violent side.

“Li Kanglong, you listen to me, the one who just came to you to exchange coins before, is my Elder Brother. What and how he wants to play here, if you dare to play dirty, I don’t mind playing with you.” Under Li Kanglong’s confused and puzzled eyes, Long Zhenglin dropped his words before leaving quickly.

Upon hearing Long Zhenglin’s words, Li Kanglong felt like he was struck and killed by lightning, while that tattooed youth’s group was also completely taken aghast.

Chapter 26: Getting Rich Overnight

“Boss, what should we do now?” After enduring the full silence for a long time, the tattooed youth nervously spoke and asked Li Kanglong.

“What the hell can I do... I can only recognize my defeat today and let that high school student play anything he likes. As long as he’s happy, Young Master Long will also calm down, and we would be able to continue opening the Game Hall.” Li Kanglong was full with bitterness and an astringent feeling while recalling Long Zhenglin’s father’s power in Star City.

At this moment, Li Kanglong desperately wanted to fiercely slap his own face a few times. Had he been a little more generous and willing to dig some money up for that high school student, this situation wouldn’t have happened.

Now, not only had he offended Young Master Long, but he might also lose more money.

“Boss, if that high school student really has found out the regular pattern for winning the slot machine’s prize, then we will be losing too much money since we had yet to clean up the game coins in the slot machines for nearly a week.” The tattooed youth spoke in a worried tone.

“Researching the regular pattern to win the slot machine’s prize? You think too much! How the hell could there be such a genius in Star City? If there is such a genius, it would be much better to

directly go to gamble in Macau, why the hell would he need to come to my small shop, huh?" Li Kanglong quite disagreed when he heard the tattooed youth's words.

Although Li Kanglong said that Tang Xiu could never study the general pattern to hit the slot machine's jackpot; however, unusual restlessness filled his heart.

If it were not for the fear and dread of the powerful backer behind Long Zhenglin, Li Kanglong would have quickly kicked Tang Xiu out from the Game Hall.

While Li Kanglong and his goons were drowning in uneasiness, Tang Xiu was disposing of everything without even the slightest scruple.

After hitting the jackpot for 3 times previously, Tang Xiu already became famous in the Health and Prosper Club. Whenever he was facing a slot machine, the majority of the people would give their queue position to Tang Xiu, and let him display his unique skill of controlling the slot machine to spray out game coins.

However, some others who saw Tang Xiu line up behind them thought that the slot machine would certainly give a 100% winning rate, so they were unwilling to leave their spots. But Tang Xiu only laughed and didn't speak as he didn't hesitate to line up in front of other slot machines, causing those people an incessant embarrassment and feeling of loss, not knowing what to do.

Because the Game Hall's aggressive attitude enraged Tang Xiu,

his next moves were absolutely unrestrained, and didn't even care about the Game Hall's standing anymore.

After that, everyone in the Game Hall witnessed the episodes of the game coins' spraying from the slot machines.

3 game coins in, 12,000 game coins spat out.

17 game coins in, 6,000 game coins sprayed out.

99 game coins in, 22,000 game coins burst out.

In just half an hour, Tang Xiu had swept more than half of the slot machines in the Game Hall, with each slot machine giving Tang Xiu several thousands to tens of thousands of game coins, while the most impressive one gave him more than 20,000 game coins.

Even those players who hung onto certain slot machines and refused to give their location remained puzzled even after pondering his actions over a hundred of times. Although they also eventually won the prize, but the odds were very small, and then waited until they had spent their game coins. Never were they able to win the prize more than once.

When they realized that they were unable to even make money by seizing the slot machines, nobody resorted to these petty tricks again and took Tang Xiu cheaply, while the rest of people in the

Game Hall also excessively praised him, full of admiration.

Finally, all the players in the Game Hall were disturbed by Tang Xiu, and they also didn't attend to their own slot machine, but rushed behind Tang Xiu. Wherever Tang Xiu walked, they would always follow him behind, as they wanted to see whether the miracle would continue to happen.

When Tang Xiu was crazily sweeping several tens of thousands of game coins in the Game Hall, Li Kanglong almost cried, because he was perfectly aware that even though the Game Hall's profit was very big, it didn't mean that all that profits were his sole possession.

In fact, Li Kanglong was but only the Game Hall's boss on the surface, because the majority of the shares mostly belonged to other people. So, once he lost too miserably, not only would he be kicked from his boss' position, he even had to dig the money from his own pocket to fill the deficit.

But facing Long Zhenglin's threat, Li Kanglong didn't dare to take any actions.

Li Kanglong at most could subsidize it using his money bit by bit should the Game Hall fall into extreme deficit. But if he dared to ignore Long Zhenglin's words, he could and would lose his life.

At this very moment, Li Kanglong's regret literally had made his intestines green. He was bleeding from his heart.

Li Kanglong regretted that he was too stingy, and also regretted he was too headstrong in front of Tang Xiu.

Had Long Zhenglin gave his permission, Li Kanglong wished that he could immediately run and kneel to Tang Xiu, and beg him to not continue playing.

But under Long Zhenglin's smiling expression that faintly threatened him, it caused Li Kanglong to simply not dare to approach Tang Xiu, let alone apologize to him.

"Damn, Tang Xiu is really awesome, it's no wonder that he got good results in the test and has always been taking the first grade, and also took so many Olympic Games competition medal back for the school."

"Huh, it's not right, hasn't Big Brother Fei said that Tang Xiu's brain is damaged? But I'm really sure that his performance just now could never be explained by only luck. Tang Xiu must absolutely have calculated the slot machine's odds and its general patterns to hit the jackpot."

Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan looked at Su Xiangfei's complexion that already turned pale and ugly as they both whispered to each other.

"Do you think Tang Xiu is very clever? Envyng Tang Xiu because he won so much money?" Upon seeing Su Duanxin's and Tan Liquan's envious expressions, Su Xiangfei let out a disdainful smile, "I firmly believe that his mind still has some problems!"

“You can think about this, how could such a big Game Hall run a business in the most bustling Ensemble Heroes Street in the Star City? Could this Game Hall’s boss be a nobody? If he let Tang Xiu continue making trouble like this, where the hell should the Game Hall’s boss put his face? Tang Xiu is only making money and exchanging it with his life!” Looking at Tang Xiu’s complacent and proud expression, a pitying expression flashed across Su Xiangfei’s face.

After listening to Su Xiangfei’s analysis, Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan couldn’t help but tremble with fear...

At the next moment, they no longer looked at Tang Xiu with envy and jealous’ eyes, but instead turned into pitying and sympathetic looks.

Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan were also aware that the world absolutely had never been so clean just like it seemed on the surface. So the more money Tang Xiu won at this very moment, the more impossible the Game Hall would let him go.

If Tang Xiu realized and was aware of what had to be done, he would willingly turn in all his game coins and buy his way out from the Game Hall.

If Tang Xiu wasn’t aware of his predicament, it could be estimated that Tang Xiu’s fate would be very miserable.

So, no matter how much money Tang Xiu had won this time, his

efforts were useless.

Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan didn't know that, although Su Xiangfei at this time thought that Tang Xiu wouldn't be able to walk out of the Game Hall, but he had already identified one thing, that was, Tang Xiu's mind had returned to normal, and it was even more sophisticated compared to before he got a car accident.

Moreover, Tang Xiu's confident expression and his unscrupulous behavior also made Su Xiangfei's heart palpitate, because he even faintly felt that Tang Xiu had nothing to fear even though he especially won big in the Game Hall, as if he had a powerful backer. Tang Xiu should have long been preparing the way out; otherwise, it didn't make sense, and it was hard to imagine that if he completely was unable to think it through.

Half an hour had passed and Tang Xiu had basically wiped clean all the slot machines in the Game Hall. At this time, he had gained a shocking amount of 470,000 game coins.

Tang Xiu had played all of the game machines here, not to mention that he didn't come here to play, but to win. Tang Xiu didn't even wait for the Game Hall's personnel to come and deal with him as he took all the game coins he had won and came over to the front desk to exchange it into money.

Seeing Tang Xiu's walking direction, the Game Hall instantly turned deathly silent as everyone's thought could only be spoken in their throats.

Everyone perfectly knew that the real play was going to unfold.

Even if Tang Xiu had won a lot of game coins, if he had no way to convert those coins into money, then his previous big efforts were only wasting his time.

Everyone had the same thought that it was impossible for the Game Hall to convert Tang Xiu's coins into money, or they would never let Tang Xiu safely leave the Game Hall.

But awkwardly, to everyone's astonishment, the Game Hall's boss not only didn't obstruct Tang Xiu, but also revealed an apologizing smile, and even personally delivered all money to Tang Xiu's hands, while also nodding to Tang Xiu and respectfully escorting him outside of the Game Hall.

Clearly seeing with their own eyes as to how the Game Hall's boss had literally nodded and bowed to Tang Xiu, everyone was gasping and dumbstruck. They all thought that their eyes were having problems, or they were simply in a dream as they could only stand motionless and speechless on their spot for a long time, unable to respond to anything for the matter.

Tang Xiu himself also felt bewildered. He had long been mentally prepared that he could only solve this problem with violence, and never did he have the thought that this Game Hall would let him out like this.

“How could it be like this? How could it be possible that the Game Hall's boss let Tang Xiu out? The Game Hall's boss is

absolutely worried about the bad aftermath it could bring, so he didn't want to take care of Tang Xiu inside the Game Hall, but intends to wait for Tang Xiu to arrive at a remote place, after which he could begin to clean him up. Yes, it should be like this, the scenes in the movie usually developed like this." Upon seeing the differences between the script scenario and his imagination, an astonished expression covered Su Xiangfei's face.

Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan, who also had been waiting to see the major drama, could only find that the good play was not even happening, they felt they were just like being messed by somebody. Only after listening to Su Xiangfei's analysis did their hearts feel better.

"Big Brother Fei, let's quietly follow Tang Xiu and find out what kind of fate and end he will get?" Having hesitated for a moment, Su Duanxin suggested, as if he wished to jump over and move.

When Su Xiangfei heard it, his eyes lightened up and did not hesitate to nod and agree. The trio then quickly chased him.

Outside the Game Hall, Tang Xiu had almost just stepped out of the doorstep when Long Zhenglin stopped and blocked him.

"Eldest Brother, are you really short on money that much? If you're short of money, I have a way to make you rich overnight!" After nearly an hour of entanglement, Long Zhenglin had already successfully approached and followed Tang Xiu closely and wormed his way into being friends with Tang Xi, and even shamelessly saluted Tang Xiu as a Master with a brazen face.

Although Tang Xiu hadn't given his consent or was willing to admit to having such a young brother like Long Zhenglin, but Long Zhenglin brazenly ignored Tang Xiu's opinion and persisted to address Tang Xiu as his Eldest Brother.

"You only fancy my ability to calculate and want me to make money through gambling. But I have merely won a little more than 30,000 yuan from the Health and Prosper Club, and now I am surely being targeted by them. Do you think to use me and get rich overnight through gambling?" Tang Xiu glanced at Long Zhenglin and snapped.

"Eldest Brother, you... how do you know that I want you to go gambling? Oh right, you have that smart brain in your head. You certainly can guess my mind with the flick of your toe." Hearing that Tang Xiu easily discovered his intentions, Long Zhenglin couldn't help but feel surprised. But then, as he recalled Tang Xiu's reaction in the Game Hall, Long Zhenglin quickly felt relieved.

"Eldest Brother, if you are really confident about your gambling ability, not only have I the means to make you rich overnight, but you will also have the chance to make someone owe you a favor. With that person's favor, you can conveniently do a lot of things in the Shuangqing Province." Seeing that Tang Xiu already guessed his purpose, Long Zhenglin didn't tuck and hide again, but rather blurted out with an excited expression.

Chapter 27: The Place With A Spiritual Vein

Long Zhenglin's words made Tang Xiu's eyes brighten up, and he couldn't help but glance at Long Zhenglin.

Tang Xiu's instinct could clearly tell that Long Zhenglin was not the kind of delinquent youngster that often hung out at the Game Hall. Although Long Zhenglin was shamelessly pestering him, but his words, actions, and mannerism didn't have the slightest annoying low life aura.

"You're the one who helped solve my problem with the Health and Prosper Club back there, yes?" Tang Xiu stopped walking and suddenly asked.

Long Zhenglin originally wanted to shake his head and deny it, but under Tang Xiu's gaze, he still finally said the truth, "Eldest Brother, the Health and Prosper Club doesn't respect any business ethics, so I gave them a warning. It seems that my actions were unnecessary because even if I didn't act, Eldest Brother could have solved that club. Oh no! Eldest Brother, did I do something that bothered your pleasure?"

"Although I can solve the trouble with Health and Prosper Club myself, but still, I owe you a favor. The name is Tang Xiu, Class 10, third-year student at Star City First High School. If you need me, you can come to look for me." Tang Xiu stared at Long Zhenglin and finally decided to accept him as a friend.

"Eldest brother, you're polite, I'm surnamed Long, the name is

Zhenglin. I'm schooling at Second High School and I'm also a third year. I'll be sure to visit you in my free time." Upon hearing Tang Xiu's words that seemed like he was going to leave, Long Zhenglin also knew when to stop, and didn't dare to continue pestering Tang Xiu any longer.

For Long Zhenglin, he wasn't only successful in getting close with Tang Xiu, but also knew Tang Xiu's identity, and it would be easier to contact him further and to him; this had been a worthwhile endeavor.

After a simple farewell, Tang Xiu didn't delay anymore and quickly left.

Gazing at Tang Xiu's back until his figure gradually faded away in darkness, an excited smile emerged on Long Zhenglin's face.

"Brother-in-law, we have been saved. As long as Tang Xiu takes action, we can definitely take Walled Hill Village." Long Zhenglin gripped his fist and waved his arm, then he got into a sports car at the roadside and quickly left.

"What the... Holy shit! He's Long Zhenglin. Big Brother Fei, it's Long Zhenglin! How would Tang Xiu be acquainted with him? Moreover, how could Long Zhenglin keep calling Tang Xiu as Eldest Brother?" In a remote corner, Su Duanxin let out a low scream.

"We should have mistaken him for someone else, right? Long Zhenglin's status is very high, how could it be that he would play

in such a lowly place like the Health and Prosper Club? He's even very humble to an ordinary person. That youth should be someone that looks like Long Zhenglin and posing as him, ain't it?" A doubting and puzzled expression covered Tan Liquan's face as he spoke in an unsure tone.

At this moment, Su Xiangfei clenched his fist tightly; even when his nails pierced his palms, he was unaware that his palm had bled.

Looks could be similar, the name also could be used, but that sports car could never be faked.

Six months ago, Su Xiangfei was quite fortunate as he had to accompany his father to attend Long Zhenglin's adulthood rite ceremony. Long Zhenglin's family had prepared a custom-made version of a Rolls-Royce Phantom sports car as his adulthood rite's gift, with a license plate number that was the combination of Long Zhenglin's first adventure's fight and birthday.

Whether it was the customized version of Rolls-Royce Phantom or that exaggerated license plate number or the banquet with a variety of high-class performances. All in all, everything was a feast for all the guests' eyes who attended the banquet. Especially for each and every boy and girl who were at the same age with Long Zhenglin. They could only feel inferior and look at him with envy and jealousy.

Therefore, even though Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan still doubted whether that youth was really Long Zhenglin, Su Xiangfei was quite certain that the bald youth was Long Zhenglin.

“How would Tang Xiu know Long Zhenglin? And their relationship also is seemingly not shallow. This is truly troublesome. It will be very difficult to deal with Tang Xiu later.” Recalling Long Zhenglin’s proud and arrogant character, and then recalling how Long Zhenglin was sticking to Tang Xiu, Su Xiangfei felt like he was in a dream, and it was also very hard for him to think that it was only the first meeting between Long Zhenglin with Tang Xiu. Moreover, Long Zhenglin was the one who took the initiative to stick and entangle to Tang Xiu.

After leaving the Health and Prosper Club, Tang Xiu didn’t immediately return to school, but rather brushed over his body and went straight to the city’s outskirts.

Due to cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, Tang Xiu’s body had been reborn and transformed into a whole new state. Even though he didn’t practice any martial and movement skills, his speed far surpassed an ordinary person’s.

Since he had decided to fully practice the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, Tang Xiu naturally had to be fully prepared.

On the cultivation path, the aspects that must be particularly paid attention to, were nothing more than 4 aspects, “The Methods”, “The Dao Companion”, “The Wealth”, and “The Land”.

The Methods referred to cultivation techniques and methods. Without these aspects, one could only blindly practice and cultivate. The Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis was precisely an

ancient record of a divine cultivation technique that was fiercely fought by the Immortal World's giants with bloody efforts and endeavors. Tang Xiu also had countless cultivation techniques and secret manuals in his mind, so he naturally didn't need to worry about cultivation methods.

The Companion pointed to other cultivators or Dao companions, "The Classic of Rites" mentioned that: "Learning alone without friends will result in ignorance and narrow-mindedness". The Earth itself was a world with the final law stage, so Tang Xiu was destined to never find any other cultivators or Dao Companions on Earth. However, since Tang Xiu only just started cultivating, he was completely indifferent toward this aspect.

The Wealth meant that it referred to certain financial circumstances because, in the early stages of the cultivation path, the greatest extent of time and mind would be consumed for practicing. Thus, there would not be enough time to make money correspondingly. If one had no underlying cultivation resources, his cultivation path would be very difficult. People from the ancient times had said, "Without wealth, it would be insufficient to bring up anything."

The Land referred to the place of practice or cultivation place with distinct environments which had harmonious Feng Shui with distinct qi atmosphere that would greatly impact one's cultivation.

Regarding the Method and Dao Companion, Tang Xiu could exempt these aspects. However, he had no choice but to rack his brain for the Wealth and Land aspect.

In this month, except for a small amount of time for studying, Tang Xiu had been spending most of his time in the library.

Drowning himself in the library naturally was not because Tang Xiu needed to study, but instead tried to find other cultivators' existence on Earth, while also looking for a suitable place for his cultivation at the same time.

Even though Tang Xiu had nearly read all the books in the library, he still wasn't able to find any trace of other cultivators, which made him suspect that there were simply no cultivators on Earth

However, he also read and flipped over a lot of books about human culture, history, geography, biography, as well as other books. Of which, had given him a plausible but possible sacred ground spot for cultivation.

The place was not in the main city but was located 70km from the main city's suburb, which was called Walled Hill Village.

Today Tang Xiu was heading to Walled Hill Village specifically to investigate it, and to find out whether Walled Hill Village was really a suitable place for cultivation. If Walled Hill Village was really described just like in the book, Tang Xiu intended to get a piece of land in Walled Hill Village and construct his Immortal Cave for cultivation in that place.

Half a day later, Tang Xiu's figure appeared on top of Walled Hill Village's summit. At this time, Tang Xiu had already explored this

place completely.

Looking at the vast sky full of stars above his head, which as if it could be picked with his hand and bathing the main city that simply had no Heaven and Earth spiritual energy, an excited expression was seen on Tang Xiu's face.

“Spiritual Vein, this Walled Hill Village actually has a Spiritual Vein hidden underground. Since this place has a Spiritual Vein, then it should have precious heavenly materials. I no longer have to worry about concocting Body Refining Liquid.” Standing on top of the mountain boulder, Tang Xiu turned around, highly spirited, and couldn't help but look up to the sky while his mouth let out a long whistle.

Since his rebirth, Tang Xiu had always been in fear and trepidation as if his hands and feet were tied.

On one hand, it was because the earth's spiritual energy was very thin that it was even almost extinct, causing all cultivation techniques and secret martial skills to completely become useless ornaments; this made Tang Xiu helpless.

On the other hand, he had accidentally fitted himself for cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis. Which made his body start to passively cultivate this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, and he was unable to control it.

If he could practice this Heavenly Art in the Immortal World, Tang Xiu would be absolutely ecstatic. However, since Earth's

spiritual energy had almost vanished, cultivating this Heavenly Art only made Tang Xiu want to cry and feel helpless.

Although cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis didn't need any Heaven and Earth spiritual energy. However, the key point in this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis was that it had a harsh and excessive need of precious heavenly materials to concoct Body Refining Liquid. While these precious heavenly ingredients also could only be found in a place rich with spiritual energy.

However, there was no spiritual energy on Earth, which meant that there were no precious heavenly materials to concoct Body Refining Liquid. Thus, when Tang Xiu accidentally began to cultivate the Heavenly Arts of Cosmic Genesis, the only path waiting for him was a dead end.

Tang Xiu was naturally very happy, since today he had found such spiritual vein in the Shuangqing Province, which was in this Walled Hill Village. This implied that he could also find other places on Earth that had Heaven and Earth spiritual energy.

“The spiritual vein seems to be under this boulder, but I don't know whether this Walled Hill Village belongs to somebody or not, else it will be a little troublesome.” Having circled around the vicinity of the Walled Hill Village's summit, Tang Xiu then focused his attention toward the spiritual vein in this place, while his face exposed a pondering expression.

To Tang Xiu's knowledge, Walled Hill Village was regarded as a strangely named place by most inhabitants in the Shuangqing province. Had Tang Xiu not flipped through a large number of

books in the province's library, he would have never found out that such a hidden fairyland existed in the Shuangqing Province.

The Walled Hill Village (Zhai Shan Ping) formerly known as the [Imperial City](#) on the Lesser Cold Mountain (Xiao Liangshan), and was an ancient village. According to historical records, in the late Ming Dynasty era, when the peasant uprising army's leader—[Zhang Xianzhong](#)—entered Sichuan, he attacked this place and occupied this mountain, and acted as king. After which, he proclaimed himself as the emperor. He set this place as his Imperial City and collected all weaponries as well as treasures from all regions, and then buried them underground, which then would be called as the Iron Built Tomb. The walled village built the South Star Gate (Nanxing Men), Peaceful Gate (Ping 'An Men), Great Plain Gate (Taiping Men), Heavenly Treasure Gate (Tianbao Gate), Immortal Gate (Changsheng Men), and 18 others city gates and roads. While a few kilometers of wall had also been built to surround the city. In addition, there was also the mysterious Li Family ancestral hall, splitting sword stone, government official residences, fort, and ruins of Goddess of Mercy Temple (Guanyin Temple).

This chapter makes me baffled since I don't know whether the Shuangqing Province wrote by the author was intentional or not, because the place described in this novel should be located in [Chongqing](#) Province. And Zhaishan Ping (Walled Hill Village) itself is an actual place. Zhang Xianzhong was a rebel leader in the late Ming Dynasty and about his treasure—of which also described in this chapter, some of them were illegally trafficked, [some news about this proliferated in 2016](#). That's why I'm still including the original names for the gates and also the place's original name in this chapter.

After having realized that dawn had come, Tang Xiu restrained

his urge to begin searching for precious heavenly materials needed to cultivate the first stage of the Heavenly Arts of Cosmic Genesis—the Stars Tyrannical Body.

The Heavenly Arts of Cosmic Genesis was divided into four stages—Stars Tyrannical Body, Stars Heavenly Essence, Stars Essence Integration, and Stars Cluster Transformation.

The Stars Tyrannical Body stage itself consisted of Breathing Practice, Skin Strengthening, Flesh Strengthening, Bone Transformation, Meridians Transformation, Marrow Transformation, Viscera Transformation, Qi and Blood Circulation, and Nine Cores Phase Forming.

The Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis was created by a God Race's genius based on the God Race's body to strengthen their extremely weak physical aptitude. Of which, in theory, was to emulate the Demon Race's body; thus, becoming the reason for the creation of this cultivation technique. For each sub-stage of tempering and strengthening, it would need countless of rare and precious materials, while each and every one of them had nothing in common.

Cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis required the practitioner's strength to be extremely high. If the strength was not up to the required degree, even if the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis cultivation speed was faster, one could only end up absorbing too much star energy, finally causing his body to explode and die.

The creator of this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis had

repeatedly emphasized that, if ones were to cultivate the first stage of this Heavenly Art, the Stars Tyrannical Body, they must prepare sufficient rare and precious medicinal herbs and minerals. As well as a fierce beast's internal organs, blood's essence, tendons, and many others. Only then could they advance in tempering and strengthening their body.

Chapter 28: Incompatible As Fire And Water

Tang Xiu was sitting motionlessly on his seat at Star City First High School's classroom with an unusually ugly expression.

Through a night of effort, although Tang Xiu was able to find a dozen types of rare and precious medicinal herbs as well as all rare minerals needed to concoct the Body Refining Liquid, he didn't even find any trace of fierce beasts, so he naturally had no idea as to where he could find fierce beasts' internal organs and blood's essence.

“Could it be that, because this world's spiritual energy is too thin, it had caused the extinction of the Earth's fierce beasts, or the Earth is simply unable to give birth to any fierce beasts?” Tang Xiu's face turned deathly pale when this possibility suddenly crossed his mind.

Even though concocting the Body Refining Liquid could be carried out without the fierce beasts' internal organs, blood's essence, and tendons; however, the effect of the Body Refining Liquid would be greatly reduced, and also multiplied the dangers Tang Xiu would encounter in cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis.

And since he couldn't any find fierce beasts now, maybe one day he would be lacking a rare medicinal herb and rare minerals. Wouldn't it be equal to completely making him unable to cultivate the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis?

“This won’t do, I must find the substitutes to concoct the Body Refining Liquid, or find a replacement for the raw materials. Immortal World has Immortal World’s advantages, while Earth also has its own. The science and technology on Earth is very developed, and never will I believe that I can’t solve this problem in cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis!”

Slowly, firm, brilliant lights flashed in Tang Xiu’s eyes while his expression also slowly eased, before he finally revealed a confident smile.

“Tang Xiu, Teacher Han wants you to go to the Grade Section Main Office.” A crisp voice suddenly rang near his ears while Tang Xiu was still immersed in his thoughts.

Tang Xiu looked up and found that Cheng Yannan was unknowingly standing next to his seat, and looked at him with a complex expression.

“Thanks for the notice, I’ll be there right away.” Tang Xiu already faintly understood what issues he would have as he nodded at Cheng Yannan, before he got up and left.

Seeing Tang Xiu’s slim back from behind, Cheng Yannan’s lips were squirming as she seemed wanted to talk something but hesitated.

Cheng Yannan had just come out from the Grade Section Main Office, so she naturally knew for what issues Tang Xiu was being

summoned by Teacher Han.

“Your marks have always been in the most bottom, people at most will only ridicule and sneer at you, and you wouldn’t have anything to lose anymore, so why did you choose to cheat?” Only until Tang Xiu’s back had disappeared for quite awhile did Cheng Yannan whisper in a soft voice.

The scene Cheng Yannan had just seen really scared her. Not only were all third years’ teachers gathered at the office, but also the principal, vice principal, as well as several people from the school’s administration were there in order to clarify whether Tang Xiu really cheated or not in the last Monthly Test.

Almost all teachers at the office believed that Tang Xiu had cheated on the Monthly Test, because his results were too exaggerated. From the total points of 750, he unexpectedly got 712 points, which became even more doubtful since he beat Yang Jian, who successively became the city’s top scorer in the last Monthly Tests. Let alone the one who got this result was Tang Xiu, who was the most bottom-ranked of the entire third year.

Only Class 10’s teacher-in-charge—Han Qingwu—alone, firmly believed that Tang Xiu didn’t cheat on the test. She didn’t even hesitate to quarrel with other teachers that were headed by Hu Qiusheng, which even made her face flushed red in anger.

“Tang Xiu, Tang Xiu... the issue that you’re cheating is not important, but you’re dragging Teacher Han into the pit miserably.” Cheng Yannan curled her lips, and was extremely disappointed in Tang Xiu.

However, recalling how Tang Xiu was in Class 10 for only a month, and only spent most of his time sitting in the classroom in a daze, as well as recalling all the rumors about him, the kind-hearted Cheng Yannan neither blamed nor complained about him.

“I dare to vouch that Tang Xiu absolutely had cheated on this Monthly Test. If he didn’t cheat, then I will resign at once!” Tang Xiu happened to hear Hu Qiusheng roar in an agitated voice when he just arrived at the Grade Section Main Office.

Maybe it was caused by Hu Qiusheng’s intimidating manners, the office turned deathly silent after he roared his words, and even Han Qingwu, who always strongly argued with him, also seemed frightened by Hu Qiusheng’s words and didn’t utter any words again.

“Hey, Old Tiger Hu, did you mean it with your words that, if I can prove that I didn’t cheat on the Monthly Test, you will really resign?” When Hu Qiusheng thought that he had won the final victory and felt triumphant, a frank and clear voice suddenly transmitted, and immediately followed with the door being pushed open by Tang Xiu as he entered the office.

“You ... you... impudent! You didn’t respect the elderly and superiors. You have no respect for your teachers and their teachings. How could such a person able to get the highest score in the test?” Tang Xiu’s ‘Old Tiger’ remarks instantly made Hu Qiusheng stamp into a rage as he suddenly jumped up from his chair and pointed at Tang Xiu’s nose and cursed, “If you can prove that you were not cheating on this test, I, Hu Qiusheng, will

change my name to your surname.”

“Old Tiger Hu, I am sorry, there’s no way in hell I will agree to your request. You’ve got to ask my father’s consent to change your surname into mine!” Upon seeing the flustered and exasperated expression Hu Qiusheng had, Tang Xiu felt very happy.

Tang Xiu’s had always abided to his principle with others that, if “a person respected him for a foot, he will return the respect for 10 feet. Had a person ruin his one grain, he would rob 3 buckets from him”.

When Hu Qiusheng repeatedly humiliated Tang Xiu and his mother, and even tried to kick Tang Xiu out of school, the relationship between Tang Xiu and Hu Qiusheng as teacher and student had ended. He naturally no longer had the slightest respect towards Hu Qiusheng, and this was reflected in his rude and disrespecting words.

Tang Xiu’s words made everyone in the office unable to restrain their smiles. However, when they saw Hu Qiusheng’s eyes that seemed like he was being burned in flames, they held back the urge to explode in laughter with great difficulty.

“Tang Xiu, shut up! Today, we called you to the office to give you a chance to prove your innocence. If you talk too much again like this, I will drive you out!” Upon seeing Hu Qiusheng’s posture, who was about to burst out into a rage, Han Qingwu quickly stopped Tang Xiu and loudly shouted.

“Teacher Han, I’m sorry, I was just impulsive.” Facing Han Qingwu’s scolding, there was no any dissatisfaction in Tang Xiu’s heart, but instead felt grateful as he respectfully saluted toward Han Qingwu.

Originally, after having seen how rebellious and unruly Tang Xiu was a moment ago, everyone in the office actually frowned, and their impression of Tang Xiu fell to the extreme.

But when they suddenly saw Tang Xiu bowing respectfully to Han Qingwu, thoughtful expressions were drawn on their faces, while they also couldn’t help but to re-evaluate Tang Xiu once again.

Everyone also found that, although Tang Xiu was wearing plain clothes, it was unusually clean and tidy. His short black hair made him look particularly high-spirited. Coupled with his bright and piercing eyes, high nose and thin lips, as well as his tall and straight stature, it gave off the kind of good look and graceful charm feeling.

Upon seeing and feeling the invisible elegance and self-confident charm that was emanating from Tang Xiu, everyone then associated it with Hu Qiusheng’s usual character and conducts. They then instantly forgave the rudeness Tang Xiu had done a moment ago and no longer blamed him for saying those offending words. They instead felt that it was Hu Qiusheng that had forced Tang Xiu to a dead end, and caused him to say those words.

Wei Zhentai stared at Tang Xiu for a moment and then spoke in a deep tone, “Tang Xiu, because your Monthly Test’s results are too

exceptional, the school doesn't know how to deal with your results. But Teacher Han firmly believes that your results are true and valid. And she pleads to us to give you a chance to prove it. I also want you to take this opportunity well."

"Thank you, Principal, I will cherish this opportunity." Tang Xiu replied in a neither humble nor proud manner.

"Tang Xiu, if right now you admit that you cheated, we can forgive you. But if you cannot prove it through this re-exam and the whole truth is unmasked and exposed, not only will you find yourself in a bad position, but you also will be dragging Teacher Han into the suffering."

"Tang Xiu, you don't need to be like a frigid duck that is reluctant to admit mistakes. In this one year and a half time, we might be unclear about what kind of circumstances you were in, but even if you were cheating, please do so with a little bit conscientious and reasonableness compared to the marks table. Your results are nearly almost a perfect score. Do you think that we are some kind of idiots?"

"Tang Xiu, be honest and you don't need to rigorously defend yourself. Even if you have cheated, everyone can understand your feelings. If people found that you were cheating and you didn't dare to admit, this is precisely a problem with moral character."

When Tang Xiu's voice had just quieted, several teachers in the

office couldn't help but advise Tang Xiu at the same time.

Most of these people were Tang Xiu's high school third-year teachers. Their prejudices toward Tang Xiu had already been deep-rooted, in their hearts the results had been set. Rather than advising Tang Xiu, they might as well ridicule and warn him instead.

Hu Qiusheng didn't speak, but only coldly snorted at the side with arms crossed over on his chest and stared at Tang Xiu with a ridiculing expression.

"Principal Wei, could you start it?" Tang Xiu didn't pay attention to the other teachers but instead asked with a calm and tranquil expression.

"Since Tang Xiu has already been prepared, everybody take your exam questions out." Upon seeing Tang Xiu was responding like "facing the Mt. Tai being collapsed, and the elks were still coming and leaving without even blink" from his eyes' expression, Wei Zhentai nodded in satisfaction.

Under Wei Zhentai's order, the third year grade teacher's leader—Xia Mingjie—put out the early prepared 4 papers and handed it over to Tang Xiu.

"Tang Xiu, if you can finish these exam papers within 4 hours this morning, and your results pass the minimum standard, the school will admit that your Monthly Test's results are true and valid." Under Tang Xiu's inquiry eyes, Xia Mingjie explained in a

clear voice.

“IF I finished this set of exam papers within the specified time and achieve good results, but still some people are suspecting that I’m cheating, then what’s to be done?” After Tang Xiu took the exam papers, he didn’t immediately answer it, but instead asked while sweeping a glance at Hu Qiusheng that was somewhat as if it was intended to be pointed at him.

Tang Xiu’s words made Hu Qiusheng’s face flushed red, even Xia Mingjie also couldn’t help but cough.

“I have asked the teachers from the high school affiliated with Tsinghua University to compile these exam papers with a sky-high price. These exam papers had only just arrived 10 minutes before you entered the office. Except for the Tsinghua University affiliated high school’s teachers who compiled these exam papers, nobody had ever seen these sets of exam papers.”

“We originally intended to use these sets of exam papers for the next Monthly Test, and temporarily use these exam papers to test you. Because Teacher Han had been struggling and requested for it, only then was I willing to let you see these exam papers. Student Tang Xiu, we hope that you won’t let us down!”

Upon seeing the scene between Tang Xiu and Hu Qiusheng. who were just like the incompatible fire and water, a bitter laugh filled Wei Zhentai’s heart. In order to avoid a dispute from happening again, he had no choice but to stand up and speak.

Chapter 29: An Overnight Sensation

After Hu Qiusheng heard Tang Xiu's ridiculing words, he originally wanted to jump out and scold Tang Xiu's ruthlessly.

But when Wei Zhentai came out, Hu Qiusheng had no choice but to suppress his anger, and could only stand on the side and sulk in anger.

After Tang Xiu had vented most of the anger in his heart, he also didn't act too extreme and began to immerse himself in answering the exam questions.

Although there were 30 teachers encircling and watching him, Tang Xiu didn't even have the slightest discomfort, but was calm and composed, just like the flowing clouds and waters, as he rapidly answered the exams questions on the paper one after another.

One must know that each time Tang Xiu was given lessons on concocting pills in the Immortal World, there were almost tens of thousands of pairs of eyes gazing at him attentively. Tang Xiu had also been able to deliberately ignore and turn a blind eye toward everything.

Tang Xiu might be able to ignore the presence of 30 teachers in the office; however, those 30 teachers in the office had no way to ignore Tang Xiu.

Upon seeing that Tang Xiu almost didn't think, and took only

seconds to answer most of the exam questions, a lot of teachers at the office couldn't help but look at each other in dismay with wrinkled brows.

“Humph, you really know how to put on an act. Even the teachers who teach these subjects can in no way easily answer these exam questions. But you can finish it so fast, isn't this the same with only talking nonsense?” Hu Qiusheng who had long been discontented with Tang Xiu's conducts and manners, couldn't help but blurt mocking and ridiculing words from the side.

“Teacher Hu! Please DO NOT disturb student Tang Xiu in answering the exam questions; otherwise, we will have to ask you to step out!” When Hu Qiusheng's words had almost finished, Han Qingwu ruthlessly reminded him.

Seeing Han Qingwu's anger, several other teachers in the office who had similar feelings with Hu Qiusheng had no choice but to quickly swallow back the words that nearly were blurted out, and could only silently watch Tang Xiu answering the questions.

Han Qingwu's short sentence made Hu Qiusheng furiously mad, as if he was more dead than alive. Had it been other teachers who dared to talk to him like this, he could have long flipped out crazily.

However, since the one he was facing was Han Qingwu, Hu Qiusheng could do nothing but tolerate and endure it.

Through a period of contact, Hu Qiusheng had already been aware of Han Qingwu's character. He knew that Han Qingwu was not the kind of person who had favoritism but was full of integrity and kindness, while she also had a very strong sense of justice and principle, of which made him fear to not provoke Han Qingwu.

But Hu Qiusheng also knew when to stop. Because after he saw that Han Qingwu was really angry, he tactfully stopped provoking, and only sneered in his heart endlessly. He was waiting to see Tang Xiu and Han Qingwu become a joke.

20 minutes later, Tang Xiu had already finished his Math exam papers.

Although they already knew that Tang Xiu's answering speed was very fast in the Monthly Test, but witnessing that Tang Xiu only needed half an hour to finish the Math questions with this high difficulty degree, the third year teachers couldn't help but become scared seeing Tang Xiu's answering speed.

The moment Tang Xiu was about to throw the Math exam paper to the side, Hu Qiusheng immediately grabbed it.

After Hu Qiusheng got the exam paper, his mouth slightly upturned, and was ready to blurt out the ridiculing words he had long prepared.

Just when Hu Qiusheng was seeing the first three multiple choice questions on the Math exam paper, it was as if his throat was like being pierced by fishbone and it got difficult to bear the pain as his

face was thoroughly flushed red.

Before he took the exam papers, Hu Qiusheng had already done the first three multiple-choice questions on the Math exam paper, and he found that not only were these three multiple choice questions very difficult, but it also had traps and was tricky. Had the ones who answered it be a little careless and have a shaky foundation, it was very possible to make mistakes. So Hu Qiusheng also thought that Tang Xiu would absolutely write the wrong answers for these 3 questions.

After he snatched Tang Xiu's exam paper, never once he had thought that Tang Xiu could be this good. And to his surprise, he found that Tang Xiu had correctly answered all of these first 3 questions.

Recalling that it took him 5 minutes to finish these three questions, and how careful he was as not to make mistakes to answer these questions, Hu Qiusheng's heart naturally refused to believe that Tang Xiu only needed nearly a few seconds to correctly answer these questions.

The fourth question—Correct.

The fifth question—Correct.

When Hu Qiusheng read the last question and found that all the

answers were exactly the same as the standard answers, it was as if he was being struck and killed by thunder as his face had turned extremely pale.

After Wei Zhentai called Hu Qiusheng for several times without getting any replies, he became puzzled and took the exam papers from Hu Qiusheng's hands.

Although the Wei Zhentai was the principal, he had long been engaged with administrative works for years, so he naturally couldn't be like Hu Qiusheng, who only needed to look at the paper to know whether the answers were correct or not. However, this didn't hinder him to judge whether Tang Xiu's answers were correct or not, since he held the standard answers in his hands.

10 minutes later, Wei Zhentai had carefully checked Tang Xiu's Math exam papers from the beginning to the end, and then he finally knew the reasons as to why Hu Qiusheng was in a daze after reading the answers.

At this time, Wei Zhentai's heart also had mixed feelings as he saw Tang Xiu with eyes full of a gratifying expression, as well as shame, guilt, and even a boiling and heating up feeling.

"Tang Xiu's answers on this Math test are fully correct. He received a perfect score on this Math test!" Upon seeing all third-year teachers looking at him with inquiring eyes, Wei Zhentai whispered.

Having said this sentence, Wei Zhentai suddenly felt that he that

he become old and weak, and handed over the exam papers to the teacher next to him.

When Wei Zhentai was nearly finished checking his Math exam papers, Tang Xiu had completed his Comprehensive Science exam.

All teachers naturally were competing to snatch it, as if becoming the first one to check it was a pleasure.

Having a perfect score on the Math exam, everyone in the office was also filled with hope and expectation regarding Tang Xiu's Comprehension Science exam.

Shortly after, Tang Xiu's Comprehensive Science exam paper also had been fully checked, and all answers were fully correct. Tang Xiu had gotten a perfect score once again.

Then the English exam, except for the listening section, he also got a full score.

Finally, the Language and Literature exam. Except for the essay composition test, he hit a perfect score again.

Because Tang Xiu didn't need to do the listening section for the English exam, as well as the essay composition in the Language and Literature Exam, he had completed all 4 sets of exam questions, and it only took him an hour and 10 minutes. But, this time mark was not even enough for other people to finish these set of exams.

Silence.

Still silence.

Still the same deathly silence.

After fully reviewing all of Tang Xiu's exam questions, all the third year teachers fell into silence.

These teachers seemed to be bewitched as they stood motionlessly with faces revealing a pondering expression, while Hu Qiusheng suddenly seemed to have aged by several decades. There was no longer the haughty and fierce expression on his face; instead, it was replaced with a distraught and dazed expression.

The only one who was excited was Han Qingwu.

Even though Han Qingwu had chosen to trust Tang Xiu before, but before Tang Xiu's exam results were out, her heart was disturbed and apprehensive. She especially saw how fast Tang Xiu was in answering the exam questions, her heart was boiling up and it filled her throat. But she didn't even dare to gasp heavily in this kind of atmosphere.

Now, after seeing that Tang Xiu had not only had lived up to her expectation but also gave such answers that were far surpassing of her expectation, beside the excitement from her heart, she also felt gratified.

“Principal Wei, Tang Xiu’s exam result in this time shouldn’t be because he was cheating, yes?” Having found the exceptionally strange atmosphere, and seeing that everyone had fallen into silence after reading Tang Xiu’s exam papers, Han Qingwu, after being silent for a long while, then cautiously and solemnly asked.

“You are the one that pulled the efforts for these exam papers, and these were also delivered to my office, and only had been planned to temporarily test Tang Xiu. So how would Tang Xiu be able to cheat, while even I was in front of you when you opened the exam paper?” Wei Zhentai’s voice was like a gigantic bell that rang in the office as he affirmed Tang Xiu’s test results.

“Then, Tang Xiu’s Monthly Test scores should also be valid, correct?” Han Qingwu continued asking while the issue was still hot.

“Tang Xiu just did this set of test volumes that are at least 2 levels higher in difficulty than the last Monthly Test. Since Tang Xiu got perfect scores in this test, then his 712 points in the last Monthly Test isn’t surprising.” Wei Zhentai was naturally perfectly aware of Han Qingwu’s worry as he then smiled and nodded his head.

“Such being the case, should Teacher Hu’s gamble with Teacher Han be fulfilled? Besides, Teacher Hu seemed to have said that if I didn’t cheat in the Monthly Test, then he would resign at once. I don’t know whether Teacher Hu’s words could also be counted to have any weight?” When Wei Zhentai was preparing a few words to comfort and praise Tang Xiu, as well as encouraging Tang Xiu to make persistent efforts, Tang Xiu’s sharp and clear voice suddenly resounded in the office.

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's words, everyone's heart in the office slightly jolted as they subconsciously focused their vision on Hu Qiusheng.

However, Hu Qiusheng was as if he lost his soul after having read Tang Xiu's Math answers. As he was only sitting in his seat in a trance-like state with despondent eyes, to the extent that he didn't even know what everyone had said in the office.

"Tang Xiu! Although Teacher Hu's attitude towards you was a little bit extreme; however, it's also because he's expecting too much from you that caused him to do that. And since Teacher Hu has known that he had misunderstood you, he surely feels very uncomfortable towards you. Could you not to make things more difficult for Teacher Hu? Okay?" Looking at the dazed Hu Qiusheng, Han Qingwu's heart was unable to bear it and subconsciously pleaded for Hu Qiusheng.

The people in the office apparently didn't expect that Han Qingwu would plead for Hu Qiusheng, but she was also the first one to plead for Hu Qiusheng. At this time, they looked at Han Qingwu with eyes full of respect and admiration.

They perfectly knew that before today, Hu Qiusheng's words had always been provoking of Han Qingwu everytime and everywhere. Had each and every one of them were to ask themselves honestly and put themselves in Han Qingwu's shoes, they absolutely could never have done the same thing.

“Then, I’ll leave everything to Teacher Han. If Principal and other teachers don’t have anything more for me, then I will go back to the classroom first.” Tang Xiu’s test had ended, and he purposefully said these words since he wanted to remind Hu Qiusheng that he hadn’t forgotten the dispute between himself and Hu Qiusheng, while also forcing Hu Qiusheng to get back to his right mind and return to Class 5, because Tang Xiu didn’t really want to hit a person that had been downed already.

Since his purpose had been achieved, and with the plead from Han Qingwu for Hu Qiusheng, Tang Xiu also was in a happy mood to give this favor that cost him nothing. Besides, he had helped Han Qingwu and this also could show his generosity at the same time.

“Student Tang Xiu, can I ask you a question? Your performance this month has improved to the highest, from the beginning, you haven’t fallen, have you?” When Tang Xiu was about to step out from the office door, Wei Zhentai suddenly asked.

“Principal, is this question very important?” Tang Xiu paused his footsteps as he revealed a faint and vague smile, “Principal, rather than paying attention to this issue, you might as well pay attention towards those students with ordinary results. After all, there are nearly a thousand third year students every year. But if we re-evaluate it, only very few or several dozens of students could pass the university entrance exam and be admitted to the famous and prestigious universities. Principal, how would you think?”

After he had finished speaking, Tang Xiu turned around and left, no longer giving any chance for Wei Zhentai to speak.

After the long silence in the office, Wei Zhentai only let out a sigh, his originally straight spine suddenly turned bent, while some traces of regrets were also drawn on his face.

The expression of drowning into deep thought was also shown on the other teachers' faces.

Chapter 30: Releasing Public List Of Successful Examinees

To stimulate the third year students, Star City First High School's Monthly Test's results were to be posted at the School's Gate Bulletin Board, which listed the top 500 of the Monthly Test's results. While the school also gave a generous reward in cash for the first 100 high scorers.

The prize for the top scorer was 10,000 yuan, while the 2nd and 3rd would get 6,000 yuan; 4th to 6th were 3,000 yuan; 7th to 10th were 1,000 yuan; 11th to 50th were 500 yuan, and last the 51st to 100th would get 100 yuan.

It was precisely due to this school's policy that a strange line scenery was seen at Star City First High School every first Monday at the beginning of the month.

After hearing the class ending bells, all the students didn't rush toward the canteens but were gathered in front of the school hall's bulletin board.

The students that gathered in front of the school's bulletin board were not only limited to third-year students, but also sophomore students who couldn't help but want to see their seniors' results. Not only would they be able to be familiar with those bright and dazzling names, but those achievements also became their goal and motivation.

“Wow, this time Monthly Test's highest score actually reached

712 points, my eyes don't fail me, right?"

"Yang Jian's performance has really improved, he's really worthy to be the school's top student. If he could have this result in his College Entrance Exam, he could have been allowed to choose the Tsinghua University or Shuimu University right?"

"No, the top scorer is not Yang Jian, but is an unfamiliar name. Speaking about it... who knows who Tang Xiu is? Who the heck is he? I haven't heard about him. But his mark is actually 79 points higher than Yang Jian's!"

The top scorer in the list was the most eye-catching, and also the one that everyone was concerned about the most.

When the Star City First High School's students found out in the Monthly Test's result announcement that Yang Jian, who had been the top scorer for a long time, unexpectedly had been replaced by someone else, a commotion happened under the bulletin board, and everyone thought that their eyes were having problems.

A performance improvement was, after all, a course of process, and the name that took the first place suddenly appeared without even entering the top 10 first. This made everyone ask what and how, and also wished that it was not listed there.

“I know that Tang Xiu, he is from our Class 5. He was the top scorer in the whole city when he first entered Star City First High School, and also had stood out in a lot of examinations and competitions outstandingly. He even became the first in all subjects.

“Hey! Tang Xiu is obviously from Class 10. Can’t you see that the following note after his name is Class 10? How can he be related to your Class 5?”

“Wasn’t Tang Xiu’s brain damaged? How could he suddenly emerge this suddenly? Could it be that the rumor is wrong, and Tang Xiu acted just like a pig to eat the tiger in these 2 years and purposefully turned on the water in the test?”

Most students were clueless about Tang Xiu’s circumstances. But some of them, especially Class 5 and Class 10, were the ones that knew the information about Tang Xiu.

When the students from these 2 classes saw that Tang Xiu’s mark actually got 712 points, apart from their astonishment, they were even more shocked with admiration and adoration.

“No, it’s impossible! Tang Xiu couldn’t have such a high score on the test. His performance is absolutely false!” Yang Jian’s eyes were turning red as he stared at Tang Xiu’s name and score and then bellowed hysterically.

“Hey, Yang Jian, just accept your fate, will you? If Eldest Brother was cheating on the Monthly Test, that Old Tiger Hu could have

already jumped and make a fuss about it. But heck, I might as well tell you one thing. This morning, Eldest Brother was called to the Grade Section Main Office to have a re-exam. After that re-exam, his results had been recognized by Principal and all teachers, so his marks are true and valid.” When Yang Jian’s voice words were just ended, laughter was bursted near his ears. It was Yuan Chuling, who was standing behind Yang Jian.

Tang Xiu didn’t conceal the matter that he was being summoned to the Grade Section Main Office to have a retest to Yuan Chuling and Cheng Yannan.

Although at that time Yuan Chuling and Cheng Yannan didn’t believe what Tang Xiu had said, and much less that he could get such a high score as 712 points, but they actually had no choice but to accept this fact slowly.

Almost every teacher that taught the four classes in their classroom threw generous praises toward Tang Xiu a few times. Some teachers even directly invited him to stand on the podium to explain this Monthly Test’s exam questions.

Although the results of Class 10’s students were a little worse, it was neither because they didn’t put importance nor didn’t put too much thought to their study, but it was solely caused by their problematic IQ.

If there was only one teacher who expressed his goodwill towards Tang Xiu, it could have been regarded as accidental.

Had there been 2 teachers that expressing their goodwill toward Tang Xiu, it could also be understood as only a coincidence.

But when all teachers were very good towards Tang Xiu, there was only one possibility; Which was—Tang Xiu's academic performance had made these teachers impressed, causing their appreciation and acknowledgment toward Tang Xiu to truly come from their hearts.

“After Eldest Brother's sky high performance suffered disastrous decline, did you really think that his true abilities were dropping? You know what? He was only bored with all those exams and competitions, and intentionally goofed off! Deliberately hiding his true abilities by remaining silent on the test. But he didn't expect that although he had given the 1st position to you, not only did you not know about the words GRATITUDE, but instead insulted him to the extreme. I actually wanted to see Eldest Brother start to be serious just like now though. Who the hell are you to be compared with my Eldest Brother? You are not any good thing whatsoever!”

“Neither you nor that Old Tiger Hu are a good thing. Eldest Brother originally intended to show his true abilities on the College Entrance Exam, the results were that you two absolutely wanted to be that aggressive, huh? Not only did you want to kick Eldest Brother out of Class 5, you even went as far as wanting to kick him out of the school, so Eldest Brother really had no choice but to show a speck of his strength. Letting dogs like you open your eyes and learn to be cautious, that later you mustn't see others from a narrow slit mind!”

Having seen Yang Jian's stupefied expression, Yuan Chuling's heart became extremely carefree. He didn't wait for Yang Jian to reply, and bombarded him like a machine gun, as he shot out everything he had long buried within his heart for a long time.

Facing the insult from Yuan Chuling, Yang Jian extremely wanted to retort back a few words and even wanted to punch and clean him up.

But Yang Jian had long been taught and knew that he could only beat Yuan Chuling's tongue with only academic achievement. As for the ability to talk about quarreling, he was worlds apart from Yuan Chuling.

And to go as far as punching, he was nowhere near Yuan Chuling's match.

"The one who got the first place is Tang Xiu, not you. Who the f**k are you showing off your power to, huh?" After having swept around and found that Tang Xiu wasn't nearby the announcement examinees' list, Yang Jian bursted out some words in a sour tone before he turned around and left.

"I... Tang Xiu is my Eldest Brother, can't I be happy on his behalf huh!" Yang Jian's sentence had made Yuan Chuling choke and was unable to gasp for quite a while. Only after Yang Jian's figure disappeared in the crowd was he able to roar at the crowd.

Su Xiangfei, who was in the crowd, could clearly hear the dialog

between Yuan Chuling with Yang Jian as his face turned extremely unsightly.

Early this morning, when the public list announcement results had yet to be announced, Su Xiangfei had already known about the news that Tang Xiu had attained the top scorer spot on this Monthly Test's results.

This morning for Su Xiangfei was simply a kind of torture.

Because the people who were usually around Su Xiangfei were drawing a line with him, and all of them were completely gathered at Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling's side, as they revolved around them and made Su Xiangfei instantly become a loner that was cut off from others.

The teachers, who usually favored Su Xiangfei ordinarily, seemed to have forgotten his existence as their eyes were completely concentrated on Tang Xiu.

Although Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling didn't ridicule or mock Su Xiangfei, but the other students' eyes made him feel nervous and uneasy. Never once did he ever feel that sitting in class could be so torturous like this.

This day was destined to be the day of Tang Xiu's rising.

This day was also the very same day that a lot of Star City First High School's students would be unable to forget.

“Hahaha, as I’ve said, my Eldest Brother is definitely not an ordinary person. You take a look, you take a look at it. Those people who collect information under you are much inferior to the powerful ones that I’ve found.” In the pool vacation resorts to the west, Long Zhenglin was bursting in loud laughter after he received a text message and then handed the cell phone to a young man at his side.

“712 points, and the top scorer for the third year Monthly Test at Star City First High School? But what can this result explain? At best, it could only explain that his academic performance is outstanding. Do you think a nerd like him can help us to stop those rich second-generation people that want to snatch Walled Hill Village?” Long Zhengyu read the SMS on the cell phone and spoke out his disapproval.

“Big Brother, just believe me this once will you? Tang Xiu’s observation and machinating ability are truly very strong. Don’t mention that group of second-generation rich brats who could only look over the Walled Hill Village completely by luck. Could it be that, apart from Tang Xiu, you could also find other gambling masters from casinos in Star City to help you?” Upon seeing that his big brother couldn’t be persuaded with anything, Long Zhenglin was quite anxious.

After having heard what he said, Long Zhengyu was only silent.

The Long Family started their business in making food and beverages. However, after being immersed in this business for 50 years, the food and beverages businesses of the Long Family had

dominated the entire Shuangqing Province.

However, in the last 2 years, due to the bad environment, leading to reducing profits for food and beverages' industries, the Long Family began to seek to reform the market and then aimed to expand and integrate their food and beverages' business into tourism.

After having a lot of market surveying done, and intensive research and field studies, the Long Family then targeted the place that was 50 kilometers away from the main city that was called Walled Hill Village.

However, the Long Family didn't have enough time to begin executing their plan on Walled Hill Village as news suddenly came that the Shuangqing Province would integrate all the surrounding urban and rural areas in the overall blueprint master plan. And that also included Walled Hill Village with its 600 years of unique historical culture and rows of natural landscape of famous scenic spots.

After this information spread out, the rich second generation in the Shuangqing Province, who caught the wind of the news, they responded quickly and rushed to the Walled Hill Village, wanting to have a piece of the share in this place.

Those rich second generations originally had no confidence in developing Walled Hill Village. However, after they learned that the Long Family actually eyed this land, their confidence suddenly burst to the brim.

Because the Long Family had invested into this moneymaking project for these past few years, the Long Family felt they had not miscalculated the time. To the extent that the investment development area belonging to the Long Family had become the benchmark to a close circle of people who were investing.

However, due to the influence the Long Family had in the Shuangqing Province, while the Long Family was also the first one to aim at Walled Hill Village, the Shuangqing Province's rich second generations didn't dare to forcefully snatch away Walled Hill Village from the Long Family. Therefore, they were collaborating to pressure the Long Family and came up with a stake bet on gambling. Whoever won the gamble, the development and exploitation rights would be turned over to the winner.

Regarding the competition on this Walled Hill Village's project, it was being used as a trial to foster the successors from the younger generations, since several elders completely didn't move and let those rich second generations do everything by themselves.

Being aggressive and ambitious as he was, this was also the first time Long Zhengyu was in charge of a project development. Which is why he wasn't able to anticipate that he would encounter other people who would collaborate to snipe at the project he had just taken over.

Being faced with such a meticulously laid out arranged game of chance by these people, Long Zhengyu unexpectedly found himself forced into a dead end. Under desperation and without having any choices, he could only turn toward his devilish younger brother for

help.

For a period of time in the recent past, being near with his devilish brother gave him some knowledge that his brother was clearly clueless and had one of his root muscles wrong. He even recommended him an ordinary high school student, which even made Long Zhengyu's confidence in obtaining the rights for the Walled Hill Village's development and exploitation increasingly plummet.

Chapter 31: Acted Like Pretentious P****s And Got Slapped In The Face

“Uncle, excuse me, may I ask whether there are wild animals strolling around this hill?” Tang Xiu respectfully asked a farmer at Walled Hill Village’s foot.

“Do you want to eat game meat? There are a lot of wild games on the hill. On the ground, you can find pheasants, hares, and wild boars. In midstream, you can find wild turtles, alligators, and giant salamanders. You can find more for flying games.” The old farmer inhaled his tobacco pipe and spat out a thick smoke as he answered leisurely.

Having heard the old man’s words, it made Tang Xiu overjoyed. The locals sure are the ones more familiar with the situation in the surroundings. He had spent half a night in the hilltop and couldn’t find anything. He didn’t expect to get such a big harvest by asking the locals.

After Tang Xiu asked where to find these wild animals, the old farmer took a long sigh, “But alas, that was the situation in a few years ago. Because there are too many people hunting the wild animals in this hill, they scared them away, and now there only a few of them on the hill. Even if there are some, people can’t find any traces of them now...”

The old farmer’s words were just like cold water from the sky, making Tang Xiu’s heart turn cold. The smile that just emerged on his face instantly vanished.

After having said goodbye politely to the old farmer, Tang Xiu started asking the other locals.

But he didn't expect that even though he had asked a dozen of farmers on hill's foot village, he didn't get the answers he wanted, causing him to nearly fall into despair. If even the locals hadn't heard of any rumors about fierce beasts here, didn't this mean that Walled Hill Village really didn't have any fierce beasts?

Tang Xiu was a perfectionist in nature. He had always been pursuing everything to perfection and reached the ultimate peak. He didn't find any traces of fierce beasts last night, which meant that the Body Refining Liquid he wanted to concoct lacked one last ingredient. He didn't want to accept this fact and finally decided to leave a note to ask for a leave, as he left school in the afternoon and visited Walled Hill Village again.

Since he didn't get any useful information from the farmers in the village at the hill's foot, Tang Xiu directly headed straight to the hilltop and explored the hill by himself.

Steep overhanging cliffs surrounded Walled Hill Village. It was more than 500 meters above sea level and 200 meters above flat ground. The high terrain was surrounded by different raised flat lands, giving off the feeling of a terraced mountain. This kind of terrain was extremely rare in the Shuangqing Province.

Zhang Xianzhong once occupied Walled Hill Village and declared himself king of this place. He built the city walls, city gates, as well

as constructed the Li Family Ancestral Hall, the fence split stone, official buildings, a fort, The Goddess of Mercy Temple, and other buildings. Therefore, the hill had a winding and complicated path all the way to the top.

However, because the path was too winding and long, Tang Xiu didn't traverse along the road but chose to climb up the hill.

Along the way, Tang Xiu saw a few turtledoves in the depths of the wood. He was also almost bit by vipers and scorpions, which could make other people overjoyed when they saw them.

Unfortunately, the one that Tang Xiu wanted to find were fierce beasts, rather than sate his appetite for game meat. So these wild animals didn't interest him in the slightest bit.

Half an hour later, Tang Xiu successfully climbed to the top with a few turtles, hares, and a dozen of snakes. His schoolbag was also filled up with scorpions and a variety of rare and precious medicinal herbs.

At first, Tang Xiu didn't plan to hunt the games on the hill, but since he thought about his family's restaurant and his mother's malnourished body, he took and carried these games although he didn't need them. He just conveniently hunted the wild animals he could see.

“Hey kid, you're good. The five of us could only hunt 2 rabbits, but you actually caught a lot of turtles and snakes?”

“Kid, how about you sell those games in your hand? Say the price, we’ll buy all of them!”

“Kid, from your clothes, you must be one of the locals. Give us the games, we’ll buy it!”

When Tang Xiu had just stood and straightened up his body, 5 people surrounded him and looked at the turtles and vipers in his hands with hot and boiling eyes, the only things that they didn’t do yet was rob them from his hands.

Upon seeing that Tang Xiu climbed up from under the overhanging cliff and didn’t seem to have a car, these people subconsciously thought that Tang Xiu was one of the local farmers that hunted games in the hill for pocket money, and talked to him with an arrogant manner and words. They looked at Tang Xiu in a condescending manner and didn’t even have the slightest respect for him.

“I’m sorry, but these games are for my humble home. I can’t sell them to you.” Tang Xiu faintly glanced at the 5 people that surrounded him and didn’t hesitate to refuse.

Tang Xiu could clearly see 3 cars off-road—the all-terrain vehicles parked near the roadside. The Wrangler, the Land Rover, and the Mercedes-Benz. Thus, it could be seen that these people were wealthy and had high statuses. Tang Xiu didn’t want to provoke them and simply cut off their words as to not to tangle him again.

However, Tang Xiu underestimated these people's determination to get his game.

“Hey boy, how much do you sell these games to others for? We'll double the price. Name your price and we'll pay you!” A young man in a flowered pattern shirt stared at Tang Xiu and spoke confidently.

“A man must keep his own words. Even if you give me a lot of cash, I will not sell these games to you!” Upon seeing the flowered pattern shirt's youth's gaze that it was just like he wanted to eat him, Tang Xiu subconsciously knitted his brows and frowned, “Please make way, I'm going down the hill.”

Previously, Tang Xiu also intended to practice in the Spiritual Vein in this place for a while, but since the vein's spot was being occupied, he gave up the thought and planned to do it another day.

“Oh, we'll only buy some then, and you can take the rest to your home. And we'll also buy it from you for a high price, so you can make money as well as keep your words to your family.” The youth in the flowered pattern shirt gave his advice and smiled.

Having heard the youth's reasoning, as well as he didn't want to get pestered anymore by these people, Tang Xiu was about to nod and comply with him.

But a rude voice interrupted him when he was about to nod, “Xue Renfei, you've been getting more and more boring lately. Why

must you haggle with this dirty kid? It's just some games, we don't need to pay it, just take it from him!"

The one who was talking was a guy with a fierce-looking face and with 1.9 meters in height, looking like an iron tower.

"Zhang Yongjin is right. The whole Walled Hill Village is ours. Let alone these games, even though he doesn't want to, he must hand over those games to us."

"Hey kid, those turtles are protected animals by the State's laws. It's illegal to catch them. Do you want us to drag you out to the police station?"

The other three youths burst into loud laughter along with the towering Zhang Yongjin's speech, whilst also looking at Tang Xiu with a ridiculing expression. They wanted to see how Tang Xiu dealt with the current situation.

Xue Renfei turned silent instantly, he obviously didn't expect that his companions would choose to threaten and intimidate Tang Xiu, since he usually had always been using money to resolve the problems silently.

But Xue Renfei didn't interfere with his companions' pleasure since he had given this peasant youth a chance. It was him that didn't cherish the opportunity.

“You think doing this is very interesting, don’t you?” When Xue Renfei and his gang thought that this peasant youth would be scared shitless, the youth unexpectedly sized them up one by one and revealed a teasing smile.

“Y-y-you... what the f**k are you talking about?” Zhang Yongjin was so dumbfounded that even his voice stuck up when he saw that this peasant youth was not acting according to the scenario in their imagination.

The others also stared with a dumbstruck expression as they looked at each other and didn’t seem to grasp the way the matter went.

“I just think that you all are doing this out of boredom.” Tang Xiu smiled and explained in a soft voice, “First of all, robbing from others is wrong; much less that you might not be able to snatch these games from me. Secondly, you didn’t need to scare me by taking me to the police station. I also know some people there. Finally, Walled Hill Village belongs to the State, it’s not yours yet. Only after you got the development rights can you have the rights to say those words.”

Tang Xiu calmly left after speaking these words.

Only until Tang Xiu’s shadow disappeared did Xue Renfei, Zhang Yongjin, and the others react to what had happened.

“Holy sh*t!!! What the f**k was that? Did we just literally get

slapped?”

“This won’t do, weren’t the ones who were oppressing him, us? How could kids these days be so brash and wild?”

“Hell no!!! I can’t take his tone. I don’t believe I can’t teach this country bumpkin bastard a lesson.”

Some of them bursted and roared in rage as they rushed to board the cars and wanted to give an unforgettable lesson for a lifetime to Tang Xiu.

After having chased him for a few minutes and not even seeing Tang Xiu, Xue Renfei and his gang then realized that the one that they were after was on foot. They also remembered that they were strolling around the hill on foot and only got a poor harvest before Tang Xiu slapped them with his words. Having lost interest to continue hunting, they roared curses in their talks while walking down the hill.

As the few cars gradually disappeared on the winding road, a figure then jumped down from a pine tree on the hilltop.

Tang Xiu had not really left and walked down the hill, but he headed toward a remote corner to hide.

At first, Tang Xiu intended to temporarily leave the hilltop and

come back another day. But when he accidentally saw the weary looks from Xue Renfei and his gang's faces, he concluded that they had stayed too long on the hilltop, so he gave up his plan to leave the hill.

Tang Xiu especially asked for a leave of absence for a day because he wanted to completely explore Walled Hill Village. Naturally, he didn't want to return empty handed.

"This is too much, he requested a leave in this crucial time, and didn't ask permission from me and just ran away? Isn't this the same as ditching school?" While Tang Xiu was leisurely exploring Walled Hill Village, Han Qingwu was almost raging in anger when she snatched the leave of absence slip from Yuan Chuling.

"Yuan Chuling, you're his good friend! How can you let him do this irresponsible thing? Why didn't you prevent and advise him before..." While condemning Tang Xiu's bad behavior, Han Qingwu quickly pointed her muzzle toward Yuan Chuling, as if it was Yuan Chuling who was inciting Tang Xiu to ditch school.

Had it been Hu Qiusheng who dared to yell at him like this, Yuan Chuling would have scolded back and directly left. But facing Han Qingwu's indictment, Yuan Chuling was just like a primary school student who had just made mistakes and was afraid to even breathe.

"Teacher Han, you cannot blame Yuan Chuling for this. Tang Xiu only left the absence slip and ran away. He didn't even give us the chance to speak." Seeing the class-in-charge teacher reprimand Yuan Chuling and seemingly wouldn't stop even after half a day,

Cheng Yannan reminded with a soft voice from the side.

Actually, Tang Xiu had already suspected that his leave would push the consequences to Yuan Chuling, so he gave his leave of absence slip directly to Cheng Yannan and asked her to give it to the class-in-charge teacher. However, Cheng Yannan thought that Tang Xiu was only joking to her, and then gave the slip to Yuan Chuling.

When Han Qingwu had just entered the classroom, the insufficient-nerves-brainless Yuan Chuling gave it directly to Han Qingwu, and then dragged himself into a devastating storm cast by Han Qingwu.

Chapter 32: A Shrewd Well Behaved Mommy's Boy

After Han Qingwu had vented her anger for a while, she also knew that she had wrongly blamed Yuan Chuling, and looked at Yuan Chuling with an apologetic expression.

Yuan Chuling's marks might not be as exaggerated as Tang Xiu's, but he also passed the exam with 476 points on this Monthly Test.

She knew that the last Monthly Exam's difficulties were very high. The students who got more than 550 points were only 27 out of the whole third year. With 476 points, Yuan Chuling was ranked in the top 300s. He was also one of 5 students from Class 10 who entered the top 300 rankings.

"Yuan Chuling, Tang Xiu didn't stay in his dormitory last night. He requested a leave of absence today. Do you know what matter he was leaving for in a hurry?" Han Qingwu asked

"I-I-I... ah... I don't know that..." Yuan Chuling was a day student, he didn't know that Tang Xiu left the dorm last night. But when he remembered about the smashing accident at Tang Xiu family's restaurant, a trace of a panicked expression flashed from his eyes.

"You are lying, you definitely know the reason! Tell me quickly! Has Tang Xiu encountered any problems?" Han Qingwu asked nervously since she keenly caught the changes in Yuan Chuling's complexion.

“Yuan Chuling, if Tang Xiu really has run into problems, you must tell us! You don’t want Tang Xiu to have any unexpected accidents at such a critical time like the College Entrance Test, right?” Having heard the dialogs between Han Qingwu and Yuan Chuling, Cheng Yannan’s also voiced the concerns in her heart.

A trace of nervousness also filled Yuan Chuling’s heart when he saw the tense expression in Han Qingwu and Cheng Yannan’s faces, since the shadow that related to Tang Xiu’s smashed restaurant was the first thing that came into his mind.

After hesitating for a short while, Yuan Chuling told them about Tang Xiu’s restaurant’s smashing incident.

Han Qingwu and Cheng Yannan were greatly shocked when they suddenly heard that Tang Xiu’s restaurant was bashed. They quickly dragged Yuan Chuling out of the classroom, and asked Yuan Chuling to take them to Tang Xiu’s restaurant.

Half an hour later, Han Qingwu’s car parked on the roadside in front of the restaurant’s entrance. But she was stunned when seeing the bustling and lively situation at the restaurant.

“Yuan Chuling, are you sure you didn’t take us to the wrong place?” Cheng Yannan also felt something was wrong as she asked with a doubtful expression.

“Ah... Yes, I came here 2 days ago. The entire dining hall was smashed broken, and also there were bloodstains in the dining hall

since I went in and beat 2 people out of rage.” The same surprised expression also struck Yuan Chuling.

But the present scene in front of him was really beyond Yuan Chuling’s imagination. Judging by the state when the restaurant was just smashed, there was no way the restaurant would be opened in a few days. However, the restaurant now was not only normally opened for business, but it also was bustling and lively.

“The hardwood planks to decorate the restaurant’s interior for 3 walls and ceiling will cost at least 200,000 yuan. A 100 square meters floor covered with Marco Polo ceramic tiles cost at least 100,000 yuan. 30 sets of hardwood tables and chairs are estimated at least 200,000 yuan, while the soft clothes and equipment will cost at least 5 to 600,000 yuan.”

“The business also looks flourishing. Not only the 18 tables inside the restaurant are completely full, but they have lined up by at least 6 tables long outside the restaurant. Even if the profit for each table was only 50 yuan, but this restaurant’s daily net profit would at least reach 20,000.”

When Yuan Chuling was still wondering how the restaurant suddenly changed, Han Qingwu’s voice suddenly sounded in his ear.

“Yuan Chuling, you don’t feel that your lies are too ridiculous, huh? If this restaurant really belongs to Tang Xiu’s family, will he even have to face difficult times in school and be unable to pay his tuition?” Yuan Chuling was still puzzled as to why his class-in-charge teacher was calculating the restaurant’s interior and

exterior decoration and the profit, but suddenly Han Qingwu's voice turned cold and scolded him in a stern voice.

“T-T-T-This... I really don't know how could it be like this, but what I've told you before is really the truth!” Yuan Chuling was at loss and didn't know what to say.

“Get off!!! And go back to school by yourself! If you are late for the evening class, give me a thousand lines of self-critics and regret!” Han Qingwu was too disinclined to listen to Yuan Chuling's explanation as she commanded in a cold tone.

“I... I'll go inside there to see what's going on, and look for the owner.” This was the first time Yuan Chuling saw Han Qingwu became so angry. Under her sharp and fierce gaze, Yuan Chuling frantically got out of the car as he spoke in a trembling voice.

Han Qingwu pressed the gas pedal even though Yuan Chuling had yet to finish his words as her VW Touareg quickly pierced through into the traffic flow.

Only until the [VW Touareg](#) disappeared did Yuan Chuling realize that his wallet and cell phone were on his school desk, leaving him with not even a penny right now.

“It will take at least an hour on foot from here to school. I'll definitely be late for the evening class. Man... it seems like that I'll have to write that damn self-critics...” Yuan Chuling silently calculated the distance from the restaurant to school and his face turned into a red-bitter melon color.

“Oh! A Ling, is that you? I thought I mistakenly saw someone else. What are you doing standing outside? Come, sit here!” When Yuan Chuling was wondering whether he had to enter the restaurant to see what happened inside, when a familiar voice sounded in Yuan Chuling’s ears.

Yuan Chuling looked up and saw the one who was talking to him was Tang Xiu’s mother—Su Lingyun. Excitement was immediately revealed on his face, since the problem for the transport fare to go back to school finally could be solved.

“Auntie, have you moved the restaurant?” Yuan Chuling observed Su Lingyun and found that her clothes didn’t even change from yesterday’s attire. A guess gushed out from his heart as he asked with a caring expression.

“Ah no, it’s still the same restaurant. I just renovated it again. But I have made a few new seasonings and the business suddenly flourished.” Upon hearing Yuan Chuling mentioned about the restaurant, a happy smile surfaced on Su Lingyun’s face.

Having heard Su Lingyun’s answers, Yuan Chuling was quite puzzled. He wanted to ask out of his curiosity, as from where the renovation money came from. But because he was not too familiar with Su Lingyun, he felt awkward to ask about it.

“Auntie, Tang Xiu got 712 points in the last Monthly test, and compared to the second ranker, his marks are 79 points higher. You don’t have to worry about his achievements.” After keeping

silence for a short while, Yuan Chuling intentionally shifted the topic to Tang Xiu as to probe whether Su Lingyun knew about Tang Xiu's whereabouts.

At first, he wanted to directly ask about Tang Xiu's news, but he was afraid that Su Lingyun didn't know about the matter about Tang Xiu's leave of absence, causing her to worry about him. He had no choice but to indirectly probe Su Lingyun about it.

"Xiu'er really got the first grade?! Ah, that's great! I knew that he wouldn't lie to me!" When Su Lingyun heard that Tang Xiu got the first grade, although she was very happy, but her excitement was normal and obviously stemmed from his imagination.

But when he recalled that Su Lingyun had believed that Tang Xiu would get the top scorer spot even when the Monthly Test's results had yet to come out, Yuan Chuling suddenly turned silent again.

However, from Su Lingyun's answer, Yuan Chuling was almost sure she also didn't know about Tang Xiu's matter.

After having chatted with Su Lingyun for a while, Yuan Chuling then asked for transport fare from Su Lingyun to go back to school.

When he arrived back at school, Yuan Chuling was surprised to find that a bald youth was sitting in Tang Xiu's seat. He even felt that also familiar with the baldy.

"Long Zhenglin, how come you are in my school?" After having

observed the baldy for a quite a while, Yuan Chuling asked in an astonished expression and warmly greeted him.

“What the... Fatty, you’re not dead yet? I thought you’ve committed suicide after that thing happened.” Long Zhenglin also warmly greeted Yuan Chuling after observing him attentively.

Hearing Long Zhenglin’s answer, Yuan Chuling’s facial muscles fiercely twitched as he snapped, “Damn! You’re not dead yet, so how can I die before you?”

Even though Star City might not be considered big, but it wasn’t small either.

The Long Family deserved to be called as the food and beverages business giant in the Shuangqing Province, with assets of more than 10 billion, while the Yuan Family was only a rising star in the Real Estate business with assets less than 1% of the Long Family’s.

Comparing family background and capital, the Long Family was, of course, world’s apart from the Yuan Family, and the two families were unlikely to cross each other, much less for Yuan Chuling and Long Zhenglin to become good friends.

However, a lot of things were entirely fated to meet by the heavens. Yuan Chuling and Long Zhenglin’s friendship was not because of their family, but it was only a coincidence that they were schooling in the same school and became classmates.

Although they were only classmates for only a short year, but the 2 of them already forged a deep friendship, leading to the close relationship between their families businesses.

Only until 2 years ago when Yuan Chuling's parents had a divorce did Yuan Chuling start to abandon and seal himself from social interaction, leading to the cutting off of their relationship.

But the two's friendship had clearly not faded through the passage of time. Even if they hadn't seen each other for 2 years, not only had the two of them not become strangers and unfamiliar, but instead turned more affectionate and warm.

"I'm looking for Tang Xiu. Do you know where Tang Xiu is?" Long Zhenglin straightforwardly asked Yuan Chuling after having chatted for awhile.

"You came for my Eldest Brother? What's your purpose to look for him?" Upon hearing that Long Zhenglin actually came for Tang Xiu, an astonished expression surfaced on Yuan Chuling's face. To his knowledge, these two people wouldn't mix in the same world.

"Tang Xiu is your Eldest Brother?" Long Zhenglin's lips twitched as he heard the answer as he recalled how he was begging and tangling Tang Xiu, even calling him a Master. A little bit of pain suddenly bit his intestines.

"Of course, his brain is smarter than mine, his grades are better than mine, he's more handsome than me, he's sincere and honest, as well as caring and understanding for his buddies. How can not

recognize him as my Eldest Brother?” Yuan Chuling patiently explained, because he thought that Long Zhenglin felt that Tang Xiu was unworthy to become his Eldest Brother even though he didn’t know for what matter Long Zhenglin was looking for him.

“Hey, you haven’t said for why you’re looking for my Eldest Brother.” Yuan Chuling couldn’t help but ask after he found Long Zhenglin was a little dazed after he spoke.

“The reason I want to find him is that I need Tang Xiu’s help. Have you heard about Walled Hill Village’s project? My family planned to reform our Food and Beverages businesses into a tourism catering business and was targeting Walled Hill Village. But we never expected that other families were also eyeing this project and then decided to determine the winner in a gambling bet...” Long Zhenglin didn’t even hide the slightest thing from Yuan Chuling and told him the full details.

“Wait a sec! I don’t get it. You want Eldest Brother to help you gamble? The problem is he’s a well-known well-behaved mommy’s boy. Never once did he ever enter the casino, and there’s no way in hell he knows any gambling techniques.” Yuan Chuling’s eyes stared wide as he spoke in an astonished expression and lost his cool when he heard Long Zhenglin’s explanation.

Chapter 33: Carving The Clouds And Cut Out The Moon

“A well-behaved mommy’s boy?” A strange expression surfaced on Long Zhenglin’s face as he heard Yuan Chuling’s description of Tang Xiu.

Would a well-behaved mommy’s boy enter the Game Hall? Could the very same well-behaved mommy’s boy make the Game Hall’s boss lose his coolness and manners?

“Wait-wait... Hold on! What is with that strange expression? Could it be that those bastards have spoken the truth?” Having clearly seen the changes in Long Zhenglin’s expression, Yuan Chuling subconsciously glanced at Su Xiangfei’s direction.

When Yuan Chuling had just entered the classroom this morning, he heard someone spreading rumors and said that, after Tang Xiu left yesterday’s evening class, he had gone to the Game Hall and played there all night.

Su Xiangfei, Su Duanxin, and Tan Liquan were the source for the rumors.

Everyone easily believed the rumors spread out by this trio, because the fact was, Tang Xiu really didn’t come back to the dorm last night. They spoke about Tang Xiu with a disdain and contempt-filled expression. Even if Tang Xiu got poor results, but to go as far as leaving to spend all night to play slot machines, wasn’t it the same with the broken moral and mental sickness?

But when Tang Xiu's Monthly Test's results came out, the direction of public opinion immediately changed.

Everyone thought that the rumors were intentionally spread out by Su Xiangfei, Su Duanxin, and Tan Liquan to discredit Tang Xiu because the three of them were well known to often go out and play in the Game Hall. But never once did everyone hear about Tang Xiu entering the Game Hall.

Besides, entering the Game Hall was not the worst thing everyone ever did, since most of the students in the ordinary class, in fact, had played at the Game Hall and many of them also had played the game all night long. So even if what Su Xiangfei's trio had said were true, for Class 10's students, it was not enough to even loathe Tang Xiu in the slightest bit. They even felt closer and thought that he was not an out-of-reach kind of existence.

On the contrary, they were much more loathing Su Xiangfei, Su Duanxin, and Tan Liquan's behavior since they were starting rumors and causing trouble, ratting about their own classmates to the teachers behind his back. This was not a gentleman behavior, this was a dishonorable behavior.

This was the power of scoring 712 points in the Monthly Test's results. This was the power of snatching out the first rank in grade.

Su Xiangfei's trio apparently didn't expect that not only did they failed to discredit Tang Xiu and get him punished, but instead got

themselves alienated by all their classmates. It was just like they were trying to get the advantages but ended up losing worse, while also suffering a double loss after trying to trick somebody.

“Those bastards?” Following Yuan Chuling’s eyes, Long Zhenglin also looked at the direction of Su Xiangfei’s trio as a trace of coldness flashed from his eyes.

Yesterday, Long Zhenglin was also aware that Su Xiangfei, Su Duanxin, and Tan Liquan were trailing behind Tang Xiu because he also had been following Tang Xiu. Moreover, he also heard this trio’s curses and disrespecting words towards Tang Xiu.

At first, Long Zhenglin only thought that this trio were completely passers-by. They were merely jealous due to Tang Xiu’s success to sweep away the Health and Prosper Club and then said those words. But he had never thought that they were Tang Xiu’s classmates, causing a surge of disgust to be born in his heart.

Feeling the disgust from Long Zhenglin’s eyes, Su Xiangfei’s trio subconsciously lowered their head as their complexion turned pale.

In fact, after Long Zhenglin came to the classroom, Su Xiangfei’s trio literally became ostriches that dove their heads into the sand. They didn’t even dare to breathe, as to not to be noted by Long Zhenglin. But they didn’t expect that Long Zhenglin eventually shifted his attention toward them.

“Fatty, you and I have been friends for a long time. Why don’t

you tell me where Tang Xiu is?” After having stared at Su Xiangfei’s trio for a while, Long Zhenglin retracted his vision back and asked with an anxious expression.

“You can ask me but to whom I have to ask, huh? Eldest Brother had basically run away after he left a leave of absence for today. He said that he had something urgent to do and must go out to deal with it...” Recalling his previous experience, Yuan Chuling answered with a bitter expression.

“This...” Long Zhenglin was dumbfounded after listening to Yuan Chuling’s answer. “Fatty, if Tang Xiu comes back, you must call me ASAP. If Tang Xiu does not show up by tomorrow morning, my Older Brother could really die this time.”

Having not found Tang Xiu, Long Zhenglin then hurriedly left after he left his message.

Yuan Chuling and Cheng Yannan were staring with eyes opened wide in Class 10’s classroom, as they were dumbfounded with doubting and shocked expressions on their faces.

The shocks and surprises Tang Xiu had brought them in these 2 days... were simply too big. First, he broke the record and became the Monthly Test’s first scorer, and now it was followed shortly that he had unexpectedly turned into a God of Gamble.

Had it been someone else that told them Tang Xiu was a master in gambling techniques, they would have snapped and scoffed at him. But since it was Long Zhenglin who told them and also

personally came to ask Tang Xiu's help, even if they didn't want to believe it, they had no choice but to believe it.

The moonlight was just like threads of thin silk, projecting a huge black shadow of the hill on the earth.

On the summit of Walled Hill Village, the stars' lights were spraying down from the sky as it enveloped Tang Xiu's body.

Bathing himself in the star lights, each pore on the whole of Tang Xiu's body crazily absorbed the stars' lights and refined it into Star Essence.

This was the second time Tang Xiu cultivated the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis on his own initiative after his rebirth.

The first time, he actively practiced this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis was when he found that his body accidentally fitted itself to cultivate this cultivation technique. He used to recite this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis in the Immortal World for days and nights. And now, since his body had been passively cultivating this cultivation technique, and out of curiosity, he was now actively practicing this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis.

But that time, Tang Xiu felt that something was not right since his body was torn in pain as if it was being split apart. And for a very long time, Tang Xiu was afraid to actively practice the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis.

But now, since he already obtained most of the raw materials and ingredients to concoct the Body Refining Liquid, Tang Xiu also braved himself and dared to actively practice the breathing practice for the first stage of the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis.

Along with the stars' lights seeping into his body, the Star Essence inside Tang Xiu's body was increasing with a speed that could be seen with the n***d eye.

One, two, three, four...

While Tang Xiu actively practiced the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis for the first time, he only produced a half sphere of Star Essence inside his body. Only after passively having practiced it for a month did that half sphere of Star Essence gradually become round, barely forming a full and complete sphere of Star Essence.

The reason for this second time of actively practicing this Heavenly Art of Cosmic Origin, was that Tang Xiu was sitting on top of a Spiritual Vein. And compared to the previous attempt that he actively practiced the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Origin, the star light absorbing speed was faster by a dozen fold. Thus, the Star Essence's condensation inside his body was also faster accordingly.

Within a short time of 2 hours of practice, the Star Essence's sphere inside his body had changed into 4 spheres from 1.

However, when the Star Essence's spheres inside Tang Xiu's body had reached 4, his absorption speed sharply declined as his face and shoulder muscles fiercely twitched and convulsed while thick

sweat permeated out of his body, creating a pool of water under his b**t-ocks.

The strength requirement to cultivate the Heavenly Art Cosmic Genesis was really extremely high. Although Tang Xiu had been exercising his body day and night for about a month and enhanced his strength by a lot, but before he soaked and tempered himself in the Body Refining Liquid, Tang Xiu's body was still that of an ordinary person's.

A human corporeal body had a bearing and tolerance limit. While the Dantian, meridians, meridians' channels, blood vessels, and internal organs also needed to rest. It was impossible to continue circulating the energy unceasingly.

After the 4 Star Essence's spheres had been condensed inside his body, Tang Xiu felt that his body had reached the limit it could tolerate. The explosive power inside these 4 Star Essence's spheres felt like it would make his body explode into pieces at any time.

“Aaaah...” The severe and acute pain made Tang Xiu look up to the sky as he hissed loudly, as if his voice could shock the world.

Tang Xiu's body immediately began to roll about everywhere as his head then hit a stone.

For a moment, violent gales howled on top of Walled Hill Village as it blew off sand and stones, and turned the sky and earth dark.

For most of the time, Tang Xiu was fully tossing himself everywhere. Only when he had vented out part of the power inside his body did he immediately feel an intense sense of hunger, making him felt dizzy.

At this very moment, Tang Xiu was even thinking that he would be able to swallow a few cattle easily.

“Huh?! How come all those turtles and hares are gone?” When Tang Xiu intended to eat the wild game he had hunted to appease his hunger, he found that all the games, except vipers and scorpions in his school bag were gone, making him dumbfounded.

It was 1 AM when Tang Xi began to practice, it would be impossible for someone to go uphill in the middle of the night. Those hares and turtles also had been tied with Tang Xiu’s special technique, so it was impossible for them to escape. Thus he found that this was extremely strange.

After having been struck with a short thrill, Tang Xiu quickly calmed himself down while a trace of excitement flashed in his eyes.

Had it been ordinary people, they could have thought that the hilltop was haunted and be scared shitless, wetting their pants and running down the hilltop while weeping and wailing.

But Tang Xiu was not an ordinary person to begin with. He had been living and cultivating in the Immortal World for 10,000 years, and he specifically didn’t come to Walled Hill Village for

sightseeing.

“Really, I’ve been strolling far and wide to look for you, only to find you this easily.” Tang Xiu had been desperately trying to find the fierce beasts’ traces and in the end didn’t find it. But at this time, he knew that a kind of fierce beast had snatched the games from his hands.

After calming down his mind and soul, Tang Xiu’s sense was strengthened by more than 10 folds. He had been passively practicing the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis for a month, resulting in his sensing ability to be strengthened, and was 100 times stronger compared to an ordinary person. His senses were 100 times stronger, and nothing could escape from Tang Xiu’s eyes and ears.

When Tang Xiu realized that his games were gone, he didn’t even notice it at all. So this explained that the one who snatched his games was neither a human nor a wild animal, but was a fierce beast that had been cultivating.

Tang Xiu didn’t immediately set out to find the fierce beast, but he picked up some dry branches and wood from the roadside grove and burned it. He then leisurely started to roast the games.

In his 10,000 years of life in the Immortal World, Tang Xiu not only had reached the ultimate perfection in cultivation, but he was also gifted in other aspects such as alchemy, formation arrays, refining tools and devices, drawing magic symbols, and other academic or artistic attainments. All in all, he had mastered those fields at an equal expertise degree, making it very difficult for

anyone to catch up to him.

And Tang Xiu still had one godly skill, cooking delicious food...

Only to satiate his gluttonous nature, Tang Xiu didn't hesitate to spend 100 years to enter the mundane world. He travelled all over the countries in the mortal world to find and study various legends and folklores, and finally reached mastery in the godly culinary technique of "Carving the Clouds and Cut the Moon".

10 minutes later, a tempting aroma emitted out from the stick that forked the vipers in Tang Xiu's hands.

Tang Xiu didn't hurry to eat it, but he took out salt, seasonings, [cumin powder](#), and 13 types of spice from his school bag as he skillfully sprinkled the seasonings above the snake meat.

Along with the snakeskin being bloomed and popped, the white and tender snake meat's color slowly turned into a golden yellow as the meat flavor in the air became richer.

Suddenly, Tang Xiu heard a loud sound that broke out of nowhere, as his nose smelled a foul and bad stench of fumes at the same time.

"Evil creature! I've long been waiting for you!" Tang Xiu seemed to have long been anticipating such a scene. He quickly rolled down his body to the front and avoided to get sneak-attack from behind, as he kicked a pile of burning charcoals and

overwhelmingly poured it away in a torrent toward the direction behind his body.

Chapter 34: Life And Death Struggle

The split second after Tang Xiu rolled his body to the front, a rattan as thick as a bucket ruthlessly slammed towards Tang Xiu's direction.

Had Tang Xiu not quickly laid and rolled his body a moment ago, he definitely would have been pulled out by this rattan.

“Hissss... hissss”

Having failed to pull Tang Xiu, the rattan's mouth issued a sharp and angry his.

The thing that suddenly had sneak-attacked Tang Xiu was a shocking giant python.

Not only did the python's sneak attack not hurt Tang Xiu, but it actually had been injured in the eyes by the burning wood that was kicked up by Tang Xiu.

As if Tang Xiu enraged it, the python's body was suddenly raised high in the air as if it was flying. Its mouth sprayed a mass of scarlet mist that enshrouded the surroundings in a 10 meters' radius. Its body bolted through just like an arrow released straight from a bowstring as it directly flushed toward Tang Xiu.

Even though he had held his breath, but Tang Xiu still felt a burst of dizziness for a while. The scarlet mist turned out to be highly

toxic poison, and didn't even need to enter the body through breathing but could penetrate deeply through the human body skin.

Tang Xiu was no different from ordinary people now, he could only try to predict and guard to take precaution against it. Thus, holding his breath in advance was already very good. But with his current cultivation, he was simply unable to control the pores on his body.

While rolling about and avoiding the python's attack, Tang Xiu took out a trident dagger from his schoolbag and ferociously stabbed toward the python's back.

Although he had escaped the python's attack once again, but Tang Xiu's face had turned extremely ugly.

Although Tang Xiu still persisted to shut his mouth and nose, and relied on his willpower to not breathe after intense and fierce movements, but the pores on his body suddenly opened, causing the poison mist in his body to greatly increase.

"Damn! I've got to finish this quickly or else I could die in this place today!" Feeling the toxin spread inside his body, a trace of coldness flashed through Tang Xiu's eyes as his mind instantly became sober.

In the next moment, Tang Xiu grabbed a lot of medicinal herbs.

He quickly chewed the medicinal herbs and also rolled down toward the burning firewood.

While enduring the severe pain from his feet due to the burning firewood, Tang Xiu stared at the python with eyes full of fighting spirit.

Previously, Tang Xiu came to Walled Hill Village to find a fierce beast, but he basically didn't calculate the danger and risk brought by the fierce beast. And this python was clearly beyond the risk that he had expected, and had even caught him unprepared.

Tang Xiu had long been accustomed to having his strength in the Immortal World, giving him the confidence to face any kind of odd and strange monsters. Therefore, he had yet to fully adapt to his current condition as a normal person.

Fortunately, Tang Xiu had picked some medicinal herbs with detoxifying effects when he climbed the hill to prevent him being poisoned. Although these herbs couldn't fully eliminate the highly toxic poison in his body, but it could temporarily suppress it.

The reason as to why Tang Xiu was drilling into the bonfire was not because he wanted to torture himself, but because he was forced to do it.

Fire obviously had an expulsion effect towards the poisonous scarlet mist, as there was no scarlet mist around the bonfire. It was simply no different from Tang Xiu finding an excellent place to protect himself.

“Hisss! Hisss!”

The Black Python apparently also realized Tang Xiu’s intention as its tail rolled and ferociously thrashed toward Tang Xiu.

A trace of a cunning light flashed in the Black Python’s eyes while Tang Xiu jumped high in the air to avoid the Black Python’s attack.

With a banging loud sound, the bonfire was suddenly thrown out into the air and not even 1 piece of burning firewood remained.

It turned out that the Black Python was targeting the bonfire on the ground and not Tang Xiu.

“Damn evil creature, it seems that you have entered the Spirit Convergence Stage, I will never permit you to live!” Having seen such intelligence from the Black Python, a shocked and horrified expression flashed on Tang Xiu’s face as an intense murderous intent surged up from his body.

Since Tang Xiu was able to hide inside the bonfire, he was naturally able to guard against the Black Python’s attack that destroyed the bonfire.

With his rich combat experience, Tang Xiu dodged the Black Python’s attack, and at the same time, skillfully swiveled his trident dagger as he stabbed at the 7 inches spot below the Black Python’s head.

The pitiful Black Python, which was still excited after destroying the bonfire, suddenly felt a sudden burst of severe pain from its vital part of the body, causing its body to suddenly freeze and turn stiff.

The moment Tang Xiu's hit connected, he didn't hesitate to take out the trident dagger, stripping off a lump of flesh and blood, as he then stabbed it in and out once again.

Only after having been repeatedly stabbed 3 times did the Black Python react from the severe pain, as it coiled and rolled over its tail, attempting to coil and grasp Tang Xiu.

By now, Tang Xiu had already made a fist-sized wound 7 inches under the Black Python's head as blood gurgled out from the python's wound.

Tang Xiu had recited and studied the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis countless of times in his past incarnation, it had even been ingrained and became his instinct. Naturally, he also had thoroughly memorized the raw ingredients and materials needed to concoct the Body Refining Liquid for cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis.

The first blood's essence shed by the murderer could be said to be the most quintessence part, and Tang Xiu didn't want to miss it even for a bit.

Tang Xiu's mouth mercilessly bit the fist-sized wound 7 inches

under the Black Python's head with lightning speed.

At the same time, Tang Xiu's hands firmly clung onto the Python's body as to prevent to be thrown off by the python.

The python absolutely didn't expect that the tide of the fight could be reversed this fast and that it might even be defeated.

When it was aware that it had lost its superiority against an ant and was even facing a life-threatening danger, it became anxious.

With a loud "bang" sound, the Black Python's tail fiercely thrashed at Tang Xiu's arm as the pain made Tang Xiu's face fiercely twitch.

In fact, the Black Python's tail was originally trying to strike at Tang Xiu's head. But at the critical moment, he didn't hesitate to sway his head to the side and escape the disaster.

"Evil creature, I'll don't believe that I can't kill you today!" Tang Xiu clearly felt that the Black Python had broken one of his arms, leaving only one arm intact.

Having been forced to endure the severe pain from his arm, a trace of a fierce expression flashed across Tang Xiu's eyes.

In a split second, he gripped the trident dagger with his teeth as he rapidly stabbed the Black Python's previous wound.

When the trident dagger had fully lodged on the wound, Tang Xiu continued to s**k out the Black Python's blood's essence once again.

Under the sharp pain, the Black Python rolled and raged everywhere as it sprayed out a thick scarlet poisonous mist. It let out hissing voices as its nose sent out gloomy and cold air, sending the chills to anyone's heart who look at it.

When the Black Python had amassed its strength back and prepared its tail to trash on Tang Xiu again, Tang Xiu fiendishly grinned as he used his mouth to rotate the trident dagger deeper into the Black Python's body.

Under the rotating movements of the trident dagger, the Black Python's accumulated strength that it had desperately amassed instantly vanished as its attack also was resolved in a flash.

Being aware that its tail couldn't effectively attack Tang Xiu, the Black Python finally turned chaotic as it began to bump its body along with Tang Xiu's body against the boulder and old trees on the hill.

Tang Xiu vigilantly observed the surroundings. He quickly and skillfully hid to avoid being hit each time it would hit the stones and trees and tried to minimize the damage to his body, whilst at the same time almost not stopping to continue sucking the Black Python's blood's essence.

With Tang Xiu frantically sucking its blood's essence, the Black Python's blood's essence gurgled out crazily as its strength was becoming weakened endlessly.

Finally, the Black Python seemed to be aware that its life might come to an end. It didn't frantically struggle again, but coiled up its body and fiercely shot through its head straight toward a particular direction.

When Tang Xiu's body was raising high in the air, he was greatly alarmed as his face turned deathly pale.

It turned out that, this time, the Black Python didn't hit against the boulder and the old tree along with Tang Xiu's body, but it straightly flung itself and fell down the hill.

The Black Python seemed to realize that it couldn't do anything to Tang Xiu, and even it also could lose its life. It didn't hesitate to choose to perish together with Tang Xiu.

"Could it be that today I will die together with this python?" While listening to the whistling sounds of the wind that pierced his ears, whilst also looking at the unseen dark ground downhill, despair and desperateness gushed out from Tang Xiu's heart as unwillingness filled him.

"NO! I came to this world and finally could see Mom with great difficulty! I must live!" In a split second of effort, Tang Xiu set firm his mind as a resolute conviction flashed from his eyes.

Tang Xiu took out the trident dagger, and in the next second, frantically pulled himself out from the Black Python's body.

The Black Python had no strength left at this moment. Under the ravaging from Tang Xiu, it was unable to even resist and could only let Tang Xiu make shocking and terrible scars on its body.

However, a look of astonishment quickly gushed out from Tang Xiu's complexion. Because, aside from the 7 inches spot from the Black Python's head, the trident dagger was unable to even pierce the other parts of the Black Python's body.

Tang Xiu then realized that had he not caught the Black Python unprepared and stabbed its only weakness—in the 7 inches under its head—he would have been unable to even damage the Black Python's body today. It was even extremely possible to have lost his own life to this Black Python.

Tang Xiu was dazed for a moment. It was already more than 100 meters since he had fallen down with the Black Python. At this time, Tang Xiu could already faintly see the houses at the hill foot as he could also see the peculiar rugged rocky terrains.

“My body is but no different with mortal flesh. Falling down with this kind of speed will definitely turn me into minced meat!” Upon seeing that his body was coming closer to the ground, anxiousness and deep worries increasingly engulfed Tang Xiu's heart. His eyes were just like an eagle's as he sharply looked below... for the chance of survival.

Looking far down at the ground below, Tang Xiu could only see stones and rocks. There were neither trees or swamps, causing Tang Xiu to almost fall into despair.

When Tang Xiu was thinking that his death was imminent, a drop of rainwater suddenly gently fell onto his face, causing him to stare blankly for a moment.

How could it be raining while the sky was bright?

A puzzled expression filled Tang Xiu's eyes as he looked up to the sky and saw the whole, vast sky was full of stars with a dazzling and bright moonlight above his head.

"I found it!" Tang Xiu's eyes brightly shone when he found that the drop of water that fell on his face was not a raindrop, but the blood's essence that flowed out from the Black Python's body.

He finally found a chance to survive.

Chapter 35: The Ingredients And Materials Completed

It was 3 AM, the darkest time before dawn. This was also the time when farmers around the hill's vicinity were mostly still in deep sleep.

But a loud noise, as if a muffled thunder struck the flat land, was suddenly heard near Walled Hill Village's foot, waking up the sleeping villagers.

The sleeping villagers only half-consciously mumbled to themselves as they turned over and continued to sleep.

Some villagers carefully listened, and apart from the roaring voice of the owls, there were no other voices, so they also slowly went back to sleep again.

Suddenly, someone surprisingly appeared on top of the serpent that had fallen to the ground.

This person and the snake had an awe-inspiring fight before in Walled Mountain Village. It was Tang Xiu and the Black Python.

The Black Python had already died at this time, its body curled up and lumped. Tang Xiu was standing in the center of its coiled body, grimacing in pain with a fearful expression lingering on his face.

At the last moment of life and death, Tang Xiu found that the Black Python was going to die, so he didn't struggle anymore. When he turned his eyes, he didn't hesitate to use the Black Python's body to shield himself.

After a few breaths of time, Tang Xiu was like a dumpling being wrapped and solidly packaged, completely covering all parts of his body.

At that moment, the Black Python also aware about Tang Xiu's intention and subconsciously wanted to use its hard-rock, solid body and tremendous strength to convolute Tang Xiu's body and turn him into mincemeat.

But when the Black Python was about to execute this move, its body had already crashed to the ground.

The Black Python's life was already hanging on a line, so it instantly died by the huge impact and was unable to hurt Tang Xiu again as its hard-rock, solid body cracked and was lacerated.

Only after having collected himself did Tang Xiu untie himself from the python's tail's wrapping as he crawled up from the ground and stood shakily.

Upon seeing the smashed and badly mangled Black Python that was covered with its blood, Tang Xiu couldn't help but secretly feel very fortunate. Had it not been because his life was hanging on the line and an idea was born in desperation to save himself, he could have turned into mincemeat with the Black Python.

The Black Python's body was just like a hard-solid-rock after all, while his body was that of mortal's that could collapse in a single blow.

Although Tang Xiu finally survived due to using the Black Python's body during the critical moment and had covered all of his body, but under such a huge force of impact, his head still received a few bruises.

After having spent a lot of effort, Tang Xiu gradually collected himself as he took out the [trident dagger](#) and cut a little piece of Black Python's skin.

“This Black Python's skin from its whole body, aside from being used to concoct some medicine, the skin is also enough to make 3 sets of clothes. One for Mom, one for me, and the last one is for Fatty.” Tang Xiu began to calculate after skinned the python's skin with difficulty.

“The Black Python's internal organs are the main ingredients for concocting medicine, but this Black Python's internal organs are a bit too large, and I wouldn't need this much to concoct the Body Refining Liquid. I can use the rest to concoct medicinal liquor and use it to recuperate Mom's body, and sell the rest.”

“Part of the Black Python's tendons and muscles will be used to concoct the Body Refining Liquid and the rest will be used to refine some tools.”

“But this Black Python’s meat, although it’s very big, but it’s poisonous and clearly can’t be consumed by ordinary people. It seems that I’m the only who can enjoy this meat.”

Tang Xiu spent the next 3 hours to finish separating the materials taken from the Black Python’s body and piled them up. But after he stood and straightened up his body, he was quite stunned.

He didn’t know for how many years had this Black Python been practicing since its body was just like a thick and hard bucket of about 20 meters in length. The piled materials separated from its whole body were unexpectedly nearly his height.

“Having no interspatial ring is really troublesome!” Tang Xiu wryly smiled and looked around. After having thought that nobody would come this early to this rocky area, he climbed back to the hilltop.

Tang Xiu had left his school bag with his cell phone, wallet and other stuff inside it before he roasted the games.

Half an hour later, Tang Xiu had successfully climbed the hilltop and found his school bag was completely in a mess.

The rare and precious medicinal herbs, along with some special emergency items in his school bag, had basically already been destroyed when Tang Xiu was fighting the Black Python.

One thing that made Tang Xiu heave a relieved sigh, was that he

found that the cell phone he had just bought yesterday afternoon was still intact in his school bag. The cell phone's screen was unexpectedly quite strong and even shined.

If the cell phone was broken, Tang Xiu was certain that a lot of people would be shocked when he shipped these Black Python's materials' piles to the main city.

“Banshou, find a good leak-proof truck and send it over to me. And tell Dingzi to find a freezer compartment...” Tang Xiu spoke after dialing Banshou's number.

Banshou and Dingzi were exactly the thugs that came along with Hei San, who caused havoc at Linjia Restaurant a few days ago. After Tang Xiu ruthlessly tidied them up, they blindly followed and were only obedient to Tang Xiu.

The day when Tang Xiu had beaten up Hei San's gang in the restaurant, he didn't let off these 7 thugs easily but used his restriction technique on their bodies to avoid that they would break their promise to renovate the restaurant and run away from it.

When Hei San's gang was leaving the restaurant, they indeed ignored Tang Xiu's words. Hei San and Lumao, Banshou and Dingzi, and the others were also the same.

After having been tortured by Tang Xiu, they couldn't wait to hide far away from Tang Xiu, and the farther from him was the better. It was because the impression Tang Xiu had carved into

their souls was too deep. He was too fierce, cold, cruel, and ruthless as well as having such formidable strength, causing them to be unable to even have the chance to resist him.

Hei San and the others thought that as long as they found a place to hide, it was impossible for Tang Xiu to find them. They thought that they would be alright as long as they didn't make any trouble with Linjia Restaurant.

For fear that Tang Xiu would track and find them to Shangwen Real Estate, Hei San and the others didn't dare to go to Shangwen Real Estate and ask for the remaining half of the reward.

After most of the time passed by, they knew that Tang Xiu was only strolling around for a while at the restaurant's entrance before he was leaving, and he seemingly thought that they were helpless. They couldn't help but feel glad and thought that their decision was correct.

Only after the night came, when they were together at their gathering place did Hei San and his gang regret it black and blue.

Acute and severe pain struck Hei San and his gang almost at the same time. They even went to the hospital to look for the doctor to cure it and had a complete check-up, only to find that there was nothing wrong with their body. Thus, there was also neither any means or way to stop these pains.

When Hei San and the others asked about each other's condition, they finally identified the same thing. These acute pains were

definitely related to Tang Xiu, and only he himself could release them from this pain.

Since the 7 of them were unable to heal the pain, and it was also already midnight, they had no choice but to gather in front of Linjia Restaurant.

Naturally, it was also impossible for Tang Xiu to wait for them in the middle of the night in Linjia Restaurant. Only during the next morning did Tang Xiu calmly arrive at Linjia Restaurant, while the severe and acute pains had been torturing Hei San and his gang the whole night.

Upon seeing Tang Xiu, Hei San and his gang were just like the sons seeing their parents as they kowtowed and begged him to release them from the pain. They also gave their regret and remorse as well as giving their pledge, and showed sincere and honest attitudes.

Tang Xiu smiled and laughed. He didn't make things more difficult and directly helped them stop the pain. He then left the message "Be good in renovating the restaurant" and quickly left, leaving Hei San and his gang standing in front of the restaurant whilst looking at each other.

But Hei San and his gang didn't dare to ignore Tang Xiu's words this time, neither did they dare to goof off and cheat.

Hei San and his gang basically racked their brains and gave their all to renovate the restaurant as to satisfy Tang Xiu, since they

wanted the pain to be removed completely.

In just two days, Hei San and his gang had completely rebuild Linjia Restaurant.

It cost them almost 600,000 yuan. Not only did they spend more than the payment from the Shangwen Real Estate to pay Tang Xiu in front, but they also had to empty their own savings for it.

It was because the pain caused by a restriction technique was really unbearable. Not only did it ravage the body, but it also tortured their souls. Never did they want to suffer such pains anymore.

Tang Xiu was very satisfied with Hei San and his gang's work's efficiency and quality. He removed the restriction technique on Banshou, Dingzi and his body, and even directly cured the injuries on their body personally.

But Hei San and Lumao were the exceptions, Tang Xiu only lifted the restriction on their body, and refused to heal their injuries. Tang Xiu said that they were already very lucky that they were still alive, so they naturally mustn't expect that he would heal them.

However, as the proverb said, "An exchange of blows might lead to friendship". After having gone through this fight, deep fear and respect towards Tang Xiu was ingrained deep in Hei San and Lumao, as they were also afraid to provoke him anymore. But Banshou, Dingzi and the others were in awe and regarded Tang Xiu as a son of heaven. They could see that Tang Xiu regarded others

justly and knew the distinction between gratitude and grudges. Therefore, not only were they not afraid of Tang Xiu, but instead brazenly and shamelessly followed Tang Xiu, in the hope that Tang Xiu would teach them a bit his martial arts.

But naturally, Tang Xiu was too lazy to respond to Banshou, Dingzi and the others, although he also didn't deliberately alienate them either.

It was because Tang Xiu also realized that the world would eternally never lack small figures like Banshou and Dingzi. People like them were often humble and unworthy, but once they were breaking out at a critical moment, their strength could have been more terrible than that those of great figures'.

Before he had enough strength, Tang Xiu didn't hesitate to use these muscles for his needs.

Banshou did move very fast. It was 6 AM, and he already rushed and drove a big truck for half an hour and arrived at the appointed place at Walled Hill Village's foot.

The other 3 thugs that previously created havoc in Linjia Restaurant also arrived at the same time with Banshou at Walled Hill Village.

"Boss! Dingzi hasn't come yet since he is still searching for the appropriate warehouse. You said that the fewer people that knew about this matter, the better. So I only called the 3 of them. Tell us what we need to do." After seeing Tang Xiu, Banshou quickly came

over and reported with an excited expression.

Banshou's gang had been following Tang Xiu for a few days, but Tang Xiu only gave them cold shoulders. This was the first time for Tang Xiu to ask help from them. This meant that Tang Xiu no longer disliked them, causing Banshou's gang to naturally feel extremely happy.

Chapter 36: The Way To Control Subordinates

A dumbstruck expression appeared on the faces of 4 people headed by Banshou when they saw the piles of snake meat and snake skin on the ground.

“B-B-B... B-Boss, you couldn’t have killed this Evil Dragon from the Walled Hill Star Lake, right?” A look of surprise and horror covered Banshou’s face as he glanced at Tang Xiu whilst asking in a stammering voice.

“Evil Dragon? What’s that all about?” Tang Xiu originally wanted to scold Banshou since he talked too much, but he swallowed his words back because Banshou seemed to be very familiar with Walled Hill Village.

Since Tang Xiu wanted to know more about Walled Hill Village, he had inquired about it to the farmers from the hill’s foot village yesterday afternoon. However, these locals were tight-lipped, and obviously had a wary and vigilant mentality against foreigners. Thus, it was very hard for Tang Xiu to get accurate information from their mouths.

“I... I actually came from this Walled Hill Village. I heard from my grandfather that there is an Evil Dragon from the Walled Hill Star Lake hiding in this Walled Hill Village. Whenever a full moon arises, it will go out from the Walled Hill Star Lake to prey on the livestock raised by the villagers. As time passed, the people in Walled Hill Village were simply afraid to rear any livestock again, since it meant that it was the same as feeding and raising the Evil

Dragon.”

“For fear of being attacked and injured by the Evil Dragon, every house in this hill must hang a red lantern in front of their houses and all the lights also must be lit on. The hunters were also afraid to hunt in the hills as to avoid accidentally being preyed on and devoured by the Evil Dragon.”

“But speaking about it, it’s strange though. It’s been 20 years, and never once have we heard the news about this Evil Dragon again. We thought that the Evil Dragon had died or moved from this place. So I never thought that it would appear again now. Moreover, you’re the one who killed it.”

Due to excitement, Banshou told everything he knew about the Black Python’s information in an intermittent manner. He also told the rumors, even if he didn’t know whether the rumors were true or fake. It was because Tang Xiu himself obviously had heard some of these rumors fabricated by the villagers.

“There was no news of movement in the past 20 years. This means that this Black Python was trying to break through a bottleneck for 20 years, or because it was in a weak state due to injuries?” Suddenly, a trace of brilliance flashed over Tang Xiu’s eyes.

If the Black Python was in a weak state for 20 years because of injuries, then it meant that there was another fierce beast hiding in

the Walled Hill Village. Thus, the materials needed to concoct the Body Refining Liquid to cultivate the Second Layer of Stars Tyrannical Body for the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis was already solved.

With 5 people's muscles, all the snake meat on the ground had already been loaded onto the big truck in half an hour.

Almost at the same time, Banshou also received a phone call from Dingzi, who informed him that he had rented a freezer compartment.

"Boss, do you want to rent the freezer compartment to store these snake meats? But it's quite a lot, you won't be able to completely use it by yourself. How about we supply the remaining great amount of surplus to Linjia Restaurant and sell it there? We can make another source of income as well as pay the rent for the warehouse this way." Halfway to the destination, Banshou mumbled.

"All of these snake meats are extremely poisonous. Besides, I have other uses for them, and it's not edible food." Tang Xiu stared at Banshou for a moment and spoke in a deep tone.

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's explanation, Banshou couldn't help but sweat. He knew that he had said something wrong and hastily apologized.

Tang Xiu also knew that Banshou was speaking out of his good intention, so he didn't say anything. If it were not for fear that

Banshou would take the snake meats for food, he was also disinclined to explain it.

After running his mouth like that, Banshou no longer dared to speak again. The others also saw that Tang Xiu seemed to be thinking about something, and they afraid to make any noises as to avoid disturbing Tang Xiu and provoke his anger.

Driving all the way without any words, the big truck quickly arrived at the freezer compartment located in the Old River Street area, where Dingzi had already been waiting for Tang Xiu and his gang.

“Anyways, all of you actually don’t have a rotten character. From now on, don’t do those kinds of extortions and blackmailing again, as well as stop harming people and smashing others’ properties. If you want, you can go to the restaurant and work there. You don’t need to stay there all day long though. Just help there occasionally. You can use your physical strength to work for your own livelihood such as lifting up goods or use your mouth to publicize the restaurant.” When Tang Xiu saw the great physical strength from Banshou, Dingzi, and the others when they were moving the snake meat into the freezer compartment, so he spoke out these words seriously.

After having realized through a few days of observation, Tang Xiu found that, although Banshou, Dingzi, and his gang had been mixed with Hei San, but at the bottom of their hearts, they were not willing to live that kind of life. It’s just because they had no particular professional skills, while they also having always been jeered at and ridiculed by their families or friends. Thus, it caused

them to wish to have something that could give them a good standing, face, and make their families and friends see them in admiration and respect.

Banshou, Dingzi, and the others had never thought that their wishes turned them into sh*ts after they followed Hei San. Not only did they not gain recognition and respect from their families and friends, but it also increased the cold treatment and loathing from them. They were simply becoming more rotten and broken. Thus, the cycle repeated and developed into a vicious circle as it started getting out of their control.

“Thank you for taking care of us, Boss! We will not disappoint your expectations!”

“Please be assured, Boss! From now on, the restaurant’s tiring and heavy jobs will be taken care of by us. We will make sure to never let Auntie get tired.”

“If there are some bastards that dare to cause havoc in the restaurant, we’ll clean them up and kick them out!”

Upon hearing Tang Xiu’s words, the weary and exhausted looks on Banshou, Dingzi, and the gang’s faces suddenly turned excited in a flash, just like men seeing hot chicks.

Although Linjia Restaurant’s business was not quite good before, but they could really see that Linjia Restaurant was very flourishing these days.

The proverb said that, “drawing back a step before walking forward 10,000 steps”. Even if Linjia Restaurant’s business was deserted, it didn’t matter for them, since they had other motives in mind. They just wanted to be able to get closer with Tang Xiu through working in the restaurant. Only after Tang Xiu was happy and approved them, might he be willing to teach them his [Half a Loaf Kungfu](#) even a bit. With this, they were guaranteed to rise.

Besides, Linjia Restaurant’s business was very hot recently. With their understanding about Su Lingyun, as long as they get Su Lingyun’s approval, she absolutely would never treat them wrongly. They could also get back their self-esteem and respect from their families and friends with this kind of work.

“This is some money for all of you. Take it! Just consider it as your compensation for renovating the restaurant.” Upon seeing the excited expression from Banshou, Dingzi, and the others, Tang Xiu was also perfectly aware of their thoughts, but he didn’t mind it and only smiled. Tang Xiu then took out his ATM card and then gave it to Banshou and Dingzi.

“Ah, there’s another thing! Buy new clothes and change your current style! All of it! If you help at the restaurant with this kind of shi**y looks, every one of you will only scare away the patrons.” After having stared at Banshou and the gang for a moment, Tang Xiu added his command.

The reason as to why Tang Xiu gave the money to them was because he accidentally overheard Banshou and Dingzi’s conversation in a remote corner a moment ago.

Although Dingzi had already rented the warehouse, but he only paid a deposit of 1,000 yuan and had yet to pay the whole sum. The reason was very simple —He had no money, not a single penny left.

All these years, Banshou, Dingzi, and the others were simply living for this moment only. As for tomorrow... that's for tomorrow. They were just like the typical [Moonlight Clan](#) that used all of their money early in the month like there was no tomorrow.

Before renovating the restaurant, Hei San, Banshou, Dingzi, and the others had amassed nearly 600,000 yuan. In the money they used: 100,000 yuan was down payment from Shangwen Real Estate; 200,000 yuan from threatening and intimidating someone from Shangwen Real Estate; 200,000 yuan gathered from Hei San, Banshou, Dingzi, and the others after they scrapped all of their possessions, including all of their savings, to be contributed to the total sum.

Thus, after the restaurant's renovation had finished, Banshou, Dingzi, and the others were completely broke. Therefore, when Tang Xiu asked them to do something, they were also strapped for cash.

They were just like the foals that were supposed to run and yet there was no grass for them to eat. So Tang Xiu couldn't do such a thing.

Besides, Tang Xiu had always been extravagant to his servants in the Immortal World. He had never been stingy with money.

After throwing his ATM card to them, Tang Xiu walked to his school on foot.

Although Tang Xiu had already collected all the materials and ingredients needed to concoct the Body Refining Liquid and couldn't wait to immediately close up and practice, but he calculated that it would take at least 10 to 15 days of him disappearing temporarily. This gave him no choice but to go to school and take a long leave from the school.

But, Tang Xiu didn't know that when he went to school, Banshou, Dingzi and the others were completely shocked because of the amount of money in his ATM card.

At first, Banshou and the others tactfully refused when Tang Xiu gave them his ATM card. However, since Tang Xiu insisted and they were afraid to make Tang Xiu angry, they reluctantly accepted it.

Banshou and the others firstly thought that even though there was some money in Tang Xiu's ATM card, the amount wouldn't be a lot.

However, since they had no money to handle the current task, they couldn't help but find an Automated Teller Machine, out of their curiosity to check the amount of money inside Tang Xiu's ATM card.

When they saw the huge amount of the six-digits number on the

ATM's screen, they almost didn't believe their eyes and thought that their eyes were having a problem.

"273,000 yuan? Holy crap, I didn't read it wrong, right? How could Boss be so rich?"

"Could it be that Boss is a rich and powerful person in disguise? Has everything we have seen only been a facade?"

"Well, I say, since the Boss's skill is that good, how could Boss be a poor person? He must be only taking a trip outside and living as he wishes... Ah, he also lives carefree enough to not worry about everything."

Banshou, Dingzi, and the others were only staring at each other with eyes opened wide as they started to discuss it.

They seemed to be pre-occupied and were thoroughly shocked with Tang Xiu's formidable martial skill since they racked their brains and thought of all kinds of possibilities afterward. The only thing they had never thought of was that this money was only in Tang Xiu's hand for a night, after he got it from the Game Hall.

"Banshou, Dingzi, the 2 of you are the oldest and the most experienced amongst us. What should we do with this money? Should we divide it or give it back to Boss?" After having discussed for a long time, everyone was unable to guess the reason, as they

finally threw the decision to Banshou and Dingzi for this difficult problem.

“Giving it back to Boss is certainly wrong. Judging by Boss’ character, once he has given something, he must never want it back! I suggest that we save this money first. Apart from necessary expenses, we’ll use it for any tasks given by Boss!” After having pondered for a while, Banshou gave his suggestion.

“I also think so. The Boss has clearly said just now that he hates our previous conducts. So to say, we can’t dally with chicks, extort, and blackmail again. We must do honest work seriously now. If the Boss acknowledges us, he might teach us his [Half a Loaf Kungfu](#) a bit...” Dingzi also gave his agreement from the side. But he obviously was slightly absent-minded, because his mind was completely focused as to how and in what way to learn Kung fu from Tang Xiu like he had said just now.

Chapter 37: Destiny Will Allow Enemies To Meet

After leaving the freezer compartment, Tang Xiu slightly regretted his extravagant actions.

Tang Xiu had won a total of more than 290,000 yuan from the Health and Prosper Club. He drafted 10,000 yuan for his pocket money and put it into his school bag and left the remaining 280,000 yuan in his ATM card. He bought his cell phone using his ATM card. But for the necessities he brought to the hill, he paid for them in cash.

From the 290,000 yuan Tang Xiu had won in the Health and Prosper Club, aside from the 7,000 yuan he spent for his cell phone and the drafted 10,000 yuan, he had given the rest of the money to Banshou, Dingzi, and the others.

“Earth is not the Immortal World. I’m not the Immortal World’s great person who has infinite wealth anymore. So I have to carefully plan my spending from now on!” While stroking his shriveled schoolbag, Tang Xiu slightly missed the feeling from 2 nights ago when his bag still filled with stuff and money.

The day session class had already ended when Tang Xiu arrived at school.

After he threw his schoolbag into his classroom, Tang Xiu headed straight to Han Qingwu’s office.

“What?! You want a leave? And you want a leave for 20 days?! Hey, do you even understand what you are asking for?” At first, Han Qingwu wanted to criticize Tang Xiu’s actions that asked for a leave, while he directly left and explained it later. But she would never have thought that, when she had yet to speak about it, Tang Xiu had already snatched the momentum in advance. After having heard what he was asking, Han Qingwu turned furious as her voice suddenly increased by dozens of decibels, almost reverberating throughout the entire office building.

“Teacher Han, I’m perfectly aware of what I am talking about. I just want to find a quiet and tranquil place to study and review while waiting for the College Entrance Test to arrive, rather than spending my time in a noisy and chaotic classroom.” Tang Xiu calmly replied in a soft voice amidst facing Han Qingwu’s interrogation.

Han Qingwu was stunned and froze for a moment. She obviously didn’t expect that Tang Xiu would answer back.

“Tang Xiu, I know that your grades are good. But it’s exactly because of this that you must not be complacent and arrogant. You don’t want yourself to fail at the critical moment, right? Else, you will regret it for the rest of your life.” After the long silence, Han Qingwu advised sincerely, “Tang Xiu, you’re still young, and there still much you have yet to experience. You’re still unable to think thoroughly, but I have been through a lot and experienced many things, I certainly won’t push you to the pit.”

An inconceivable strange feeling gushed out in Tang Xiu’s heart

when he heard Han Qingwu's words. He was regarded as a genuine 100% old monster in the Immortal World. But he was said to be very young by Han Qingwu. Who was younger than whom really?

However, he could also feel that Han Qingwu's advice was truly for his own good. Had it been Hu Qiusheng who spoke to him like this, he could have snapped and left.

"Tang Xiu, is it because of the class' lack of discipline? And it's affecting your study or homework? Or was it caused by the bullying by your classmates, so you feel you had been wronged?" Han Qingwu seemed to be reminded of something as she asked him with an expression full of worries, since she saw Tang Xiu was only silent.

"Teacher Han, my decision is already decided and I only came today to inform you. Whether you agree or not after I talk to you, I will still leave! If you don't allow me, I'll talk to the principal. If he doesn't permit it, I will move to another school. Please understand my difficulties." Tang Xiu quickly left after speaking, since he felt that continuing to speak with Han Qingwu, he would be unable to change her mind.

Han Qingwu was clearly shocked and shaken with Tang Xiu's words. Never once did she ever think that Tang Xiu would suddenly talk to her with such a cold and icy expression. His manner was imposing and gave off a strange and unfamiliar feeling.

Han Qingwu was frozen and didn't react even though Tang Xiu had left the office for a long time.

“Eldest Brother! You finally came! I have long been waiting for you for almost the whole day. Why did you want to play the disappearing act, eh? You’re causing everyone to worry about your safety!” When Tang Xiu was just entering the classroom, he ran into Yuan Chuling, who just returned from the toilet.

Yuan Chuling tightly grabbed and clutched Tang Xiu’s arm with a warm and affectionate expression.

“Hey Fatty, don’t be this disgusting, will you? We both know that we’re die-hard buddies. But if anyone who doesn’t know about our friendship, they will call us G*Y, you know?” Tang Xiu seamlessly broke away from Yuan Chuling’s palms as he smiled and teased him.

“Holy sh*t! Eldest Brother! How could you insult me like this? But heck, I will change my s****l orientation for you if you reaaaaaally want me to!” At first, Yuan Chuling roared in a strange manner, followed by a grumbling laugh in a low tone.

“Get lost!” Tang Xiu yelled back in a good mood as he grabbed his school bag on the desk and walked out.

“Hey, the class will soon start! Why are you going outside? Could it be that you taking leave again?” Yuan Chuling was dumbfounded when seeing Tang Xiu’s actions.

“I was disgusted by you. So I should leave and gain some distance from you to get better, shouldn’t I?” Tang Xiu waved his hand

toward Yuan Chuling, but his feet stopped walking toward the classroom's door.

Yuan Chuling's face slightly twitched when he heard that, while his eyes also exposed his confused and puzzled expression. He was quite clueless whether Tang Xiu was telling the truth or just joking with him.

In the next moment, Yuan Chuling smiled and laughed, because when Tang Xiu had just arrived at the classroom's door, he took out a basketball from his school bag and threw it at him, "Fatty, this is your birthday gift, I hope you like it."

It's true that the reason Tang Xiu came to school today was to take a leave of absence. But his true reason was that he suddenly remembered that today was Yuan Chuling's birthday. Tang Xiu felt that he must say or express something to him since Yuan Chuling was his only friend at school. He couldn't help but feel that he must give him something, and then bought something that Yuan Chuling very fond of—a basket ball.

On the other side, when Han Qingwu finally recovered from the blow she got from Tang Xiu's words, she quickly went to the classroom. She wanted to catch up to Tang Xiu but she was unable to overtake Tang Xiu's pace. For a moment, her face suddenly turned unsightly while eyes turned misty and watery.

"Shameless son of a b**ch, you're like [the dog which bit Lu Dongbin](#). You don't have gratitude for others' goodwill. If you fail your College Entrance Test, you will really deserve that!" In an empty corner, Han Qingwu furiously stamped her feet as she

cursed as she fumed with rage and clenched her teeth.

Han Qingwu didn't realize that her attitude right now was like an angry female student, not a teacher.

After leaving the school, Tang Xiu was worried about a difficult problem.

He was now able to cultivate the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis. He also had improved his strength as well as having the materials for Body Refining Liquid. But where should he go to concoct the Body Refining Liquid and then take it?

Concocting the Body Refining Liquid would cause very big changes, and Tang Xiu didn't want to be mistaken as a terrorist by other people and get arrested. While after taking the Body Refining Liquid, he had to close up quickly, and it would take at least a few days or 10 to 15 days. Under this state, he mustn't be found by anyone.

Had it been in the Immortal World, Tang Xiu wouldn't have a headache to solve this problem. But on Earth, it became a big problem.

"Damn. If I had my own land and manor in the suburb, this wouldn't be a problem." The place with Spiritual Vein in Walled Hill Village suddenly flashed in Tang Xiu's mind. But he remembered that he encountered those few second generation rich youths there, so he couldn't help but feel anxious and worried.

Tang Xiu got too immersed with this problem in his thoughts, to the extent that he didn't even notice that an off-road car was speeding and running the red light.

Suddenly, a high-pitched and ear-piercing braking sound pierced his ears, abruptly awakening Tang Xiu from his thoughts.

In a split second, Tang Xiu panicked, as a black Land Rover nearly hit and ran him over. Had the driver not stepped on the brake, he could have been hit and thrown away.

“F**ck! You motherf**ker! Do you want to die? Are you blind or something? Sh*t, if you're dead, you really deserved it!”

“You wanted to fake the hit and get compensation, didn't you punk? You really deserved to get run over by a car if you wanted to fake the hit and ask for compensation! But your Big Daddy doesn't believe that you got hit, and won't give you any money!”

“Sh*t! I'm really unlucky! If I were too late to respond, I could have seen blood today, and certainly will lose the gamble! Luckily I just saw the Yellow Calendar before I went out and am always on alert all the time!”

When Tang Xi heard the emergency brakes' sound, it was as if a loud blast exploded in his mind. The painful memories from when he got a car accident suddenly appeared in his mind. He was unable to bear the pain, causing his face to violently twitch and twist as beads of sweat poured out from his forehead, to the extent that he didn't even hear the cursing from the Land Rover's driver's.

“Punk, don’t play dumb! I’ve installed a driving video camera here. I will take you to the best hospital to check your body! There’s no way in hell you will have the chance to blackmail me!” When the Land Rover’s driver saw the symptoms on Tang Xiu’s face, he was frightened at once. He obviously didn’t dare to speak so bossy like before, and seemed to have lost his fierceness and turned weak.

This time was the time when commuting traffic was at its peak. The moment this “traffic accident” occurred, the Land Rover instantly got surrounded and overwhelmed by the crowds, causing traffic to be congested.

When the surrounding crowds saw that Tang Xiu’s body was sweating, along with his twitching expression, they subconsciously thought that he was seriously hit. At this time, the crowd instantly became angry when they heard the cursing words said by the Land Rover’s driver that was domineering and bossy.

“F**k him... the riches are really f**king great.”

“Humph! This is a second generation nouveau-riche for you! Everyone! Take their pictures and upload it to the internet. So everyone can search their identity!”

“WTF! He is surely less than 20-years-old, but he’s driving a million yuan car! God knows from where he got this car from, maybe his parents are corrupted and take bribes!”

The Land Rover's driver was scared and flabbergasted when he heard the crowd's shouts.

The Land Rover's driver had long been used to bullying and oppressing others with his power and influence, going so far as cursing Tang Xiu with an arrogant and condescending manner. The results were that he completely forgot that there were a lot of people in the surroundings, while the crowds were also basically the same with Tang Xiu, the marginalized and lower-class people. These people were generally sympathetic of others who were also weak and marginalized in society.

Had the Land Rover's driver been sincere and gave money, he could have left directly. But he cursed and swore in such a domineering and arrogant manner, which caused the public to cry more in outrage.

“Zhang Yongjin, you said you can change that hot temper of yours. He has yet to demand compensation. Even if he wants money, you can just give him and the problem is solved. If you delay the matter with Walled Hill Village, no matter how much money you have, it will not be enough!” When the Land Rover's driver was trapped in an awkward and difficult moment, a clear and bright voice suddenly broke out behind him. The Land Rover's driver felt as if he finally caught a straw in his lifeline and looked relaxed.

“It's YOU?!!”

“It’s YOU!!!”

Tang Xiu finally awakened from that painful memory, and then he saw a youth with a flowered shirt behind the Land Rover’s driver. He couldn’t help but twitch his brows and frown as his mouth also shouted in surprise.

Almost at the same time, Tang Xiu recognized that youth behind the Land Rover’s driver, that youth also recognized Tang Xiu.

Chapter 38: It's Okay Looking For A Fight

It turned out that the Land Rover's driver and that youth in the flowered shirt were the two second generation riches Tang Xiu had encountered at Walled Hill Village. Tang Xiu faintly remembered that the flowered shirt youth was called Xue Renfei, a typical stupid rich youth who had always been using money to deal with people. While that brawn-over-brains was Zhang Yongjin, the courageously stupid brawn-bullying-bastard kind.

"Kid, how much do you want? State your number! As long as we find it not to be excessive, we'll pay. But I warn you, don't be too excessive, else, you won't get even a dime from us. You might even get arrested because of this." Xue Renfei took a long glance at Tang Xiu as he asked with a disdainful expression.

At first, Zhang Yongjin wanted to speak. But under the glaring eyes of the surrounding people, he didn't dare to say anything and left everything to Xue Renfei to deal with Tang Xiu.

"You can go, I am fine!" Although Tang Xiu didn't like Xue Renfei's tone and attitude, but he was not the kind of low-life who makes trouble without reason. He shook his head and spoke in an indifferent tone.

Tang Xiu's answer clearly strayed from Xue Renfei and Zhang Yongjin's imaginations. The watching crowds also thought that they heard it wrong and that there was a problem with their ears.

They clearly saw that this youth's body was heavily sweating just

now, and that painful expression he had shown was not faked. How could he let them off and refuse their money?

“Hey kid! Do you want to play jack-a*s with us? Letting us leave for a while and then you go to the police to report a hit-and-run accident?” After a short silence, a peculiar voice sounded from the crowd. It was coming from a youth wearing a suit behind Xue Renfei.

After having heard the youth in suit’s word, an understanding expression was revealed on Xue Renfei’s face, and bursts of “Ohs” were issued by the crowd. It was obvious that everyone thought that the suited youth had correctly guessed Tang Xiu’s true intention.

“Kid, I knew that you were rotten when I met you in the hilltop. But I had never thought you were this rotten. I really don’t believe I cannot f**k you off!” The brawny—Zhang Yongjin’s eyes suddenly widened as he stared at Tang Xiu. His palm stretched out and tried to grab Tang Xiu’s collar whilst also cursing loudly at the same time.

Tang Xiu was distracted and in a dazed state when he almost got hit by the car, but since he was in a sober condition right now, it was naturally impossible for him to get caught.

A cold light flashed in Tang Xiu’s eyes when he saw Zhang Yongjin’s palm stretched over at him. He seamlessly moved a step backward and successfully avoided Zhang Yongjin’s palm.

“Punk, you’re really faking the accident and want money out of it!” Zhang Yongjin was frozen for a moment when his grasping failed, before he yelled loudly in an excited expression.

Because Tang Xiu’s movement to dodge him was too agile, this was not the action an injured person could do. Moreover, when Tang Xiu was stepping back a moment ago, there was not even a trace of injuries on his body from when he completely got hit from the car’s body.

“Punk, you’ve really faked the accident and were demanding compensation, you Big Uncle will never spare you!” Zhang Yongjin only had a little bit of guilty conscience and was yet to even confirm Tang Xiu’s condition as to whether he was really hit by the car or not... And since he had confirmed that he hadn’t hit Tang Xiu, he instantly raged as he snapped fiercely whilst also rushed forward toward Tang Xiu.

Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun couldn’t help but shake their heads upon seeing Zhang Yongjin’s excited expression.

The both of them were perfectly aware of Zhang Yongjin’s character. He was narrow-minded and always wanted revenge over the slightest discord. The kind of person that never wanted to be owed by anyone.

Zhang Yongjin felt he was derailed, abused, and accused by the watching crowd because of Tang Xiu. Since he felt that he had been wronged, even if Tang Xiu didn’t die, he must teach and skin him a bit.

Hu Wanjun raised his hand and looked at his watch. With anxiousness and deep worry, he asked, “A Fei, do you think that kid really faked the accident and wanted some compensation?”

“He shouldn’t be, why? Although that kid looks poor and destitute, but he seems honest and just. He doesn’t care about money. If he really faked the accident and wanted some compensation, he would have directly asked some money a moment ago and wouldn’t let us leave like that.”Xue Renfei shook his head while answering in a hesitating tone.

“Ah, my mouth is really cheap! I was quite angry since that kid was playing us in the hilltop yesterday, so I couldn’t help but intentionally let out those provoking words!” Under Xue Renfei inquiring eyes, Hu Wanjun explained in a guilty and anxious expression.

“You... bah, even the clever you got confused at this very time! The Walled Hill Village’s project is very important. But you actually want to vent your anger toward that kid, is it really worth it?” While Xue Renfei was thinking as to how to settle the problem, Hu Wanjun suddenly spoke those words. And after having heard his explanation, his eyes darkened as he almost fell to the ground.

“If we were late there, Eldest Sister would have cleaned us up!” Xue Renfei angrily glared toward Hu Wanjun and then turned around to enter his car.

“Crap! Hey, don’t leave. If you’re gone, what should we do with

this problem here?” Hu Wanjun was dumbstruck as he watched Xue Renfei leaving for his car.

“I’ll go to the hotel first. You stay here to help that Big Muscle clean his mess. I hope he won’t go too far. If he’s really playing with other’s lives, you can say that you’re out of luck.” Xue Renfei smiled and started his Wrangler Jeep.

At the next moment, Xue Renfei’s smile vanished as his mouth was suddenly agape.

“A Fei, what happened... uh...” When Hu Wanjun wanted to ask more, at the same time, he followed Xue Renfei’s eyes. His neck was as if being strangled as his throat issued stuttering and vague voices with eyes that instantly turned wide and almost popped out.

The sight that made Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun flabbergasted was the scene of a towering 1.9m height guy, that looked like Zhang Yongjin, firmly being controlled and grasped by the 1.7m height Tang Xiu.

At this time, Zhang Yongjin’s arms had been caught by Tang Xiu as he knelt in a very unusual humiliating posture on the ground. He was even unable to move even a bit while his face had swollen red and looked helpless.

“You said you didn’t make any mistakes hah? You bastard almost hit me by your car! I was generous enough to let you leave, but you went too far as to pester and annoy me. Isn’t this that same as you wanting to force me to make you drink your own pi** after you

refused the meal, hah?” Tang Xiu kicked Zhang Yongjin’s a*s as he snappily cursed at him.

After having swallowed a lot of python’s blood’s essence, Tang Xiu didn’t have any chances to try and vent his strength. Suddenly, such a big guy took the initiative to sell and knocked his door. So, Tang Xiu was also happy to buy the service and cleaned him up.

“Punk, I just didn’t think that you really got the balls. If you dare to let me go, I’ll absolutely make you look like sh*t!” Even though he had been completely turned upside down by Tang Xiu, Zhang Yongjin still persisted and was unyielding as he loudly shouted.

“What a big bear, the legendary proverb “all brawns and no brain” really suits you! I have checkmated you with difficulty. What the f**k do you rely on wanting me to let you go? Kneel to me and admit your mistakes and I will let you go. Else, you can kneel to me the whole day here!” Tang Xiu looked at Hu Wanjun with a provoking expression as his mouth ridiculed them mercilessly.

“Bastard! Let me go while I’m still not really angry. Quickly release me! Or else, even if you want to release me later, you will be too late!” Having heard Tang Xiu’s words, Zhang Yongjin was almost suffocated because of rage as he furiously shouted and commanded.

“Big Bear, it looks like your mind has turned insane. Then, I’ll make you come to your senses.” Tang Xiu really hated Zhang Yongjin’s arrogant character, as he was like this even in a situation like this. He sneered as he triggered and pressed Zhang Yongjin’s

hands downward, and humiliated him further as he lowered his head to the asphalt.

When Zhang Yongjin loudly yelled his curses, a loud-dull thumping sound was heard as Zhang Yongjin's head hit the asphalt. The rain of curses from his mouth turned into wailing and humming pained voices.

“Bastard, you're dead! You're so very dead!” Amidst his pained hums and mumblings, Zhang Yongjin was still unable to bear not to curse and threatened.

“Fine, since it's like this, I will see who will die first in the end!” Tang Xiu's anger finally sparked. He had been threatened again and again. He sneered and then bumped down Zhang Yongjin's head without hesitation.

“Look out!”

“Stop!”

Upon seeing that Zhang Yongjin's head was going to hit the asphalt and be humiliated again, 2 voices suddenly burst behind Tang Xiu as two strands of wind blew toward Tang Xiu's cheek.

In this critical moment, Hu Wanjun had no choice but command his bodyguards to act and rescue Zhang Yongjin. He was, after all, the one who provoked the fight between Zhang Yongjin and Tang Xiu. Seeing as how Zhang Yongjin suffered the loss, and in case

something bad happened to him, Hu Wanjun would absolutely take the consequences. Thus, the only way out was to save him as quickly as possible and let Zhang Yongjin suffer less.

In order to appease Zhang Yongjin's anger, Hu Wanjun even commanded his bodyguards to break Tang Xiu's arms.

Although Zhang Yongjin might look simple and was only brawn with no brain, but Hu Wanjun was perfectly aware that Zhang Yongjin was not really stupid. He often was just too lazy to think and use his own brain. But once he really used his brain, he usually became more intelligent than anyone else.

The reason as to why Zhang Yongjin was too lazy to use his brain was because his family's influence was too powerful. When a family or a person's strength had become too powerful to a certain degree, all the schemes and tricks became useless before them, to the extent that he possibly thought that there was no need to use his own brain. And Zhang Yongjin was this kind of person.

Although Zhang Yongjin had long been friends with Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun, and often went to play together, but be it Xue Renfei or Hu Wanjun, they perfectly understood about their families' power and capital. Both of their families' capitals were only one-tenth of the Zhang Family's.

A cruel and fiendish smile was revealed on Hu Wanjun's face upon seeing that his two bodyguards were almost grasping Tang Xiu.

Although Hu Wanjun didn't know as to how Zhang Yongjin was capsized and rendered to be unable to move by Tang Xiu, but he was absolutely confident about his 2 bodyguards' abilities.

He knew that his 2 bodyguards were not ordinary. They were the veterans who had dozens of years of combat experience before they retired as soldiers. Their grappling skills, as well as martial arts, had reached perfection. Hu Wanjun had once witnessed the 2 of them knock and clean up dozens of thugs in just a few minutes. Therefore, he didn't worry that his 2 bodyguards would be unable to complete their task.

Chapter 39: Cleaning Up Enemies In A Flash

Tang Xiu's attention seemed to be concentrated on Zhang Yongjin. He didn't seem to even notice the 2 suited-bodyguards' arrival, to the extent that he didn't avoid or counterattack the two bodyguards, while the attacks from the 2 bodyguards almost hit Tang Xiu.

“Bumpkin bastard. The world is big! Don't you ever think you can boast and be arrogant of your brute strength in front of us!” Hu Wanjun coldly snorted as he turned around and walked to his car.

It seemed that in Hu Wanjun's eyes, even if Tang Xiu was powerful, this time his death had been decided.

Just when Hu Wanjun's feet lifted up and still hung in the air, and had yet to get in his car, he heard a loud dull thumping sounds twice as he felt his car violently shake.

“Holy sh*t!” When Hu Wanjun had found out what had happened, he couldn't help but let out a curse.

Because Hu Wanjun's imagination to have his 2 bodyguards brake Tang Xiu's arms didn't happen, and instead he saw Tang Xiu's foot sweep at his 2 bodyguards with a kick.

If the two bodyguards just fell down at their place, at most Hu Wanjun would only feel shocked in his mind, and wouldn't have felt this distressed.

But the thing that made Hu Wanjun's heart bleed, was that his 2 bodyguards unexpectedly fell down and hit his beloved off-road car, causing his car's front cover to be flat trodden.

“F**k!!! I don't know if the car's engine has been smashed or not. If the engine has been smashed, I'm really f**ked big time!” With a pained expression, Hu Wanjun looked at the completely flattened front cover of his car as his facial muscles twitched.

Before this happened, Hu Wanjun had always felt that his 2 tall and sturdy—bold and powerful—Polar Bears bodyguards were very precious and extraordinary. But now, he wished that he forked and pierced them out with a thin bamboo pole.

While Hu Wanjun was distressed over his dear car, his 2 bodyguards rolled up from his car and rushed towards Tang Xiu once again.

But this time, the 2 bodyguards' faces no longer showed their usual contempt and indifferent expressions again. Instead, they faces were full of a dignified expression along with a faint trace of shame, resentment, and anger.

They were retired veteran soldiers. Although their fighting prowess might be a lot worse when they were at their peak and couldn't be compared with soldiers on active duty, however, they felt that their combat prowess was enough to cope with ordinary people, let alone just to deal with a skinny high-schooler.

Never had these 2 bodyguards ever dreamt that they would be unable to find out as to how that youth moved, kicked and threw them out. For these two bodyguards, this was absolutely a huge insult as well as a deep lesson.

“I have let the two of you off once. But if you continue to help your bastard evil employer and are still unable to distinguish which is right and wrong, don’t ever think that I will hesitate to teach the two of you a lesson that you will never forget!” With a cold expression in his eyes, Tang Xiu snapped at them in a stern voice.

Upon hearing his words, the 2 bodyguards’ bodies froze. They couldn’t help but look at each other.

“Brat, you’ve just only caught us by surprise, letting you successfully attack us. Do you really think that you’re very powerful?”

“Bastard, you’re plotting against us and want us to be quiet and make peace? Never in hell will you have that chance! We originally wanted to break your arms, but you shamed and insulted us, you will pay for this and suffer!”

The 2 bodyguards sneered. They completely ignored Tang Xiu’s cold eyes and rushed at Tang Xiu with rage.

Upon seeing it, Tang Xiu couldn’t help but sigh.

It was because he heard from his mother's relatives that his father was an honorable and glorious soldier. For years, Tang Xiu had been longing for a military career. He was a full die-hard fan of the military. Not only would he watch all kinds of stuff about soldiers on TV, such as movies and documentary films, but he also had always been reading everything related to soldiers and military. Not even once had he ever missed news and information about them.

He even had hunted all old book editions about Military Boxing from the bookstore, to the extent of forcing himself to practice the Military Boxing frequently for several years.

This was the true reason as to why Tang Xiu had only aimed these 2 bodyguards lightly, since he had noticed these 2 bodyguards' background as retired veteran soldiers, and didn't act too extreme.

But since these 2 bodyguards really ignored his words, the sympathy and mercy for them in Tang Xiu's heart vanished in instant.

In Tang Xiu's eyes, when soldiers had degraded themselves into purely hired thugs and were unable to distinguish which was right or wrong, as well as drowned themselves into evil things, they were unworthy to be called soldiers anymore.

The two bodyguards now thought that after they treated him seriously, Tang Xiu would no longer be able to escape the disaster, and could only be caught by them obediently as they moved and rushed once again.

When the 2 bodyguards had yet to react and realized what had happened, they could only hear “cracking” sounds a few times as their body fell slowly to the asphalt.

Only until a few breaths’ time had passed did they feel intermittent acute and intense pains from their legs, as they finally realized that those sounds were the sounds of their legs being broken.

For a short moment, the two bodyguards completely forgot to scream out loud, they only looked at Tang Xiu with a horrified expression. They couldn’t even say any words as endless regret surged out and filled their hearts.

When they remembered that Tang Xiu had just kindly reminded them, as well as recalling how they thought that Tang Xiu’s reminder was only a timid compromise and arrogant words, the two bodyguards could only feel that their face was hot, and was burning with pain and shame. They even wanted to find a tunnel to drill themselves into it.

The 2 bodyguards’ heart were filled with a stormy and tumultuous feeling, while the watching crowd in the surrounding were flabbergasted and rendered speechless for a very long time.

The most shocked people with the most exaggerated expression were the trio—Hu Wanjun, Xue Renfei, and Zhang Yongjin.

The trio knew perfectly well the combat prowess these 2

bodyguards possessed. Therefore, they had full courage and confidence from the beginning to end, to the extent that they wouldn't have to worry to suffer any losses in regards to having any conflict with other people.

Even when Zhang Yongjin was in absolute disadvantage, he was still calm and composed. Not even once he had the thought to lower his head toward Tang Xiu.

But when the greatest pillars they had been relying on were wasted by Tang Xiu, only then did they really panic.

A deathly silence enveloped the surroundings after the 2 bodyguards had been wasted.

Zhang Yongjin was still in his shameful appearance with his head still being pressed down on the asphalt by Tang Xiu's hand.

Xue Renfei sat frozen on his own Wrangler Jeep and didn't even start his car.

One of Hu Wanjun's feet was in his car while the other one was still on the ground in an awkward position of not getting in or out of the car.

At this moment, Hu Wanjun basically wanted to fiercely slap his own face. Never did he ever abhor his cheap mouth to this extent before. He knew that it was because of his mouth. Had it been otherwise, this matter could have long been settled, and wouldn't

be developed beyond redemption like this.

“Yo Big Bear! How come you turned mute huh? Continue babbling your shit! Try m*e!” While everyone was still dumbstruck and drowned in their shock, due to Tang Xiu’s marvelous fighting strength, Tang Xiu snorted coldly as he pressed Zhang Yongjin’s head again to the asphalt.

“I... I...” Although Zhang Yongjin had single-minded brain and stubbornness, but a terrified feeling had filled his heart.

The youth behind him was not only skillful, but his conduct in dealing with problems was unrestrained as well as didn’t have the slightest scruples. He was just like an unfathomable existence to ponder about, and even a bit unscrupulous. Zhang Yongjin even suspected that had he still could continue to let out stubborn words, but now, it was very certain that he would pay for it bitterly. His lips wriggled for a long time as he was unable to speak any complete words.

Zhang Yongjin was still hesitating as to whether he had to bow to Tang Xiu or not. He thought to temporarily do that perfunctorily and then seek for opportunities to take revenge in the future. When a loud and clear military ringtone suddenly pierced his ears, he was so shocked that he felt a faint pain due to the shock, while also feeling scared which almost made him jump.

Under Zhang Yongjin’s angry eyes, Tang Xiu looked around with a bewildered expression before he slowly opened his school bag and took out his brand new cell phone.

“... Hmm?... I heard you... But I don't really gamble you know... ah... WHAT?... Apart from 1 million yuan you'll comply with any condition? Great, I'll be there immediately!” At first, Tang Xiu's answer was a little bit impatient. But when he heard the other conditions from the caller, his face turned excited instantly.

The one who was calling Tang Xiu was Long Zhenglin, who he casually became an acquaintance of at the Health and Prosper Club.

Long Zhenglin got Tang Xiu's number from Yuan Chuling.

Long Zhenglin had repeatedly told Yuan Chuling, that he must call him ASAP when Tang Xiu had returned back to school.

Yuan Chuling also had noted his message, albeit he never thought that Tang Xiu's arrival and leaving would have been so sudden and quick so he hadn't had the time to call Long Zhenglin before Tang Xiu also quickly disappeared again.

In desperation, the last thing Yuan Chuling could do was give Tang Xiu's phone number to Long Zhenglin.

When Long Zhenglin had got Tang Xiu's number, he naturally couldn't help but directly call Tang Xiu and ask for his help.

It was because the gambling event was about to begin since the opponent's Gambling Master had already arrived at the appointed

place, while the Long Family had yet able to find any famous Gambling Masters, of which made them very anxious and passive.

Since there was no way left to deal with the situation, Long Zhengyu could only choose to believe Long Zhenglin and give his word to let Tang Xiu gamble in their stead.

“Just consider yourself lucky today! But if next time I find that the lot of you are still unable to distinguish right from wrong, setting up and framing others, I will never hesitate to give you a more profound lesson.” Tang Xiu quickly left after speaking, since the caller urged him to come quickly before hanging up the phone.

Only until Tang Xiu’s figure disappeared did Zhang Yongjin finally believe that he had escaped from his tribulation. His body turned weak in an instant as he was paralyzed and fell to ground. He gasped heavily with his mouth opened wide.

“Yongjin, I am really sorry, I was impulsive just now. I shouldn’t have incited you to deal with that bumpkin.” When Zhang Yongjin was sitting on the ground and gasping, Hu Wanjun hurriedly rushed over to him first as he apologized to him in an apprehensive expression.

Zhang Yongjin quietly stared at Hu Wanjun for a moment. Only after a long while did he let out a wry and forced smile, “Old Hu, we have been friends for a long time. I don’t know about those small thoughts you have in your mind, but I know that you were also adding fuel to the fire. The other reason was truly because I really couldn’t stand seeing that son of a b***h... Ouch... Damn, f**king hurts...”

Zhang Yongjin could only finish his sentence in half bursts as sharp and acute pains suddenly came from his two wrists.

When Zhang Yongjin saw the bruises on his two wrists that were so twisted that they had turned bluish-black, he couldn't help but take a deep cold breath, while a trace of fear appeared on his face.

“Xue Renfei, you go to my car's trunk and take a bottle of wine out, I'll use them to rub Yongjin's bruises.” Upon hearing Zhang Yongjin's words, the knot in Hu Wanjun's heart finally eased up. And in the next moment, he didn't hesitate to grab Zhang Yongjin's wrists and carefully rub them up without any hesitation.

Chapter 40: Big Sister The Boss

A few minutes later, Tang Xiu appeared in front of Long's Dining Hall's entrance as the Long Brothers, Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin had long been waiting for Tang Xiu there.

"Eldest Brother, today, whether we can take Walled Hill Village or not, all depends on you." Upon seeing Tang Xiu, with an excited expression, Long Zhenglin spoke as he stepped forward and firmly grabbed Tang Xiu's hands.

Tang Xiu smiled and didn't speak, but his vision locked at Long Zhengyu.

Long Zhengyu also quietly observed Tang Xiu as their four eyes collided in the air.

"I'm Long Zhengyu, Long Zhenglin's big brother. Thank you for taking care of Zhenglin. Today, we're truly depending on Master Tang." When he saw that Tang Xiu didn't eagerly greet his younger brother and instead noticed his presence first, Long Zhengyu secretly nodded. He began to recognize Tang Xiu as he extended his right hand to him.

A kind of strange and peculiar feeling sprouted in Tang Xiu's heart when he heard Long Zhengyu's remark and him calling him, Master. But still, he also stretched his hand out to shake Long Zhengyu's.

"Mr. Long, to tell you the truth, I might have stronger

observation and calculating abilities compared to others'. But little do I know about gambling techniques and rules. Please forgive me first. Today, I can only try the best I can and cannot guarantee that I will win." Tang Xiu stared at Long Zhengyu for a moment as he spoke while smiling.

When he spoke these words, Tang Xiu was quite anxious. He was worried that Long Zhengyu would expel him out directly.

It was because Long Zhenglin had clearly sounded stress on the phone. that the Walled Hill Village project was very important to the Long Family. But even if the Long Family must take Walled Hill Village, he couldn't give them any guarantees about it.

It's true that the reason as to why Tang Xiu promised to come and help them was because of the reward factor. But the thing that really tempted him was the development and exploitation rights for Walled Hill Village.

Ever since he had discovered a Spiritual Vein on Walled Hill Mountain, Tang Xiu had been pondering and worrying about how to justifiably own the place with the Spiritual Vein. He had never thought that Long Zhenglin would take the initiative to find him. It was just like he was sleepy and someone sent him a pillow, of which, the offer was one Tang Xiu was unable to refuse.

However, whether it was his previous incarnation or this life, Tang Xiu had never relied on gambling to earn his wealth. Therefore, he had no confidence in his gambling skill. This was the reason he truthfully spoke to Long Zhengyu so as to avoid to be capsized, blamed and then thrown to the pit had they lost the

gamble.

But Tang Xiu wouldn't have thought that his honest confession made Long Zhengyu's impression toward him increase. The confidence Long Zhengyu had, that already fell to the abyss, seemed to have rebounded and risen again.

“Master Tang is too modest. The gambling has always been turbulent and unpredictable. Nobody dares to pat their chest and boast that they are guaranteed a win.” Long Zhengyu smiled and looked at Tang Xiu with eyes full of appreciation.

When they were still greeting each other at the entrance, ear-piercing cars' emergency brakes suddenly sounded, followed by a few people hurrying off from the cars and rushing straight toward the entrance's direction.

When he saw these people, Tang Xiu was surprised.

Because these people turned out to be the ones that just had conflict with him — Zhang Yongjin, Hu Wanjun, and Xue Renfei.

Almost at the same time, Tang Xiu saw the Zhang Yongjin trio, Zhang Yongjin, who walked in the front, also found Tang Xiu.

The moment he saw Tang Xiu, Zhang Yongjin's steps suddenly stopped as his body uncontrollably stepped backward.

The pitiful Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun, who were behind Zhang

Yongjin, couldn't see Tang Xiu, since their sight was blocked by Zhang Yongjin. Therefore, when Zhang Yongjin suddenly stopped and stepped back, they simply had no time to stop their pace.

Muffled thumping sounds sounded twice as Xue Renfei with Hu Wanjun's bodies bumped into Zhang Yongjin's body.

Zhang Yongjin's body that was like an iron tower did not budge and shake even the slightest bit. But Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun, who hit him, fell with their butts sitting on the ground, as they immediately shouted in pain.

"Y-You ... H-how the hell are you here... Y-you couldn't want to mess..." Zhang Yongjin ignored his buddies embarrassment and distress as he looked at Tang Xiu with a panicked expression and stammeringly spoke.

The psychological trauma Tang Xiu had imprinted on him was simply too big. Never once in his life did he ever kneel and kowtow toward others, but Tang Xiu had made him kneel and kowtow.

The fact that made Zhang Yongjin grieve and be helpless was that he was really cleaned up miserably by Tang Xiu, while he didn't even know Tang Xiu's name and background.

Zhang Yongjin originally wanted to slowly find the information about Tang Xiu's identity, and then slowly have his revenge on him.

Not never even in his dreams would Zhang Yongjin ever think that Tang Xiu would appear so fast in front of him again. Without having mental preparation to face him this suddenly, Zhang Yongjin naturally panicked as he lost his calm out of fear.

“Brother Tang, what’s all this about?” When Long Zhengyu saw that the Zhang Yongjin trio arrived, he originally wanted to hide to the side. But he was afraid to leave since Tang Xiu would feel that he was thrown out. So he had no choice but to brace himself to stand together with him.

At first, Long Zhengyu thought that when Zhang Yongjin trio saw him, they definitely would mock and ridicule him, and he would be unable to get out from this situation. But he didn’t expect that Zhang Yongjin’s attention was directly attracted to Tang Xiu behind him and was even losing his manner, which amazed and made Long Zhengyu naturally surprised.

He was well aware of Zhang Yongjin’s identity. In his circle of society, everyone knew the famous fiend in human skin—Zhang Yongjin. He was a kind of unreasonable and pig-headed chap.

But to see such a person was actually afraid of Tang Xiu, Long Zhengyu’s curiosity toward Tang Xiu’s identity sparked, while his confidence of Tang Xiu also increased at the same time. Unknowingly, his evaluation and vision toward him also changed.

“It’s nothing, he has possibly mistaken me for someone else.” Tang Xiu swept a glance at Zhang Yongjin lightly. When Zhang Yongjin was still thinking that Tang Xiu would blurt out that awkward and embarrassing incident, Tang Xiu shook his head and

took back his vision.

At this very moment, Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun also saw Tang Xiu along with Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin.

Upon seeing that Tang Xiu was standing together with the Long Brothers, a surprised expression flashed on their faces as it followed with an intense and anxious feeling in their heart.

They had a confrontation with Tang Xiu twice after all. And those two encounters ended with their failure and defeat. This was not a glorious thing. They were afraid that Tang Xiu would reveal those awkward and embarrassing incidents and turn them into jokes in their circle.

The trio took a sigh of relief at the same time since Tang Xiu didn't reveal about those embarrassing incident and even pretended not to know their appearances. This made them secretly glad, while at the same time they also felt angry because the contempt Tang Xiu had shown toward them.

With a complicated expression in their eyes, they looked at Tang Xiu before the three of them rushed into the hall and disappeared around the corner.

“Mistaken for someone else?” Astonishment covered Long Zhengyu's face when he heard Tang Xiu's answer. He also had the impulse to ask but stopped the words in his mouth and swallowed them back.

“Big Brother, the gambling will start soon. Let’s go upstairs.” Long Zhenglin looked at the wall clock in the hall as he spoke with an anxious and worried expression.

The Long’s Dining Hall was located in the Star City’s most prosperous commercial street. The building had up to 49 floors, and the shape resembled 2 coiling Gold Dragons that surrounded the presidential suite buildings in the middle that was built like a sphere of a globe, giving off the impression that the twin dragons were playing with a bead.

The Long’s Dining Hall, with its straight line skyscraper building, spending and magnificent appearance, had become the center of the Star City’s landmark, while it also had casted its myth as the legendary existence in the business world.

For businessmen and celebrities in the Shuangqing Province, being able to stay in the Long’s Dining Hall’s presidential suite was regarded as their honor and prestige. As time passed by, the presidential suite’s rate gradually became priced sky high.

At the moment, in one of the presidential suites in Long’s Dining Hall, 2 people sat.

One of them was a 30-years-old young woman in a tight [Cheongsam](#) gown that exposed her graceful figure, a white delicate face, and the sunglasses that made her look slightly cold and mysterious.

The other one was a 60-years-old man in a white-colored [Chinese](#)

[tunic suit](#), with a serious manner and speech, a square face, and deep and profound eyes that were unable to cover his vigorous imposing manner. At this time, his hands were fiddling with two walnuts as his face revealed a calm and composed expression.

“Grandmaster Jia, today we are really depending on you. As long as you can help us win Walled Hill Village, later you will be the largest shareholder for the Everlasting District.” The young woman lit a cigarette as she spoke with an indifferent tone.

“Miss Zhang, you can rest assured that once this old man gambles, the game already has neither suspense nor problem. Nobody in the Shuangqing Province dares to face and gamble with this old man.” The old man nodded as a proud and conceited smile emerged on his face.

After having heard his words, Zhang Deqin’s delicate eyebrows slightly frowned and quickly stretched again.

Zhang Deqin had always disliked someone who talked big, but recalling the gambling skill Jia Ruidao had, as well as his reputation in the Shuangqing Province, she quickly swallowed back the words she was about to spit out.

Ever since Zhang Deqin released the news and announced that Jia Ruidao would help her for a gamble in the Long’s Dining Hall for winning the better share rights, there were almost no gamblers that dared to respond and become the Long Family’s candidates. This was already the proof that Jia Ruidao’s reputation in the circle was truly high.

“I naturally very much admire Grandmaster Jia’s gambling skill, or else I wouldn’t have invited Grandmaster Jia to handle this matter. But driving a 10,000-years-old ship needs careful and meticulous approaches, so it would be better to be safe than sorry. Besides, remaining in vigilance and always being on guard has always been the correct thing to do.” After quite a long silence, Zhang Deqin spoke.

After hearing the Zhang Deqin’s determination to obtain Walled Hill Village, the expression on Jia Ruidao’s face finally turned serious and solemn.

When Jia Ruidao was just about to speak out his reassurance to guarantee the result, the room’s door suddenly opened as Zhang Yongjin, Hu Wanjun, and Xue Renfei entered the room in a line.

“The lot of you really never let anyone be free from worry. If it were during the normal days, you coming late is not a problem. But you are late for this very day. Do you think I can be relaxed to hand over Walled Hill Village to you?” The moment she saw the Zhang Yongjin trio, the previously calm and composed Zhang Deqin instantly reincarnated into a fierce tigress, as she faced the Zhang Yongjin trio and snapped at them with a stern roar.

“B-Big Sis ... I-I... W-we were rushing here, the result was that we almost had a car accident. So we were delayed and came late.” Under Zhang Deqin’s sharp and fierce gaze, Zhang Yongjin was as if a primary student that made mistakes as he lowered his head and apologized.

Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun, who were standing behind Zhang Yongjin, did not even dare to gasp heavily this time.

When she heard that Zhang Yongjin almost had a car accident, Zhang Deqin whizzed from the chair as she stood up and arrived in front of Zhang Yongjin in 3 steps. She circled up and observed Zhang Yongjin's body twice. With a nervous expression, she asked, "Yongjin, tell Big Sis, what had really happened? There isn't something wrong with your body, right?"

At this time, the imposing manner of an able and successful career woman Zhang Deqin had a moment ago, had turned into the Zhang Deqin who was the embodiment of an ordinary woman full of maternal love.

Chapter 41: Deviants Have Always Come From Barren Mountains And Wild Rivers

Zhang Yongjin truly wanted to tell Zhang Deqin that he was bullied. But after his face changed a few times for quite a while, he didn't say it.

It was because he felt that this matter was too shameful, and he really couldn't speak about it. Zhang Yongjin didn't want to rely on his Big Sister's strength to solve the problem, as he wanted to wash the shame and have his revenge by himself.

"Big Sis, it's nothing really. The thing is, I was speeding and almost hit someone. I hit the brake pedal and hit the glass." Zhang Yongjin spoke with a thoroughly reddened expression.

"You are lying, how could your hands be bruised huh? How come your knees are covered with dust? How come you're afraid to say that you have lost against somebody in a fight?" Seeing as how Zhang Yongjin's vision tried to avoid hers, Zhang Deqin's expression turned cold as she scolded him with a stern voice.

"I-I-I... I-I-I..." Zhang Yongjin might be tall, strong and brawny, but he had exceptional fear toward his Big Sister. The fear was deeply imprinted in his bones. He had tried to give his all to get rid of it, and was still unable to break himself from this cage.

When Zhang Yongjin was about to tell the truth, the door was pushed open as the Long brothers and Tang Xiu entered.

Upon seeing Long Zhengyu and his people arrived, Zhang Deqin walked back to her seat, as her elegant appearance was also restored. Thus, Zhang Yongjin also fortunately escaped the tribulation.

“Chief Long, you bring us here and then you neglect us. Is this your Long’s Dining Hall’s hospitality to entertain guests?” Zhang Deqin didn’t wait for Long Zhengyu to speak as she took the first stance to seize the momentum and showed her imposing manner.

“Chief Zhang has always spoken frankly. However, aside from your esteemed self, the Long’s Dining Hall also has more important guests. This Long is naturally unable to always stay in the room to accompany you.” Long Zhengyu smile as he replied in a casual manner. He then continued,” Besides, the Long’s Dining Hall’s service has and will always be first class. Regardless of any needs Chief Zhang wants, you only need to press the call bell on the table, and our attendants will quickly come over to satisfy all of them.”

Compared to Zhang Deqin’s overbearing style, Long Zhengyu’s words and style was just like a paragon demeanor, as he could make people like feeling a spring breeze, making people ashamed of their own conduct.

“You...” Zhang Deqin obviously did not expect that Long Zhengyu would take the t*t for tat approach. She subconsciously wanted to curse loudly, but then recalled Long Zhengyu’s peerless eloquence in debate. She didn’t dare to continue talking with Long Zhengyu and instead shifted her sight to Tang Xiu.

However, Zhang Deqin only swept a glance at Tang Xiu, and was too lazy to gaze at him a second time.

It was because Tang Xiu's appearance was really too ordinary and shabby. His colored plaid shirt, that could be found on a street stall everywhere, a washed-out pair of blached jeans, and a canvas shoe that was about to be pierced open with his toe. All in all, from top to bottom, his whole body was not even worth more than 100 yuan.

Zhang Deqin had always been pampered and spoiled since birth. She had been used to be the daughter of heaven with an extravagant lifestyle. She believed that outstanding people would never come from the poor and humble families, this was her truth. Thus, a superiority complex against people with poor background had become her nature, as well as having disdain from the depths of her bones toward them.

“Chief Long, I don't know which honored guest you have said, can you recommend that person to me?” With a doubting expression, Zhang Deqin looked behind the Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin brothers and asked while smiling.

“Ah, Chief Zhang has become humorous from the time I haven't seen you. Honorable people are naturally far away in the vast horizon. You have invited Jia Ruidao to help you out, while we invited Brother Tang to help us. If Chief Zhang doesn't mind, we can begin this gamble.” Seeing clearly the contempt-filled look on Zhang Deqin's face, Long Zhengyu couldn't help but sneer at her in his heart.

When Long Zhengyu first saw Tang Xiu, he indeed felt slightly disappointed. However, for his younger brother, Long Zhenglin's sake, Long Zhengyu didn't judge Tang Xiu solely on his appearance, but carefully observed Tang Xiu, and not even the little details were missed from his observation. The following scenes before also had shown that Tang Xiu must be intelligent, far beyond their imagination.

Although Long Zhengyu did not know what had happened between Tang Xiu and Zhang Yongjin, but Long Zhengyu was absolutely sure that it was not because Zhang Yongjin had mistaken Tang Xiu with someone else, as he was losing his manner out of fear.

Long Zhengyu also personally saw Hu Wanjun and Xue Renfei's expressions when they saw Tang Xiu. Fearful expressions flashed from their eyes. Although it quickly fled, but as keen as Long Zhengyu's senses had always been, he was able to see it.

One person might say that he was mistaken someone for another person. But could it be even possible if 3 people were mistaken at the same time?

“What, he's the one you asked for help?” Upon hearing Long Zhengyu's words, Zhang Deqin's beautiful eyes instantly turned wide as she let out in a sharp voice.

“If this old man's memory doesn't fail me, never once such a person has been seen in the Shuangqing province's gambling

society.” Jia Ruidao scrutinized Tang Xiu as he then spoke in a deep tone, “Chef Long, are you joking with this old man?”

“Chief Zhang, Grandmaster Jia, I’m not joking with you. Brother Tang is indeed not someone from our society. To tell you the truth, after Grandmaster Jia had announced that he would help the Zhangs, nobody from our society dared to come forward and become the champion for the Longs. The Long Family has been forced into this situation, and could only ask for help from people outside our circle.” Long Zhengyu seemed to be very satisfied with the effect brought and created by Tang Xiu to the stage as he patiently explained it to them.

Upon listening to Long Zhengyu’s slightly helpless and distressed words, a proud expression flashed on Zhang Deqin’s and Jia Ruidao’s face. They finally believed Long Zhengyu’s statement.

“Chief Long really has always been very powerful and was even able to find a hidden master amongst ordinary folks. I am so ashamed of my own inferiority.” Zhang Deqin and Jia Ruidao had yet to speak but Zhang Yongjin’s voice had reverberated in the suite as he burst into loud laughter.

Previously, when Zhang Yongjin saw Tang Xiu being together with Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin at the same place, he panicked and didn’t think thoroughly. But now, since he knew that Tang Xiu was someone who was invited by Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin to deal with Jia Ruidao, he thought that it was ridiculous and absurd as he looked at Long Zhengyu with a touch of ridiculing in his eyes.

Although he didn't know about Tang Xiu's true identity, but Zhang Yongjin was almost certain that Tang Xiu was a farmer's disciple, and even most likely a villager from the Walled Hill Village.

How such a bumpkin could be compared to Jia Ruidao, the Grandmaster of gambling techniques. Wasn't this same as a great joke for the world?

“Interesting, this is way too interesting! We thought that after the Grandmaster Jia had acted, no gambling master would dare to show up in this Shuangqing Province. Never once have I ever thought that the Long Family would take a tortuous and winding path, and even invited a Grandmaster from out of nowhere!”

“Chief Long, if you wanted to give Walled Hill Village to us, just straightly give it to us. Why must you deliberately insult Grandmaster Jia?”

Along with Zhang Yongjin's loud laughter, Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun also couldn't help but follow the wind.

If they had to compare their combined fighting strength against Tang Xiu, Zhang Yongjin, Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun were really a bit afraid of Tang Xiu. But as for gambling techniques, Tang Xiu was not even worth a dime to compare himself with them. Much less the one who will be pitted against Tang Xiu was not them, but the King of Gamble of the Shuangqing Province —Jia Ruidao.

When they recalled their miserable defeats under Tang Xiu again

and again, the Zhang Yongjin trio gnashed their teeth in anger. And now, since they finally caught the hard-to-come-by opportunity, they naturally couldn't help but mock and ridicule Tang Xiu.

“How the lot of you know Master Tang?” Looking at the unusual reaction of the trio, Zhang Deqin asked with a puzzled expression.

Only at this moment did the Zhang Yongjin trio realize that their reaction was really losing their own composure.

“Big Sister Chief, I, Yongjin, and Wanjun took a trip to Walled Hill Village yesterday. We ran into this guy on the hilltop. We wanted to buy the games from this guy's hands, but he refused, so we had a fierce discord. Therefore, we were so angry when we saw this punk again!” Xue Renfei knew that he had to deceive Zhang Deqin, and simply confessed some of the facts.

“Big Sister Chief, how could this punk be worthy to be called Master? As the saying goes, ‘Savages have always been coming out from barren mountains and wild rivers’. This punk has neither a worthy culture or personal quality. The only thing he has is brute force.” Recalling his car's front cover that had been smashed, Hu Wanjun added the fuel to the fire with clenching teeth.

At first, Zhang Yongjin also had the thought to follow ridiculing Tang Xiu. However, when he saw from the corner of his eyes Tang Xiu's faint teasing smile, a sudden chill struck him as his body unknowingly shivered, and he didn't dare to speak anything.

“Fine, since people from both sides have come, let’s start the gamble. This old man still has to fly to Macau.” Jia Ruidao stared at Long Zhengyu and spoke with a discontented expression.

It was very obvious that after having heard the words from the Zhang Yongjin trio, Jia Ruidao felt that today’s gambling was a complete farce. Long Zhengyu asking Tang Xiu to come was completely to humiliate him, and not to win the gamble. Therefore, Jia Ruidao had borne a grudge towards Long Zhengyu.

Clearly perceiving the expression in Jia Ruidao’s eyes, Long Zhengyu’s heart slightly thumped. He was aware that Jia Ruidao had misunderstood him, and he also knew that he had offended this King of Gamble and its consequences.

But when he recalled that Jia Ruidao had long chosen to stand as his opponent, Long Zhengyu quickly turned calm and took it lightly.

“If Brother Tang has no objection, then let’s start the gamble.” Long Zhengyu didn’t explain more, but his eyes looked at Tang Xiu with an inquiring expression.

At first, Tang Xiu wanted to ask about the gambling type and rules, but he took the words that were about to speak out and swallowed them back.

Tang Xiu was well aware that if he asked, he would be laughed at, and this would also implicate Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin as they would be looked down by those people. So, he decided not to

ask.

“It’s fine with me, we can start at any time.” Tang Xiu swept a glance at Zhang Yongjin and the others with a calm and tranquil expression. Not even the slightest bit of shame or anger could be seen on his face, but rather apathy in his tone.

Upon seeing Tang Xiu’s profound and unpredictable demeanor, Jia Ruidao snorted coldly, as he then rang the bell on the table.

“Little Bastard, do you want to have to compare the numbers, or do you want odd or even rules? Or do you want to play other games?” While waiting for the attendant, Jia Ruidao spoke to Tang Xiu with a condescending tone.

When he heard this “Little Bastard” words, a trace of anger flashed from Tang Xiu’s eyes. This remark was too harsh and rude.

“Old Bastard, choose one that you think you’re good at. So you won’t find any excuses when you have lost!” Tang Xiu found that he would be constantly bullied if he continued giving them any concessions. This time, he no longer flinched and stepped back, but began his fierce counterattack instead.

“YOU...!! Since you’ve readied yourself to your own disgrace. then [let’s play Dice](#). It’s simple, and won’t take too much time.” Jia Ruidao spoke in anger.

“I’m fine with it, I won’t ask more.” After hearing Jia Ruidao’s

answer, Tang Xiu was overjoyed as he blurted out his agreement.

Tang Xiu was afraid that Jia Ruidao would propose a complex gambling play because it meant that he must spend more time to figure out the game's rules and adapt to them. He was afraid that if it takes too much time in learning and adapting to the rules, he would lose the gamble.

Chinese Dice was another case all in all. Although Tang Xiu had never played this dice gamble, but he has seen it on TV, while he also had played it to pass the time when he and his classmates were visiting [KTV to sing](#), so he was no stranger to this kind of gambling. For fear that Jia Ruidao would take his words back, Tang Xiu hurriedly complied when Jia Ruidao had just finished speaking.

Chapter 42: Learning How To Apply What One Learned

In the next moment, The Long's Dining Hall's attendant came in with a few exquisite dices.

After Jia Ruidao carefully checked them, he selected a pair of die.

Tang Xiu saw that the dices were provided by the Long's Dining Hall. He was disinclined to check them, but took the remaining pair of dices randomly.

Dice gambling was very simple. Each person only needed a pair of dices with its cup. Put the dies into the dice cup as both sides shook the cup and threw them out. The one who got the biggest total number would become the winner.

As long as they had a little bit of time, anyone could learn how to play this game in a short time. This game was very popular in the bars, karaoke, KTV, and other entertainment places.

Ordinary people would depend on luck when they played this Big or Small dice game. The better your luck, you win and the worse your luck, you lose.

But for the Gambling Master, this was not relied on luck, but on techniques.

In the process of throwing the dices, Gambling Masters were able to precisely control the dices' number, which meant that the dice numbers were controlled by their skill and calculation, not on luck.

“Chief Long, are you sure to let this kid gamble with me and not you yourself take the shot? If luck were to be compared, yours perhaps might better than this brat, right?” When he shook the dices inside the dice cup, Jia Ruidao stared at Long Zhengyu and faintly smiled.

“Grandmaster Jia, you also know clearly that luck for this kind of thing is unclear. But recently, this Long's heart feels quite satisfied with life, the lady luck for my gambling chances definitely has been gone. So I'll have to ask Brother Tang to replace me.” Facing Jia Ruidao's provocation, Long Zhengyu didn't take the bait on the hook.

“Since it has come to this, Chief Long could only wait to hand over Walled Hill Village.” Having been refused by Long Zhengyu deliberately, Jia Ruidao also didn't want to speak anymore. He snorted coldly as he shook the dice cup in his hand and began to move.

Jia Ruidao had been immersing himself in gambling techniques for many years. His techniques naturally had reached the peak and mastered them.

Along with the shaking of Jia Ruidao's wrist, the dice cup was as if alive as it changed and reflected illusory images in the air, causing people to be unable to catch its traces completely.

For a time, the dice cup stood vertically, while at the other times, it was inverted. His movements were like a Coiling Dragon from the Ninth Heaven as it flew high and danced in the air with exquisite and beautiful grace.

The dies in the dice cup were as if they were stuck, and didn't exude any sounds. But had people not witnessed personally that Jia Ruidao had put the dices into the cup, they would have suspected that there were no dies in the cup.

“This old guy really has some skills.” Tang Xiu's attention was not focused at the dice cup, but rather locked on Jia Ruidao's technique, silently observing it as he fully focused his senses on it.

Even though Tang Xiu had only an extremely low experience in gambling, but he also knew that gambles were nothing but “having keen ears and quick eyes and hands”.

Jia Ruidao's techniques were truly very skilled and excellent. His arms were motionless as if it was fixedly supported, and only moved his wrist.

This allowed Jia Ruidao to reduce the movement range at the same time. Not only would it speed it up, it would also save a lot of physical strength.

Jia Ruidao's eyes did not even see the dice cup. He also didn't look at the tabletop, but slowly swept a glance at the crowd in the room. He especially stared for quite a while at Long Zhengyu and

Tang Xiu.

But Jia Ruidao's ears slightly moved from time to time. But since everyone's attention in the room was focused on his hands, nobody noticed the slightest movement that Jia Ruidao's ears had.

This sharp and fluid movement technique Jia Ruidao had done with the dice cup in his hands was enough to shock and intimidate the majority of people, not to mention that Jia Ruidao truly had mastered that skill.

Unfortunately, Jia Ruidao's opponent right now was Tang Xiu. Not only did Tang Xiu have senses that were hundred times stronger than an ordinary person's, his brains' operating speed was also stronger by a hundredfold.

Others might not notice the slight vibration in Jia Ruidao's ears, but Tang Xiu noticed them.

When the game had started, Tang Xiu also thought that the slight movements Jia Ruidao's ears and were only an accidental behavior, and he didn't pay any attention to them. But when Tang Xiu found that the subtle jitters seemed to be a regular pattern, as well as continued to move unceasingly, he immediately focused on it.

"No, it's not that there are no dice sounds coming out from the dice cup, but it's because the sounds are very vague and subtle, and couldn't be heard by most people." Tang Xiu quickly figured out that Jia Ruidao also should be listening to the rolling dices' sounds

in the dice cup, while also adjusting the dices' number with his wrist's shaking movements.

In a split moment, Tang Xiu's attention was fully focused on the rolling dices' sounds.

It was the first time that Tang Xiu played the dice with anyone after all. Not to mention that his opponent right now was the King of Gamblers. Thus, he did not dare to even have the slightest negligence, so he could live up to the Long Brothers' expectation and also obtain the place with the Spiritual Vein in the Walled Hill Village.

On the other side, upon seeing Jia Ruidao's dazzling performance, a frantic and excited expression was revealed on Zhang Deqin, Zhang Yongjin, Hu Wanjun, and Xue Renfei's complexion. They were becoming happier, especially when they were seeing the confused and almost 'drowned in daze' expression Tang Xiu had.

Zhang Deqin and her group were looking at Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin with eyes full of compassion and sympathy, just like the vision from the champion looking at the losers. It was as if Walled Hill Village had already fallen to their hands.

At this very moment, Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin were indeed having a look of anxiety and concern on their faces.

It was because Jia Ruidao's performance was truly attractive and beautiful. Jia Ruidao obviously didn't regard his current opponent

as an outsider or ordinary person as he really chose to go all out.

After having watched Jia Ruidao's appearance that was fully immersed and concentrated, Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin turned apprehensive and trembled.

Could it be that because they had invited an outsider to gamble with him, it angered him?

"Hold on!" When Jia Ruidao's performance had engulfed the atmosphere in the room, a voice suddenly sounded in the room and shocked everyone, whilst Jia Ruidao's movements also slowed down, which made the originally attached dices to the dice cup's wall almost be thrown out and fall to the floor.

It turned out that it was Tang Xiu's voice that broke the show in that critical moment.

Tang Xiu could see that Jia Ruidao's performance was getting better and better. If Jia Ruidao was allowed to play in this kind of state, Tang Xiu would very likely lose to him today, so he had to forcefully break his rhythm.

"Since Grandmaster Jia is very confident in your gambling skills, we might as well change the game from 5 session games with 3 wins to 3 session games with 2 wins, how about it?" Under Jia Ruidao's burning glare, Tang Xiu calmly spoke in a moderate pace.

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's words, Jia Ruidao had the urge to take a

knife and stab him in impulse, “Let alone 3 sessions 2 wins, how about one game to decide the winner?”

Facing Jia Ruidao’s provocation, Tang Xiu decisively chose to avoid him for the moment.

To Tang Xiu, after having interrupted Jia Ruidao’s rhythm, whether it was 5 or 3 sessions of games didn’t really matter anymore. But certainly, deciding the victory with only one game was too much of a risk to take, so he naturally couldn’t agree to it.

“Then, as Grandmaster has said, let’s decide this gamble quickly. 3 session games with 2 wins are better.” Tang Xiu smiled as he gave his words with a grateful expression on his face.

“Is he really afraid that his death is not fast enough? With 5 sessions 3 wins, he might be able to win the gamble, relying on luck. But he actually wants 3 session games?”

“My, my... I think I understand his thought. In any case, he will still lose and be doomed. Then, he might as well die happily as he wished, so he won’t need to suffer much.”

“It’s fine in any case with me, so everyone’s time wouldn’t be wasted. I think that brat feels anxious, and his body feels unwell.”

Almost nobody could figure out as to why Tang Xiu abruptly

made noise. They just thought that Tang Xiu was fearful and afraid as he wanted to leave this suffocating situation as quickly as possible. Thus, he couldn't help but make noises and interrupted Jia Ruidao's dice shaking movements.

Jia Ruidao glared at Tang Xiu with a disdainful expression, as he shook up his dice cup again.

However, this time, Jia Ruidao could no longer immerse himself into that kind of subtle sensation like before again. His hands' movements became a lot slower, causing him to be in a kind of irritable mood.

A few seconds later, Jia Ruidao's hands buckled up the dice cup on the table as everyone's eyes in the room instantly shot toward the dice cup.

Under the intense gaze and everyone's attention, Jia Ruidao slowly opened the dice cup and revealed the dices' numbers.

"WOW, 6 points! Grandmaster Jia shook out six, we won the set."

"Grandmaster is really worthy to be called as Grandmaster. Wanting a certain big number, then that certain big number he will have."

"If I had the skill just like Grandmaster, it would be great. I would simply be picking up chicks and sharpen my weapon."

The Zhang Yongjin trio couldn't help but loudly shout in surprise upon seeing the dice's points. A satisfied smile was also revealed on Zhang Deqin's face.

On the other side, Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin's face had turned unusually ugly, while Tang Xiu's face also turned solemn.

Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin were frightened by Jia Ruidao's gambling technique while Tang Xiu was surprised since he never thought that Jia Ruidao would still be able to shake out a big dice number in that kind of state.

"Kid, do you want to directly throw in the towel or want to continue to try your luck?" Jia Ruidao glanced at Tang Xiu and provoked him.

"Old man, do you want to bend down soldiers not to fight? Nah, you don't have that ability." Tang Xiu stared back at Jia Ruidao, and then picked a dice cup. He threw a dice into the dice cup and slowly shook it up.

Upon seeing Tang Xiu's clumsy and sluggish movements, a ridiculing expression was revealed on Jia Ruidao's smile, as Zhang Deqin subconsciously felt relieved.

"Hahaha, I really could die laughing. He's pretty much unlikely to have learned how to shake the dice. But he actually dares to show off his own shitty technique before Grandmaster Jia. Man... he really wants to show off his pathetic abilities before an expert."

“This punk’s technique is clearly lower than mine, but his thick-skinned face is truly way thicker than mine.”

“It’s really damn hard for Chief Long huh. But he’s actually damn good at finding such an extraordinary prodigy like him. You won’t lose face though, but we think you must have been terrified inside.

Although the others also felt that Tang Xiu’s technique was bad, but they did not say anything. But the Zhang Yongjin trio was completely unable to control their excitement and made satires as they burst into laughter out of their impulse.

“If you continue to disturb the gambling house, I really don’t mind kicking you out!” When the Zhang Yongjin trio burst into unscrupulous loud laughter and made noises, Long Zhengyu spoke in a cold tone.

Long Zhengyu’s words were as if a pair of invisible giant hands that grabbed on Zhang Yongjin trio’s necks. In an instant, they lost their voice.

Although Tang Xiu’s shaking dice’s technique was very poor, but since the gambling has already begun, then the house would prohibit any noises. Let alone such a loud, ridiculing behavior Zhang Yongjin and his friends were doing.

Had outsiders’ influence impacted the players and it was deemed to be unfair, the gambling house could be judged as not valid.

Therefore, Long Zhengyu's words carried along with it an absolute deterrent effect.

Upon seeing the Zhang Yongjin trio being suppressed with faces flushed red with anger, a satisfied smile was revealed on Tang Xiu's face, while at the same his hand's movements also gradually accelerated.

Chapter 43: Looks And Shapes Might Be Similar, But The Soul Is Different

Although it was the first time Tang Xiu shook dice, but his memorizing and learning pace ability was marvelous.

Tang Xiu had just carefully observed and emulated Jia Ruidao's movements in shaking the dice cup, so he would imitate Jia Ruidao's techniques.

At the beginning, Tang Xiu's imitation movement from Jia Ruidao's movements and techniques were still sluggish and slow. But he gradually became more skilled, as if his movements and techniques almost became a genuine replica of Jia Ruidao's movements.

"Y-You..." Jia Ruidao at first didn't pay attention to Tang Xiu's movements and techniques in shaking the dices since it was different from his. But when he figured out that Tang Xiu's movements and techniques were becoming more and more familiar, he couldn't help but shout.

Jia Ruidao had been spending more than 30 years analyzing and perfecting his own set of unique skills. Only then was he able to gradually master this technique. But Tang Xiu only needed to observe his unique skills and was able to emulate it up to 70%, which made Jia Ruidao even suspect whether the three decades he spent pondering on this technique was really in vain or not.

Although Jia Ruidao also received a few apprentices and also

taught them his unique skills, but he was very sure that even his apprentices would be unable to learn his unique skill so thoroughly. Let alone those several good-for-nothing young masters.

However, watching a stranger suddenly demonstrate his own unique skills in front him, an indescribable feeling filled Jia Ruidao's heart. Not even words could truly convey his feelings.

“This kid is only an outsider, and obviously just recently in contact with the society. But he has such a strong perception. If I were to accept him as an apprentice, wouldn't it mean that I'll have a successor to carry on my legacy?” Suddenly, a thought emerged inside Jia Ruidao's mind and started to fully fill his mind.

At this very moment, Jia Ruidao's attitude toward Tang Xiu changed as he saw that Tang Xiu was becoming more pleasing to his eyes.

Even though Tang Xiu only wore plain and simple clothes, but it was clean and orderly. His black hair particularly gave off a spirited feeling, with a pair of bright and lively eyes. His high nose, thin lips, tall and straight stature gave off a kind of graceful and compelling feeling.

When the others heard Jia Ruidao's shout, they were bewildered.

The others didn't know that each gambler always had their own particular unique skills. In the eyes of people, all the dice shaking movements were similar. They didn't truly memorize Jia Ruidao's

movements previously. Therefore, they didn't know that Tang Xiu's movements and techniques in shaking the dice were shockingly similar with Jia Ruidao's.

A few minutes later, Tang Xiu's buckled the dice cup in his hands on the table as beads of sweat permeated from his forehead. At the same time, a tired expression was also revealed on his face, mixed with a bit of nervousness and anxiety.

Although Tang Xiu had tried his best and also had digested and absorbed almost 90% of Jia Ruidao's unique skill. But a lot of things could only be accumulated with time and experience, rather than looking and imitating could learn from.

The dice shaking movements Tang Xiu had done was completely the full copy of Jia Ruidao's techniques. But he didn't have the means to learn the ear distinguishing technique to figure out the dice number in the dice cup.

The reason as to why Tang Xiu shook the dice longer than Jia Ruidao, on one hand, was of course to probe the feeling of the dice shaking sensation, so he could be more skilled in executing the technique. While on the other hand, it was because he attempted to listen to the dice rolling sounds in the dice cup, as he tried to confirm the dice number through those subtle changes and sounds.

“Open it! You must open it! Once the cup dice has buckled down on the table, the result has already been decided. Even if you don't open, you cannot change the dice number.” Upon seeing that Tang Xiu was pressing the dice cup and seemed unwilling to open it, Zhang Yongjin blurted out with an anxious expression.

Tang Xiu ignored Zhang Yongjin. He wiped the sweat that flowed down on the corner of his eyes, and then slowly opened the dice cup.

Anxiety and nervousness covered Tang Xiu's face when he was uncovering the dice cup. Even his right hand that held the dice cup was slightly trembling.

“Hahaha, 1 point. Only 1 point. You could really kill me with a laugh. With this holy sh*t luck, I might go out to buy lottery tickets.” Zhang Yongjin couldn't help but laugh when Tang Xiu had completely opened his dice cup.

When Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun heard this, they couldn't help but also let out ridicules and mock him, as Zhang Deqin and Jia Ruidao subconsciously felt relieved.

Previously, Zhang Deqin and Jia Ruidao were also worried that Tang Xiu was a kind of hidden private gambling master, so the gambling house this time could be capsized to the pit.

But the anxiety in their hearts instantly disappeared the moment Tang Xiu opened the dice cup. Their heart was as if had been eased a lot.

“Did I lose?” When Tang Xiu saw that little red point, a touch of frustration flashed in his eyes.

“Brother Tang, it’s alright. Don’t be discouraged. We still have 2 other opportunities.” Although Long Zhengyu was also discouraged deep inside, but he could see that Tang Xiu had really tried. There was neither a blaming or accusing tone in his words as he consoled Tang Xiu from the side with a soft voice.

“Eldest Brother, don’t be discouraged, the one who will win in the end is you.” Long Zhenglin also added with a face full of confidence.

Upon seeing that Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin were still trusting Tang Xiu at this time, a puzzled expression flashed in Zhang Deqin’s eyes as she couldn’t help but scrutinize Tang Xiu’s face.

But the Zhang Yongjin trio, as always, couldn’t help but continue to mock and ridicule him.

“Little brother, can we continue?” Jia Ruidao looked at Tang Xiu for a moment as he then smiled and asked.

“Grandmaster Jia, please!” When Tang Xiu heard the change in remark and tone from Jia Ruidao, he was surprised first and then immediately changed his addressing towards Jia Ruidao.

This time, Jia Ruidao’s dice shaking movements were very slow as he simply reduced a lot of fancy and unneeded movements. The dice in the dice cup suddenly produced sounds.

When Tang Xiu heard it, his eyes lightened up as he subconsciously looked at Jia Ruidao and found that Jia Ruidao vaguely winked at him, and saw a look full of appreciation from his eyes. Tang Xu immediately understood Jia Ruidao's intention as he expressed his goodwill to him.

Although he didn't know as to why Jia Ruidao would have such a change in attitude, but Tang Xiu knew that this was definitely a good thing for him. So he began to carefully listen to the sounds produced by the dice in the dice cup.

The second gambling session was much more difficult than the first one.

In the first gambling, the dice put was only 1. But for the second session, the number of dices put into the dice cup was increased to 3.

Distinguishing the sounds produced by 1 dice was easy, but the difficulty was raised by 3 times more to distinguish the sounds produced by 3 dices.

Had it been other people, they were unlikely to be able to listen and discern the dice number through the rolling dice's sounds. It was even more unlikely to be able to see through the dice cup control technique to identify the dice's numbers. They could only shake the dice cup for a few times before buckling it down on the table and then submit to the will of heaven for their luck.

However, Jia Ruidao was not an average person. He was a

professional gambler. His professional conduct and ethics didn't allow for him to be perfunctory and scuffle. Thus, he was very serious in listening and distinguishing the rolling dices and its collision sounds. While he simultaneously also controlled the dice numbers with his vibrating skill technique.

But Jia Ruidao didn't immediately put down the dice cup this time, and instead had been observing the changes on Tang Xiu's face.

When Jia Ruidao found that Tang Xiu's face looked tranquil and soothed, a relaxed expression was also revealed on his face as he put the dice cup down.

Jia Ruidao lifted up the dice cup as the 3 dices' final points were shown. It was impressively 5, 5, 6, with a total of 16 dice points.

Upon seeing that Jia Ruidao didn't score 18 points, a touch of worry and anxiety flashed on Zhang Deqin's expression, as the Zhang Yongjin trio also looked anxious.

But when they recalled that Tang Xiu was only just a green gambler, they immediately relaxed.

Although Grandmaster Jia didn't get full points, but it was not that far off. Tang Xiu could only rely on his luck to determine the numbers, while the probability to get full points was simply too low. Zhang Deqin and the others didn't believe that Tang Xiu would get full points by relying on luck.

Just like in the proverb that said, “Stepping backward for a step before advancing forward for 10,000 steps”, could also mean that even if Grandmaster Jia lost to Tang Xiu, both sides would only be tied, and there was still a third game to decide the outcome of the gambling house. But still, Tang Xiu couldn’t depend on his luck to win against Grandmaster Jia twice, could he?

After he nodded towards Jia Ruidao, Tang Xiu also picked up the dice cup with dices, and then began his second game.

Through the first session of adaptation and training, Tang Xiu’s dice shaking movement clearly had become more skilled and a lot faster. So he was now focusing on listening and distinguishing the sounds produced by the dices’ changes inside the dice cup.

Everyone was struck dumb with surprise for a moment when Tang Xiu put the dice cup down. It was because that Tang Xiu only shook it for only a minute.

“Hey brat, you couldn’t be giving up, right?” Recalling as to how Jia Ruidao took a full 5 minutes to shake his dice cup and roll the dice, and Tang Xiu only took a minute, Zhang Yongjin naturally didn’t think that Tang Xiu’s gambling skill was more powerful than Jia Ruidao. But he thought that Tang Xiu already didn’t want to continue putting an act and stopped.

“Grandmaster Jia’s strength already made him intimidated. If he doesn’t give up, he will be on the point of death, heh.”

“Brat, you finally have self-knowledge eh. Your gambling skill is

much inferior to a master. Even if you shake your dice cup longer, it's useless. You might as well rely on your luck.”

“It's better to finish the game this quick, so we don't have to waste more time.”

When Xue Renfei, Hu Wanjun, and Zhang Yongjin trio saw Tang Xiu's action, they were frozen for a moment, before they then subconsciously taunted him.

In the next moment, everyone's eyes turned round as Zhang Deqin, Zhang Yongjin's faces were flushed red while Xue Renfei, Hu Wanjun, and Jia Ruidao's eyes were full of a disbelieving expressions.

Because when Tang Xiu had opened the dice cup in a flash, the dices' numbers had already been shown in front of everyone.

5, 6, 6, for a total of 17 points. It was a point higher than Jia Ruidao with 16 points before.

“We won! Did we actually win?” Although Long Zhengyu comforted Tang Xiu before, in fact, he already didn't hope too much for Tang Xiu. But he comforted himself because of the long-established etiquette and self-controlling manner he had long been cultivated, as he chose to comfort him and not blame and accuse him.

“Eldest Brother, I knew you could do it. Big Brother, do you

believe me now?” Long Zhenglin’s sentence’s first half was aimed at Tang Xiu, as the other half was pointed at Long Zhengyu. At this time, Long Zhenglin was dancing with a joyful expression, just like a child.

After having confirmed repeatedly, as well as making sure that his eyes didn’t fail him when seeing the dice numbers in front of Tang Xiu, Long Zhengyu finally awakened from his huge shock as he clenched his fist and then grabbed his younger brother with excited tears in his eyes.

It was because the Walled Hill Village project was too important for Long Zhengyu. He had to firmly step on this first step since it directly related to Long Zhengyu’s entire life plan. Therefore, he had been racking his brains for this project for almost 3 years to make it happen.

Had the project suddenly get cut off, Long Zhengyu really didn’t know whether he could face the failure or not. This was why he literally begged for help everywhere, and also the reason he finally chose to believe his younger brother’s words and invited an outsider to help with this problem.

“Your luck is truly good. But I don’t believe you can win the next time.” After the silence for a long time, Zhang Yongjin spoke with a sour expression.

But this time, Zhang Yongjin’s tone was obviously different from his previous emboldened speech. Also, nobody echoed him again, since the others were also still immersed in their astonishment and had yet to awaken from the shock Tang Xiu had given them with

the 17 dice points.

Chapter 44: Gambling Skill's Breakthrough

“Grandmaster Jia, please!” Tang Xiu smiled at Jia Ruidao and made a gesture to invite the fight again.

Tang Xiu was truly grateful of Jia Ruidao.

If it were not for Jia Ruidao deliberately slowing down his speed in shaking the dices a moment ago, as well as exposing a lot of key things, Tang Xiu certainly wouldn't be this fast in mastering the real technique in shaking the dices.

Jia Ruidao threw him a peach and Tang Xiu casted a plum.

The 2 people's eyes locked a brief flash of a moment. Outsiders simply couldn't see that the relationship between the two already had a subtle change.

Jia Ruidao was after all the expert that was invited by Zhang Deqin with a sky-high price to deal with the Long's Dining Hall. So it was natural that he couldn't exchange pleasant and affectionate words with Tang Xiu. Had Jia Ruidao won, everything would be alright. But if it was the reverse, this matter would be an absolute misunderstanding, and people could say that the gamble had been manipulated.

Jia Ruidao nodded his head to Tang Xiu and then picked up the dice cup again as he began the third gambling session between the two of them.

This time, Jia Ruidao put 5 dices into the dice cup.

As the dice cup shook, a trace of brilliant light flashed on Jia Ruidao's eyes as his wrist vibrated with an orderly rhythm.

A burst of clear brushing sounds could be heard as muffled and dull thumping sounds followed, along with a burst of sharp sounds.

5 dices were colliding with each other in the dice cup. One sound was the sound of the dice ramming inside the dice cup in rhythmic order, as the others scattered and flew around. The other 6 or 7 sounds blended together as the sounds unexpectedly composed a rhythmically cheerful and bright sonata.

“Ah! Originally, gambling also could be played like this?” Tang Xiu could feel an intense fighting spirit that was being exuded from Jia Ruidao. His eyes turned bright as he saw Jia Ruidao's eyes also turned burning hot.

Tang Xiu also could feel that Jia Ruidao acting like this was neither because he was not appreciative of his ability nor because he wanted to reverse the current, but it was his decision to go all out.

This was also the situation Tang Xiu was hoping to happen. It was true that Jia Ruidao's fighting spirit certainly sparked and became excited because he met his match in Tang Xiu, after being lonely at the peak for so long. Since Tang Xiu unexpectedly had

challenged his own limits, he finally could feel the true pleasure of gambling, rather than becoming a winner in a gamble through others who modestly accepted defeat.

Jia Ruidao's wrist shook as the dice cup was like a butterfly dancing in the air. N***d eyes were unable to trace anything as everyone could only see a beautiful arc path, whilst a confident and calm smile emerged on Jia Ruidao's face.

Everyone in the room apparently had never thought that Jia Ruidao would be this unique. They were all stunned as the music from the dice cup suddenly reverberated in the room.

The music was giving off a very wonderful feeling. Never even once had anyone ever imagined that the full rhythmic melody sounds from shaking dices would be this wonderful and pleasant to hear.

Almost everyone stared at Jia Ruidao. Along with each and every jitter and movement his wrist made, they involuntarily nodded with an enthralled expression on their faces.

For fear of disturbing Jia Ruidao's rhythm and tempo, nobody even dared to breathe heavily in the room. They only watched with eyes opened wide and holding their breath, as they motionlessly immersed themselves in the wonderful journey brought by Jia Ruidao.

The time passed without anyone noticing, as everyone finally woke up from the dream by dull thumping sounds. They looked up

and saw that Jia Ruidao had stopped his movements as he buckled up and put down the dice cup on the table.

“Grandmaster Jia is really great.”

“Holy Lord! This is real gambling skills. The other Gambling Masters we have seen before were simply are too pale in comparison.”

“The King of Gamble is the King of Gamble. Even shaking dices can give such a pleasant feeling to people.”

The moment when Jia Ruidao’s movement was about to stop, the room was fully filled with praises that came and left in succession. Even Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin gave extravagant appreciation.

At this moment, it was as if winning or losing was already worthless. Everyone had been fully conquered by Jia Ruidao’s gambling technique.

Under praises thrown by everyone, Jia Ruidao slowly opened the dice cup and showed the dice numbers.

“Full points! It turned out to be full points. We have won this game!”

“Grandmaster Jia is truly amazing. Such an amazing technique and was he able to control it to get full points, I’m completely subdued.”

“Unfortunately, Grandmaster Jia won’t accept any apprentices again, else I really must become his disciple.”

When the dices’ numbers were revealed, Zhang Yongjin, Xue Renfei, and Hu Wanjun trio couldn’t help but shout again. They were dancing like children with flushing red complexions due to the excitement.

A charming and enchanting smile was revealed on Zhang Deqin’s face as she looked at Long Zhengyu and Long Zhengyu at the opposite side. A trace of compassion and sympathy flashed over her eyes.

Although Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin appreciated Jia Ruidao’s gambling skills, but when the dices’ points came out, an uncomfortably lost feeling couldn’t help but burst out from their hearts.

It was especially true for Long Zhengyu. The moment the results had come out, his body shivered as he almost staggered and fell down to the floor.

“Brother Tang, you have tried your best. It’s OK. We have lost.” Upon seeing Tang Xiu’s “apprehensive” expression, Long Zhengyu patted his shoulder and softly comforted him.

“Eh?! What’s with your expression? I didn’t even act yet. Do you think the gambling result has been decided?” Tang Xiu shouted loudly as he felt that the mood in the room was somehow a bit wrong.

Under everyone’s doubts and contemptuous eyes, Tang Xiu picked up the dice cup, put five dices into the dice cup, and then begun shake it up.

Upon hearing Tang Xiu’s words, Zhang Yongjin, Hu Wanjun, and Xue Renfei trio was just about to subconsciously ridicule him, but Tang Xiu’s action was too fast and they basically didn’t have time to mouth him since Tang Xiu already began to shake the dices.

Recalling the rules from the gambling house, they had no choice but to hold back their impulse to make noise and looked at Tang Xiu with disdain.

“Boom-thump”

“Boom-thump”

“Boom-thump”

If Jia Ruidao’s dice shaking sounds was a cheerful symphony and a feast for people’s ears, then Tang Xiu’s dice shaking sounds was a heavy drum battle, almost suffocating people.

Upon hearing the sounds from Tang Xiu's dice cup, brilliant rays of lights flashed in Jia Ruidao's eyes.

Previously, a trace of regret sprouted inside Jia Ruidao's heart when he stopped shaking his dices. He was too excited, and then suddenly raised his skill by a level when he shook his dices as he played far better than his usual play. He was afraid that his extraordinary performance would hit Tang Xiu's mentality and make him depressed, causing him to be unable to recover.

But when he saw that Tang Xiu hadn't given up and even casted a completely different vibe from his dice shaking unique skills, apart from feeling happy, Jia Ruidao was even more shocked.

The others were completely dumbfounded, they felt like they were being mesmerized. One by one they stared at Tang Xiu and were clueless about what was going to happen.

It was as if 10,000 years had passed in the blink of an eye.

When Tang Xiu suddenly stopped his movements, everyone in the room shook their head at the same time as if they had agreed to do it together, awakening them from the trance.

Under the gazes of the crowd, Tang Xiu slowly lifted up the dice cup.

“WHAT!!! It's also full points, how could it be possible?!”

“This is not right. I definitely have been mistaken. He was just shaking it a few times. But how could it be possible to get the six numbers this easily?”

“This is only luck, luck ...”

After looking at the dice numbers, disbelief and astonishment covered everyone’s faces, especially the Xue Renfei, Hu Wanjun, with Zhang Yongjin trio that were dumbfounded and shouted.

“Grandmaster Jia, shall we continue?” Tang Xiu looked at Jia Ruidao, who was also in a dazed state, as he spoke and sent an invitation to have a fight again.

“Good, let’s continue!” Jia Ruidao looked at Tang Xiu for quite a long time before he answered with an intense fighting spirit.

The crowd had yet to fully recover and react from the shock Tang Xiu had given them, but Jia Ruidao and Tang Xiu had started the fourth game session.

This time, Jia Ruidao directly placed 6 dices in the dice cup.

“In regards to our dice playing level, the Dice Gamble before seems to have lost its significance. We probably have to have a match to guess the results in darkness. Then, shall we add a little more difficulty to our game?” Before Jia Ruidao began to shake the dices, his eyes suddenly moved as a smile emerged on his face.

Upon hearing Jia Ruidao's words, everyone in the room couldn't help but feel surprised for a moment. With that remark, wasn't this saying that Jia Ruidao had admitted that Tang Xiu's shaking dice skills were at the same level as his?

"Then, how should we play according to Grandmaster Jia's plan?" Having heard that, Tang Xiu's curiosity was also sparked.

"We'll both shake the dices and put it down at the same time. And then we'll guess each other's dice points in the dice cup. The one who guesses right shall be the winner." Jia Ruidao pondered for a short while before he answered with a smiling face.

"I'll follow Grandmaster's arrangements." Tang Xiu complied at once while smiling, and didn't wait for Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin to refute him.

"You brat really don't know the immensity of the heaven and earth. You actually dare to play with Grandmaster Jia to guess the dices point game. Compared to the previous dice gamble before that could rely on luck, there's no way that you could rely on luck with this one." When Zhang Yongjin heard Jia Ruidao's words that seemed to acknowledge Tang Xiu's dice shaking skill, he was unable from feeling sour and envious. And now, as he saw that Tang Xiu accepted to play a new gambling game from Jia Ruidao, he couldn't bear to blurt out immediately.

Everyone knew that Zhang Yongjin was a diehard fan of gambling. He even had begged Jia Ruidao to receive him as a

disciple.

But ever since Jia Ruidao received an apprentice 3 years ago, he was unwilling to accept any disciples again and refused to accept Zhang Yongjin with an excuse that he was too old. Jia Ruidao also didn't lack money, so Zhang Yongjin was unable to cast his 'throwing money' unique ability to solve problems again. Therefore, he could only feel powerless and look away.

Never once did he ever have the thought that Tang Xiu would actually get acknowledged by Jia Ruidao, which naturally made Zhang Yongjin drown in a bad mood.

"I have just realized that the magnificent of Grandmaster Jia's strength is not only limited to gambling, but it also excels in cutting short others. Ah, the Longs really have experienced today." The moment Zhang Yongjin's words just finished, Long Zhenglin harrumphed and coldly snorted.

Long Zhenglin was worried that Tang Xiu's gambling skills wouldn't be as good as Jia Ruidao. And now, since he finally saw that Tang Xiu had a hope of winning in the dice shaking game, he had never thought that Jia Ruidao would change the gambling type, which even Tang Xiu also agreed to.

Long Zhenglin had yet to realize the subtle changes in the relationship between Tang Xiu and Jia Ruidao. In his view, Jia Ruidao was just taunting and goading someone to rashly act. Tang Xiu was still too young, as Jia Ruidao sugar-coated words set traps for Tang Xiu to accept his gambling challenge under impulse. This naturally had made Long Zhenglin anxious.

In fact, Long Zhenglin was not the only one who felt anxious, but it was Long Zhengyu who was more worried instead. However, since Long Zhengyu was a lot calmer in nature and character, he was able to control his emotions better.

On the other side, a few people, led by Zhang Deqin, showed happy expressions.

Although the dice shaking technique Tang Xiu had just shown them made them shocked, they were still confident, since Jia Ruidao also had shown his gambling technique that was even able to s**k their soul.

Zhang Deqin and the others were becoming more excited, especially because Jia Ruidao had proposed to change the gambling game.

Chapter 45: Admitting Defeat

“Are you afraid? If you’re afraid, why don’t you admit defeat directly?” Long Zhenglin’s previous words suddenly attracted Zhang Yongjin’s attention as he quickly aimed his muzzle toward Long Zhenglin, mocking and ridiculing him.

“Ha, it’s simply the same with teasing. Only a few words from Grandmaster Jia and you’re already smug and conceited. You really don’t know about your own class!”

“Old ginger is spicier than young ones, Grandmaster Jia is really amazing.”

Xue Renfei and Hu Wanjun stared at Tang Xiu with a face full with ridiculing expressions.

But Tang Xiu turned a deaf ear to Zhang Yongjin and the others’ ridicules. He and Jia Ruidao looked at each other and then they took a dice cup and swayed it.

Although Tang Xiu had yet to speak, his actions conveyed countless words.

The moment Tang Xiu began to sway and shake the dice cup, Zhang Yongjin, Hu Wanjun and Xue Renfei seemed to have had their necks grabbed. They no longer said anything as their smile was frozen. Their awkward expressions turned more embarrassing.

With their identity, had they bumped into Tang Xiu in the street, they would have been disinclined to even glance at him.

But now, they were the ones who took the initiative to talk to Tang Xiu, while Tang Xiu simply disregarded them. This was basically a slap in their faces, and it made them clench their teeth in a bad mood.

However, they couldn't do anything, since the gambling rules prohibited them. They could only wallow and drown in a sour, bitter, and aggrieved feelings.

Jia Ruidao looked at Tang Xiu with appreciation as he also picked up the dice cup and began to shake it.

The room turned quiet and silent in an instant. Leaving only the sounds of the dices that fiercely collided with each other in the dice cup.

One time, it was just like the sun that brightened up the sky. Another time, it was like a hurricane during stormy weather.

One time, it was calm and tranquil. Another time, it turned chaotic.

Along with the swaying and vibrating wrists of Jia Ruidao and

Tang Xiu, the room was filled with dice sounds. Sometimes the sounds burst in a rush, sometimes slow, and other times light. While some others turned heavy. Everyone's heart also fluctuated, reflected by the tense expression on their faces.

Jia Ruidao and Tang Xiu tightly locked their vision at each other's eyes. They didn't pay attention to the dice cups in their hands.

When everyone in the room was almost suffocated, muffled "bang" sounds sounded twice. Jia Ruidao and Tang Xiu had put down their dice cups on the table.

"You go first, or I go first?" Jia Ruidao looked at Tang Xiu as he smiled and asked.

"Grandmaster Jia first." Tang Xiu sent out a letting posture as he spoke in a respectful tone.

Although the two of them had just fought, but in fact, it was an exchange. The two of them, in the end, had even entered the mutual accompaniment realm.

After having these matches, not only had they deepened their understanding and became familiar with each other, but they also had forged a deep friendship. It was just like the proverbs said that talented people were able to acknowledge each other's talent.

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's words, a deep thoughtful expression

emerged on Jia Ruidao's face.

"4 points... ah no, 6 points." Having been pondering for a long time, Jia Ruidao said a number. But he instantly changed the number when he said the number, while a strange expression emerged on his face.

Seeing clearly Jia Ruidao's reaction with their eyes, Zhang Deqin and the others couldn't help but become stunned and apprehensive.

Zhang Deqin and the others had a near-fanatical worship and trust for Jia Ruidao's gambling ability. They also had witnessed his legendary gambling skills. But never once did they ever expect that Jia Ruidao would really have difficult times like this when gambling.

But now, they could see that Jia Ruidao was hesitating. Moreover, the person Jia Ruidao was facing now, was only an outsider, a green-rookie gambler. This unexpected situation made them agape.

"Grandmaster Jia, are you really sure about it? You don't want to change again?" Tang Xiu did not immediately open the dice cup but asked with a ruminating expression.

"YOU... I won't change!" Jia Ruidao almost choked and fainted the moment he heard Tang Xiu's words. He thought that Tang Xiu was arrogant and rude, causing anger to surge deep inside his heart.

“Grandmaster Jia, I’m sorry, but your guess is wrong.” Tang Xiu really wanted to give Jia Ruidao another chance. But he was afraid that doing so would hurt Jia Ruidao’s ego. Therefore, he opened the dice cup in a natural and relaxed manner.

When Tang Xiu had opened the dice cup, Jia Ruidao’s complexion instantly turned deathly pale as his body trembled for a while.

Because the 6 dices in Tang Xiu’s dice cup were stacked into a pillar. Only the dice on top showed the points, as the rest were covered.

According to the dice game’s rules, in the case that the dices stacked and overlapped, then you only needed to calculate the points on the topmost dice. Thus, in this case, the impressive stacked points for Tang Xiu’s dices were 4, since it was the points of the topmost dice.

In other words, when Jia Ruidao guessed the points, his first guess was correct. But he was wrong on the second guess and insisted on picking the second, wrong guess.

“This old man has gone through ups and downs in every aspect of gambling for many years. Except losing games early in my studying career, never once have I encountered equally matched opponents within these 10 years in the Shuangqing Province. But today, this old man truly has understood the meaning of the saying that the younger generations will eventually surpass the old ones.” After

having looked at Tang Xiu for a very long time, Jia Ruidao then turned away and left.

Only until Jia Ruidao had reached the building's entrance did Zhang Deqin and the others react to what had happened.

“Ah, Grandmaster Jia, please don't go. We have yet to know the gambling's result.”

“Grandmaster Jia, please wait! You've not necessarily lost yet.”

Zhang Deqin and Zhang Yongjin were the first ones to catch up with him and hurriedly spoke to retain him. Hu Wanjun hesitated for a moment before he also chased up. Only Xue Renfei left and stared at Jia Ruidao's dice cup that had yet to be solved, for fear that Tang Xiu and his people would open and peep into it.

In the end, Zhang Deqin and the others still failed to keep Jia Ruidao to stay. In fact, the moment Jia Ruidao turned around and left, Zhang Deqin knew that she couldn't retain him because she was perfectly aware that Jia Ruidao's character was extremely stubborn. Once he decided on something, it's very unlikely that he would change his decision.

Returning back with a depressed feeling to the room, Zhang Deqin and 3 others saw that the dice cup had yet to be opened. They froze for a moment before their eyes turned bright in next moment.

The gambling was not over yet?

Didn't this mean that they hadn't lost yet?

For a moment, the depressed and frustrated expression on Zhang Deqin and the others' faces disappeared as they instantly turned excited.

“Chief Long, do you think the Gambling Master you've invited is able to guess the dice points in the dice cup?” Zhang Deqin eyes fell on Tang Xiu's face for a short moment as she then immediately sneered.

Although Zhang Deqin also had slightly acknowledged Tang Xiu's gambling skills, but she still believed that Tang Xiu's gambling skills were impossible to surpass Jia Ruidao's. Therefore, her words and attitude toward Tang Xiu still had no proper respect.

“3 points.” When Zhang Deqin had just finished speaking, Tang Xiu answered instantly without even thinking.

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's answer, Zhang Deqin couldn't help but feel that some of her life force was sucked away.

With a nodding signal from Zhang Deqin, Xue Renfei slowly uncovered the dice cup, as the dices were then revealed.

It was different with Tang Xiu's dices that were overlapped into one stack. Jiang Ruidao's dices were divided into 3 stacks with each consisting of 2 dices overlapping the other. Only the topmost dices showed points, and all of them were 1 point each.

When everyone in the room saw Jia Ruidao's dice points, they were immediately shocked.

“W-Won! We have won! Big Brother, Do you see now? WE WON!” Long Zhenglin was the first that was unable to hold back his excitement as he cheered out loud, “I said that Eldest Brother can do it! Now, you will really believe me, right?”

Happiness also covered Long Zhengyu's face. But he didn't lose his manners due to excitement. He looked at Zhang Deqin with a calm and composed manner as he then spoke softly, “Chief Zhang, shall we conclude our gambling's results?”

“Chief Long, you can rest assured that since you have won the gambling, the exploitation and development rights for Walled Hilled Village are yours. In addition, as part of the stake, within 10 days, we will transfer 10% of our equity shares for Skylane Commercial District to you.” Zhang Deqin pursed her lips and thought deeply for a moment, before she immediately smiled and acknowledged her defeat frankly.

Although the Zhang Family had strong power in the Shuangqing Province, the Long Family's power was also formidable. Moreover, the potential of the Long Family's younger generation was stronger than theirs. If her family truly insisted on dealing with the Long Family, this was absolutely just like killing 1000 enemies

with 800 casualties. Thus, the gains wouldn't make up for the losses.

It was true that when family enterprises had developed to a certain stage, they would be intertwined and chained with each other in some interest and benefit relations. Thus, it was impossible to have bloody struggles and conflicts with all of their might. This was also the true reason as to why Zhang Deqin didn't fully go all out with every means possible to obtain the Walled Hill Village's development rights. She'd rather choose this frank and open approach to fighting for it through gambling with Long Zhengyu.

But, since it was gambling, she naturally had to put out her stake. The Long Family's stake was to recede and withdraw from the competition in obtaining the Walled Hill Village's development rights. As for the Zhang Family, they had to transfer 10% of their Skylane Commercial District's shares as the stake.

"On behalf of my father, this Long apologizes and thanks Chief Zhang." Long Zhengyu was subconsciously relieved after he heard Zhang Deqin's words.

Although the Zhang Family was the majority shareholder of Skylane Commercial District, however, the Zhang Family only accounted for 35% of the Skylane Commercial District's total shares. The other shares were in the hands of several other shareholders.

The Long Family's plan to build up the Skylane Commercial District was to construct a Culinary District. But since they had

insufficient funds, they invited too many shareholders to the extent that their movements in handling matters were restrained, resulting in a slower completion for the overall layout of the Skylane Commercial District.

Since the Zhang Family now had transferred 10% of the shares, although the Long Family was still unable to fully control the Skylane Commercial District's holding, but the Long Family's power regarding the Skylane Commercial District undoubtedly had increased by a lot. As long as the Long Family released a press conference about this news, they would easily acquire the shares held by the small holders.

“You don't need to be polite. Chief Long should be thanking yourself in finding a good Gambling Master.” Zhang Deqin replied in a perfunctory manner as her eyes then fell on Tang Xiu with a complex expression.

As for the Zhang Yongjin, Hu Wanjun, and Xue Renfei trio, they were still dumbfounded ever since the dice cup had been opened.

In the eyes of this trio, Tang Xiu was only a vulgar and barbaric country bumpkin. Apart from his brute strength, he was worth nothing.

But after having been folded again and again in Tang Xiu's hands, only now did they finally realize that this was not the root of the case.

Especially after having seen Tang Xiu demonstrate his formidable

gambling skills, their minds flickered and were unable to sober up for a very long time.

Originally, this trio had also intended to find someone to investigate Tang Xiu's identity after today, and then slowly clean up Tang Xiu afterward. But when Tang Xiu had succeeded in helping the Long Family win the gamble, they perfectly knew that it would be almost impossible to retaliate against Tang Xiu easily.

Although Long Zhengyu looked amiable and calm on the surface and seemingly had no bad tempers, however, Zhang Yongjin, Hu Wanjun, and Xue Renfei were very well aware that Long Zhengyu previously was the famous first young master of the Shuangqing Province. Who were they to begin with? Not to mention that Long Zhengyu was the kind of person that had a heavy gratitude and valued friendship. Since Tang Xiu had helped Long Zhengyu, it was impossible for Long Zhengyu to only watch and let Tang Xiu get bullied, and become indifferent toward him.

Chapter 46: Building The Heavenly Palace

Zhang Deqin came with her people high-spirited, but they returned back disappointed.

They originally thought that Walled Hill Village was already in their grasps. In fact, after Jia Ruidao was invited to the gamble, nobody thought that Zhang Deqin would lose. While others believed that this was almost impossible to have happened, Zhang Deqin herself had absolute confidence.

With public opinion rallied and full support for her, the Union headed by the Zhang Family had the absolute advantage. As for the Long Family, they were covered by countless of dark clouds that would condense and create raindrops of tears.

But Zhang Deqin had never dreamt that she would lose this gamble, and to even lose in such inexplicable way.

“Little Brother Tang, we’re truly grateful. If it was not for having you this time, the Long Family could’ve fallen. Moreover, we would have really fallen into the abyss.” When Zhang Deqin had left with her people, the calm and composed expression on Long Zhengyu’s face disappeared, replaced by excitement and joy. He grabbed Tang Xiu’s palm and shook powerfully.

After having watched such a thrilling and turbulent gambling, Long Zhengyu was suddenly unable to hold his feelings in as his facial muscles twitched and seemed slightly unwell.

“Big Brother Long, it’s alright. However, I have to tell you the truth. The reason I came to help is but also for a request.” After thinking for a while, Tang Xiu spoke softly.

“Ah, how much is it worth? Do you know how much value the Walled Hill Village’s development rights are? Do you know how much value the 10% share of Skylane Commercial District is? They are worth billions of yuan. Besides, there are things that even money can’t buy...” When Tang Xiu had just finished speaking, Long Zhengyu shook his head and refuted.

Upon hearing Long Zhengyu’s answer, Tang Xiu was dumbfounded.

If it were not because Long Zhengyu had gone through an advance and retreat battle with Zhang Deqin and finally accomplished the task with ease, Tang Xiu suspected that even if he didn’t open his mouth to state his demand, Long Zhengyu would have revealed everything about Walled Hill Village and the Skylane Commercial District’s values. Wasn’t this the same as inciting him to demand an outrageous price for his service?

Fortunately, Tang Xiu had once lived for 10,000 years in the Immortal World. He had long been trained his mind to stay calm and sober. Thus, even if Long Zhengyu boasted more convincingly about Walled Hill Village and the Skylane Commercial District’s values, he didn’t care about it and had no greedy thought.

“Little Brother Tang, I know I offered 1 million yuan before. It

was because I didn't want to give up hope in recruiting a Gambling Master. Because I knew when Jia Ruidao had promised to help Zhang Deqin, even if I offered higher rewards, there would be none to dare to help me. And truthfully, 1 million is not enough for a gambling expert."

"Do you know how much Jia Ruidao asked for payment from Zhang Deqin? It was 5 million yuan! Regardless of winning or losing he would be paid 5 million yuan, and there was no room for bargaining. Zhang Deqin this time just suffered a double loss after losing to the enemy, truly miserable."

"Little Brother Tang, since you won against Jia Ruidao, then your payment certainly must not be lower than his. So, I will also give you a 5 million check. As for the other condition you mentioned, as long as we, the Long Family, are able to meet it, then I will fulfill it."

Tang Xiu didn't even speak, but Long Zhengyu proposed for the reward himself. And that he would fulfill them without even a flinch.

Upon seeing Long Zhengyu's heroic spirit, Tang Xiu's mind wandered as he recalled memories from the Immortal World.

"Big Brother Long, you don't need to be this much. I will accept the 1 million reward, but not more. I just want a piece of land on Walled Hill Village's hilltop." Tang Xiu looked at Long Zhengyu for a moment as he then spoke in a deep tone, "I don't need too much land, 1,000 m² is enough."

“Why would Little Brother Tang want a piece of land on Walled Hill Village?” Long Zhengyu apparently didn’t even dream that Tang Xiu would make such a request. He could not help but become shocked, because he was completely unable to figure out for what Tang Xiu would use that piece of land in Walled Hill Village for, “Little Brother Tang, do you mind telling me what you will use that land for?”

“On the other side of the Walled Hill Village was Yuzhou Ridge, my hometown. I can see it from the Walled Hill Village’s hilltop. If I build a manor there, my Mom would be very happy.” Tang Xiu hesitated for a moment. He didn’t mention about the Spiritual Vein and casually made up the reason.

But Tang Xiu’s words were not really a lie, since he knew that his mother only came to Star City to accompany him to study and in fact, was homesick. Although Yuzhou Ridge was quite far, but because of Walled Hill Village’s high elevation, she could see the whole picture of Yuzhou Ridge on its hilltop. By using a telescope, it could even be seen more clearly.

“Ah, Little Brother Tang originally wanted to build a manor. Give this matter to Long’s Dining Hall. We’ll help you to construct a fine manor there, so you can fulfill your mom’s wish.” After listening to Tang Xiu’s words, Long Zhengyu subconsciously felt relieved.

Because Walled Hill Village was really too important for Long Zhengyu. The issue with the Skylane Commercial District was too deep of a lesson for him. Therefore, for Walled Hill Village’s

development, he planned that it must be fully planned and handled by the Long Family. And with the present Long's Family's capital, they now had the capital to fully complete the overall planning.

If Tang Xiu opened another project in this place and intercrossed with the Long's Dining Hall's corporate planning, then Long Zhengyu definitely would be in an awkward and in dilemma situation. But since Tang Xiu's request didn't intercross, he would try to fulfill it, since he already obtained Walled Hill Village's development rights after all. Long Zhengyu felt eased since Tang Xiu's request didn't intercross with Long's Dining Hall's plan.

Upon hearing Long Zhengyu's words to fulfill his request, Tang Xiu also felt happy.

Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin brought Tang Xiu to visit the Long's Dining Hall. After having a meal, they went to Walled Hill Village.

The Long Brothers then took Tang Xiu along with an architect and headed directly to the Walled Hill Village.

After arriving at the hilltop, Tang Xiu headed straight to the location where he found the Spiritual Vein and told them that this was the place he wanted.

Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin stood on the hilltop as they looked at Yuzhou Ridge's direction. They also could see the Yuzhou Ridge's scenery at a glance and then completely believed Tang

Xiu's reason.

Although the vegetation around the Spiritual Vein was particularly lush, the Long Brothers didn't find any specialness, since Walled Hill Village was originally a primeval forest to begin with. Even though the Spiritual Vein's location on the hilltop was filled with lush vegetation, they were unable to find any particularities.

“Little Brother Tang, I had surveyed this Walled Hill Village for more than 10 times and also passed by this hill for a few times. But I've never found this good place. Now since you've picked this up, why do I feel like this location is the most beautiful spot on this hill?” Long Zhengyu retracted back his sight and looked at Tang Xiu as he faintly joked at him.

When Tang Xiu heard his words, his pupil shrunk before he smiled and replied, “Hadn't people from ancient times said that we can't get each and every best thing in life?”

“Little Brother Tang's words are true. It's just my own pettiness.” Long Zhengyu couldn't help but laugh after he heard Tang Xiu's words. He no longer pressed more and let the architect begin to measure the land and draw the design.

When Long Zhengyu asked what type of courtyard Tang Xiu wanted to build, the Immortal Mansion blessed land in the Immortal World crossed his mind.

Almost unconsciously, Tang Xiu snatched the pencil in the

architect's hands and then painted on the A4 sized paper.

At first, the architect disagreed, since he thought that a high school student would be unable to understand about architectures and also could not draw any good things out.

But when the buildings' outlines were slowly highlighted on the paper, the architect's eyes turned wide. It was because the picture Tang Xiu had painted was even more exquisite than himself by several folds. The lines were gentle and beautiful and seemed not to be drawn out by a pencil, but drawn out with computer drawing tools.

In addition, Tang Xiu's design was even giving off some kind of indescribable feeling to the architect. It simply carried along such an atmosphere of luxury, a trace of elegance and indistinct mystical and spiritual sensation, as if the design was alive.

Long Zhengyu and Long Zhenglin originally thought that Tang Xiu was carefully drawing his own manor plan, so he snatched the design paper from the architect. They also didn't think that Tang Xiu would be able to draw so many decent things.

However, when the Long Brothers saw that several architects seemed to be shocked by Tang Xiu's design, they could not help but also take a look.

The Long Brothers' reaction was also just like the architects' as they were also astonished that even their eyes suddenly protruded.

“Eldest Brother, you’re really my Eldest Brother. Not only is your gambling skills amazing, your painting skills is also this good. Man...do you really want to make others’ lives feel sad?” Long Zhenglin let out a miserable roar as his eyes expressed his amazement and worship toward Tang Xiu.

“This place is really a place where people should live. But why do I feel like that it’s like a Heavenly Palace? The atmosphere, elegance, ethereal sensation, spiritual facilities, as if it’s integrated with Walled Hill Village, this is simply blended perfectly with the hill.” After having carefully looked for a long time, Long Zhengyu couldn’t help but exclaim in astonishment.

“Brother Tang, I have a presumptuous request. I don’t know whether you can agree or not?” Having thought for a while, Long Zhengyu looked at Tang Xiu with some anticipation as he asked in an anxious tone.

“Brother Long, my College Entrance Test is drawing near, so I don’t have extra time to do other things.” Although Long Zhengyu had yet to speak his words, Tang Xiu could fully guess his intention as he answered with a smile and shook his head.

“Ah, I know that Brother Tang will refuse me.” Long Zhengyu couldn’t help but sigh when he heard it, although he then immediately relaxed and spoke, “Anyways, the whole development for Walled Hill Village will take at least 10 years. Drawing the design itself would take a year. However, with Brother Tang’s ability, the time wasted would be lessened.

Long Zhengyu wasn’t angry because of Tang Xiu’s rejection, but

rather understood Tang Xiu's choice.

Tang Xiu originally just wanted the land around the Spiritual Vein as the center. But the Blessed Land Immortal Mansion he designed was extremely beautiful. So it made Long Zhengyu excited, and he wanted the design to be completed for the entire Walled Hill's Village hilltop. Thus, the 1000 meters squared land Tang Xiu wanted, turned into 5000 meters squared.

Chapter 47: Luxurious Villa

Long Zhengyu eventually gave Tang Xiu a bank card with 1 million yuan in cash. He originally wanted to give 5 million to Tang Xiu, but Tang Xiu refused to accept more money from Long Zhengyu, since he wanted the spot with Spiritual Vein on Walled Hill Village.

However, Long Zhengyu repeatedly guaranteed that he would build Tang Xiu's "Heavenly Palace". He also gave his words that the place would become the most beautiful scenery and landmark of Walled Hill Village.

Tang Xiu hesitated before he finally agreed to Long Zhengyu's offer.

On one hand, Tang Xiu really cherished the memory of the Immortal Mansion's blessed land in the Immortal World, as he wished and wanted to reconstruct it here. On the other hand, Long Zhengyu was really attracted to the whole "Heavenly Palace" Tang Xiu had drawn, so he blurted out to develop the entire Walled Hill Village according to its design and make the Heavenly Palace as its core.

Since it also benefitted the both of them, Tang Xiu naturally didn't refuse.

After leaving the hill, Tang Xiu went to a real estate agent.

Tang Xiu wanted to temper his body. This naturally neither

could be done in his home nor the barren hill in the countryside. Although Walled Hill Village was a good choice, but it was very likely that another fierce beast was there. Tang Xiu didn't want to be sneak-attacked by fierce beasts during closed-door practice.

Therefore, he was looking for a single, quiet, and remote house with a perfect security system to practice and quench his body.

When Tang Xiu spoke about the requirements for the house, the real estate agent looked at him with a strange expression.

“Mr. Tang, a single, quiet, remote house is easy to find. But since you also want a house with a high-security system, this is a bit hard to find. Only in the kinds of a luxury high-end district or luxury villa area will you find the house that has a high-security system. You'll never find it in an ordinary residential district.”

“Since you have mentioned these three conditions, there seems to have only one such district in the whole Star City. But the district's rental fee is particularly high and also very strict with identity checking...” The real estate agent looked at Tang Xiu's clothes and spoke with a hesitating expression.

“What's the meaning of this strict control of identity?” Upon seeing the real estate agent's awkward expression, Tang Xiu spoke in an amazed tone.

“Because the people who live in that district are a wealthy and respectable people. The district's owner seems to have formed a convention, that is, ordinary people can't live there. Outsiders

could only live there if there is a guarantor from the house's owner." The intermediary agent hesitated first before softly explained.

Tang Xiu was completely silent after he heard the broker's explanation.

Tang Xiu did not continue to talk with the broker, and instead took his phone out and directly dialed Long Zhenglin's number.

"Eldest Brother, we've just separated for a short while, but you already want me. I knew that Eldest Brother really loves me, hahaha!" Long Zhenglin was still in buoyant mood after having obtained Walled Hill Village as he laughed and teased.

Hearing his answer sent chills through Tang Xiu as he snappily cursed at him. Then, he asked Long Zhenglin whether he knew about the South Gate Town's owner.

"Do you want to rent a house in the South Gate Town? Hey, why didn't you say so earlier? You don't know that the South Gate Town is developed by our family?" After listening to Tang Xiu's question, Long Zhenglin replied in a surprised tone.

The next moment, the person speaking on the phone changed, "Brother Tang, the houses at South Gate Town have long been sold out. It's basically not for renting purposes, but long ago my friend had bought a house in South Gate Town. But when he had finished decorating the house, he found that the house was close to a hill and had poor natural lighting, so he hasn't moved in yet. If you

want, I could give it to you directly.”

“Either you can sell it to me according to the market price, or I find another place, I can only choose between the two.” Upon hearing that Long Zhengyu intended to give it to him, Tang Xiu got a headache and didn’t hesitate to refuse.

“You... ah, Brother Tang. It’s not that I... ah. You really have a serious nature. You will have no friends later. That house is big, but the natural lighting is too bad. It simply couldn’t be sold at any price. Otherwise, my friend would have long sold it and wouldn’t have been vacant for so many years. Well, if you really want to buy it, 1 million yuan is fine. I’ll immediately give the key to you.”

Long Zhengyu simply didn’t give the opportunity for Tang Xiu to speak and directly finalized his decision on the phone.

When Tang Xiu hung up the phone and let out a wry smile, he found the broker looked at his face with a stagnated expression. Tang Xiu then understood the reason, because the broker also heard the content of his conversation Long Zhengyu.

“Mr. Tang, I’m really sorry. I didn’t know you were Chief Long’s friend. I was really rude a moment ago.” The broker embarrassedly smiled toward Tang Xiu and hurriedly apologized.

“Is Chief Long very famous in the Star City?” Tang Xiu was puzzled and asked.

“Mr. Tang, 90% of Star City’s girls are estimated to have known about Chief Long. Could you even tell that he’s not famous?” Tang Rong said with a face flushed red.

Upon hearing it, Tang Xiu was quite stunned. Although Long Zhengyu was a bit handsome, but it was not to a degree that it would shake the world. Besides, Long Zhengyu was a businessman, not a star. How could he possible have such fame in Star City?

But Tang Xiu did not ask further, but rather turned away from the real estate agency and headed to the appointed meeting place with Long Zhengyu.

A few minutes later, Long Zhenglin personally sent the key and ID card over. When Tang Xiu handed his bankcard, Long Zhenglin refused to accept it.

“Eldest Brother, without the key you cannot enter the house in the South Gate Town. And I suggest that you use this 1 million for yourself to dress up. If you wear this kind of dress to the South Gate Town, I’m absolutely sure the security guards will stop you outside.” Long Zhenglin let out a ruminating smiling expression before he left.

Tang Xiu only smiled and didn’t put Long Zhenglin’s words in his heart

The instant Long Zhenglin was turning around, Tang Xiu slipped the 1 million bankcard into his clothes pocket in a flash.

Half an hour later, Tang Xiu arrived at the South Gate Town's entrance.

When Tang Xiu was just about to arrive at the complex's entrance, more than a dozen security guards swarmed and rushed over him. Upon seeing overbearing actions from those security guards, Tang Xiu was scared that he almost ran away, while an extreme awkward expression covered his face.

Tang Xiu was a little regretting his decision for not listening to Long Zhenglin's words to dress himself up.

"Mr. Tang, good afternoon. I'm Long Xueyao, the South Gate Town's real estate manager. I'm very pleased to serve you. Mr. Long asked me to take you to your villa. Please come with me." The leader was a tall girl. She bowed deeply toward Tang Xiu as she greeted him with a bright voice and sweet smile.

Upon hear Long Xueyao's words, Tang Xiu, who was ready to give an explanation, couldn't help but be stunned. But he quickly figured out that he was played by the Long Brothers.

The Long brothers clearly had figured out his character. And knowing that he was disinclined to spend time and money to dress himself up, they deliberately came up with such a play to scare him.

While secretly cursing in his heart, a charming smile emerged on Tang Xiu's face. He politely said a thank you and then went with Long Xueyao with the security guards behind them.

After he entered the South Gate Town complex, Tang Xiu felt like he was entering another world.

The complex had a still, deep water pond inside with hundreds of beautiful flowers. It was completely different from the noisy and bustling situation outside the complex.

For each 3 pavilions inside the complex, a five-step-wide security post was erected, with each of them occupied by an armed security guard that guarded nearby, as he saw that they greeted every pedestrian in the complex with a standard military salute.

If it for were not confirming himself that he was entering a luxurious villa complex, Tang Xiu almost suspected that he had entered an army compound.

After having passed through lawns with flowers and grasses one after another, Long Xueyao brought Tang Xiu to the deepest part of the complex as he saw a single built villa that was like “pasted” on the cliff.

The instant Tang Xiu saw the villa, he knew that he was deceived.

Although the villa’s back was against the hill, but the front was faced toward the sun, and the natural lighting was obviously very good. Moreover, lines of trees could be seen surrounding the villa above, while the design and style were simply unmatched compared to the other villas in the complex.

“Mr. Tang, this is my business card. If you need anything, you can call me at any time. I hope that you enjoy living in this complex. For your logistic needs, it would be our responsibility.” After clearly seeing the reaction from Tang Xiu, Long Xueyao promptly took out her business card, and then quietly led the group of security to leave.

At this time, Tang Xiu’s mind had been completely locked on the villa above. After he bid farewell to Long Xueyao, he couldn’t wait to hurriedly enter the villa.

After entering the villa, Tang Xiu knew that he had been deceived.

It was a 3-storied villa. Because they were built by the hill, therefore, each floor had different beautiful scenery to see. An alley paved with cobblestones directed the path to the door as a row of stone benches were on its both sides. Different shapes of flowers and bonsais were arranged on the stone benches for the feast of people’s eyes.

The door to the villa’s hall was high and stylish, with round arched windows and corners built from stone, looking completely elegant. The continually arched door and winding pathway gave off an elegant, exquisite, and cozy feeling.

The villa’s decoration inherited the essence of the traditional Chinese architecture as it maintained the elegance of traditional architectural design and its simplicity as it blended into a splendid

unique artistic style. Also, it was designed to be perfectly blended with nature according to Confucianism, incorporating and releasing the Daoism and Buddhism teaching, which hid the idea of gracefulness in an obscure and elegant style.

Classical and spacious natures were blended as natural building materials and vines above it set each other nicely side by side, giving off the feeling that the classics also didn't fall behind in fashion.

Almost at first glance, Tang Xiu deeply liked this villa.

“Apart from the villa value itself, it is estimated that this villa's decoration would cost 1 million. I owe them a big favor.” When Tang Xiu took out his phone out and called Long Zhengyu to ask for the real price of the villa, he found that Long Zhengyu actually had shut it down. Tang Xiu knew that Long Zhengyu was avoiding him, making it impossible for him to give this villa back.

“It seems like that I could only slowly pay this favor back.” Tang Xiu originally couldn't bear to return this villa back. But upon seeing Long Zhengyu shut his phone down, his heart was no longer tangled.

Had it been others that suddenly got this huge amount of wealth, they would certainly be clueless of what to do and be in awe. But Tang Xiu' past life was almost that of the richest man in the Immortal World. Moreover, he also had the confidence to repay this favor to the Long Family, so Tang Xiu quickly felt indifferent to accepting the fact that Long Zhengyu had gifted him the villa.

Chapter 48: Concocting Body Refining Liquid Succeeded

“Big Brother, take your bankcard back!” At Longwan Resort, when Long Zhenglin accidentally found and pulled out a bankcard from his pocket, he was momentarily dumbfounded before he gave the bankcard back to Long Zhengyu with a bitter face.

“It’s alright, since Brother Tang doesn’t want to take us cheaply, we will accept this.” Long Zhengyu looked at his bankcard that was sent to himself as he showed a funny smile.

Because the villa that had been given from Long Zhengyu to Tang Xiu, and wasn’t bought by his friend, but rather he left it as his own spare. It was not because the villa couldn’t be sold, but it was out of the South Gate Town’s landscape blueprint and was the grandest type of all, even the richest couldn’t buy it.

The reason for Long Zhengyu intentionally saying that it was just another elegant villa that way, was because he was afraid that Tang Xiu would know the villa’s real value and then be unwilling to receive his gift.

“Zhengyu, Zhenglin, is Tang Xiu really that good?” A middle-aged man put down the newspaper in his hands as he asked with a doubting expression.

Long Hanwen had always felt that his two sons were geniuses. He was also extremely fond and favored his own 2 sons, and simply didn’t believe that there would be other youngsters that were

better than his children.

But after Long Hanwen came home today, the conversation between his two sons was bombed as the topic centered on an unfamiliar young man, which made Long Hanwen extremely puzzled.

Even if Long Hanwen knew that Tang Xiu was the one who won the gamble against Jia Ruidao, he also only thought that his two sons resorted to tricks and dishonest means and made Jia Ruidao deliberately lose to Tang Xiu, rather than that Tang Xiu really winning against Jia Ruidao through his own gambling skills.

In fact, if one did not directly witness the gambling scene between Tang Xiu and Jia Ruidao, there was basically none that dared to believe that someone in the Shuangqing Province was able to crush Jia Ruidao in gambling.

“Big Brother, in father’s eyes, it seems that apart from us, the others are all idiots and morons. We really don’t have to work hard, huh.” Upon hearing his father’s words and seeing his expression, Long Zhenglin couldn’t help but let out a sorrowful speech and then went upstairs directly.

“Dad, I admit that your two sons are very good. But you have to know that there will be people outside that are more talented than us. This time, if there was no help from Tang Xiu, your sons might have lost to Zhang Deqin and the others.” Long Zhengyu spoke a few words before he also went to his bedroom.

Long Hanwen looked at the back of his two sons when they left, as a deep pondering expression was drawn on his face.

At South Gate Town, Tang Xiu had spent half an hour to observe his villa up and down again, and then circled around his villa. When he found that his villa was far away from the other villas' cluster and almost isolated, he was feeling more satisfied with this villa given by Long Zhengyu.

After having familiarized himself with the villa and its surroundings, Tang Xiu then went to the rented freezer compartment as he took out some of the python's blood's essence and part of the internal organs and meat from the python. He also took the medicinal herbs and minerals he picked up from Walled Hill Village.

The Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis consisted of 3 big stages, one of which was the Stars Tyrannical Body that was divided into—Vitality Tempering, Skin Strengthening, Flesh Strengthening, Bone Transformation, Meridian Transformation, Marrow Transformation, Viscera Transformation, Blood and Qi Circulation, and Nine Core Phase Forming.

Tang Xiu was now still at the Vitality Tempering phase. Since the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis had to temper the body first, that meant he needed to concoct Body Refining medicament that was comprised of a 1st Rank Monster Beast's blood's essence, internal organs, and flesh. The medicament also needed Star Spirit Grass, Poisonous Demon Cane, Green Jade Stone Essence, and other materials.

In particular, the fresher the Monster Beast's blood's essence, internal organs, and flesh, the better the medication's efficacy. This was why Tang Xiu was impatient to seek for a place to close up and cultivate after he killed the python, rather than wait for 2 months after the College Entrance Test and slowly temper his body again.

In an orderly procedure, the Star Spirit Grass and the Poisonous Demon Cane also must be cleaned and grounded along with the Green Jade Stone Essence into powder. Then, Tang Xiu also had to wash the python's internal organs and flesh several times before carefully putting these ingredients into certain proportions.

While doing that, Tang Xiu also had to boil the already long frozen python's blood essence in the cauldron.

Tang Xiu tightly stared at the boiled python's blood essence as he put the Star Spirit Grass and Green Jade Stone Essence powder into it.

Along with the Star Spirit Grass and Green Jade Stone Essence powder being blended, the previously red-colored blood quickly changed, as the stench that filled the air gradually faded. The blood's color then quickly turned into a deep blue color as white specks could be faintly seen amongst the mixture, as if the vast blue sky was being painted with countless stars.

When the stench in the air had completely disappeared, Tang Xiu put in the python's internal organs and meat into the mixture as he also took out the Poisonous Demon Cane he had prepared.

Although the Poisonous Demon Cane was named as a cane, but the fact was that it was extremely hard, just like an iron stick.

The moment after he took the Poisonous Demon Cane out, Tang Xiu's face turned extremely solemn, because he knew that the stirring speed would directly affect the success or failure in concocting this Body Refining Liquid.

Concocting Body Refining Liquid also required an extremely high degree of control and concentration. The slightest carelessness would create an accident and/or explosion.

Although Tang Xiu had prepared several materials for the Body Refining Liquid, and the villa's location was also quite isolated, so he didn't have to worry that an explosion would attract onlookers... But Tang Xiu didn't want to experience the feeling of failure.

While Tang Xiu was still stirring the mixture, the hard internal organs and lumped meat gradually softened as it turned into juice and then blended into the liquid. The most bizarre sight was that the Poisonous Demon Cane in Tang Xiu's hand was as if it was being gnawed at since it became a little thinner than before.

"If there was an alchemist assistant, I wouldn't have to do such a trifling and boring thing like this." When Tang Xiu was still stirring, a wish crossed his mind.

Because this was his first time concocting Body Refining Liquid,

Tang Xiu was quite nervous.

Slowly, after Tang Xi got used to it, his mind began to loosen as he became absent-minded.

In an almost unconscious state, all kinds of pictures when he was in the Immortal World emerged in Tang Xiu's mind. For a moment in this dreamland, he couldn't even tell whether he was in the present modern era or when he was living 10,000 years ago in the Immortal World.

While Tang Xiu was still drowned in his imagination, a yellow bubble suddenly gushed out from the boiler as an unbearable stench suddenly filled the air in the house.

“Holy crap, it's going to explode!” Tang Xiu shouted loudly when he saw that the boiler suddenly turned into a big bubble. He rushed outside the villa without hesitation.

The split moment when Tang Xiu had just left the villa's door, a loud explosion sounded. All the previous efforts Tang Xiu had made were destroyed.

After having spent less than half an hour to clean up the residues, Tang Xiu began to start the second concocting process again.

Having learned from the first lesson, Tang Xiu didn't dare to have any stray thoughts again as he completed every step in a meticulous manner.

Only when the Poisonous Demon Cane in Tang Xiu's hands became smaller did Tang Xiu's thought strayed again. The boiler then exploded without exception.

"No, the problem is not because of me. It should be because of this Poisonous Demon Cane!" In the first attempt, Tang Xiu felt that he wasn't careful. But for the second attempt, Tang Xiu's mind was only distracted for a moment as to figure out where the problem was.

Tang Xiu took out a knife and scraped a layer of powder on the tip of Poisonous Demon Cane.

At the next moment, mixed and various images from the Immortal World uncontrollably gushed out and filled Tang Xiu's mind.

"No wonder The Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis said that concocting the Body Refining Liquid is very difficult, and the success rate is very low. It turns out that it's not because it's difficult to control one's feelings in the concocting process, but rather that the hallucinatory effect caused by the Poisonous Demon Cane is really hard to guard against."

When Tang Xiu wanted to start the third concocting attempt, he saw the remaining materials on the floor, causing him to become cautious.

After he hypothesized the concocting process in his mind, Tang

Xiu analyzed each stage that the boiler had the possibility to explode at.

In the next moment, Tang Xiu scraped a layer of powder down from the Poisonous Demon Cane again and directly applied it onto his own skin.

There was no accident at first. Then, Tang Xiu's mind got distracted again.

“Fortunately, I promptly thought about this possibility. Otherwise, it would have wasted more materials. This Poisonous Demon Cane is really too powerful. It can permeate into the human skin's pores and affect people's thoughts.” A trace of fear was revealed from Tang Xiu's complexion as he looked at the iron stick in his hand.

Although Tang Xiu could be said to have reached the peak in alchemy and pills' concocting in his past incarnation, but he didn't dare to boast that he knew everything about the raw materials for medicines. This Poisonous Demon Cane was precisely one of the herbs he hadn't known of yet. He could only seek it out through the aid from looking at its picture that was recorded on the prescription above the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis's record.

The respective materials and ingredients needed to concoct the Body Refining Liquid were written above the Breathing Practice line in the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis's record. However, there was no information about each material's properties on it.

It was quite fortunate that Tang Xiu was very familiar with most of the materials. The one that he had yet to know was only the Poisonous Demon Cane.

Had it been others that were blindly concocting the Body Refining Liquid, it could be said that that person would possibly fail hundreds of times. It was because any slightest error would lead to failure in concocting the Body Refining Liquid.

Even if it were Tang Xiu, he was also unable to say that he would have a 100% rate of successfully concocting the Body Refining Liquid. He was only a bit familiar with the Poisonous Demon Cane's property. Tang Xiu believed that if he were to completely understand the Poisonous Demon Cane's properties, he could guarantee that he would be successful in concocting the Body Refining Liquid.

In the next few hours, Tang Xiu did not rush to concoct the Body Refining Liquid and instead repeatedly researched the Poisonous Demon Cane diligently. Only after another hour did Tang Xiu believe that he had completely grasped the Poisonous Demon Cane's nature and began to concoct the medicinal liquid again.

Boiling the bloods' essence...

Putting in Star Spirit Grass and Green Jade Ore Essence powder...

Putting in internal organs and flesh...

Stirring...

Holding one's breath...

Closing the pores...

Shielding off the five senses...

Doing all the steps in thorough and orderly procedures...

Time passed by unknowingly.

Tang Xiu's mind and heart completely hung in the air, undisturbed and fiercely thumping.

Suddenly, a crackling sound sounded from the Poisonous Demon Vine in his hand, causing his heart to slow down by half a beat. In an almost subconscious state, Tang Xiu opened his eyes.

The medicinal liquid in the boiler had turned into a golden color as it also exuded an exotic and refreshing fragrance.

“Have I succeeded?” While looking sluggishly at the medicine liquid for a moment, he found that the fear for it to explode didn't happen. The medicinal liquid color was exactly the same with the record, causing Tang Xiu's eyes to burn with a boiling and hot

light.

Tang Xiu hadn't noticed that his clothes had been completely drenched in sweat at this moment, as beads of sweat had also permeated on his forehead. He was just like someone that had been drowned and just got fished out from the water.

Chapter 49: Vitality Tempering Peak Stage

In the split moment after successfully concocting the Body Refining Liquid, Tang Xiu woke up. He took out the already prepared modulated plaster made from the Green Jade Stone Essence and applied it onto his body.

Tang Xiu carefully spread out the plaster on his body carefully as not to miss any part of his body. He especially painted layer after layer on some essential spots on his lower body.

10 minutes later, Tang Xiu was just like a warrior clad in “gypsum armor”. His whole body, from top to bottom, was completely covered by plaster cast made from Green Jade Stone Essence and did not miss a spot.

At the same time, a cooling and cold sensation spread throughout his body. The comfortable feeling even almost made Tang Xiu release a moan.

However, when he looked at the boiling Body Refining Liquid, a trace of hesitation and fear flashed through Tang Xiu’s eyes.

“My body is too feeble. I don’t know whether I can withstand the fierce baptism of this Body Refining Liquid!”

“Fortunately, after my soul had been integrated, I was accidentally able to cultivate the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis and enhance my body a lot. Otherwise, my life could have been finished directly.”

“It seems that I drank too much python blood essence 2 nights ago. The more the medicine attracted, the stronger the efficacy...”

The moment before he entered the boiler, countless thoughts flashed inside Tang Xiu’s mind.

But Tang Xiu realized that he couldn’t avoid this tribulation. He closed his eyes, clenched his teeth and resolutely entered the boiler.

One foot...

The other foot...

Half of his body....

Whole body...

When Tang Xiu had submerged in the liquid medicine, he heard a loud bang. It was as if the python’s blood essence inside his body suddenly ignited, as a raging fire sprayed out from his mouth.

Tang Xiu opened his mouth for a while and swallowed the gold-colored Body Refining Liquid into his stomach.

“I must not aaaaaah... uuuuh...”

A sharp and acute pain was transmitted from his mouth and cavity as Tang Xiu subconsciously wanted to jump out from the boiler.

In the next moment, Tang Xiu was stunned because the Green Jade Stone Essence plaster unexpectedly solidified. Just when he wanted to move, he was confined by the gypsum and was unable to even make any movements or jump out from the boiler.

After calming himself down, Tang Xiu was secretly glad that he did not jump out of the boiler.

Had Tang Xiu not been careful and jumped out from the boiler a moment ago, he would've needed to concoct the Body Refining Liquid again. And this was not an easy task.

The most essential thing was that the materials and ingredients to concoct the Body Refining Liquid had basically been exhausted. Tang Xiu didn't have any means to quickly find all the materials and ingredients for the Body Refining Liquid. Therefore, had he jumped out of the boiler, he didn't know how long he had to delay to completely pass the vitality and body tempering stage.

With the lesson from almost jumping out from the boiler, Tang Xiu began to increase his vigilance as he quietly breathed and didn't dare to have distracting thoughts again.

Even though the expression on Tang Xiu's complexion was tranquil at the moment, but his facial muscles began to twist as a

painful roar was let out from his throat.

Pain...

Very painful...

Extremely painful...

Although his body was protected by the Green Jade Stone Essence gypsum, Tang Xiu still felt that his bones were being stabbed and scrapped by countless knives. The pain was extremely painful, to the point that he even wished that he could die. Words were unable to describe this extreme pain.

And the pain was not just from the surface of his body. Because the python's blood essence was inside Tang Xiu's body, he felt like there was a cluster of raging flames burning inside his body, scorching all of his internal organs and making his blood boil.

Tang Xiu also thought of shifting his attention, but the pain inside and outside his body was just like an unending continuous tidal wave, rendering him unable to even shift the slightest attention anywhere else, let alone practice the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis in this kind of state.

Fortunately, Tang Xiu long had the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis and had a kind of approach in practicing it. He had spent his time in reciting and studying almost crazily the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis in the Immortal World for many years, to the

extent that it became his body's instinct. He didn't even need to intentionally control his body to practice this cultivation method.

It was just like the God Race and Demon Race that were able to cultivate their perfect particular abilities at the same time. The Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis was not only a cultivation method to cultivate one's Divine Sense, but also an ancient and powerful body refining cultivation method.

The Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, by means of limbs and body movements, would temper and stimulate the body.

These movements, including kneading, pinching, folding, bending, knocking, twisting, and other movements would temper and stimulate every large and small part of the body, ultimately forging a body like that of the Demon Race's body.

It was also imperative that apart from the limbs and body movements, practicing this cultivation method also needed respective corresponding medicaments.

Tang Xiu was now a little happy since he didn't neglect to temper his body. Therefore, he had been accustomed to the pain when he tempered his body beforehand. Otherwise, he could have drowned in this kind of unexpected painful suffering and fainted directly in the boiler.

After some time had passed, sweat streamed out from Tang Xiu's body as his spirit and mind also became muddled.

The Green Jade Stone Essence gypsum covering Tang Xiu's body began to melt bit by bit as it then fell off. His skin, under the baptism of the boiled medicine liquid, turned scarlet, causing him to look like a cooked shrimp.

A violent and overbearing energy was rampaging inside Tang Xiu's body as his internal organs and tendons were nearly exhausted and damaged. However, at the same time, a strange energy wrapped those damaged tendons and internal organs as it was quickly repairing, enlarging, and strengthening them.

In the middle of the wanton destruction, construction, and reinforcing, music composed from the hoarse and anguished howls were uncontrollably exuded from Tang Xiu's throat.

Suddenly, without even preparing his mental force, Tang Xiu had entered into a cultivation state as the extreme twisting muscles on his face gradually calmed down.

Tang Xiu hadn't even noticed that, when he entered cultivation state, the moon this night was at its brightest, as he was sitting in the courtyard bathing under the moonlight.

The moon shone, bright and dazzling, as the stars filled the vast sky like birdsongs and fragrant flowers accompanying the fluttering cheerful music.

Suddenly, from hundreds of millions of miles away at the end of the dome of the sky, the countless stars transformed into specks of starlight like blooming fireworks. It rained down from the sky

above the South Gate Town as it completely enveloped it.

Since the South Gate Town's location was far away from the city, coupled with the scene occurring late in the night, many people hadn't realized this magnificent and bizarre phenomenon.

Tang Xiu's body was just like a huge magnet as it continued to attract the starlight from the sky to enter his body.

Tang Xiu's practice time today was particularly long as he absorbed an unprecedented large amount of starlight into his body. It was as if it was caused by the body refining medicinal liquid.

Along with the increase in starlight absorption, the star energy inside Tang Xiu's body also slowly increased.

Five spheres...

Six spheres...

Seven spheres...

When Tang Xiu suddenly opened his eyes, he found that the first light thread of the dawn from the horizon had already fallen into his courtyard. At the same time, an extremely invigorating feeling spread throughout his body as he was unable to control his voice

and moaned.

Tang Xiu looked down and saw that the body refining medicinal liquid in the boiler had long turned transparent. It was as if it was just like a pot of boiled water with some black residues at the bottom of the pot.

Tang Xiu stretched out his arm a bit as he heard a burst of crackling sounds. At the same time, he also felt that his body was extremely comfortable.

Tang Xiu then jumped out from the pot in the next moment.

Crackling and rattling sounds resounded as Tang Xiu jumped out from the pot. 2 big footprints had been carved in the large iron pot that had been especially bought by Tang Xiu from the food market last night. At the same time, Tang Xiu also saw that the blue stone under his feet also had 2 cracks.

“Could it be that my height grew?” Tang Xiu suddenly felt for the first time that his angle and field of vision seemed to be unusually different from before. He walked toward the door for a bit and realized that his height really had increased by quite a bit.

Tang Xiu’s height previously was only 1,67 meters. But after he had soaked himself in the Body Refining Liquid, his height grew by nearly 10 cm overnight.

In fact, the biggest change Tang Xiu had was not his height, but

his strength.

Tang Xiu was quite astonished when he found that his strength had an explosive growth. It was nearly 10 folds stronger than previously.

Tang Xiu looked around as he saw a giant stone teapot decoration in the courtyard. There was a line carved on the stone teapot “worthless things will become extremely valuable in time of need”. Tang Xiu smiled as he stretched out his hands to hold the teapot’s body and easily lifted it up.

This giant stone teapot was 500 kg in weight. Tang Xiu estimated that his strength had at least reached 1500 kg, and that was only the strength of his arms.

Apart from the increase in his height and arm’s strength, Tang Xiu’s Spiritual Sense also had been enhanced sharply.

Tang Xiu’s Spiritual Sense could only cover a few meters scope around him before. He also had to completely concentrate to be able to achieve it. But now, his Spiritual Sense was able to completely envelop nearly 100m in radius, and Tang Xiu also didn’t need to concentrate beforehand.

“9 stars. I actually have 9-star spheres inside my body right now. 9 in the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis is the peak. That means that I have reached the peak of the Vitality Tempering stage. So the next stage would be Skin Strengthening stage?” When Tang Xiu observed his body with his Spiritual Sense, he found that the

Star Spheres inside his body had increased to 9 spheres from the previous 4 spheres. Therefore, he couldn't help but exclaim out loud.

Although he had long known that cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, which was a peerless secret cultivation method from the God Race and Demon Race, would enhance strength very fast, but when Tang Xiu really felt the effect of this cultivation method, he was quite scared.

“At present, I only have brute force. I don't know for how much my defensive power has been enhanced by. Only when I complete the Skin Strengthening will I have the invulnerability and will be barely able to fully protect myself.” Tang Xiu quickly awakened from his surprised condition due to his strength promotion.

His state of mind had returned to normal. But Tang Xiu was stunned when he prepared to put on his clothes.

Because not only was Tang Xiu's height had increased, but his body was also bigger and became sturdier. He couldn't wear his previous clothes.

“Ah, I have no choice but to buy new clothes.” When Tang Xiu looked at his short old clothes that didn't suit him anymore, he had no choice but to take out a phone from his old clothes to ask for help.

Just when Tang Xiu saw a list of dense missed calls from his phone's screen, a look of puzzlement expression emerged on his

face.

Chapter 50: Jia Ruidao Asks For Help

Tang Xiu had only just bought this phone with the money he won after he played slot machines at the Health and Prosper Club. Thus, only an extremely few amount of people knew Tang Xiu's phone number.

Apart from Yuan Chuling, Banshou, Dingzi and his gang, and Long Zhenglin only knew Tang Xiu's number from Yuan Chuling. These people's number also had been stored in his phonebook.

But besides the call from Yuan Chuling, there were also 2 other unfamiliar phone numbers. These 2 phone numbers unexpectedly also had called Tang Xiu 17 times.

One number called Tang Xiu 3 times while the other one had called for 14 times. Tang Xiu also thought that these 2 people were unlikely to have made a wrong call.

"It's only been a day, how could there be 60 phone calls to find me? What happened?" Tang Xiu's heart sank, as he prepared to dial Yuan Chuling's number.

Seeing the missed calls, Yuan Chuling was the one who called him the most times. He had called Tang Xiu 50 times.

But when Tang Xiu had yet to dial Yuan Chuling's number, his cell phone already rang and the caller ID was Yuan Chuling. He couldn't help but smile and quickly press the answer button.

“Eldest Brother, you finally are willing to answer the phone. Teacher Han almost drove me crazy. When you left school that day, she also went out to chase you...”

After the phone was connected, Yuan Chuling impatiently spoke and didn't wait for Tang Xiu to speak.

But Tang Xiu felt that something was a bit wrong. He obviously only left school for a day. But from Yuan Chuling's words, why would it seem that he had left school for a long time?

With a puzzled expression, Tang Xiu glanced at the time on the phone. His eyes instantly turned wide. Because the date shown was 10 days since he entered the villa.

“It turned out that I accidentally entered a state of epiphany. No wonder my strength was enhanced this fast.” Recalling the degree of the strength promotion he got, Tang Xiu finally understood.

“Fatty, apart from Teacher Han, is there anything else that happened?” Since Yuan Chuling chattered for a long time without telling any important things, Tang Xiu could not help but frown, as he interrupted Yuan Chuling's babbling.

“Teacher Han originally wanted to talk with your Mom that you skipped classes. But I prevented her. I said that it would be bad to tell her. Since Auntie is very fond of you, once she learned that you ditched school, Auntie would get sick and must be treated in the hospital.”

“There’s one other important thing, I have repeatedly guaranteed to Teacher Han that you went out to study. There would neither be any danger nor would it affect your academic performance.”

“ ... ”

10 days ago, although Tang Xiu handed the leave slip to Han Qingwu, he had said that he would leave for half a month or so. But Han Qingwu clearly didn’t want to approve it. But Tang Xiu slipped away since she didn’t respond for a moment.

Han Qingwu was unable to catch up with Tang Xiu in the classroom and she could not help but to chase him until the school gate. But she still did not see Tang Xiu and could only reluctantly return to the Grade Section Main Office. She was also thinking of to how to deal with this.

But when she attended afternoon class, Han Qingwu heard that there was a car accident at the car-free zone area nearby. As if she recalled that it was Tang Xiu, and although she had yet to hear about victims, Han Qingwu’s heart was as if it were being hanged. She called Yuan Chuling without hesitation to ask him to contact Tang Xiu.

But after Tang Xiu bought the phone, he directly set the phone into silent mode as to avoid being disturbed. So unless Tang Xiu was holding the phone and saw the screen, he basically won’t receive the call. Even though Han Qingwu and Yuan Chuling called

him for tens of times, nobody picked it up.

Although nobody picked up Tang Xiu's phone, however, his phone was on. This also made Han Qingwu and Yuan Chuling feel relieved. Since the phone was not shut down, at least it proved that Tang Xiu was safe.

Since she couldn't get to him through the phone, Han Qingwu was still not at ease. She then tracked Tang Xiu's family address to find Su Lingyun.

But due to Yuan Chuling's preventive actions beforehand, Han Qingwu was particularly cautious when she chatted with Su Lingyun. She did not disclose the ditching classes issue that Tang Xiu had done, but rather asked about Tang Xiu's family situation. She also, at the same time, approached Su Lingyun and reported about Tang Xiu's good performance's promotion.

"Fatty, thanks." After listening to Yuan Chuling, Tang Xiu was really grateful. He knew that he had caused much trouble for Yuan Chuling and Han Qingwu because he disappeared for 10 days.

"Eldest Brother, we are brothers. You don't need to act like a stranger. But if you don't come back, I guess I also can't stand it." Yuan Chuling smiled as he then added, "Eldest Brother, if it's convenient, you'd better call Teacher Han. Because of you, she was not herself all this time. Drinking, eating, teaching, she always looks dazed. She has turned pale and thin."

"I know, I'll call her." Tang Xiu was still hesitant to call Han

Qingwu that he was safe. But hearing Yuan Chuling's reminder, he instantly made up his mind.

After hanging up Yuan Chuling's call, Tang Xiu immediately dialed the number that had called him 14 times. Although Tang Xiu also didn't know whose number was it, but he had a faint feeling that this must be Han Qingwu's.

"Hello, Hello." After the phone is connected, a unique, clear, and sweet woman's voice answered.

After hearing Han Qingwu's voice, Tang Xiu didn't even know what to say.

"Tang Xiu, are you Tang Xiu? You quietly left the school. You didn't go home. Where have you been exactly? If you don't care about yourself, at least think of your mother..."

The phone paused for a moment and then Han Qingwu's roars full of grievances were transmitted.

After Han Qingwu unconsciously greeted the call, she realized that something wasn't right. She immediately looked at the phone number, and then found out the owner's identity.

The poor Tang Xiu was so shocked that even his ear turned numb. It was because he was tense and attached the phone very close to his ears and listened attentively.

Upon hearing the very familiar complaining voice, Tang Xiu didn't get angry and instead showed a happy smile.

Although Han Qingwu was angry and scolded him, but hidden concern and love were carried along with her words. Having this kind of feeling really was enjoyable for Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu originally wanted to explain, but when he found no opportunity to interrupt her, he shut his mouth and concentrated on listening to Han Qingwu.

“Hey, you are Tang Xiu, aren't you? Speak something will you?” Han Qingwu had spoken for a long time. Only after the other had not even responded did she come into realization that she was just talking to herself, while the other side didn't even reply. She realized that she was losing her manner while also worrying that it was a wrong number.

Upon hearing Han Qingwu's words, Tang Xiu almost burst into laughter. He could almost imagine what kind of tense expression Han Qingwu had on at this time.

“Teacher Han, it's me. I'm really sorry. I've been busy studying all these time, so I put my phone on silent mode and put it somewhere. I didn't hear the phone ring.” Tang Xiu didn't joke with her and patiently explained.

“You ... how come you turned into a delinquent and have no manners? You also dared to threaten a teacher and said that you'll transfer school if your leave is refused. Where the hell have you

learned such sh*ty behavior huh?” Hearing Tang Xiu’s light and casual explanation, Han Qingwu almost choked. She wanted to curse at first. But she recalled Su Lingyun’s words when she visited her, causing her heart to turn soft.

Feeling the softness and weak voice from Han Qingwu, the deepest part of Tang Xiu’s heart was deeply touched.

“Teacher Han, don’t be angry. You’ll be sick because of anger. Please don’t mind it.” After the silence for a moment, Tang Xi intentionally teased her.

“Why don’t you die for me?!” Tang Xiu had just spoken, as Han Qingwu’s roar broke out from the phone and bang. The phone was hung up.

“She’s fine.” Han Qingwu seemed to have returned to her usual self. Tang Xiu also felt relieved and then dialed the last phone number.

“Excuse me, may I ask whether you’re Master Tang? My master is currently handling the table. He is temporarily unable to receive the phone. However, my Master has encountered trouble on Jingmen Island and wants to ask for Master Tang’s assistance. If Master Tang complies and is willing to take the trip, I will immediately arrange to book the plane ticket.”

After the phone was connected, the receiver respectfully greeted Tang Xiu and told his intention excitedly. He didn’t even give the time for Tang Xiu to ask the others’ identities.

It was very obvious that he had long been trying to contact Tang Xiu and seemed to have encountered big trouble. Otherwise, he would have given the opportunity for Tang Xiu to speak.

“Who is your master?” Tang Xiu was suspected that the man wrongly mistakened him. But he didn’t immediately hang up the phone and asked instead.

“Uh... my Master is Jia Ruidao. 10 days ago, my Master had a gambling game with you at the Long’s Dining Hall. When Master came back, he told us about you. So we also know about you. Master fell into a difficult situation 3 days ago. He might not only lose everything but also could lose his life. We really ask for Master Tang’s assistance to help Master.” The man anxiously replied.

“I’m sorry. I think you found the wrong person. Although I have had a gambling bout with Grandmaster Jia, but my gambling skill is not at his level. If Grandmaster Jia is unable to solve the problem, I certainly am unable to help.” After he figured out the whole story, Tang Xiu hung up the phone without hesitation.

Although he won and also admired Jia Ruidao’s abilities at the Long’s Dining Hall, but Tang Xiu didn’t feel that his friendship with him had reached such a deep degree.

Besides, Tang Xiu didn’t like gambling. He hated it instead. If it were not because he was in need of money, he would have neither entered the Health and Prosper Club nor promised to help Long Zhenglin to gamble against Jia Ruidao.

Chapter 51: Once Thriving, Thriving Thoroughly. Once Lost, Losing Thoroughly

Jingmen Island, at Jarvis Hotel's top floor Presidential Suite.

The moment Tang Xiu hung up the phone, a middle-aged man standing next to the window fell down with a pale complexion.

At the next moment, the middle-aged man turned as he fiercely slapped a young man at his side.

The youngster, who looked at the middle-aged man with an anticipating expression, didn't guard against the anger from the middle-aged man. So he got slapped directly and fell to the floor.

"Eldest Senior Brother... y-y-you... why do you hit me?" Zhang Tiechun stared at Gong Dalong with a puzzled expression.

Jia Ruidao only received 3 apprentices in his whole life. Respectively, they were the Eldest Apprentice Gong Dalong, the 2nd Apprentice Zhang Tiechun, and the 3rd Apprentice Jia Yelei.

Jia Yelei was Jia Ruidao's son and also his successor.

The 3 brothers had a good relationship. They supported and cared for each other, and were just like blood brothers. Their good relationship was even well known throughout the Shuangqing Province.

The only minor defect to the otherwise perfect brotherhood, was that Jia Yelei loved vanity and glory. His extreme impulsive nature made Gong Dalong and Zhang Tiechun often clean up his mess, even Jia Ruidao also had to do the same.

The reason Jia Ruidao had to rush to Jingmen Island was because Jia Yelei lost a gambling bet very miserably. He even lost his temper after he lost, using his father's reputation and provoked big trouble.

Jia Ruidao's reputation might be useful in the Shuangqing Province, but not in other places of the country. Much less Jingmen Island, a place with quite a strong anti-foreigner sentiment. Not only was Jia Yelei unable to deter others with his father's name, but he also suffered an even more humiliating treatment.

In just 3 days, under the taunts of the opponent, the rash and impatient Jia Yelei was hooked and lost 100 million. When Jia Yelei finally realized the problem, he called his 2nd Senior Brother—Zhang Tiechun.

Zhang Tiechun had mastered most of Jia Ruidao's gambling techniques. He also doted on Jia Yelei and rushed to Jingmen Island. Without even reprimanding or asking of Jia Yelei's problem, he leaped into the opponent's traps and then lost another 50 million.

“Why did I hit you? Right now, you're still asking why I hit you?

Master's wife's last will for us was to look after this little guy. But you f****d that up! You didn't f*****g care that he went to gamble on Jingmen Island for half a month. You knew nothing about the circumstances and didn't tell Master or me when he called you for help. You even played dumb with little brother."

"Zhang Tiechun, do you realize that if Master is doomed this time, what kind of situation we have to face, hah? Not only would we be bankrupt, but our reputation in Shuangqing Province will also be ruined. You also know Master's personality, do you think Master would still want to live afterward?"

Gong Dalong almost roared at Zhang Tiechun.

"T-Tang Xiu... H-he doesn't want to help us?" Zhang Tiechun no longer argued as he asked with a puzzled expression.

"I don't know whether Tang Xiu's gambling skills are good or not. But he perfectly knew that this water is too deep. He admitted that his gambling skills are not that good and is unable to help. He simply hung the phone up without even giving me the opportunity to speak." Having heard it, Gong Dalong's complexion turned dim as he sighed in desperation.

"T-this... How could Tang Xiu be like this... for gamblers like us, once we thrive, we thrive gloriously, but once we lose, we lose completely. Not only would that affect our master and disciples' reputation, but also the entire Shuangqing Province's reputation. He doesn't have any consideration about that..." Zhang Tiechun replied with a pale expression.

“Master has told us very clearly; Tang Xiu is not a gambler. He is not from our society.” Gong Dalong smiled. He shook his head and added, “Let’s think of other ways first, we can only move Tang Xiu out of favor and speak to him with reason slowly.”

After hanging up the call from Gong Dalong, Tang Xiu cleaned up the villa, and then headed back to school.

Taking leave this time for Tang Xiu was mainly to quench his body and complete the Vitality Tempering stage. Since he had completed tempering his body, Tang Xiu naturally didn’t need to stay outside.

Tang Xiu’s past incarnation was completely obsessed with cultivation, alchemy, refining tools and talisman, as well as manufacturing symbols and charms. He didn’t pay attention to the outside and was almost oblivious to the outside world, to the point that he was betrayed by his lover and close friend at the final moment.

Since he already had the unique and peerless Divine Cultivation Method of the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, coupled with his past incarnation’s knowledge and experience, Tang Xiu wasn’t worried about his strength’s promotion being slow or not. Therefore, he just wanted to use his time and energy to familiarize himself with the worldly affairs and temper his state of mind at the same time.

When Tang Xiu entered the classroom, he realized that his

classmates' expression when they looked at him was very strange. He even faintly heard some ugly words from them.

“He must have cheated to get the top scorer on the Monthly Test. If he really has the ability, he would be able to take first place again on this Monthly Test.”

“Bah, it's unlikely for him to create that big sensation again. Yang Jian from Class 5 has continued his first scorer for a few sessions of the Monthly Test. But he didn't study that serious every day.”

“The way I see it, Tang Xiu thought that graduation is near. So he couldn't bear to act crazy once. He must have thought that at least he would be remembered by everyone. By his IQ, I don't think he really could've gotten first place.”

Suddenly hearing these words, it made Tang Xiu's heart very uncomfortable.

But after he thought deeper, he slightly relaxed.

He had “fallen” for so long after all. His marks were at the very bottom. Suddenly, he leaped up to first place. It's no wonder that others wouldn't feel good about it. So how would he expect that they would like and respect him in an instant?

Perhaps the instant results might cause a sensation for a

moment, as well as shake some people. But as time passed by, the sensation caused by it would gradually disappear. Some people with ill intentions would always provoke and spread rumors to express their jealousy and resentment, and even slander him.

“Eldest Brother, just f*****g ignore them. They just have too much time and got no balls. They’re just the kind of sh*ts that will bite their own tongue one day.” Seeing that Tang Xiu had come back, Yuan Chuling couldn’t help but become overjoyed. After chatting for awhile, he realized that Tang Xiu’s face was a bit unusual. He quickly understood and whispered to comfort him.

“It’s fine really. We’ll slap them with our marks.” Tang Xiu nodded. He then opened his school desk and prepared to flip over from the inside.

The moment he opened his desk, Tang Xiu was shocked. 10 days had passed since he left school, and the desk had been fully stuffed with white paper exams.

“Eldest Brother, I really admire your wise choice. You strolled out there and had some fun. You don’t need to face this sh**ty endless torture... Hey, hold on... why do I feel that you’re whiter and taller than before? You didn’t get a plastic surgery, did you?” Yuan Chuling suddenly realized something was wrong while he was speaking and then shouted.

Since his voice was quite loud, everyone’s eyes in the classroom shifted their sights on them all of a sudden. And then their eyes brushed over at Tang Xiu’s body.

Tang Xiu's heart thumped and his expression changed as he heard Yuan Chuling's words.

Although Tang Xiu also found that his height became taller after he quenched his body, but after he had a few phone calls and pondered about other things, he had forgotten about the changes in his height.

But when he prepared to explain it, the others' words suddenly echoed behind him, making him shocked.

“Damn Fatty. You think you'll die if you're not boasting, won't you? Tang Xiu still owes his tuition fee, how the hell would he have the money to do plastic surgery, huh?”

“If plastic surgery can make my height taller, I'll have one too.”

“Bah, I know that that Fatty only shouted to attract everyone's attention, don't pay attention to this bastard.”

Tang Xiu had become taller. But because he had entered Class 10 for a month only, much less he sat in his seat most of the time and didn't move nor interact with his classmates, resulting in others feeling that his presence in the classroom was very weak.

If it were not because of intentional provocations by Su Xiangfei,

the Class 10's students might have ignored such a student like Tang Xiu. They didn't care about his height, neither would they pay attention if his skin was white or black.

Tang Xiu also thought that the change in his height might cause a sensation and suspicion. But the fact that it happened made him felt at ease.

Everyone was simply ignoring Yuan Chuling and only mocked and ridiculed him before they got busy and back to their own things, no longer responding to him.

“Huh? Could it be that I was really wrong?” Yuan Chuling looked at the Tang Xiu with a puzzled expression. But he couldn't help but also whisper, “Man, my eyes could've really fooled me and made me mistaken. But... could it be that I also had mistakenly read the exam papers and my eyes were blurry?”

Tang Xiu now thoroughly felt at ease when he heard Yuan Chuling's words.

Yuan Chuling was his closest buddy at Star City First High School. If even Yuan Chuling were not sure that he had undergone tremendous changes, others surely would be unable to see anything.

As for his family members, Tang Xiu was never worried from the start.

17 and 18 years old was the age when one's body had tremendous changes. He only went home once a month. His Mom was also not necessarily concerned about his height. She might be stunned when seeing that his height suddenly became taller. It was very likely she would only be pleasantly surprised, but she wouldn't have any suspicions or fears.

After having chatted for a while with Tang Xiu, Yuan Chuling began to seriously read the book review.

The knot in Yuan Chuling's heart perhaps had been untied completely. Maybe after the circumstances and environments had changed, his mentality also changed along with it.

Tang Xiu could tell that Yuan Chuling was no longer a laughing slapstick chap like he was before because he was attentively studying right now.

Having swept the exam papers in his school desk, Tang Xiu scraped them out and threw them into the trash can. He didn't want to waste his precious time on boring exercises and exam papers.

"The wealth, the companion, the cultivation method, and the place. The wealth is put in first place. So the next priority for me is carving the path to make money. Not this shitty College Entrance Test."

Treading on the cultivation path particularly stressed on these 4 aspects, "The Wealth", "The Companion", "The Cultivation

Method”, and “The Place”.

With the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, Tang Xiu had no worries with cultivation methods. Earth was a world with the final stage law. Apart from himself, Tang Xiu hadn't found any other cultivators and had no thought of finding other cultivators. As for the cultivation locations, since the Heavenly Palace's construction started to be built on Walled Hill Village, Tang Xiu temporarily didn't have to worry about it.

But regarding the “wealth” aspect, Tang Xiu more or less had no choice but to pay attention.

Chapter 52: The Ultimate Madness

People from ancient times have said: “Without sufficient wealth, it would be very difficult to raise anything.”

In the primary stages of cultivation, one’s thoughts and time should be used to the greatest extent in cultivation. Resulting in that there would be no time to make money. But lacking in cultivation resources would also make one’s cultivation path very difficult. Right now Tang Xiu was poor and had no cultivation resources at all.

Although he had an elegant villa in South Gate Town due to luck and coincidence, but it was others’. However, he also liked the villa’s location as well as its decoration. He was also reluctant to sell this villa. The villa was half-forcefully given to him by Long Zhengyu, and it was impossible for Tang Xiu to sell it, else he would be looked down and despised by Long Zhengyu.

Tang Xiu had no means to set up other homes since his savings was less than 10,000 yuan. He really could be said to be an extremely poor cultivator.

If it were not for Long Zhengyu promising to fully help him out in building the Heavenly Palace, Tang Xiu knew that he would have no way to have his own land for cultivation.

Fortunately, although Tang Xiu’s cultivation was still in its primary stages, but he was not by any means a genuine green cultivator. So he could totally focus his time and mind to make

money rather than only use them to cultivate only.

“It seems that I have to start making my own business!” After thinking hard for a long time, Tang Xiu stopped frowning as an idea crossed his mind.

The idea in Tang Xiu’s mind was not the gambling that Yuan Chuling had recommended him, but rather picking the path of concocting pills business, of which he excelled at.

Although coming up with concocted pills from the Immortal World would be too shocking of an effect when selling them on Earth, while the materials and ingredients for magical potions also might not be found on Earth, but this didn’t hinder Tang Xiu from doing whatever he needed. He could carry on the plan to alter and change the concocted pills’ processing according to Earth’s actual situation. So his products could be completely accepted and popular amongst the people on Earth.

“Food and beverages businesses consume too much time and energy. Besides, if I want to expand the business on a big scale, it would need a huge amount of money, unless I cooperate with others.”

The first idea in Tang Xiu’s mind was to improve the seasoning recipes. And make money through the culinary industries. He thought about it but then hesitated, because the seasoning recipes itself were not sold for high prices. Only after it was applied to food and beverages’ products would it sell at a sky-high price. And to the present situation, Tang Xiu couldn’t afford to jump into the culinary business.

Cooperating with others was actually a good way. But he would be most likely others' subordinates while getting someone else's trust was also not an easy thing.

“Apart from food and beverages, there is also liquor, cosmetics, and healthcare products.” Tang Xiu racked his brain and also thought of the possibilities to apply the concocted pills into other fields of business.

But Tang Xiu found that he knew nothing about these areas as he suddenly had a headache.

“Eldest Brother, you're only sitting in the classroom. Could it be that you haven't found something unusual for a long time?” After the bell rang, Yuan Chuling put down his book as he pushed Tang Xiu's arms and whispered.

“Huh? What particular things should I find?” Tang Xiu was puzzled to hear Yuan Chuling's question as he asked with a confused expression.

Having heard that, Yuan Chuling looked at Tang Xiu with a beaten-by-you expression. He then leaned on and whispered to Tang Xiu's ear, telling him about the recent occurrences in Tang Xiu's class.

However, Yuan Chuling had yet to speak but Tang Xiu suddenly stood up as he walked outside the classroom.

Yuan Chuling was astonished as he opened his mouth wide and wanted to ask Tang Xiu's reason. But when his eyes looked at the beautiful figure outside the classroom, he immediately curled his lips and shut his mouth.

“What a damn play... I thought you really couldn't find Cheng Yannan since she didn't come for the first class session.” Seeing Tang Xiu walking toward Cheng Yannan, a pondering expression was cast on Yuan Chuling's face.

“He's been gone for 10 days. But Eldest Brother has become this bold and unrestrained like this. Damn... is he not afraid to be gossiped by the other students?” Yuan Chuling thought as he stood up and slowly walked outside the classroom.

Yuan Chuling and Tang Xiu's seats were at the furthest corner in the classroom. Since the both of them had seen Cheng Yannan's arrival, the others naturally saw her.

Although Cheng Yannan was 6 months earlier than Tang Xiu in entering Class 10, but her beautiful looks and frank character had been recognized, and won over everyone's heart. She was even rated as the top 10 belles of Star City First High School. Almost half of Class 10's boys liked her.

But seeing Tang Xiu directly approach Cheng Yannan made the other boys suddenly nervous.

It was near graduation time. A lot of boys students who saw that

they were hopeless in the College Entrance Test, were preparing to confess to their favorite girls and hoped to have a lively love life before graduation.

Cheng Yannan of Class 10 was the target for countless male students' intentions for love confessions. At the same time, they were also planning that they would confess to her while also secretly guarding against each other who wanted to approach her.

“Tang Xiu! Cheng Yannan is mine! You must give up on her!”

“Damn, a toad wants to eat a swan. Get the hell out of my way!”

“We—these brothers even have yet to confess to her. Your turn is not coming yet!”

When Tang Xiu had just walked to the classroom's door, a few boys stopped him. They looked at Tang Xiu with a teasing look. The surprising thing was that even Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan were amongst them.

While Su Duanxin and Tan Liquan were stopping Tang Xiu, Su Xiangfei pulled out a bunch of roses behind his back as he jumped out and ran toward Cheng Yannan with a happy expression.

“Hey, make way!!! Cheng Yannan is in danger!” When Tang Xiu saw a few of his classmates rushed to block in front of him, he had the thought to kick them out one by one, but also worried that his relationship with them would be deadlocked, so he couldn't help

but snap at them with a soft voice.

“Huh? Do you think we’re ghosts or 3-years-old child?”

“Even if Cheng Yannan is in danger, it is not your turn to save her! The Class Pres has already jumped to become a hero to save the princess.”

“...”

Upon hear Su Duanxin, Tan Liquan and the others ridiculed him, Tang Xiu knew that he had overestimated this group of classmates’ IQ. He was very much regretting that he didn’t quickly throw this group of stupid bastards and kicked them out to the garbage heap.

The next moment, a person’s shadow jumped over from midair and heavily fell to the floor. Followed by the landing of this person, the other shadows also fell down one after another from the air like rain.

“If you don’t wanna f*****g die, make way! Otherwise, you all will die just like this f*****g brat!” When everyone still hadn’t figured out and were unable to react to what happened, a shocking loud roar suddenly resounded in the corridor outside, followed by a fierce-looking man full with a beard that appeared in everyone’s sight.

By this time, everyone saw that a man was holding Cheng Yannan’s hands in the back with a dagger on her neck.

The thrown out figure turned out to be Su Xiangfei, who was the one fastest to run out of the classroom. The prepared bouquet of roses he had been prepared to give to Cheng Yannan were just like a rose rain that had fallen to the floor, as he himself also fainted in an instant.

Suddenly, the accident occurrence turned all the students scared and sh**less, as the noisy classroom also quieted down in an instant.

Although Class 10 had the worst discipline amongst the third year classes, and most of the boys also were delinquents and were used to the fighting and ditching classes, but they were after all only teenagers. The bearded man's aggressiveness and ferociousness completely broke their cognition apart.

“All of you enter the classroom with me one by one! If any one of you tries to run away or warn the others, this Big Daddy will kill this b*tch! And then all you of you will be dead after this sl*t!” While the Class 10's students were still dazed, the bearded man kicked a few students who were in front of the classroom and blocked the door. He then stood in front of the classroom's door while snapping at a few students with a stern voice.

The pitiful few students who stood actually had the chance to escape, but under the fierce and ferocious gaze from the bearded man, they had no choice but obediently run back into the classroom.

“Shut the door! All the boys move your desks and block the door. Get your asses up, move on! Those who don’t move, I’ll f*cking kill you!” Seeing that all the students in the class were in his control, the bearded man walked 2 steps forward whilst grabbing Su Xiangfei’s collar and dragged him into the classroom as he shouted his order loudly.

With the bearded man loud shout, the Class 10’s students felt helpless and had no alternatives but to obey his words to shut the class’s door. They then slowly moved their school desk toward the door to block it.

Seeing that those students all succumbed to his order, a satisfied expression emerged on the bearded man’s eyes. His tense nerves also slightly relaxed as his dagger no longer clinging on Cheng Yannan’s neck. He waved from time to time to direct the students’ work.

“You motherf*cker! What is your business here? You f*cking dare to bluff and bluster in our class hah?” When Tang Xiu saw a chance and was about to move, someone’s voice suddenly burst out behind the classroom. Yuan Chuling lifted up the desk and fiercely slammed it toward the bearded man.

In regard height and build, Yuan Chuling completely couldn’t compare to the bearded man, but when he was raging and yelled loudly, all the students were shivering violently.

Seeing Yuan Chuling bravely rushing forward, all the Class 10’s students’ eyes couldn’t help but brighten up as the looks of hope revealed on their faces.

If Yuan Chuling's attack was to be successful, not only would Cheng Yannan escape from a devastating fate, but the other students also didn't have to suffer abuse and humiliation.

When Class 10's students couldn't bear to cheering Yuan Chuling out, the next scene turned them dumbstruck.

The bearded man, as if having foresight ability, forcefully grabbed Cheng Yannan's hand all of a sudden and lifted her up and put her in front of him. At the same time, his other hand that wielded the dagger also quickly stabbed toward Yuan Chuling's stomach.

"Little bastard, I have long been guarding against you. But I really didn't expect that you will really act. Since it has been like this, I don't mind to f*ck you up to warn the others, and kill you first." Seeing the frightened and panicked expression from Yuan Chuling's complexion and eyes, a devilish and fierce smile emerged on the bearded man's face.

"NOOO!!!!" Seeing that the desk wouldn't hit the bearded man, but would hit Cheng Yannan, Yuan Chuling was raging and panicking out of fear. Unable to stop the force, he couldn't help but shout loudly.

"NOOO!!!" The Class 10's students who clearly saw Yuan Chuling and the bearded man's action also was unable to control their fright as they screamed out in panic.

Chapter 53: The Hero Rescued The Belle

“NOOO!!!” Looking at the desk that was about to fiercely smash her head, Cheng Yannan screamed in desperation. Crystal clear tears flowed down from her eyes as endless remorse gushed out from her heart.

Cheng Yannan knew that this was happening because of her impulse.

Her impulse had courted her fatal disaster.

It was because of her impulse, that her classmates also fell into this hopeless situation.

If time could be reversed again, if the Heavens gave her another chance, she absolutely wouldn't be tempted to get involved with her older sister's case investigation. She wouldn't have had acted impulsively to track the suspect on her own initiative.

Cheng Yannan at first was just thinking that studying was too boring and wanted to experience something to bring flavor to her life.

But never once did Cheng Yannan would have ever thought that she would run into the root of the case that her older sister had been investigating for nearly 6 months' on surveillance without any clues. However, she had never thought that the gangster would actually attack her back instead, as the criminal was even extremely bold and reckless enough to act against her at school.

Through the information in the case's record, Cheng Yunnan knew that she had failed to help her older sister. She also might have forced the police to be in an extremely passive position. Moreover, she had dragged her classmates into an extremely dangerous circumstance.

While Cheng Yunnan was thinking that she would definitely die, she suddenly felt the bearded criminal's hand that was grasping her body was loosened. Her body softly fell down to the floor as she could see the following sight that the desk which originally was about to hit her, was smashed on the bearded gangster's cheek.

In the critical second, Tang Xiu acted at the moment the bearded gangster was in his most satisfied mood.

Tang Xiu directly used both of his hand and grabbed the bearded gangster's shoulders.

Not even for a second did the bearded gangster was able to react to what happened, as a cracking sound then sounded twice as Tang Xiu pinched broke the bearded gangster's scapula into pieces.

After the bearded gangster's scapula was crushed, not only did his right hand have no strength to lift Cheng Yunnan up again to block the desk that was about to smash at him, he also unable to get a hold of the dagger wielded by his left hand that was about to stab Yuan Chuling. As the dagger fell to the floor, he could only stare blankly at the desk that was about to hit his head.

“F*cking bastard, you dare!” The bearded gangster seemed to be fully enraged as he burst out in curses. He immediately lifted his feet to kick the falling Cheng Yannan that was rolling on the floor toward Yuan Chuling. At the same time, the bearded gangster turned his head and hammered his fist to punch Tang Xiu.

Seeing that this bearded gangster ignored the acute pain his broken scapula brought him and even made a counter-attack against him, an astonished expression flashed in Tang Xiu’s eyes.

Had it been regular people, their face could have been smashed after getting hammered by this bearded gangster’s punch and lost their fighting strength.

This bearded gangster was not only able to deal with the threat behind him, but also able to avoid Yuan Chuling’s threats on him to a minimum.

However, it was unfortunate that this bearded gangster encountered Tang Xiu, who had just completed Vitality Tempering Stage and quenched his body.

Facing the bearded gangster’s swift and fierce attack, Tang Xiu only let out a light shout as he then swiftly grabbed his collar, shouldered him and threw him to the garbage heap behind the classroom. In a quick movement, he stretched his arms out and grabbed the desk and before it hit Cheng Yannan, as he caught and held her body.

But at this time everyone’s attention was not the desk that had

broken to pieces or the scattering books on the floor. Their eyes were fully locked on the bearded man's body on the garbage heap.

The spot where Tang Xiu was standing to the back of the classroom's corner where the garbage heap positioned was 10 meters away. But he easily dumped and threw the bearded man to the garbage heap.

Looking at the bearded man that was 190cm in height and his bear-like built, and then looking at Tang Xiu's slim built with a height that was less than 180cm, all of Class 10's students rubbed their eyes repeatedly. They were suspecting that their eyes had problems.

Class 10's students would be much more believing had it been Yuan Chuling who threw the bearded man. But never did they want to believe that it was Tang Xiu who threw him out.

But after seeing the astonished and dazed look Yuan Chuling had toward Tang Xiu, everyone realized that Tang Xiu was the one and only person who had thrown the bearded gangster, and couldn't be Yuan Chuling who did that.

After having been severely crushed into the garbage by Tang Xiu, the burly bearded gangster's body was severely smashed, causing his internal organs to be crushed, as black blood was overflowing from his mouth.

“Y-y-you... y-y-you” With an unwilling expression, the bearded gangster stared at Tang Xiu as he spoke with a weak and

faint voice and then completely fainted on the floor.

Upon seeing that the bearded gangster fainted, Class 10's students subconsciously felt relieved. The previously quiet classroom immediately turned chaotic and noisy, just like at a bazaar.

Some students immediately screamed out loud as some others directly ran out of the classroom to inform the police, while some other students were weeping loudly.

“Tang Xiu, since you were that powerful, why the hell did you not save us earlier, hah? Do you f*****g want us to be trampled to death by that gangster?” The moment Tang Xiu was about to put Cheng Yannan down from his arms, a voice full of resentment suddenly sounded. Tang Xiu couldn't help but instantly frown.

Tang Xiu was just about to refute it, but never would he expect that other student's voices also shouted out loudly, giving him no time to even open his mouth.

“Yea! He obviously has a powerful strength. But he was f*cking purposefully hiding it. He was just damn intentionally wanting to see us get beaten. How the f*ck did you have that crooked thought, hah?”

“Tang Xiu, that damn gangster entered the classroom at almost the same time with you. Was it you yourself that had brought him to the school? Or the thing happened just now just a play that was simply f*cking planned by you?”

Having heard his classmates' words, Tang Xiu was completely stupefied.

Never once did he ever think that his action would be repaid by with such ungrateful curses. Not only were they ungrateful, they were even blaming and questioning him. For a short while, Tang Xiu was speechless.

“Hey! You’ve all wronged Tang Xiu. If you were to pay attention to the Shuangqing Daily News, you will find out that this bastard gangster is a wanted criminal by the Ministry of Public Security. He had committed crimes all over the country and is a criminal that trafficks human organs. He already had committed 30 homicides...” Upon seeing that Tang Xiu was accused wrongly, Cheng Yannan was dumbstruck as she immediately defended Tang Xiu with a soft voice.

“Yannan, don’t be deceived by that Tang Xiu bastard. Since you knew about that gangster’s looks, Tang Xiu absolutely knew about him also. He must have looked for someone with the same looks with that wanted criminal and act like him, right?”

“Tang Xiu’s body has always been frail. He even often faints. Never have I seen him passed the School’s sport exam even once. Do you think that he could even match a murderer’s strength?”

“Tang Xiu certainly wants to pursue you! But he’s afraid that you’ll reject him and made the scenario to play a hero that rescue

the belle. He just wants to move and capture your heart.”

Not only did Cheng Yannan's explanation not make everyone believe, but it even made everyone became more stirred and excited.

“Eldest Brother, you obviously have been accused wrongly. Why didn't you speak out?” After having faced the gate of death, Yuan Chuling's face was still palpitating with a frightened expression. But after seeing the complete misunderstanding from their classmates at Tang Xiu, he couldn't help but speak.

“If they wanted to believe, they would naturally believe it. But if they didn't want to believe, even if you spit thousands of words, they will never believe you!” Tang Xiu lightly swept a glance toward the students with an indifferent expression. He didn't speak more and slowly walked toward his desk and sat down.

Tang Xiu might be able to be calm and be unperturbed. But the Class 10's students were unable to be like him.

Actually, the ones who were questioning Tang Xiu were only a small number of students. Most of the students did not even speak. After all, the vicious and ferocious acts and expression that fiend had done didn't seem to be an act. Yuan Chuling's panicked shouts at that critical moments were unlikely to be an act. Let alone the bruises on Cheng Yannan's wrists and the blood vomiting that the bearded gangster had.

Tang Xiu didn't speak more. Cheng Yannan also firmly stood at Tang Xiu's side. Most of the students were silent and didn't even make any noises. Those of who had questioned and railed down Tang Xiu gradually lost their voices.

10 minutes later, the Criminal Police squad from the City Police Bureau arrived. The police squad was shockingly led by someone who was Tang Xiu's acquaintance, Cheng Xuemei.

Tang Xiu was preparing to step forward to greet Cheng Xuemei. But Cheng Yannan had stepped forward before he did as she quickly came forward in front of Cheng Xuemei before Tang Xiu.

However, Cheng Yannan did not even say anything when Cheng Xuemei's palm fiercely slapped her face.

"Cheng Yannan!!! Who allowed you to meddle with my case, hah? Who gave you the permission to take unauthorized actions? Why didn't you report to me the instant you found clues?" After slapping Cheng Yannan, Cheng Xuemei interrogated her with a stern voice.

"I.... I... Big Sis, I'm very sorry, I was wrong..." By the time Cheng Yannan was waiting for her older sister to comfort her. But on the contrary, her older sister slapped her face. She was about to weep because she felt that she had been wronged. But when she saw that her older sister's eyes were also flushed red with a concerning and loving expression on her face, she had no choice but to hold her tears back and apologize in a soft voice.

At first, when Tang Xiu saw Cheng Xuemei slapped Cheng Yannan's face, he was quite repugnant and angry. He even almost could not bear to stop Cheng Xuemei's hands. However, after listening to the conversation between Cheng Xuemei and Cheng Yannan, he could not help but be secretly glad that he didn't rush to act on impulse.

While Cheng Xuemei and Cheng Yannan were still talking, the Criminal Police squad inspected the bearded gangster's injury condition. Some of them were also inquiring about the occurrence process to the other Class 10's students.

“Chief, the suspect Ouyang Haifeng's injury is not good. Not only are his internal organs damaged, a few of his ribs are also broken. One of which also penetrated his heart. There's only a slim chance that he will survive.” Hu Wenxu was reporting and at the same time could not help but glance at Tang Xiu.

After having inquired from the other Class 10's students, Hu Wenxu got the same answers. The one who dealt with Ouyang Haifeng was Tang Xiu. But when he recalled the scene when he last handled Tang Xiu's case, his body was very weak and he even fainted. He felt that today's matter was very strange. He couldn't even believe everything he had heard.

But after he continued asking for a few times and then found that all the confessions were consistent, Hu Wenxu had no choice but to believe. That was, the slim Tang Xiu really had dealt with Ouyang Haifeng.

Chapter 54: Beating The Grass To Scare The Snake

“What? Ouyang Haifeng’s life is in danger? How could that be? Isn’t he the one nicknamed the ‘Undead Ox’ in his team?” Cheng Xuemei shouted in surprise as she stopped chatting with Cheng Yannan when she heard Hu Wenxu’s report.

The reason why Ouyang Haifeng was nicknamed the Undead Ox, was because he possessed an extraordinary strength. He was as strong as an ox. with strong-thick skin and flesh that made him particularly have strong resistance against hits. On the other hand, he was extremely stubborn in nature. Once he decided something, even 10 buffalos would never be able to pull him back.

It was exactly due to his temper and ability that Ouyang Haifeng had an absolute core position in his team. But after having heard that such a freaking monster unexpectedly was folded under the hands of an extremely delicate youth, even Cheng Xuemei was filled with some kind of unreal feeling.

She also admitted that she herself had absolutely no full assurance to be able to subdue Ouyang Haifeng.

“Hi, Tang Xiu. We meet again. Do you still remember me?” Cheng Xuemei stared at Tang Xiu for a moment as she finally extended her palm toward the Xiu, smiling and greeted him.

“Have you been good, Officer Cheng? I’m very happy to see you again.” Seeing a touch of inquiry and ruminating expression

flashing through Cheng Xuemei's eyes, a chill passed through Tang Xiu's heart. At first, he thought of refusing to shake hands with her, but after a thought, he then extended his hand toward her.

When their two hands touched and overlapped each other, a touch of a happy expression flashed through Cheng Xuemei's eyes as she then suddenly exerted her strength.

Cheng Xuemei was thinking that she should be able to probe Tang Xiu's strength. But she then felt Tang Xiu's palm was soft and slippery. She had yet to react to what happened when Tang Xiu's hand already slipped away from her palm.

"What a good young fellow. It turns out that you really have some skills, eh? I really have to test you out!" Cheng Xuemei hadn't fully used her strength a moment ago. But after Tang Xiu easily got off from her palm, her eyes brightened up as an excited expression could be seen from her face.

"Officer Cheng, there are more important things to do. Besides, I just rescued Yannan, how come you want to deal with Yannan's savior?" Feeling a fighting intent exude from Cheng Xuemei's body, Tang Xiu frowned and hurriedly reminded.

"You called me Big Sis before, but why are you calling me Officer Cheng now? You couldn't be harboring some hidden intentions, could you?" Hearing that, Cheng Xuemei hesitated. She immediately stared as she snapped and asked.

"I'd like to continue calling you Big Sis, but I'm afraid that

Yannan would scold me.” Tang Xiu glanced at an anxious Cheng Yannan nearby and intentionally teased.

At first, Cheng Yannan happily watched the show unfold, but she obviously did not expect that the flame of war would suddenly burn and shoot her. Upon hearing Tang Xiu’s teasing, her face suddenly flushed scarlet, even her expression turned shy and twisted up.

“You ... Yannan...” Upon hearing Tang Xiu’s words, Cheng Xuemei was also stunned. Her vision glanced back and forth between Tang Xiu and Cheng Yannan a few times with a mind full of suspicions.

But in a public place with a large crowd, it was not good for her to openly ask about Tang Xiu and Cheng Yannan’s relationship, much less that it was inconvenient to expose.

Finally, Cheng Xuemei fiercely gazed at Tang Xiu and ended her probing.

“Tang Xiu, Yannan has alerted the enemies. When we rushed to the gangsters’ headquarter, they had already deserted the place. If they knew about the issue with Ouyang Haifeng, the gangsters will definitely get their revenge. Do you want us to send an operative to protect you? Or you can choose to temporarily stay at the City Public Security Bureau for a few days...” After finishing the case records, Cheng Xuemei hesitated as she then asked Tang Xiu.

The moment Tang Xiu heard it, he immediately shook his head,

“Officer Cheng, if it’s fine and convenient, I just want you to arrange a few people to secretly protect my mother. As for myself, I can handle it.”

Cheng Xuemei stared at Tang Xiu for a moment. But seeing Tang Xiu’s firm and confident expression, she nodded and complied with his request. She then led the criminal police squad and quickly left.

“Tang Xiu, you did well today. If it weren’t because of you, your classmates could have been in grave danger. I will arrange the school’s authorities to give you an award.” Before the criminal police had arrived at school, Wei Zhentai actually had led the other school’s authorities to rush toward Class 10. But their main concern was to calm down the scared students and had no time to talk with Tang Xiu.

When Wei Zhentai wanted to talk with Tang Xiu, the police, Cheng Yunnan, and Cheng Xuemei had already asked him to record his testimony.

However, when Tang Xiu, Cheng Yunnan, and Yuan Chuling were working with the police to record the case, Wei Zhentai and the others didn’t stay idle and they already found out the details of the incident from the other Class 10’s students.

Knowing that Cheng Yunnan and Yuan Chuling almost died, Wei Zhentai and others’ heart suddenly thumped.

As for the limelight seeker Su Xiangfei, who got kicked by

Ouyang Haifeng, from the beginning, nobody paid attention to him.

“Principal Wei, the rewards are not important. The most imperative thing to do is to improve the school’s safety management standards. If the incident today were to be reported by the news media...” Tang Xiu didn’t get swayed with the reward spoken by Wei Zhentai, but replied with an indifferent expression.

Having heard half of what Tang Xiu said, a displeased feeling sprouted in Wei Zhentai’s heart. He thought that Tang Xiu was quite proud and arrogant.

But when Tang Xiu’s second sentence came out, Wei Zhentai’s complexion instantly changed. He looked at Tang Xiu’s eyes with a trace of a deeply shocked expression, as well as a grateful expression.

For a school, the most important thing was the students. The more students they had, the more income the school got. The more income the school got, the more qualified teachers they could hire. In return, this would increase enrollment rates and attract more students, resulting in a positive cycle.

However, if the school was unable to guarantee the students’ life and safety, what was the use of a high rate of enrollment? How could there be students who dare to risk their lives to study at Star City First High School?

“Student Tang Xiu’s words are true. I will immediately rectify

the school's safety standards." Sweating, Wei Zhentai backed Tang Xiu's sentence up. He immediately left with a restlessness and anxious expression, leaving the other school leaders looking at each other in dismay.

"I have never thought that not only is student Tang Xiu's academic performance amazing, you also have far-sight to the overall situation. I'm really amazed." Vice-Principal Liu Yunyong looked at Tang Xiu with appreciation before he quickly left.

The things that happened today had created a big sensation in the school. The entire Star City First High School higher ups and downs were working together to avert the crisis to their public relation and reputation. Otherwise, Star City First High School absolutely would be pushed to the deep pit. This would severely affect the school's reputation and image and would also cause an extremely grave impact on next year's enrollment.

"You really never let others stop worrying. Either for disappearing for 10 days and half a month or creating such big sensational actions. Do you think that your teacher's heart is not big enough?" Han Qingwu was the only one who stayed after all the school's teachers and leaders had all left.

She originally planned to severely reprimand and criticize Tang Xiu after he came back, to tell him that she also had power. But after seeing 2 students in her class almost get dumped into the gates of hell, the car accident scene from more than a year ago gushed out from inside her mind.

Recalling the scene from more than a year ago, when Tang Xiu

pulled her back from the gates of hell, the grievances in Han Qingwu's heart toward Tang Xiu instantly evaporated. Her eyes expressed tenderness and great care as she looked at Tang Xiu.

The scene from a year ago and today's scene were quite similar. The bold act of disregarding self-safety, the same impulse to do something without wanting something back, the same self-sacrifice for the sake of others... everything was exactly alike.

The only difference was that today, Tang Xiu was luckier than a year ago. Now he was fine and had no injuries.

"Teacher Han, I'm really sorry. I've been causing you so much trouble in this period of time." Sensing the boiling and heating feeling from Han Qingwu, Tang Xiu's eyes quickly shifted and rolled as he then responded in a soft voice.

"It's alright. You did behave very well today. I'm very proud of you. The next time you encounter this kind of thing, remember to protect yourself first. You must not injure yourself." A ruminating expression emerged on Han Qingwu's complexion when she saw the shy expression from Tang Xiu's face. Recalling that Tang Xiu had kissed her before at her office, she felt that the big resentment feeling inside her heart suddenly had paid off.

While Han Qingwu was talking with Tang Xiu, the desks in the classroom had been returned to their original state. Apart from bloodstains in the corridor and garbage, it was as if nothing had happened in the classroom.

However, a quiet and strange ambiance filled the classroom's air, reminding them that something big had happened today. Moreover, it was an earth-shaking big incident.

Han Qingwu had finished chatting with Tang and then went to the podium.

“Students, I, as your teacher, am very sad about today's accident. I think that we are equally sad and restless. Fortunately, Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling had bravely struggled and finally averted the disaster at the critical moment. Today, let's give our warm applause to thank the both of them.”

“ ... ”

Han Qingwu was just like a queen standing on a Royal war chariot as she spoke with a full and imposing aura, looking valiant and formidable.

Her voice and words seemed to have a particular magical charm as the restlessness inside the student's chests quickly dispersed. Slowly, the class subject shifted to principle and ideologic.

Han Qingwu was now narrating from an ancient retrospective, from the brave heroes of the Qin and Han Dynasties' chaotic era, to the modern revolutionary martyrs. She also told about Tang Xiu's brave deeds a year ago. Telling the students about how he bravely rushed forward to save her from the car accident, and then finally concluding the summary for today's incident.

Under Han Qingwu's narration, Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling were impressively transformed into a Hercules that were able to lift the [Nine Tripod Cauldron](#) up, the bravest of the braves. How they were laughing before the gates of death as the peerless heroes who had always been marching forward, causing all the students' blood to boil and bubble up to the brim.

Class 10's students only had known Tang Xiu in his second year in high school after the car accident occurred. They didn't know about how Tang Xiu got in the car accident.

But when they knew that Tang Xiu got hit by the car in order to save Han Qingwu, the Class 10's students' vision towards Tang Xiu instantly changed.

If Cheng Yannan could be said as the target for most of the male students' admiration, then Han Qingwu was absolutely the goddess that all the students worshiped.

Whether it was Han Qingwu's figure, looks, or personality, she was world's apart from Cheng Yannan. Much more, the aura that she exuded, was almost impossible for Cheng Yannan to have.

Han Qingwu instantly shifted the Class 10's students' attention from the gangster incident to Tang Xiu. When she exhorted the students repeatedly that the issues at school today were not to be divulged to outsiders, everyone responded to her in unison.

Tang Xiu was at a loss whether he had to cry or laugh as he sat listening in the classroom, looking at Han Qingwu with an itching

and disgruntled expression in his eyes. He perfectly knew that with such publicity from her, with more than a month lasting to finish his high school life, it was almost impossible for him to have a peaceful life here.

Chapter 55: Disaster To The Family Member

As Tang Xiu had expected, his desk was surrounded by other students after class. They were expressing their gratitude as well as were curious about how Tang Xiu had such a big strength. Some others also asked about the specific details of the car accident a year ago.

With big efforts, Tang Xiu spent quite some time to send them away before this group of enthusiastic and curious students left.

“Tang Xiu, do you think Ouyang Haifeng’s gang will come to find us and get revenge on campus?” Cheng Yannan who sat in front suddenly turned around and asked softly when nobody was around Tang Xiu’s desk.

“After having gone through today’s incident, I think both the police and the school will increase the security. That gang is unlikely to incite trouble at school.” Tang Xiu thought for second and replied with a serious expression.

“Thank you.” Having heard that, Cheng Yannan seemed to be relieved and then fell into a daze.

Tang Xiu couldn’t help but be stunned as he scrutinized Cheng Yannan’s expression that was worlds apart with her usual response.

But Tang Xiu quickly figured it out. Cheng Yannan might have usually been carefree, but she was after all was only a girl, an

under 18 year old girl.

She had just gone through a sudden kidnapping by a murderer and almost lost her life. Had it been for others, they could have lost half of their soul.

When Tang Xiu thought about it, he subconsciously looked at Yuan Chuling, who shared the table with him. He was also different than his usual self and was awfully quiet. He was also uncommunicative when the cops wrote the record, and his complexion now was even deathly pale as he was also in a dazed state.

“Fatty, are you alright?” Tang Xiu pushed Yuan Chuling as he asked him with a concerned expression.

“I-I... I-I’m fine...” Abruptly woken up by Tang Xiu, Yuan Chuling’s body quivered as he looked around with a blank expression. Realizing he was sitting in the classroom, he hurriedly shook his head.

“It’s OK, your vest is drenched in sweat.” Seeing Yuan Chuling’s reaction, Tang Xiu scrutinized him and then softly spoke, “Fatty, everything has passed, we are safe now.”

“Eldest Brother, tell me something. Is it this hard to see someone die? Once a man dies, is it true that his soul is really gone?” Yuan Chuling asked irrelevant questions.

“Haih, I don’t know that. Eh, why don’t you jump from the window and try it yourself?” Tang Xiu leaned his head and thought for a moment, and then he suggested with an extremely serious expression.

“You... Go to hell, f*ck you!” Yuan Chuling obviously had yet to recover from his frightened state. He was in a daze for a long time and only came to his senses after Tang Xiu teased him, as he then punched Tang Xiu over.

“Hell no, will I explore such a deep philosophical problems? Therefore, I’ll just give that honorable task to you. It’s better for you, really.” Tang Xiu stopped Yuan Chuling’s fist as he smiled and made fun of him.

“Eldest Brother, I used to think that I was very powerful. I have both good strength and courage. And I used to believe that I’d be a great hero someday. But when that damned gangster used Cheng Yannan to block my desk and I had no way to stop or change its direction, I felt that I was really useless.”

“Especially when that gangster stabbed his dagger at me. Hell, you wouldn’t be able to know how desperate I was at that time.”

“...”

After Tang Xiu teased him a few times, Yuan Chuling slowly opened up to what he felt inside as he threw out everything that deep inside his heart.

Seeing that Yuan Chuling finally broke out from the traumatic shadow due to the gangster incident, Tang Xiu felt relieved.

But Tang Xiu didn't know that Cheng Yannan who sat in front was secretly eavesdropping on his conversation, although she didn't turn around.

Upon hearing the constant teasing Tang Xiu did to Yuan Chuling, Cheng Yannan's delicate shoulders shivered. She even almost burst into laughter a few times. But since it was still during class, she had no choice but to hold her urge to burst into laughter.

Although Han Qingwu spent 45 minutes in giving a psychological counseling for all the students, and most of everyone's fear had been gone, but many students were still in a dazed state in the classroom.

Some of them were afraid. Some others were too excited because once they had the chance to speak, they must blurt out everything they knew about this gangster hijacking incident. As if only by doing so, would they be able to drive out their fear and pacify their excited mood to calm down.

The gangster hijacking became the number one topic at Star City First High School today. Class 10's students, especially Tang Xiu, Cheng Yannan, and Yuan Chuling were the focus of the talks.

However, the main players that became the center of talk had long been out of the impact due to the incident. While secretly guarding against the emergence of the retaliating gangster's

members, their thoughts were more focused on their study.

One day had passed without anyone noticing. The talks about the gangster incident gradually died down under the deliberate action of the school's authorities. A person in the residential building nearby Star City First High School silently put away his telescope as chilling murderous intention flashed through his eyes.

“The cop snitcher said that the Third Brother was killed by a student named Tang Xiu. But how the hell do I feel that this doesn't make sense? There's no way the cop had already found out about our snitch and deployed traps.” The middle-aged man wearing glasses amongst them held Tang Xiu's portrait as he repeatedly looked at it a few times. Throwing it aside, he spoke with a confused expression.

“We know that Third Brother's fighting prowess might not be the strongest amongst all of us. But his strength is definitely the strongest. How the hell did he get buckled down by such a feeble high schooler?” A youth with a cherry-apple shirt also spoke with the same puzzled expression.

“You wait a bit. I have already completed compiling these 3 people and their family's information. It will immediately come out.” Along with a keyboard typed sounds, a man with frameless glasses confidently spoke.

“Third Brother has died. We must avenge him. Regardless of whoever killed him, the bastard will have to pay for this. Since the cops intentionally disclosed Third Brother's death to the news media, then they must have laid traps at Star City First High

School. We'll act opposite of their wishes and shouldn't act toward the High School's students."

"Those stupid cops don't know that there is a snitch amongst them. Never will they ever think that they were being played by a mole right before their eyes. I can tell that now, they are waiting for us to walk into their trap."

The other two men in the house were using a telescope to look at Star City First High School and were focused on Class 10. Cold air exuded from their bodies as they stared with a dark and cold expression.

"All the information about Tang Xiu, Yuan Chuling, Cheng Yannan and their family members are out! Let's take a look at them and then we'll talk about our target to strike!" Suddenly, the frameless glasses man waved the A4 papers in his hand and loudly called everyone in the room.

Hearing the frameless glasses man, everyone quickly swarmed over and then looked at the information that had just been printed out.

"This girl is actually that sl*t's younger sister. It's not surprising that she is extremely daring to meddle in our business."

"Tang Xiu's sports class results failed for a long time. He got in a car accident a year ago and was in an idiotic-kind of condition?"

“Holy c*ap!!! This must be this f*cking dead fatty. I’m absolutely sure this is the f*cking dead fatty. He looks simple, but I would never have thought that he was a second generation nouveau-riche in disguise. He also learned [Sanda](#) and Taekwondo and is quite powerful.”

“...”

The five men who repeatedly read Tang Xiu, Yuan Chuling, and Cheng Yannan’s information a few times directly threw Tang Xiu with Cheng Yannan’s information aside. Then carefully read Yuan Chuling’s information.

It was because Tang Xiu and Cheng Yannan’s information was too ordinary. Tang Xiu only came from a low social class. He only had a mother—Su Lingyun, who came from a rural village.

They also found that Tang Xiu was not only physically weak but also had problems with his brain. Hence, he couldn’t be the culprit that had killed Ouyang Haifeng. It was also impossible for him to threaten them. With this reasoning, they decisively threw out the idea to deal with Tang Xiu’s mother.

As for Cheng Yannan, she was even weirder. Her information only recorded her older sister.

Cheng Yannan had good fighting prowess, she seemed to have learned military boxing, and her attainment in it was also quite profound. However, since Ouyang Haifeng was able to deal with her before, hence she shouldn’t be the one that was able to kill

Ouyang Haifeng.

Let alone that Cheng Yannan's sister was a cop. Even though these gangsters had more courage, never once did they ever dare to take the initiative to attack the police.

“Damn, Yuan Chuling's father's identity is complicated. On the surface, his company is only a high-tech limited company. But it's inextricably linked to the government, even the profits account for hundreds of millions of yuan. The company also has a military secret advisory business credential for confidentiality services. What is his company doing anyways?”

“F**k, it's too weird. This is way too scary. We mustn't run into the military big shots! But this resume is only showing that he's just an outstanding businessman. Ah, his business must be more than only surveying and mapping service fields, and could be related to the cities' secret intelligence and surveillance.”

“I know about survey mappings, but what the hell is with these cities' secret intelligence and surveillance?”

When they read Yuan Chuling's father—Yuan Zhengxuan's information, this group of gangsters were unable to figure out anything, and couldn't clarify the real situation.

“Yuan Zhengxuan's wife—Zhao Jing, is also remarkable. She isn't attached to Yuan Zhengxuan, but rather has built an independent heavy-industry company by herself. Also, her company has just come into business recently. Although the

current profit couldn't be compared to Yuan Zhengxuan's high-tech company, but judging from the long-term prospects, her heavy-industry company in no way will be inferior to Yuan Zhengxuan's high-tech company.

“Zhao Jing seems to be an able woman and has a strong character. Because she heard that Yuan Zhengxuan is close with other women, but without any pieces of evidence, she just directly divorced him. This courage is not something an average woman could have.”

“I don't know how these 2 people's brains work. The both of them are very difficult, it's hard to compare which one is more powerful. The money they could make is even more that we could get in a lifetime. F*cking comparing us with them is just driving me crazy.”

“Just blame them for giving us the way to make money. Okay, let's take on Zhao Jing. As long as we get her, Yuan Zhengxuan will automatically take the bait.”

After having a discussion, this group of gangsters picked their target and then began to brew a plan.

At Star City First High School, Class 10's classroom. Although Tang Xiu was reading, but in fact, his mind was wondering most of the time.

It was not because of the incident that happened this morning had an impact on him, but it was because he was thinking about a

project to make money.

Tang Xiu had stayed and spent his time for nearly half a month in school and the provincial library, and basically had read almost all the books there.

What he must do now was to screen out all the information in his brain. He needed to analyze the Immortal World's vast expanse of concocted pills' formulas and their medicinal herbs ingredients, and find their substitutes with the materials and ingredients on Earth. Only then would he be able to see which pill formula could be concocted on Earth, and which would monetize a huge profit for him.

Chapter 56: Small Hints Of Traces

For 2 days and nights, Tang Xiu had been in deep thought. He constantly altered and changed the concocted pill formulas in his mind and was finally able to compose a few formulas that could be implemented on Earth.

However, the costs for the products were in line with the manufacturing process, products' marketing, running the company, and other company management aspects that made Tang Xiu baffled.

Tang Xiu's past incarnation had long been used to being a lone wolf. He had his servants take care of everything he needed to the point that he only handled his own matters and cared for nothing else.

But in his current lifetime, not only did Tang Xiu have very few friends, he also had no servants, causing him to feel a kind of helplessness, as if his hands and feet were tied.

Although Banshou, Dingzi, and the others were available for him to use, but Tang Xiu didn't think that these people would have the ability to help him manage his own company.

"It seems like I have to start headhunting for my company or take the initiative to find talented people. However, gaining trust would waste too much time." Tang Xiu sighed as he continued writing and painting on the paper.

In these 2 days, he had written and painted several thick blank papers in his notebook. When later he realized that painting in his own notebook was only wasting them, he even used the blank exam papers on his desk to write and paint his thoughts.

“Eldest Brother, have you ran into trouble? Are you worried about the College Entrance Test?” Whilst grabbing the painted papers Tang Xiu was drawing, Yuan Chuling seemed to have been drowned in anxiousness as he asked with a worried expression.

“I am planning to rob the bank, do you want to join me?” Recalling those fast-sh*tty-rotten ideas for making money Yuan Chuling had given him, Tang Xiu blasted his instakill reply over to Yuan Chuling.

Having heard it, Yuan Chuling blushed with shame as he smiled, before he replied immediately, “Eh, if you’re really short on money and is rushed, you could really make money that way though. Besides, apart from robbing and gambling, it’s not easy to play in other businesses, since it needs a lot of money and experience.”

“I know that. Anyways, I’m just bored and painted out of boredom. Hey, you’re busy with your study, off with ya!” Tang Xiu pushed him and then continued lowering his head and painted.

Suddenly, Tang Xiu felt a dazzling ray shoot at his face, causing him to frown immediately.

Had it been for an average person, being hit by a light from a glass reflection definitely wouldn’t make them startled, since it

was in broad daylight after all. The sun was scorching outside and some people might perhaps play with a mirror or switch the window, causing the sunlight to be reflected onto their body, of which would be deemed as a normal occurrence for them.

However, after Tang Xiu had completed his first cultivation sub-stage, his five senses, as well as Spiritual Sense, was strengthened by numerous times. To the point that he was just like a video camera that was able to completely capture all scenes in a radius of 100 meters inside his mind.

Tang Xiu knew that the touch of light on his face was the sunlight's reflection. What made him frown was because he sensed that the sunlight's reflection was strange.

He felt strange because it happened too early in the morning as he was also sitting by the window and the sun was shining on him. In fact, apart from the students who were sitting by the window and a few students who were still outside, it was almost impossible for the sunlight to shine down on the other Class 10's students.

What made Tang Xiu feel strange was that, because he was perfectly aware that the reflected sunlight was coming from the West, whilst this classroom's western side was not being shined on by the sun at the moment. Not to mention that this school classrooms' building was a 10-storey high building and basically would overshadow the residential buildings around it. It was impossible to have sunlight reflection from the residential building below it.

With his lightning fast eye movement, Tang Xiu was able to

figure out the direction where the sunlight reflection came.

Tang Xiu saw a devilishly handsome man holding a binocular and gazing toward his classroom's direction. He was focused on his desk mate, Yuan Chuling.

“Peeping? Surveillance? Or maybe it’s just a coincidence?” Tang Xiu turned vigilantly in an instant as a touch of coldness flashed across his eyes.

Tang Xiu took back his vision and continued to draw on the exam paper. But the corner of his eyes swept toward his right side from time to time to see the movements of those people upstairs in that residential building.

“Holy f*ck!!! Tang Xiu couldn’t have found me, could he?” Almost at the same time, Tang Xiu found that the transvestite man, he also saw that Tang Xiu looked at his eyes. He couldn’t help but suddenly exclaim.

“B*tch! You’re thinking too much! It is 1000 meters away from that building. You can see that Class 10’s classroom due to using binoculars, but Tang Xiu has no binoculars. How the hell is he able to see us?” The moment the transvestite shouted, the frameless glasses man ridiculed him. The transvestite then thought for awhile and realized that he really had thought too much. He felt relieved and continued to monitor Tang Xiu’s actions and movements again.

When the transvestite found that Tang Xiu only glanced at his

direction, he retracted back his vision and no longer looked at his direction. He subconsciously felt relieved and a self-mocking smile was revealed on his face, “Sh*t, students these days are really forgetful. It’s only been a day since such the big incident happened, but they have completely forgotten about it today, and are fully occupied with their study as though nothing happened.”

“Then, why don’t you remind them again?” The frameless glasses man repeatedly stroke on a keyboard before he took out his cell phone and dialed a number.

The second the frameless glasses man dialed the number, Class 10’s Tang Xiu got up, making Yuan Chuling, Cheng Yannan, and the other students confused, because he directly left the classroom.

For everything, it might be better late than never, but it was much better to prevent things before it happened.

A torch was ablaze in Tang Xiu eyes as his mind revolved and analyzed everything meticulously. Had there been no such as the thug incident at school 2 days ago, he might have ignored it. But now, he had no choice but to pump up his spirit and mind to prevent the same accident from to happening again.

As the saying goes — Behind the occurrences of all abnormalities, there must be demons pulling the strings in secret.

Some people particularly did surveillance and monitor students with binoculars. And the one who was being the target of surveillance was Yuan Chuling, who was involved in the gangster

incident yesterday. This made him certain that those people were absolutely up to no good.

When Tang Xiu had just arrived at the office on the corridor, he saw that Han Qingwu was bending over and cleaning something inside, aiming her plentiful buttock at him at the right moment and angle. Her waist was slim but seemed to be very supple and flexible.

“Teacher Han, are you busy?”

Han Qingwu turned around and was quite surprised to see Tang Xiu at her office. She intentionally scolded him and pretended to be angry, “Hey, why aren’t you studying in the classroom, why are you running here for?”

It took quite a long time for Tang Xiu to choose his words, “Teacher Han, I’m not feeling well. I want to have a check up at the hospital.”

“You’re sick?”

Han Qingwu’s complexion changed. She instantly put the broom down as she half-rang forward and arrived before Tang Xiu in a few steps. She raised her slender white hand to gently stroke Tang Xiu’s forehead.

1 second!

10 seconds!

Half a minute later, with an expression full of concern Han Qingwu softly spoke, “Your body’s temperature is normal. It’s not a fever. But your body might have contracted something. Let’s go! I’ll take you to the hospital myself.”

“This...”

Tang Xiu hesitated at first before he nodded and agreed. He originally wanted to leave by himself and then go to the residential building where those people did the surveillance. But in order to not alert them, going outside of the school along with Han Qingwu would provide a much better cover, and would not cause suspicion to those people.

At the residential building.

The man with frameless glasses put down the cell phone. He rolled his eyes when he heard a “hey” exclamation from his companion. With a disgruntled expression, he yelled, “Shut the f*ck up B*TCH! And don’t make a fuss over nothing! We still have more important things to do. Don’t be such a p*ssy and get frightened over such small things. Even if the Mt. Tai is collapsing in front of you, there’s no way in hell you must get panicked.”

The transvestite retorted angrily, “Bastard, keep calling me ‘B*TCH’ and I’ll f*ck you up! Get your a*s off here and see for

yourself. That brain damaged boy is coming out with a woman. I know her. She's that Class 10's teacher-in-charge."

The frameless glasses man's eyes flashed as he grabbed the binoculars and gazed over whilst stroking his chin gently. He chuckled and then spoke, "It's Tang Xiu, he's nothing to worry about. His brain is damaged and wouldn't pose any threat to us. But this woman... holy f*ck! This Big Daddy has long been dallying with a lot of chicks. Never once have I ever f*cked this kind of hot chick. As soon as we solve this problem, I must snatch her and f*ck her good for a few days!"

"We don't need to watch them?"

The transvestite was somewhat hesitant and anxious. He didn't know why, but he faintly felt that the frameless glasses man made a wrong judgment. Although his brother didn't consider Tang Xiu as a threat, but the moment Tang Xiu saw him, anxiousness and tension filled his heart.

The frameless glasses man sneered, "Why the f*ck should we monitor a retard huh? It doesn't make sense. What we must closely monitor now is that Yuan Chuling brat!"

"Fine, okay, okay!"

The transvestite quickly got rid of the haze in his heart.

Outside the school's gate, Tang Xiu took a seat in the co-pilot seat

and suddenly spoke, “Teacher Han, please stop at the supermarket at the street corner. I’m thirsty and want to buy some water.”

Han Qingwu said, “I’ll help you buy it.”

Tang Xiu did not refuse her since he also planned to make Han Qingwu buy it. Only after Han Qingwu left him would he have the opportunity to slip away and sneak into the residential building, where those people were doing their covert surveillance.

A few minutes later, Tang Xiu smoothly slipped away from Han Qingwu. He quickly rushed over to the neighborhood near that residential building. He stopped for awhile and carefully observed his surroundings. He found nothing abnormal in particular. Based on his memory of the floor and apartment where those people were in, he hurriedly rushed upstairs.

Through his Spiritual Sense, he clearly “saw” his targets in an apartment on the 8th floor. There were 2 men. One man was the one he saw from the classroom, he was holding the binoculars at the moment. The man was at the opposite side of his school as he still gazed and watched the school’s situation. As for the other man, his complexion was overcasted with gloomy shades and cold-chilling eyes while stroking and typing on his laptop keyboard.

“Huh?”

Tang Xiu’s brows wrinkled. For the first time, a chilling cold light flashed over his eyes.

He clearly found a gun and 2 three-bladed army knives on the computer desk.

For a moment, Tang Xiu deeply pondered. He was 100% certain that these people were the criminals. If they were the police in surveillance that was monitoring his school in covert, they also must have guns. But it was absolutely impossible for them to have those Mitsubishi army knives. In addition, the bearded murderers at school before also had this kind of three-bladed army knife.

“Since I have identified their true identity, should I report to the cops?”

The thought crossed Tang Xiu’s mind, but he quickly cast it out. He was a supreme expert in the Immortal World. Even though his cultivation now was only one millionth from before, he was confident that he would be able to handle these worthless thugs.

He finally made his decision.

Just like a vigorous and powerful Spirit Ape, Tang Xiu silently approached that apartment’s door.

Chapter 57: Decision

In the vicinity near the entrance of Star City First High School, Han Qingwu dialed a number on her phone with an exasperated expression. However, “the user you’re trying to call has shut the phone down” reminder kept replying. This made her wish to quickly pack Tang Xiu up and severely crush him.

Never once in her dreams would she think that Tang Xiu would lie to her. He was waiting obediently in the car for her to buy water drink, only to fool her and slip away. She was not a fool to realize that Tang Xiu was faking his sickness to make her escort him to the hospital.

“Damn Tang Xiu, you’re really damnable. Not only do you skip classes, you even make me escort you out to ditch school. Enough is enough! I will fix you up when I find you.”

Near the residential building...

The frameless glasses man was still talking with someone on the phone. He then spoke in surprise, “You have succeeded? Zhao Jing has been kidnapped and taken to the auto repair garage? Great! However, since we’ve kidnapped her, then the cops surely have been notified. We must lay low for at least 2 days.”

“Youngest Sister and I will continue to stay and monitor here. I believe the police will certainly suspect this to have a connection to 3rd Brother. They will also come to the school to find Yuan Chuling, I’m really looking forward to seeing Yuan Chuling’s

angry face as well as the cops' helpless expression."

"Good, that's it ..."

The call ended.

A ridiculing expression emerged on the frameless glasses man's face. He was looking forward to the next interesting scene. But he didn't know that Tang Xiu overheard the contents of his conversation outside.

"Is it going well? One-Eyed acted very fast and efficient!" The transvestite spoke happily.

The frameless glasses man sneered, "Have we brothers ever done our work stupidly? However, that Zhao Jing woman was truly hard. One-Eyed was barely able to grab her after he slaughtered her 2 bodyguards through sneak attacks. But still, he got injured in the process."

"What the hell? One-Eyed is injured? Didn't he get trained abroad? Anyways, for how long must we watch this Yuan Chuling brat?"

"We'll wait for 2 days more..."

Who was Zhao Jing?

Tang Xiu was quite confused outside. Even if he was thinking hard and racking his memory, he didn't know about this woman. However, judging from the frameless glasses man and the transvestite's dialogue, he figured out one thing, that these criminals had kidnapped this woman. And this woman definitely was related to Yuan Chuling.

What should he do now?

Dealing with these 2 men would certainly enrage the other ones. They might kill that Zhao Jing in rage.

Tang Xiu carefully analyzed the variables and finally decided not to act for the time being. Since these 2 men were still monitoring for the next 2 days, then 2 days later, he would secretly tail them and crack the clues. He would then be able to catch and deal with all of them at once.

After he quietly left, Tang Xiu was somewhat anxious.

He originally planned to sneakily deal with these criminals in surveillance or kill them. Once he had done it, then he would explain to Han Qingwu. But he couldn't act now while he also had to appease Han Qingwu.

“Well, I'll just tell her some fake info!”

Tang Xiu took out his cell phone, rebooted it, typed a message, and immediately sent it.

At Class 10, Star City First High School.

Han Qingwu was standing at the podium with a cold-frozen expression. While sweeping at the students' face, she spoke in an icy tone, "Starting now, everyone is forbidden to skip class. Not even one of you can request to skip class. If any one of you violates this, you will clean the toilet for 1 week."

In the classroom.

Dozens of students not only not feared Han Qingwu's words, but they were happy instead. They were looking at Tang Xiu's seat in uniform as though agreeing, while some students let out ridicules, taking pleasure of his misfortune.

"Heck, Tang Xiu must have made Teacher Han furious. He really is rotten to the bone. His boldness and recklessness truly have reached the peak. If I were Teacher Han, I would have kicked him out directly."

"He also had ditched school before for so many days. But since Teacher Han is benevolent, she didn't punish him accordingly, causing him to be more lawless. I really hope Teacher Han immediately disposes him."

"Teacher Han has been too good. She blindly supports Tang Xiu only to find him becoming worse. He's really sh*tty, causing our class and the entire grade to turn into dipsh*t."

“How come our class has such a rotten sh*t?”

“...”

The more Yuan Chuling listened to the comments in the surroundings, the more rage was in his heart. If the teacher-in-charge, Han Qingwu, was not in the class, he probably would have already stood up and beaten those foul-mouthed students.

“Buzzz”

Han Qingwu immediately frowned as her cell phone buzzed. A text message was sent to her phone.

She took the phone and opened the SMS: “Teacher Han, I have important things to do. It would at least take 3 days to deal with. I’ll come back later and receive my punishment.”

“Tang Xiu...”

Han Qingwu forgot that she was still standing on the podium as she roared after reading the SMS contents.

After roaring, Han Qingwu suddenly realized the students were still paying attention to her. Recalling how she had lost her manner, her face blushed red in instant.

“Heavens! What have I seen? Did the Teacher Han reveal a shy expression? Could it be that I didn’t have enough sleep last night and am seeing an illusion today?”

“Wow! She’s really beautiful! Teacher Han is actually shy? Damn, even the moon and flowers pale in comparison! Oh God, my heart is jolting...”

“Teacher Han should be the world’s most beautiful goddess, shouldn’t she? Holy Lord! I’m finished. Never will I be able to like another woman again in my life. Ah, that reminds me. Didn’t she just receive an SMS before?... Was it Tang Xiu who texted her?”

“Didn’t Teacher Han just shouted Tang Xiu’s name and then reveal a shy expression? Could it be... Damn, that’s f*cking impossible... How could Teacher Han have a crush on that rotten Tang Xiu?”

“Tang Xiu absolutely has sent a f*cking SMS to Teacher Han, causing her to be that furious and lose manners! That f*cking bastard...”

“Tang Xiu, you really deserve to be stabbed with a thousand knives...”

Yuan Chuling’s whole face was gloomy. Once again he heard his classmates’ derisive comments. But the cloudy mood immediately turned bright. His admiration toward his Eldest Brother Tang Xiu instantly turned skyrocketed to the peak. Tang Xiu was even able to make Teacher Han expose her “teenage girl-in-love” expression.

There was no way anyone in the world could be just like his Eldest Brother Tang Xiu and would pull a stunt like this, was there?

“Damn, I absolutely have to learn Eldest Brother’s flirting skill to pick up some chicks!” Yuan Chuling secretly resolved this conviction in his heart.

Outside of school, Tang Xiu hadn’t left yet.

Using his Spiritual Sense, he continued his observation. There was no household in this residential building. The residential building was in a messy condition. This explained why the building had been vacant for quite a long time. So he deftly and skillfully opened the window and slipped in.

He was preparing to stay here for 2 days and closely watch the 2 men’s movements upstairs. At the same time, he also needed to find helping hands as soon as possible.

After carefully thinking, Tang Xiu then dialed Long Zhengyu’s number.

Star City, in a more than 10 storey building, Long Zhengyu was smoking and sitting on a soft leather sofa, chatting with his friends from Beijing. The other 2 young men were also smoking.

“Chu Yi, Bai Tao. The two of you know that this Long Zhengyu has never talked big. But that Little Brother of mine is definitely a dragon amongst men. Although I have only known him recently,

but I can guarantee that nobody is more outstanding than him amongst the younger generation.” Long Zhengyu spoke seriously.

The handsome Chu Yi who was wearing a suit faintly smiled and spoke, “Big Brother Long, we have long been friends for more than 10 years. This is the first time I’ve heard you speak for others in such high praise. It seems that I have to meet him and get acquainted with him, to see whether he’s really as outstanding as you’ve said.”

Bai Tao also laughed, “I really have to see him. If he’s really like Young Master Long said, I will introduce him to my younger sister who has high standards and looks down upon any youths.”

“You...”

Long Zhengyu couldn’t help but laugh.

The 2 friends who sat in front of him were the youngest generation of the prominent families from Beijing. They were also outstanding figures amongst the Beijing’s young masters’ circle. Even though he himself from the Long Family had also rapidly risen and developed in the recent years, but still he paled in comparison to the both of them.

“Ring, ring, ring...”

The phone rang and interrupted their conversation.

Long Zhengyu frowned. He took out his cell phone as a strange look emerged from his face after he looked at his phone. He then smiled and spoke, “Speaking of him, it’s him calling. Sorry, I’ll pick this up first...”

Shortly after...

He picked the call up and then spoke while smiling, “Little Brother Tang, what’s up?”

“Chief Long, I need a hand. Are you free right now?”

“Little Brother Tang, I’m only a few years older than you. Don’t be like a stranger. How about directly calling me Big Brother Long? Anyways, what kind of help do you need? Tell me. As long as I can do it, I’ll definitely fulfill it.”

“Big Brother Long, I want to find a professional manager for my business. I’m short on money recently and plan to create a small business. But I don’t have much time to manage it and can only entrust the management to a professional manager who can be trusted.”

“Do you want to do some businesses?”

Long Zhengyu suddenly stood up from the sofa. His eyes were rolling and flashed.

“Yes.”

Long Zhengyu then probed, “Little Brother Tang, would you mind telling me what business you are going to do? Of course, if it’s convenient for you to tell me.”

Tang Xiu replied, “Cosmetics business.”

Long Zhengyu was silent for a moment and slowly spoke, “I got it. Little Brother Tang, I’ll give a potential professional manager to you within 3 days.”

“Thanks a lot.”

Long Zhengyu hung up the phone and slowly sat back on the sofa. He silently thought about Tang Xiu’s words. He was very clear that it was not because Tang Xiu was short on money. If Tang Xiu really needed money, he could have given him a few million since he rejected his 5 million yuan offer last time.

Now...

He said he was short of money. That meant that the amount of money he needed was absolutely astronomical. So he wanted to jump into business. This also meant very big business, and he also had the confidence to make money.

Do I want some slice of it?

Long Zhengyu gently stroke his chin and silently thought.

After a moment, he had made a decision.

Chapter 58: The Rage

Chu Yi and Bai Tao looked at each other as they looked at Long Zhengyu who was lost in thought. They were very puzzled. They could tell through the phone's conversation, that Long Zhengyu deeply valued this youth.

“Young Master Long, what's up?”

Bai Tao was a straightforward person and asked directly.

Long Zhengyu answered slowly, “He wants to do business and wants me to help him find a professional manager. I'm thinking which professional manager has the Midas Touch in Star City.”

Bai Tao smiled and replied, “Isn't it an easy thing to do? Give it to me! I'll find one from Beijing.”

A mature Chu Yi carefully thought. Hearing the dialogue between the two of them, his expression moved slightly as a thought to test Tang Xiu then emerged. He faintly smiled and spoke, “Hey, how about Kang Xia! If what Young Master Long has said about Tang Xiu is true, I think he also wouldn't have a problem to recruit Kang Xia!”

“Kang Xia?”

Bai Tao exclaimed loudly.

Long Zhengyu faintly felt that the name “Kang Xia” sounded familiar, but he couldn’t remember where he heard it. After being puzzled for a while, he then asked, “This Kang Xia is...”

Bai Tao swallowed his saliva furiously as he let out a wry smile and answered, “She is one of a few domestic brilliant professional managers. Ah, no! She is even more that, far more than world class managers. She came back from the World Financial Center Wall Street 3 years ago. Then, the Pang Group hired her at a sky-high contract. After she took over, she swiftly and decisively reorganized and reformed the corporation, expanding the company to 4 times bigger in just 3 years.”

“Two months ago the Pang Group’s 2nd Young Master, the Beijing Bad Luck Young Master Pang, who had always been pursuing Kang Xia for naught, attempted to drug her. He failed and caused Kang Xia to be furious. She then resigned directly from Pang Group’s CEO. That 2nd Young Master Pang is now still bedridden after being beaten by the Pang Family’s head!”

“The most surprising thing that makes people desperate is that when Kang Xia had left the Pang Group, everybody thought that there was a chance to recruit her. But regardless of any price and means, Kang Xia refused all of them. My father even promised her 10% shares of our family group’s stocks. But she didn’t even flinch.”

Long Zhengyu’s eyes contracted as he was struck aghast with amazement. Others might be clueless of how huge the Bai Group’s capital was, but he was very clear. 10% of their stocks was equal to 10 digits in money.

“It’s her!?”

Long Zhengyu immediately recalled.

Chu Yi lightly laughed, “Well, to recruit her depends on Tang Xiu’s ability. If he can win her then I’ll definitely be convinced. Otherwise, I don’t think it will be necessary for us to get acquainted.”

Long Zhengyu squinted his eyes. He was very good at judging other’s personality and characters. But he couldn’t fathom Tang Xiu’s bottom. He even faintly felt that he could only look up to him, as an inexplicable worship feeling had sprouted in his heart. He firmly replied, “I believe that he can win her.”

Two days had passed...

During this time, Tang Xiu ordered Banshou, Dingzi and the others to help him buy a lot of materials. All the materials were then sent to his secret house. He spent 2 days to conduct hundreds of tests and experiments and was finally able to compose 2 kinds of skin health care product formulas and the manufacturing processes.

Skin Care Lotion!

Scar Removal Cream!

These were the 2 products named by Tang Xiu.

Skin Care Lotion had a powerful whitening and moisturizing effect, and its efficacy was 10 times stronger than those of high-end whitening skin cosmetics.

As for the Scar Removal Cream, it was able to rejuvenate scars and also eliminate freckles and acne.

He believed that once these two products were out on the market, it would cause a huge sensation. By that time, people who cared about looks and appearances, as well as having scars, would definitely pursue these 2 products.

The last thing that needed now was only a starting fund. He basically had no start-up capital which would be needed to register the company, setting up the factory, promotion, marketing, etc. Adding up all of that would require a huge amount of money...

Star City Golden Emperor Villa District.

The district was one of the best villa areas in the Star City. Only the haves and respectable people lived here. Each and every inhabitant in this district could even shake Star City.

In one of the villas, with a grim expression, Yuan Zhengxuan stared icily at the 4 suited bodyguards in front him, "It's been f*cking 2 days! Are all of you useless idiots? Continue sweeping!!! Even if you have to dig 3 feet in the entire Star City, you must find

my wife's whereabouts!!”

“Yes!”

The four big guys solemnly complied.

At this time, a middle-aged woman in a professional blazer strode into the hall and spoke, “Master Yuan, the Public Security Bureau’s Director Deng Jianmin and the Criminal Police Division’s Captain Cheng Xuemei have come. They are waiting outside.”

Yuan Zhengxuan’s complexion changed as he spoke quickly in a deep tone, “Quickly bring them in.”

Shortly after...

Deng Jianmin, with an ashen expression, strode along Cheng Xuemei into the hall. Their anger could be seen from their complexion.

When Yuan Zhengxuan saw their expressions, his mood turned heavier. He then asked, “Director Deng, is there any news?”

Deng Jianmin replied with a bitter and astringent expression, “After the investigation, we have identified those kidnappers’ identities. They are the A-Rank criminals in our wanted criminal list and are wanted for human organ trafficking, they are also currently being hunted by our target operation. Although we have yet to find their whereabouts, we have placed our forces at each

city checkpoint. We're definitely sure that they are still in the Star City area."

Yuan Zhengxuan was burning with impatience. But he after all, was an experienced person and had long been through storms. But even so, he was only barely able to suppress his emotions. After a short moment of silence, he spoke in a deep tone, "Director Deng, I don't understand. Those damned kidnappers are human organs traffickers and we don't have any grudge whatsoever with them. So why did they suddenly kidnap my wife?"

Deng Jianmin and Cheng Xuemei looked at each other.

Cheng Xuemei then spoke, "Mr. Yuan, according to our inference, your wife's kidnapping should be related to your son!"

"Ling'er?"

Yuan Zhengxuan looked at Cheng Xuemei with a dumbfounded expression before he asked, "What relation could it have with my son? He's just an ordinary student at Star City First High School! How could it be possible that he's related with this kidnapping?!"

Cheng Xuemei wryly smiled with a bit of apology, "A few days ago, one of Star City First High School students got kidnapped at school. The culprit was one of them. Your son and the other student tried to save that student and got rid of the culprit. Finally, they rescued that student and the culprit was killed by them."

“Thus, we deducted that this kidnapping is their retaliation.”

Yuan Zhengxuan shouted with a disbelieving expression, “No! This is impossible! How could it be my son that killed somebody?”

Cheng Xuemei said, “Truthfully speaking, the one who killed the culprit was not your son, but another student.”

Yuan Zhengxuan took his cell phone out and was about to call Yuan Chuling. He then suddenly realized something and then immediately looked at the 4 big bodyguards. With a deep tone he spoke, “All of you rush to Star City First High School and bring my son here. Do bear in mind, you must by any means ensure his safety!”

“Yes!”

The four men immediately left.

Star City First High School...

Tang Xiu looked at the messy apartment in the residential building. A satisfied feeling suddenly rose in his heart. He basically had never cared about such trifling issues like this in his 10,000 years of life in the Immortal World. He had a lot of people under his command to provide everything he needed.

“Ah, no!”

Tang Xiu's complexion suddenly changed. He keenly realized that his view and frame of mind had changed greatly. The previous apathetic attitude he had toward everything had changed. But now, after he became a mortal again, he also got swayed by various emotions just like an ordinary person.

In the room upstairs, the transvestite man took the mirror as his big fair and white fingers pinched and watched Yuan Chuling in Class 10 through his binoculars.

“You said that the Tang brat has left? Ever since he left school that day, he hasn't come back yet. Could it be that brat got scared because of the incident caused by 3rd Brother?”

The 10 fingers of the frameless glasses man danced on the keyboard, leaving only one piece of a blurred video screen. Dozens of monitoring screens were shown on his laptop screen, which showed all the surveillance cameras around Star City First High School. It seemed like he already hacked through the police monitoring system for city traffic.

“He's just a brat! He has never experienced anything big as he got dizzy and was afraid after seeing blood. That Tang brat is only a damaged brain idiot. Just leave him be and not waste our time on a nobody! I'm just curious, when will those f*cking blockheads from the Public Security Bureau withdraw and stop monitoring the school?”

The transvestite man laughed, “Those blockheaded cops have

investigated the school 4 times in these 2 days. Man, everytime I see that dumb disappointment on their faces, I really wanted to laugh a few times. I tell you...”

Suddenly...

The transvestite man abruptly stopped speaking as he carefully observed the scene at the school with his binoculars.

“What the f*ck?”

The frameless glasses men frowned and closed down the laptop.

The transvestite man sneered, “It seems Yuan Zhengxuan still cares about his f*cking ex-wife and son, eh?! He even unexpectedly sent his four bodyguards to pick him up from school. I’m f*cking sure that those moron cops have told the incident at school to Yuan Zhengxuan.”

The frameless glasses man’s eyes squinted and ridiculed, “With our abilities, how can those f*cking idiots cope with us? Well... if that brat Yuan Chuling goes home, there’s no meaning in continuing the surveillance here. We’ll also withdraw.”

“Good!”

Class 10.

Yuan Chuling had been playing with his carbon pencil out of boredom. From time to time, his sight swept outside the window. He came to Class 10 mainly because Tang Xiu was here. But Tang Xiu actually played truant in these days, leaving him alone without anybody to chat with.

“Yuan Chuling, come out!”

The class’ teacher-in-charge, Han Qingwu, appeared outside the class’s door.

Yuan Chuling was surprised for a moment. Then, he got up and walked toward her. When he was about to ask, his complexion suddenly changed, because he saw that his father’s 4 bodyguards were behind Han Qingwu along with Cheng Xuemei in her police uniform. He also knew that Cheng Xuemei was the Criminal Police Division’s captain and was specifically responsible for investigating important cases.

There must be some accident!

And this should be related to his family!

“Yuan Chuling, your mother has been kidnapped. Come with us to your father.” Cheng Xuemei took the lead and spoke.

Yuan Chuling gasped and quickly asked, “Who did it?”

Cheng Xuemei replied, “Let’s go! I’ll tell you on the way!”

At the residential building, Tang Xiu, who was just cleaning up the living room to temporarily stay in this place, found that the 2 criminals upstairs were packing up and were prepared to leave the apartment.

“The time has come to clean up these threats!”

Without hesitation, he immediately tracked them from behind.

Chapter 59: The Old Den

Tang Xiu silently trailed along behind the two criminals. He could tell that they were very careful and extremely vigilant. If he was not supported by his Spiritual Sense, it would be very difficult to tail them.

“Huh? They took a car?”

Tang Xiu was secretly vexed. Watching the 2 men board the Volkswagen, he quickly memorized the car's plate number as they bypassed him in high-speed. He then rushed forward to the residential building's front door and was quite lucky that he bumped into a cab when he got out from the residential area.

“Little Brother, where do you want to go?”

The fat driver cheerfully turned his head and asked.

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes as he used his Spiritual Sense to find that the 2 criminals' car was about to drive out. He quickly pulled out a few hundred yuan from his wallet, giving them to the driver and spoke, “Uncle, do you see that Volkswagen that just came out from the entrance? Follow it secretly and don't lose track of it. Do be very careful as not to get found out by those people in the car by any means.”

The fat driver hesitated, “Little Brother, you...”

Tang Xiu took a few more paper money from his wallet and handed them again. He was perfectly aware that money and wealth were even able to drive the Devils to work to death. Regardless of this society he was living in now or when he was in the Immortal World, this principle was the truest truth and truly useful.

It worked!

The fat driver gritted his teeth as he nodded and spoke, “Little Brother! Relax! This old brother often got asked to help trail others. These days, not only are men having affairs, but women also had illicit lovers. Ah, to think that these kinds of men and women who are fully satisfied with life blindly play crazily without purpose...”

Tang Xiu’s mouth twitched and curled up. He was quite amused and satisfied with this kind of misunderstanding. Tagging along with the cab driver’s words, he intentionally pretended to be angry, “If that loathsome woman in the car is really having an affair, I must really break her dog legs.”

Having heard it, the worries in the fat driver’s heart suddenly vanished.

10 minutes later.

Tang Xiu’s brows wrinkled. The distance between the two cars was only 30 or 40 meters, however, even though the cab driver was very careful, the Volkswagen’s driver in front was as vigilant as before.

“Uncle, slow down and get some distance from that car.”

The fat driver hesitated, “Little Brother, are you really thinking clearly? We could lose them if the car is too far away!”

Tang Xiu replied, “Uncle, relax! We will never lose them.”

The fat driver laughed and then spoke while smiling, “Little Brother, you don’t have a driver license, do you? I AM the driver, how come you are more confident than me?”

Tang Xiu smiled, but he didn’t say anything. The Spiritual Sense he had was just like a cheat skill in life. With such a skill in this new-era of the 21st century, it was only natural that he had the confidence.

A few minutes later...

The smile on the fat driver’s face quickly vanished. Whilst looking at the intersection’s traffic light ahead, he let out a wry smile, “Little Brother, we will lose them.”

Tang Xiu lightly replied, “Wait for the traffic lights and then speed up.”

The fat driver didn’t say anything.

After a few dozen seconds, the red light ended. The cab crossed the intersection and then accelerated forward immediately. But they quickly ran into the intersection's traffic light again.

“I can't see that car anymore.”

The fat driver spoke with a helpless tone.

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes before he lightly replied, “They didn't turn and are still moving forward. Do it just like before. After you've crossed the intersection, then accelerate.”

“This...”

The fat driver looked at Tang Xiu with an astonished expression. He had the urge to ask as to how Tang Xiu would know about it?

The next intersection...

Tang Xiu spoke in a deep tone, “Uncle, get ready to turn left.”

Turning left?

The fat driver's eyes rolled and secretly cursed in his heart, “Who the hell do you think you are? A tracking radar? Even I myself cannot see the car, how the hell will you know about it?”

After continuing moving forward along the road, a happy smile emerged on Tang Xiu's lips. Because when the cab was speeding up, his Spiritual Sense caught the Volkswagen again. The criminal who drove the car also had lowered his vigilance and no longer repeatedly looked at the rearview mirror again.

“Uncle, turn right in front.”

“Turn left at the intersection ahead.”

“Accelerate and overtake the two cars ahead...”

“...”

After turning left and right for nearly an hour, the fat driver was finally unable to bear again. With an angry expression, he mumbled, “Hey, Little Brother, are you playing me? I haven't seen that car for half an hour while you are continuing to give me directions blindly! How it is possible that we can overtake them?”

Tang Xiu's mouth tightened up before a smile surfaced on his face. He lightly laughed, “Uncle, you don't need to worry. My directions are absolutely correct. If you are willing, just speed up and you can see that car in the next intersection ahead.”

The fat driver stared blankly as his eyes glanced at the 700 or 800 yuan in the dashboard container in front of him. He then spoke, “Little Brother, you might not be deceiving me. But if your words can't be proved and we still cannot see that car, you must add 200

yuan more for me to pay the fine.”

“Deal!”

Tang Xiu grinned and smiled...

A few minutes later, the fat driver was dumbstruck. The Volkswagen was seen tens of meters ahead as a disbelieving expression flashed in his eyes.

“Flap, flap...”

Suddenly, he was slapping his own face a few times whilst driving the car. Because the slap was quite powerful, the sounds were clearly heard. His chubby face was flushed scarlet in an instant.

“Damn, am I dreaming? But... I can feel the pain. This is not a dream. But how the hell could he accurately determine that Volkswagen’s driving route? His eyes have always been looking ahead and I’m absolutely sure he has never once looked at his cell phone or such electronic tracking devices. This... I-I... who is this Little Brother I’m driving? Could he be a kind of god that descended to Earth?”

The look in the fat driver’s eyes when he saw Tang Xiu before and now was entirely different. After keeping silent for a short while, he was unable to hold his urge to ask, “Little Brother, if I were to slow down the speed, are you still able to determine that

car's driving route?"

Tang Xiu replied, "It's not a problem, but the car can't be too far away."

The fat driver's mouth twitched for a few times. He turned his head and showed a thumbs up toward Tang Xiu as he exclaimed in admiration, "Amazing! This Old Big Fatty rarely admires others. But I really admire you! You're just like a deity! Damn, if everyone were like you, maybe those companies that sell electronic tracking devices would have gone bankrupt and gotten kicked out of business."

More than 2 hours was spent in this trailing...

From the fat driver's words, Tang Xiu knew that the Volkswagen car had turned around and passed a lot of places in the urban district. Some of which were passed by twice. Eventually, the cab finally stopped near a dilapidated auto-repair garage.

"Little Brother, are you sure that your girlfriend hasn't found out? Her vigilance and counter-detection ability is way too high. Even though I have long been a cab driver and am very familiar with the streets in Star City, if it weren't for you directing me, I could have been left behind by her by more than 10 streets." The fat driver smiled wryly.

Tang Xiu only faintly smiled. He then thanked the fat driver as he gazed at him leaving. Then, Tang Xiu circled around the auto-repair garage as he quietly approached it from behind.

The auto-repair garage had already been dilapidated. It was full with bad and rotten stench everywhere. A tall man with a robust built was sweating all over his body full of muscles. His hand was holding repair tools as he was busy fixing a pickup truck.

Most of the building's side was covered with a canopy. The inside space was a few hundred meters wide and filled with broken spare car parts that could be seen everywhere. In the innermost corner, the kidnap victim, Zhao Jing, was tied with a rag stuffed in her mouth. Although her clothes were still fairly neat, some big footprints could be seen on it. Her face was swollen and bruised, which could be seen that she had been beaten up.

The 2 men who guarded her were drinking their liquor and smoking. A lot of empty liquor bottles, as well as cigarette packs were on the table in front of them. Moreover, there were also 2 guns and several three bladed Mitsubishi army knives.

“One-Eyed, those two are surely having some fun watching there, aren't they? Shall we execute our plan to videotape dismembering this b*tch's limbs and dissecting her internal organs? I'm perfectly sure that when we send the video to Yuan Zhengxuan and Yuan Chuling, that father and son's expression must be very f*cking marvelous.”

While putting on sunglasses, the one-eyed man revealed a cruel smile as his eyes swept over the Mitsubishi army knives. He then spoke with a cold tone, “This time, the revenge duty for 3rd Brother falls to Youngest Sister. Don't be f*cking fooled by his usual fake female-like appearance. His blade techniques and skills

are the best amongst all of us. And his 360 blades cut is like being dead but alive, even I'm also really vexed. This motherf*cking b*tch must be tortured while still alive with Youngest Sister's 360 blades cut."

"Bang....."

The shed building's door was kicked open as the frameless glasses man carried a laptop bag and strode in. The transvestite also followed behind him and carried a big travel bag.

"Yo... youngest sister, you've come back. How about your surveillance plays?"

The transvestite threw the travel bag down and replied with a happy expression, "Of course, it was f*cking damn cool! Those bunch of retarded cops were going back and forth to Star City First High School for 4 or 5 times. But those retards didn't find anything. You didn't know how those f*cking cops' faces looked like every time they left the school. Their f*cking dumb faces were as though their parents' had died."

The frameless glasses man swept away the liquor bottles on the table. He put his laptop bag on it and then said, "Now that bastard brat Yuan Chuling had already been picked up by the cops and his father's bodyguards. Youngest Sister had observed them through the binoculars and Yuan Chuling surely went to Yuan Zhengxuan's place."

The one-eyed man let out a ridicule, "They deserve to be called a

family, huh? Anyways, our snitch in the Public Security Bureau said that Yuan Zhengxuan has been very restless as this almost drove him crazy.

Unfortunately, he really has a good and strong heart. This psychological attack is neither causing him a heart attack nor vomiting blood and dying a tragic death.”

The transvestite spoke, “One-Eyed, when will we dissect this b*tch? After we kill this b*tch and that Yuan father and son, I wanna slit that brat Tang Xiu’s throat.”

The one-eyed man frowned and replied, “The hell you’re talking about that Tang Xiu’s brat? He’s just a retard! Why the hell are you killing him for? You also know that according to the information we had investigated, he is not the one who killed 3rd Brother.”

The transvestite man shook his head and said, “One-Eyed, I’ll really feel uneasy if we let that bastard brat Tang Xiu alive.”

One-Eyed waved his hand and spoke, “Fine, you can kill him later. The task to dissect this b*tch is yours, as 6th Brother is responsible for videotaping it. Remember that you must take the close-up shot when this b*tch’s face shows pained expressions. I want that f*cking brat Yuan Chuling to feel a hellish pain, like his heart is being twisted by a knife. Make him f*cking grieve and wish that he was better dead than alive.”

The transvestite rolled his eyes. He slammed his a*s on the chair as he made a hand gesture to the frameless glasses and said, “6th

Brother, this sl*t is a genuine b*tch. She also has good looks and body. Could it be that you don't want to stick your f*cking d*ck and r*pe this b*tch?"

The frameless glasses man chuckled and spoke, "Haha, 5th Brother truly understands me."

The transvestite cursed, "Bastard, you will know why I'm called the 5th Brother!"

Chapter 60: Nothing More Than Just An Idiot

Upon listening to the dialogue between the frameless glasses man and the transvestite, an intense and violent fear swelled up in Zhao Jing's heart, who was tied up and dumped in the corner. She had witnessed the ruthlessness and viciousness of these people. On the day when she was caught and brought here, she saw a young ravaged and then dismembered afterward. After having seen such a terrible bloody scene, she succumbed to fear for a long time now.

She prayed!

She prayed that her husband Yuan Zhengxuan or the police could find her here and save her. However, these people's talks simply had crushed and pushed her to a bottomless abyss.

“Woo woo...”

Her mouth was stuffed. Even if she wanted to shout and curse, she was helpless and had no means to do anything. She could only glare with murderous eyes and intensely stare at the frameless glasses man, who was approaching her step by step.

In the next 2 minutes, the frameless glasses man had dragged Zhao Jing to the next room. It was the dissecting and butchering room; the room was chaotic. Bloodstains as well as all kinds of dissecting tools could be seen everywhere inside it. A sponge mat full of filth was positioned at the innermost side as Zhao Jing then got thrown onto the sponge mat.

“Peony Flower also dies and will become ghost. This saying is truly applicable to your body, which has yet to feel that violated sensation, isn’t it? Today, this Big Daddy will make you taste it for the first time. After you have it, you can have your anguished wailing and die. Hahaha...”

Having finished talking...

He grabbed a pair of scissors and cut the rope that tied Zhao Jing, leaving only her hands and feet still tied.

Tang Xiu was hiding under the rear window of the dissecting room. He already enveloped the surrounding 100-meter radius with his Spiritual Sense. With his keen ears, he could clearly hear all the dialogues of the five men from inside the auto-repair garage. But never did he expect that the kidnapped woman would turn out to be Yuan Chuling’s mother. He had never thought that these kidnappers mistakenly targeted Yuan Chuling as their 3rd Brother’s murderer.

At first, Tang Xiu had no urge to rush and act.

It was because his cultivation right now had yet to reach the point that he would be able to avoid bullets. Let alone facing 3 guns and those five criminals. Had it been one or two people, he could have used his lightning speed and given no chance for them to shoot him. However, if 3 guns were to fire at him at the same time, either he would be badly injured or he would die.

But at this very moment, the threat was negligible...

The split second the frameless glasses man grinned fiendishly and was about to tear apart Zhao Jing's clothes, Tang Xiu instantly smashed the rear window glass as he rushed in lightning fast.

“What...”

The frameless glasses man had no fighting prowess. Although he had yet to kill anyone, but he was these butchers' partner in crime; the skill he had was really in the computer related tech and intelligence network. With such a quick speed and accurate strike from Tang Xiu, he could only shout a word as his voice was abruptly stopped because his throat was instantly torn apart.

“Bang...”

Tang Xiu raised his right foot as he whipped his leg to the frameless glasses man's face and kicked him in an instant, causing the man's body to hit the hard wall. However, the frameless glasses man did not instantly die, as both of his hands grabbed his neck where his throat was twitching. Tang Xiu only looked at him and then turned toward Zhao Jing's side. He gave a gesture and hinted her to stay silent before he removed the stuffed fabric in her mouth.

“Who are you?”

The moment her savior fell from the sky, it caused Zhao Jing to

be ecstatic. She understood Tang Xiu's instructions as she kept her voice to be as low as possible.

“You don't need to know who I am. You just need to know that I'm going to save you. I'll untie your hands and feet, and then you must escape from this place through this window.” Tang Xiu whispered at her.

Zhao Jing quickly asked, “What about you?”

Tang Xiu replied in a very solemn tone, “These people are fiends. Keeping them alive in this world will only let their scourge continue unleashed. I must exterminate all of them.”

Zhao Jing was speechless, “Are you sane? There are still 4 men here! Let alone they have guns, bullets, and knives. Are you blind or something? You... you must also escape along with me! Let's go out quickly and report to the police immediately! My husband can help. He has a lot of bodyguards!”

Are they really divorced?

An astonished expression instantly flashed in Tang Xiu's eyes before he shook his head and replied, “I've secretly eavesdropped their conversation. They have a mole inside the Public Security Bureau. Once we report to the cops, they will immediately receive the message to quickly escape. Now is a good chance to clean them up and catch all of them in one fell swoop. I can never let them off. Please be relieved! Such worthless thugs like them are not difficult to handle for me.”

Zhao Jing's complexion changed. She didn't expect that her kidnappers would be this resourceful, to the extent that they would have an insider mole in the Public Security Bureau.

"Then... Then you must be careful."

The talk had finished.

With Tang Xiu's help, Zhao Jing smoothly escaped from the rear window.

Inside the canopied building, the transvestite man and the one-eyed man were sitting leisurely as they smoked and drank their liquors. From time to time they gazed at the dissecting room's door with a strange expression. Their brother was there, the one amongst them who was unable to hold his lust was this 6th Brother.

"Huh? How come it's so loud there? The 6th Brother has never made such big noises each time he f*cked before. How could it be so noisy now?" The one-eyed man slowly realized that something was not right as he exclaimed with a surprised expression.

The transvestite man let out an evil smile and spoke, "6th Brother's condition seems to not be good. He could only f*ck this quick and be done. If I were really a woman I'd absolutely refuse such a c*nt crazy f*cker with limp d*ck! What the f*ck is with this 3 seconds d*ck?"

However, the one-eyed man was paranoid in nature. His complexion turned extremely solemn as he shook his head and spoke, “No! Something isn’t right. 4th Brother, let’s go there and take a look!”

The hazy eyed man was drunk. He stood up shakily as he conveniently took the gun on the table. Then, he walked staggeringly along with the one-eyed man to the dissecting room’s door.

“Bang...”

The one-eyed man kicked the door open as the drunken hazy-eyed man then walked swaggeringly toward the door. His vision was still blurry, but the moment his sight caught the frameless glasses man’s corpse on the floor, his pupil shrunk instantly. His body tightened and became tense in a split second.

“Puff.....”

A knife suddenly shot and pierced at the drunken man’s heart. Its tip stirred and pierced through his heart the next second. Heavy punches then followed as his chest was struck, sending his body flying outside the door and falling in front of the one-eyed man.

“F*cking bastard!!!”

The one-eyed man’s complexion turned into madness and fury as

he swiftly snatched the three bladed Mitsubishi army knife from his waist. He swept the drunken man's body and then rushed toward Tang Xiu. At the same time, due to the noises, the phoenix sturdy middle-aged man also grabbed a knife and gun and then rushed forward.

“All of you overrate yourself and attempted to do something impossible; much less you're overestimating your own abilities.”

Tang Xiu's cultivation had reached the peak of Vitality Tempering. His strength and speed had surpassed an ordinary person's limit. Due to his martial arts' realm, he needed no specific moves or styles. He could casually use any style and execute it perfectly. His keen eyes locked at the cold and glittering Mitsubishi army knife as he avoided it with an extremely quick movement. The dagger in his hand then slashed and tore open the one-eyed man's wrist that held the knife.

“What the f*ck?”

Feeling such a piercing and acute pain, his Mitsubishi army knife instantly fell as the one-eyed man then retreated back in a flash. He had already known Tang Xiu's identity. But he thought that he was just dreaming and confused since he was drunk. It was because... he believed that Tang Xiu was only just a damaged brainless idiot after he got into the car accident.

“Don't you f*cking move!!!”

More than 10 meters away, the transvestite man pointed his

gun's muzzle at Tang Xiu as he shouted with a stern voice.

Tang Xiu sneered as his body also jumped backward at the same time. Without the slightest hesitation, he then rushed out through the dissecting room's rear window. His strength was not enough to avoid the bullets yet. Before he had reached the Stars Tyrannical Body's second sub-stage, the Skin Strengthening Stage, he would not act just like an idiot who thought that he could meet head on with a bullet.

Assassination!

And sneak attacks!

In order to become Immortal, he had once lived and done these kinds of cruel actions in the brutal cultivation world. Even in extraordinary terrains and dangerous and hopeless situations, he was able to narrowly escape death and survive.

“Where the f*ck is he?”

The transvestite and the one-eyed man gathered together. They then rushed into the dissecting room and immediately saw the already smashed broken rear window's glass.

Murderous intention exuded from One-eyed's face as he spoke angrily, “We did analyze and consider everything. But never once did we ever think that f*cking bastard would be such an expert. It seems that the intelligence we got before was f*cked up big time!”

The transvestite man looked at his two dead brothers on the floor as sorrow and anger made his face violently twist. Then, he yelled out of hate and bitterness, “One-Eyed, haven’t I f*cking told you that bastard Tang Xiu had seen me? You said that you thought he’s just an idiot bastard, didn’t you? Now tell me, who killed 5th and 6th Brother, hah?”

One-eyed nodded and replied, “Yes, I know. We thought we had thoroughly investigated about Tang Xiu.”

He regretted it...

He was now full of regret. If the world had medicine for regret to sell, he would absolutely be willing to buy it with everything he had. Because if regret medicine truly existed and he took it, he would have neither overlooked Tang Xiu nor would he have blatantly ignored him and thought that he was just an idiot student.

“An idiot and nothing more!”

He vividly remembered these words he had said. Subconsciously, both of his palms lifted up and mercilessly slapped his own face. He was the one who had shamed himself. He was also the one who would loathe himself.

The transvestite man was flustered and exasperated as he cursed and shouted, “Haven’t I f*cking reminded you? But all you ever thought of was only that he was just a f*cking worthless retard that

never would have even the slightest f*cking strength to kill a chicken, right? What the f*ck is happening right now? That f*cking-worthless-bastard-idiot you thought of had just killed 5th and 6th Brother? There's no way in hell it was a f*cking god who had saved that s*utty b*tch Zhao Jing!!!”

The more his words spat out, the deeper the remorse the one-eyed man had. His eyes turned bloodshot as he looked at his 2 brother's corpses on the floor. He rushed out to the door and yelled furiously, “F*cking bastard Tang Xiu, get the f*ck out and face me if you really got the balls! I will show you that I'm gonna f*cking blast your balls off!”

However...

Apart from the reply from the empty echo, not even Tang Xiu's shadow could be seen.

Although the transvestite man was angry, he didn't lose his sense of logic. He was the most rational person amongst all of his brothers. He kept maintaining his vigilance as he walked near the one-eyed man and spoke in a deep tone, “One-Eyed, Tang Xiu is hiding in the dark, while we're standing open in the light. The situation is now against us. I believe that we must immediately retreat. Even having revenge 10 years later, a gentlemen's revenge will never be late. Even though we are criminals, we still must brew a plan to have our revenge.”

While holding the wounded wrist with his other hand, the one-eyed man walked into the canopied building as he then spoke, “Why the f*ck should I fear him? We still have guns. Today it's

either that bastard brat or us who will die here. It's f*cking shameful to just back out now."

"I'll stay. There still 3 of us... it's f*cking retarded if we're afraid of him... why the f*ck should we fear him? The burly and strong middle-aged man angrily cried.

'These two are blockheads.'

The transvestite man secretly cursed in his heart. He recalled the previous scene when he was monitoring Class 10 at the Star City First High School. Tang Xiu was looking at him from 1000 meters away. Suddenly, a cold and chilling sensation seeped into his body, as his mood turned slightly heavier.

If, and only if, by that time Tang Xiu really sensed and detected him from 1000 meters away, then he was absolutely not a fool, but instead a freaking frightening monster. And fighting with this kind of monster would only be like courting his own death.

It's just like ...

It's just like the 3rd, 5th and 6th Brother's fate... exactly!

Chapter 61: Are You A Human Or A Ghost?

The transvestite wanted to retreat, but he was perfectly aware of One-Eyed's personality. Once he decided on something, he would never back out. He wanted to save his life, and this meant that he had to find a chance to run away alone. As long as he could run from Tang Xiu, in such a big world, he could go anywhere.

If...

If they were to die here, it wouldn't be too late to take out revenge and wipe out this grudge toward Tang Xiu later, after he had mixed with other powerful people!

“Bang.....”

10 meters away from the three, a sound transmitted from the car parts pile mess.

“Over there!”

Their complexion changed, and they turned extremely alert. Their eyes locked onto the sound's source. One-eyed braved himself and hinted his two other companions as he walked to the side, whilst his left hand held the three-bladed army knife as he walked over to the sound's direction. They didn't notice that a pair of eyes were preying on them behind the 2 car frames 10 meters in front of them.

“Eldest Brother One-Eyed, 2 fists cannot win against 4 hands. We have 3 knives and 2 guns. Even though that brat is powerful, he’s not our match.” The burly man’s complexion was ferocious as a terrifying murderous intent was exuded from him, as though it was able to s**k and devour souls. Amongst all of them, he was the one who had the most powerful fighting prowess.

However...

The moment he just finished speaking, a figure suddenly appeared lightning fast. The shadow swiftly and fiercely rushed and kicked him from the side. The strong guy lifted his left arm reflexively to block it as a bone cracking sound was then heard. At the same time, a dagger moved in a strange trajectory and pierced his left arm’s armpit.

“Aaah.....”

A shrill scream, that could make people’s blood run cold, howled.

A strong murderous intent was exuded from Tang Xiu. His hand to hand combat and its process was extremely sharp and skillful. He pulled out the knife from the strong guy’s armpit in a flash and powerfully punched the strong guy’s body as it flew straight toward the one-eyed man and the transvestite.

“F*ck...”

One-eyed’s complexion changed greatly as he frantically tried to

avoid get hit by the strong guy's body. He brandished his army knife and ferociously stabbed Tang Xiu. He didn't have the assurance to block Tang Xiu's piercing blow, but he believed that as long as he could tangle Tang Xiu, the transvestite would shoot Tang Xiu with the gun.

“Bang bang bang ...”

The transvestite indeed shot at Tang Xiu. But it was a hasty shot and was easily dodged by Tang Xiu. Never once the one-eyed man ever thought that the transvestite man would swiftly run toward the door and run after shooting, leaving him behind. Tang Xiu's unpredictable moves and elusiveness as well as his violent killing, left him a huge mental dread.

“Youngest sister, you ...”

Previously, taking advantage of Tang Xiu's dodging movements to avoid the bullet, the one-eyed man burst forward in a flash. But never once he ever dreamed that his sworn brother would abandon him and flee alone. At this very moment, his hate toward the transvestite who betrayed and left him alone was much more than the hate he had toward Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu also hadn't thought that the transvestite would choose to run away at this time. If he didn't run, it would've been more difficult to deal with these three.

But now...

Tang Xiu coldly smiled. He quickly knocked down the already severely hit strong guy and the one-eyed man with fast and powerful strikes, leaving them with fatal injuries.

“He must not escape!”

Tang Xiu kicked oone-eyed man, making him faint. Then, he rushed forward and chased the runaway transvestite. In his spiritual sense, the transvestite man had already run about 50-60 meters ahead and was not too far away.

He sprinted and chased.

The distance between them was getting closer...

The transvestite, who was running ahead, turned his head in panic as an aghast expression could be seen on his face when he saw Tang Xiu's extreme speed. At the same time, he also cursed the 2 useless people who didn't even give decent resistance.

The car!

His eyes turned bright! He suddenly rushed forward, toward the Volkswagen. After he quickly entered the car, he immediately started it and locked the car's door.

“Bye-bye!”

As the car started, the transvestite laughed in a provocative manner toward Tang Xiu.

“Humph!”

Tang Xiu coldly snorted and threw the dagger in a flash. With 1500 kg of arm strength, the dagger pierced through the glasses in front of the driver seat and accurately hit the transvestite’s neck.

“Bang...”

The Volkswagen had already started, but since the transvestite was hit, the car drove forward and hit a pickup truck.

“I told you that you cannot run!”

Tang Xiu sprinted toward the Volkswagen’s driving seat as he grabbed the transvestite’s hair. He forced his head out of the window and then fiercely punched his face.

Having finished the transvestite, Tang Xiu directly returned to the warehouse garage. Although he already solved those criminals, but he needed the information from them about the cop snitch in Public Security Bureau, who had informed their gang.

“Don’t struggle! Today, you die. The only difference is if you can have a happy death or get tortured to death! I believe you’ve long known that you’ll die. So I will give you a last choice before you enter the gates of hell.”

The strong guy let out a mirthless smile as he looked at the wound on his body and spoke, “You wanna f*cking torture me to death? F*ck, I have a fatal injury, even if you want... cough, you’ll never f*cking be able to prolong the time. Don’t f*ck with me!”

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes as his finger pointed at the spot near the strong guy’s wound in a flash.

“What the..?”

The strong guy’s eyes got bigger as his face turned aghast. His wound no longer bled after Tang Xiu used his finger to pointed the spot near his wound a few times.

Tang Xiu coldly spoke, “Even if you don’t believe me, I’ll make you believe it. You won’t die quickly. At least, you can still live 1 or 2 hours. In these 2 hours, I’ll dissect you and keep your consciousness intact. You’ll witness your blood and flesh reduced part by part.”

The strong guy desperately swallowed saliva as he spoke in a flabbergasted expression, “The point... that finger point technique, what the hell are you?”

Tang Xiu replied, “Huh? I didn’t expect you even knew about the finger point technique.”

The strong guy coughed some blood, and with a somewhat awed

expression in his eyes, he replied, “My boxing master sometime ago practiced Kungfu. Although his skills were not as terrifying as the legend, but it was quite powerful! The f*cking thing was that he didn’t want to teach me that internal strength cultivation technique!”

“Why?”

Tang Xiu’s curiosity was piqued.

The strong guy bitterly replied, “What else? That old chap thought that my conducts are bad, vicious, and ruthless. But how the f*ck will I survive and make my name in this brutal environment if I’m not ruthless enough?”

Bad conduct?

Tang Xiu suddenly realized. This was indeed the case with martial arts practitioners on Earth. The society didn’t allow martial artists to fight ruthlessly. However, he didn’t have the same principle. The Immortal World’s circumstances were countless of times more brutal than Earth’s. It was inhuman in the truest essence. Only ones with sufficient strength and ruthlessness would be able to survive and go on living there. He had stepped on mountains of corpses and gone through countless bloodshed to become one of the Supremes in the Immortal World.

“Back to my question. Tell me, who is your gang’s snitch in the Public Security Bureau? Relax, my words have always had enormous weight. As long as you tell the truth, I won’t let you

suffer!”

With a dejected expression, the strong guy replied, “The winner has always been the king, since I’ve lost to you, I’ll tell you. But you have to promise me one thing.”

Tang Xiu replied indifferently, “You are not qualified to talk about conditions with me.”

The strong guy spoke straightforwardly, “If you want to kill me, just kill me; you have that chance. But at least hear me before I die, so I have no grievance over life and die peacefully.”

Tang Xiu frowned. He did not want to waste time here. Zhao Jing had been saved, and he believed that she had reported to the police. It wouldn’t be a long time that a large number of police would rush to this place. After returning to this world, he was perfectly aware that murders are against the law, even though it was done to save others. Even though the people he killed were extremely evil and law’s heavy offenders, but he still would be implicated, and it would give him much trouble.

“Say your conditions.” Tang Xiu replied indifferently.

With a bitter and astringent expression, he spoke, “Actually, it’s not a condition. It’s just my request. Eldest Brother One-eyed and I are the same, we are fated to be doomed. But when we die, I hope that when you have some time later, you can go north, to the Phoenix City. Eldest Brother’s grandma is still alive there and is also his only family member now.”

Tang Xiu said, “And what you want me to do?”

“I have stashed more than tens of thousands in cash. If you meet One-eyed’s grandma, give it to her.”

“I give you my word.”

Tang Xiu nodded. Humans have always been two-sided in nature. Regardless of any person, whether they were ruthless and evil in their entire lives, they would still have a soft spot deep down inside. Such as himself, he had killed countless people to the extent that he even could be called as cold-blooded slaughterer. But the one he was most worried and missed, was his mother.

The strong guy then nodded heavily, “Li Tao, our snitch in the Public Security Bureau Information Section, Li Tao.”

Tang Xiu no longer talked. He took the Mitsubishi army knife on the ground and directly gave the strong guy a happy-quick death. Then, he woke One-eyed up.

“You ... what the f*ck are you?”

One-eyed woke up from his fainted condition. He then saw that the strong guy had died as the transvestite’s corpse that had been thrown aside. His heart instantly fell down to the abyss as it chilled down to the extreme.

Tang Xiu spoke, “Tell me, who is your snitch in the Public Security Bureau?”

Extreme hatred filled One-eyed’s eyes as he roared crazily, “Find him in your f*cking dream! Hell no will I tell you! You just f*cking wait! Even though we have died, we’ll find everything possible to have our revenge. Sooner or later this debt of blood will be paid with your life!”

Tang Xiu spoke coldly, “Northern Phoenix City, your grandmother.”

What?

One-eyed looked at Tang Xiu with a disbelieving expression as tidal waves of fear struck his all the nerves in his body. Nobody in his gang knew about his grandmother, except...

But...

How the f*ck did this bastard in front of him know about it?

“You... what the hell are you? Are you a human or a ghost?”

With a ruminating expression, Tang Xiu smiled at one-eyed and then spoke, “Even if ghosts have gone to heaven, if I wanted to, I can still exterminate those ghosts.”

Chapter 62: Good News

Star City Golden Emperor, Villa District

Yuan Zhengxuan's complexion was gloomy as anxiety and restlessness filled his heart. Zhao Jing had been kidnapped for a long time and the danger was getting bigger. He hated those kidnappers as well as hated the incompetence he and the police had. Not even the slightest hints could be found regarding Zhao Jing's whereabouts.

He had confirmed that his wife's kidnappers were in the same group with the crazy murderer who hijacked Star City First High School. He also had correctly guessed that they kidnapped his wife for revenge.

"Xiao Ling, can you contact your classmate?"

Yuan Zhengxuan looked at his son, who repeatedly dialed the phone, and asked with a deep and worried expression.

With a bitter expression and tone, Yuan Chuling shook his head, "I can't contact him! He shut his phone down. Dad, Tang Xiu had left school at almost precisely the same time as Mom got kidnapped. Do you think there could be any coincidence about it?"

Yuan Zhengxuan was still silent. But then his vision shifted over to Public Security Bureau's Director Deng Jianmin and the Criminal Police's Captain Cheng Xuemei, who still had yet to leave.

“The possibility is very slim. Zhao Jing was kidnapped near her office, as at that time Tang Xiu was still studying at school. The distance between the two places is about tens of kilometers away. Unless Tang Xiu has foresight, else it would be almost impossible that the event has any connection to Zhao Jing’s kidnapping. Besides, he’s just only a high schooler.” With a deep and low voice, Deng Jianmin replied.

Yuan Zhengxuan then spoke, “But, Tang Xiu is also missing. Have the police looked for him? He has been missing for 2-3 days and you haven’t found him, right?”

Cheng Xuemei replied, “This is indeed very strange. We have sent someone to his home and inquired about it. He hasn’t come back home, even his mother doesn’t know his whereabouts.”

“Ring Ring Ring...”

Yuan Zhengxuan’s phone suddenly rang. His complexion changed as he ran over the coffee table and grabbed his phone. Seeing an unfamiliar phone number, he suddenly frowned.

“Answer it!”

Deng Jianmin quickly followed and spoke.

Yuan Zhengxuan pressed the answer button and activated the loudspeaker mode. He then spoke in a deep tone, “I’m Yuan

Zhengxuan, who is this?”

“Husband, It’s me... it’s me, Zhao Jing.”

Yuan Zhengxuan’s eyes instantly contracted as he cried loudly, “What? Jing’er? Are you really Jing’er? Where are you? Tell me quickly!”

“Husband, I am on the cab right now and am rushing to your house. I’m using the cab driver’s phone!”

“Jing’er, you... Did those kidnappers release you? Do you know that I was almost driven crazy worrying about you?”

“Husband, Those damned kidnappers didn’t release me. T-There is... someone else who rescued me! Ah yes, quickly send people to the abandoned auto-repair garage on the Deep Red Cloud Road in Peaceful Serene District. My savior is still there. Also, don’t call the cops yet, my savior said that there’s a snitch in the police station.”

Deng Jianmin and Cheng Xuemei gasped. Their eyes showed a hard-to-believe expression. There was a snitch in the police station? How could this be?

Suddenly, they realized that those criminals were able to get news ahead of time when the police were hunting them since they had always been able to escape before the police arrived.

Could it be that... there really was a mole in the police station?

Yuan Zhengxuan glared angrily at Deng Jianmin and Cheng Xuemei. He then spoke in deep and angered tone, “I’ll immediately inform everyone to rush to that auto-repair garage. Jing’er, you’re on the cab, right? Where’s your position right now? Tell me your plate number, I’ll send someone... No!!! I’ll go myself to pick you up!”

“Good...”

The call ended.

Yuan Zhengxuan angrily spoke, “You cops are really damn f*cking great! You even have a mole and traitor amongst you! You’re a damn f*cking model of this country’s Internal Affairs’ employees. You heard my wife speaking. I don’t want your f*cking cops to follow me. I’ll send my own men to solve the problem in that auto-repair garage!!”

“No!” A burst of colors alternating between green and white covered Deng Jianmin’s complexion, but he still spoke with a strong tone.

With a hesitating expression, Cheng Xuemei quickly spoke when she saw that Yuan Zhengxuan was on the verge of raging, “Mr. Yuan, since the situation at that auto-repair garage is truly urgent and critical, it would be for the best for the police force to act. Those kidnappers are not people we could play with easily. All of them are A-ranked wanted criminals. Each and everyone of them is a bloody murderer. My Criminal Police squad had been tracking

and investigating the case for a few years. Besides, each and everyone of us is an elite with clean records. We absolutely have no traitors in our ranks. How about having us help you to solve this problem?”

Yuan Zhengxuan hesitated for a moment before he nodded and replied, “Fine! But apart from you, not even a soul could learn about this!”

Deng Jianmin hurriedly followed, “I’ll also go!”

At the abandoned auto-repair garage on Deep Red Cloud Road, Peaceful Serene District.

Tang Xiu was still in the warehouse as he looked at the ashen expression of the dying one-eyed man. He coldly spoke, “I’ve given you the chance to speak. Now, you tell me or face the consequences.”

The one-eyed man was silent.

He did not want to sell out his brother. He hoped and looked forward to avenging his brothers and wiping off these grudges. However, he was also perfectly aware that the youth in front of him was very ruthless and merciless. If he didn’t tell him, his grandmother would be implicated. He was raised by his grandmother, and she was the person he most cared about.

What should he do?

With such a dilemma, a battle raged in his heart as he fell into deep hesitation.

“I will count down from 3. If you don’t want to answer my question, it’s your choice, since I have given you the options. Of course, I have to tell you that your dead brother had already told me who the snitch in the police station is. I just want to confirm it from your f*cking mouth.” Tang Xiu’s words were as though a gigantic hammer had smashed a layer of conviction in One-Eyed’s heart.

“3, 2, 1...”

“OKAY, OKAY, I’ll tell you!”

Pain stabbed One-Eyed’s heart, but he still chose to protect his grandmother in the final moment.

Tang Xiu coldly spoke, “Who is it?”

One-eyed gritted his teeth and spoke, “It’s Li Tao, and he’s the Deputy Chief of the Public Security Bureau Information Section.”

“It’s really him!”

Tang Xiu sneered. He slit One-Eyed’s throat with the Mitsubishi army knife and pierced his heart. After he killed One-Eyed, he dug

out the hole in the most corner side of the wall, as he then took a plastic bag full of paper money and directly left.

In fact, had these criminal not threatened him, he was disinclined to clean them up. But since Yuan Chuling's mother was kidnapped, he definitely had to act.

However, the most important thing to do for him right now was to make money. He needed to cultivate himself, and this required a lot of medicinal herbs, resources, and precious ores. Only when he had massive wealth would he be able to buy these essential necessities and prevent his cultivation advancement from being bogged down.

As for the plan to make money, he had already planned about it. The aspect he was lacking right now was that he had no professional manager to handle the business. However, he had entrusted it to Long Zhengyu to find him a professional manager. And by calculating the time, it was almost time that Long Zhengyu found the right professional manager for him.

Half an hour later...

Tang Xiu took off his bloodstained jacket and threw it to the river he passed by, as he watched it get washed and drowned by river water. He didn't return to the school and instead went back to his villa in the South Gate Town district.

“Ah?!”

When Tang Xiu had entered the villa's center hall, dust had covered it. He recalled that when he just received this villa, the developer was taking care of the villa's cleanness. However, since he became the owner, the developer stopped taking care of the villa and also had no rights to send people to clean it again.

“Such a big villa like this, even if I were to look for a maid, I can tell that one wouldn't be enough. Should I look for a professional butler to take care of this house just like in those TV series?”

Tang Xiu smiled wryly and shook his head. He didn't have the luxury to hire a professional butler or housekeeper. He went straight upstairs and took a bath, and then took and wore a clean set of casual wears in the wardrobe that Long Zhengyu had already prepared in advance before.

The villa's main room was on the second floor. The entire master bedroom was hundreds of square feet big, and the interior decorations were full of luxurious stuff that could even make people's blood boil. He hadn't had a good rest these days and was preparing to rest. However, he wanted to contact Long Zhengyu and ask about the professional manager arrangement.

The moment he thought to call Long Zhengyu, he recalled that his cell phone had long been shut down. He quickly took out the phone and booted it. He had yet to call Long Zhengyu's number as series of missed calls and SMS reminder rang unceasingly.

Tang Xiu recalled the scene of large numbers of missed calls when he had gone practicing before. He didn't expect that it would happen again in this time. He glanced over at the missed call and

couldn't help revealing a helpless look. Apart from Han Qingwu and Long Zhengyu's number, there was also several unfamiliar numbers of which also had called him for tens of times.

“Huh? Yuan Chuling even called me 42 times? It seems he already knew that his mother was kidnapped and perhaps had already guessed that I was gone from school and was connected with his mother's kidnapping.”

Tang Xiu thought for a moment before he decided not to call Yuan Chuling temporarily. He had rescued his mother, and there should be no more incidents. As for Han Qingwu, who had been used and deceived, she was perhaps furious and wished to find and ruthlessly bash him. She... also didn't need to be contacted for a while.

Half a minute later...

Tang Xiu dialed Long Zhengyu's number.

“Big Brother Long, its Tang Xiu. Sorry for troubling you, how's the professional manager hunt?”

“Ah, Little Brother Tang, I never thought that you would take the initiative to contact me. I've called you for a few times, but you shut your phone down. The professional manager I'll be recommending to you is a bit special. Do you have the time to meet in person?” Long Zhengyu's tone was somewhat spirited, as though he had found something good.

Special?

A surprised expression flashed in Tang Xiu's eyes as he then slowly spoke, "Well, let's meet then! Where are you now? I'll rush over to your place!"

Long Zhengyu laughed, "I am in the South Gate Town's Real Estate management office."

Tang Xiu said, "OK, 10 minutes."

After hanging up the phone, Tang Xiu hesitated for a while and dialed another number. It was an unfamiliar number, but this was the number that had called him the most times.

"Hello, are you Tang Xiu?"

The call was picked up. A woman's voice hastily transmitted before Tang Xiu was even able to speak.

"Yes, it's me! Who is this speaking?"

Chapter 63: The Slaughterhouse

A somewhat delightful and a bit hurried voice was then transmitted through the phone, “I am Cheng Xuemei, Public Security Bureau’s Star City’s Criminal Division! Tang Xiu, where are you now? I need to see you.”

Cheng Xuemei?!

Tang Xiu secretly let out a forced smile. He already knew that the Public Security Bureau would pay attention had those criminals been dealt with. But he had never thought that the one who would find him would be Cheng Xuemei. However, he didn’t want to deal with anyone from the Public Security Bureau, so he had already prepared a countermeasure beforehand.

“Officer Cheng, do you have something to ask me? I am very busy recently if there is no particularly important thing, I don’t want to be disturbed.” Tang Xiu probed for something he had already known.

“It is very important!”

Cheng Xuemei’s tone increased a bit.

Tang Xiu replied, “Then you can come to the South Gate Town! Ah right. I just came out from my house and now am about to meet a friend at the Real Estate Management Office.”

“South Gate Town? Your house?”

An exclamation was transmitted from the phone. Cheng Xuemei was surprised.

Tang Xiu secretly laughed in his heart. He was aware that Cheng Xuemei must have investigated his background. But she apparently had never thought that he could have a house in South Gate Town.

“What is it? Is there any problem?”

“No, no... this... I’ll catch up with you later.”

At the Peaceful Serene District, Deep Red Cloud Road...

A few cars rushed over and stopped at an abandoned auto-repair garage. In one of the police cars, Cheng Xuemei, who sat in the co-pilot seat, hang up the phone with a stunned expression. She suddenly realized that her investigation toward Tang Xiu seemed to have missed some very important things.

“What is it?”

Deng Jianmin, who sat on the back seat, was keenly aware of Cheng Xuemei’s unusual expression as he asked her.

Cheng Xuemei turned her head as she frowned for a moment before speaking, “Tang Xiu called me. He said that he was at home

in South Gate Town.”

“South Gate Town?!! I’ve read Tang Xiu’s investigation data. How could he possibly have a house in the South Gate Town? The people living there are the most wealthy and respectable people in Star City. He...” Deng Jianmin’s body suddenly sat straight stiff as a disbelieving expression suddenly filled his eyes.

Cheng Xuemei smiled and said, “I’m also clueless about this.”

Deng Jianmin heaved a deep breath as he spoke in a deep tone, “We’ll take care of the auto-repair garage first. After we handle it, you immediately go to the South Gate Town and see Tang Xiu. Do remember to clearly investigate his situation thoroughly.”

“Yes Sir!” Cheng Xuemei nodded.

Shortly after, a few cars broke into the abandoned auto-repair garage. Deng Jianmin and Cheng Xuemei led the other 7 or 8 SWAT elites, as more than 10 experts under Yuan Zhengxuan also got off quickly. They found the Volkswagen, that had its front glass already broken and had hit the pickup truck, as bloodstains could be seen on the driver seat.

“There was a fight here!!!”

With her vast investigation experience, Cheng Xuemei could decisively make a correct judgment.

Deng Jianmin nodded as he saw that the SWAT team's members had pulled their guns. He then issued a command with a gloomy expression, "Take a look inside! Do be very careful. Those criminals must be apprehended. If necessary, kill on sight!"

"Yes!" The SWAT team's members shouted in unison.

Cheng Xuemei was adventurous and brave in nature. She was well known as the "daring female officer who dares to risk life". Under her leadership, everyone quickly hid and protected each other, and rushed toward the warehouse.

"Blood smell?"

The complexion of a SWAT member with a very sensitive nose suddenly changed.

Shortly after...

When Cheng Xuemei and the other squad members rushed into the warehouse, the scene instantly made them stupefied. 3 corpses were lying in a pool of blood in the middle of the warehouse. One of the corpses was stabbed with a Mitsubishi army knife, as guns and other knives were also there.

Cheng Xuemei quickly identified the dead bodies. She was shocked after she found that these people were all A-ranked criminals in the wanted list, the very targets of the operation.

“Captain, there’s something in the next room.” One of the cops shouted.

Cheng Xuemei was startled as she ran straight toward the next room. The moment she had just entered the dissection room, her head was struck by huge waves caused by the situation in front of her.

The room was full of torturing and dissecting devices and reeked with a thick scent of blood. Blood could be seen on the ground, the wall, and basically everywhere. The scene that made her aghast was the 2 dead bodies laid on the floor soaked in a pool blood. The 2 dead men’s bodies were also A-ranked wanted criminals.

“Dead? Are they all dead?”

Cheng Xuemei’s body was dead stiff, as her eyes contracted, and body turned sluggish. She came here and was ready to have a combat and fight, even had the conviction to sacrifice herself. Each and everyone of these criminals were after all human organ traffickers as well as bloody vicious and merciless murderers. Solely relying on their SWAT detachment as well as Yuan Zhengxuan’s men, there would still be casualties had they fought these criminals.

However! How could this scene happen?

Suddenly, Cheng Xuemei recalled Zhao Jing’s words from the call before. Could it be that the one who killed these criminal was the youth that had saved Zhao Jing?

Who could he be? Tang Xiu?

“Captain, what should we do now?”

One of the cops swallowed his saliva and solemnly asked.

She took a deep breath and suppressed the shock in her heart before she replied, “Take care to protect the crime scene here and collect important clues. Although these criminals are truly damned and evil, but still they deserve to be judged under the legal law, and not be punished by some unknown vigilantes. We should find that vigilante!”

“Yes Mam!”

The SWAT members respectfully nodded.

Deng Jianmin also rushed to the dissecting room afterward. But when he saw the scene inside the room, the shock he got was almost impossible to be conveyed with words. He had been in the force for more than a decade, and had seen numerous types of cases. But never once did he ever encounter such a situation like now.

“Director Deng, Captain Cheng, we found a cellar in the vicinity, there are... there are a lot of dead bodies inside. We’re now conducting an inspection there.”

“What have you found?!”

Deng Jianmin’s expression immediately changed.

Half a minute later, they saw the cellar near the warehouse. After they counted, there were 23 corpses with their internal organs completely removed.

“Is this a f*****g slaughterhouse?”

Deng Jianmin’s face turned deathly pale. He knew he was ruined. Such a big case happened in his city’s jurisdiction meant that his career would come to an abrupt end. His complexion turned a few years older in a flash.

Cheng Xuemei had never thought that she would see so many dead bodies, and quickly conveyed her orders, “Contact intelligence officers. Compile information related to people who were missing recently and send them to my phone.”

“Wait, stop...”

Deng Jianmin’s heart was in a mess, but he still didn’t lose his mind as he immediately shouted and stopped them.

Cheng Xuemei was confused, “Director Deng, what are you...”

Deng Jianmin replied with a cloudy expression and spoke, “Have

you forgotten the call from Zhao Jing? If we do really have moles in our ranks, once you passed this news, it would alert them. We'll investigate this case ourselves by any means necessary and also drag those moles out of their holes.”

“Understood!” Cheng Xuemei nodded.

A pondering expression flashed in Deng Jianmin's eyes before he spoke in a deep tone, “Today's situation is too unusual. Now, go to South Gate Town to see Tang Xiu. Leave this place to me. Do bear in mind that you must figure out by any means the reason why he was missing recently, and his alibi today.”

“Yes!” Cheng Xuemei complied. But when she had just walked for a few steps she suddenly stopped, “Director Deng, don't we have to report the case first?”

Deng Jianmin's expression changed as he probed, “Your meaning...”

Cheng Xuemei replied, “You are the Bureau Director. Our squad members thought that under your leadership we have succeeded in cracking a lot of important cases.”

“This...”

Deng Jianmin's heart moved.

If he was to report truthfully, the consequences would be grave.

It would shame and crack open the police's honor and reputation. However, if he changed the reports' contents that he personally led the investigation and cracked the case, perhaps... the aftermath would be favorable!

“Then the ones who killed them...”

Cheng Xuemei was silent. She was perfectly aware of the meaning of Deng Jianmin's words. Once the report's contents were changed, it meant that the true killer would be concealed. Truthfully speaking, she really admired the hero who had “enforced the justice under the heavenly law”. These abominable criminals who mutilated the victims and traded their internal organs truly deserved to be killed, but the legal laws...

“Director Deng, these people are truly evil.”

Another police officer's tone spoke in a somewhat agitated expression as he spoke in a tone full of deep hatred.

Cheng Xuemei's eyes swept his face and then fell onto the dead body that was being carried. Her heart steeled and spoke in a solemn tone, “True, they are not human.”

Deng Jianmin's lips twitched a few times before he spoke with great difficulty, “Thank you...”

The South Gate Town's Real Estate management office was located in the central area of the entire district. It was a 2-storey building with Western-style architecture that covered the area of 2000 square meters. The office had no fence and was guarded with stern and solemn security guards at the post guard. Neat flower beds were arranged in the courtyard as numerous colorful red and purple flowers were planted on it. At one side, a few large sun umbrellas were placed along with tables and chairs underneath.

Long Zhengyu was smiling and looked at the direction of the main villa's direction from time to time. A handsome youth sat in front of him as one of his legs was on top of the one with a cigarette in his lips. His manners were aloof and arrogant as a middle-aged man with glasses and holding a suitcase stood beside him.

"Young Master Long, who is the respected friend of yours that you've been waiting for? He's even worth your waiting?" Gu Yuetao was feeling uncomfortable. Long Zhengyu originally accompanied him to look at the villa's information in South Gate Town, as he planned to buy a villa after having gotten the information. However, after Long Zhengyu got a phone call from someone and then waited for him personally, it made him and the others stunned.

A loathing expression flashed in Long Zhengyu's eyes before he solemnly spoke, "He is my friend, and also our Long Family's benefactor. I also must add that if anyone dares to offend him, then it's equal to offending our Long Family also."

Gu Yuetao was startled and quickly restrained the ill-felt mood he

had.

Although he was proud and arrogant, but he didn't dare to show it off in front of Long Zhengyu, because he was perfectly aware of Long Zhengyu's identity, as well as the Long Family's power.

Chapter 64: Provocation

The desire for wealth had crossed the flow of time and ages as the power of money was the main drive that composed the sonata of desires in a human's heart. People might say that everyone was born equal, but once one had achieved a certain level in life, they would come to the truest understanding that – the world was divided into classes.

Although Gu Yuetao was not at the top of the pyramid's food chain, but he was the only party municipal first secretary's son, so he also aware about this truth.

He couldn't help but probe as he whispered, "Young Master Long seems to pay a lot of attention to this friend of yours. He must be a big shot, right? Is it possible for you to introduce me to him?"

Long Zhengyu nodded. He had long known about Gu Yuetao's behavior and was very clear about his conduct. Relying on his father's influence, Gu Yuetao had been running rampant in Star City. He could be described as arrogant, bossy, and frivolous. He had done numerous bad conducts in the recent years, people even lost count of it. Had it not been for his father cleaning up his mess, he would perhaps have to spend his life in prison.

"He came!"

7 or 8 minutes later, Long Zhengyu was happy as he immediately got up and walked forward to greet Tang Xiu.

“Big Brother Long!”

A strange, funny, and amused feeling filled Tang Xiu’s heart. If his 10,000 years of life was to be counted, he was an old Gu monster. But he called a mere slightly over 20-year-old youngster big brother.

Long Zhengyu laughed, “Little Brother Tang, you’re one of the people that is even more difficult to meet than ascending to heaven! Long Zhenglin has been calling for so many times, but you have never answered his call even once.”

With a somewhat apologizing expression, Tang Xiu replied, “Ah, I’m really sorry. I don’t have a habit of using my cell phone. Not to mention that the battery runs out and I can’t find it. Anyways, who’s this?”

Long Zhengyu glanced at Gu Yuetao and answered, “He’s Gu Yuetao, my friend. The reason I came to South Gate Town is also because my friend wants to sell his villa, and Gu Yuetao is the one who wants to buy it. So I came over and lent a hand.”

Tang Xiu suddenly realized as he nodded at Gu Yuetao, and then asked, “I didn’t disturb you, did I?”

Long Zhengyu laughed, “It’s fine.”

Gu Yuetao had never once expected that the very friend that Long Zhengyu had paid a lot of attention to would be a youngster.

Although he also could tell that this youngster had an extraordinary bearing, however, he couldn't help but feel contempt inside. He only casually nodded and asked, "Little Brother Tang seems very young. What's your respected occupation?"

Little Brother Tang?!

Tang Xiu's brows slightly slanted, as he couldn't help but feel slightly cold toward Gu Yuetao. He could accept Long Zhengyu calling him "Little Brother Tang", since he had quite a friendship with him, as well as for the sake of Long Zhenglin. But Gu Yuetao's look toward him was focused on his surface appearance, and he spoke with such frivolous words and tone, giving him an ill-feeling.

"Student!"

Considering Long Zhengyu's face, Tang Xiu replied him with an indifferent tone and spoke thoughtlessly.

Gu Yuetao was also keenly aware of Tang Xiu's attitude. Anger suddenly rose in his heart. However, since he had yet to know Tang Xiu's real identity, he was still able to patiently tolerate it, and didn't rage out. He then spoke lightly, "Little Brother Tang, since Young Master Long has acknowledged you as a friend, you should have a very big background, shouldn't you?"

Background?

Coldness flashed in Tang Xiu's eyes now.

He was a cultivator in the Immortal World and had killed countless of arrogant young masters because he had a deep disgust about those young masters with a background. As the saying goes, "someone who only relied on their parents, never once will they be able to become a real man". One could only be a real man if they were tempered with tribulations and constantly strived to improve themselves. Their fighting spirit wouldn't flinch even if they had to go against the heavens.

Besides, if someone respected him for an inch, he would give him ten inches of respect.

Rarely would Tang Xiu take the initiative to provoke others, but if others provoked him, he had always been ready to pay the blood with blood and exchange a tooth for a tooth. Hence, he chose to ignore this kind of chap at present.

"Big Brother Long, about that professional manager issue, is there something wrong?"

Long Zhengyu was also angry seeing Gu Yuetao's attitude. However, he was a businessman and it was inevitable to have contacts and deals with people from the government. Not to mention that the Long Family's businesses were quite large and inextricably linked with the government. Even if Gu Yuetao's father did not have real power, he still was the municipal level party's first secretary and had a special status, and was not someone who could easily be offended by many people.

But since he saw Tang Xiu directly ignore Gu Yuetao, he was also disinclined to pay attention anymore. He then looked at Tang Xiu and spoke, “There’s nothing wrong, but I have something important to discuss with you.”

Then...

He asked Tang Xiu to sit down and continued, “A few days ago, my 2 good friends from Beijing came to my office. I heard from them that 3 years ago the Gold-ranked professional manager, Kang Xia, who was working at the World Financial Center Wall Street had come back and now has resigned from the Beijing’s Pang Group. If you can, you can go to Beijing and personally invite her.”

“Kang Xia?” Tang Xiu was confused, “Is this person really good?”

“She’s great!”

Long Zhengyu replied with a serious expression.

The middle-aged man’s complexion who stood beside Gu Yuetao changed. He then spoke, “Kang Xia is ‘good’? She’s a legend in the business circles. She has successfully managed a lot of acquisition and financial mergers, developed a lot of new projects as well as established a lot of marketing channels. She has an undisputable reputation, and is very famous in Wall Street.”

“3 years ago, she returned to our country and was hired by the

Pang Group as a CEO with an enormous contract price. In less than 3 years, she successfully increased the Pang Group's total assets 4 times over from before. If it were not because of that idiot Second Young Master Pang, the Pang Group would perhaps have been able to enter into the top 50 enterprises in our country in the next few years."

Speaking up to there, the middle-aged man then revealed a contemptuous look and sneered, "Even the country's major enterprises tried with everything they have to hire Kang Xia, which even some of them came up and offered large company stocks, but unfortunately all had failed. Little Brother is this young, I think you see yourself too highly. Kang Xia has been ignoring those high-class people, could she possibly take you seriously?"

Tang Xiu was silent for a few seconds as he then looked at Long Zhengyu and spoke, "Give me her contact."

"Okay!"

A different light emerged in Long Zhengyu's eyes. He had an inexplicable sense of trust toward Tang Xiu after having experienced the last gamble event. Others might have no chance but he believed that Tang Xiu could make the difference and give him a big surprise.

After he gave Kang Xia's number to Tang Xiu, Long Zhengyu suddenly spoke, "Little Brother Tang, can I buy the shares for the company you want to set up? I'll provide 20 million yuan to buy the stocks you provide!"

Buying shares?

Tang Xiu's brow slightly wrinkled.

Long Zhengyu quickly said, "If you think the money is too few, I'll add more. Little Brother Tang, you haven't ran any businesses before, there are a lot of things you have yet to know. A wide range of problems need to be managed in running businesses. The Long Family has long been running businesses in Star City and I can help solve a lot of things for the company you will set up in Star City."

Tang Xiu took a deep look at Long Zhengyu's eyes before he nodded and said, "5% shares! You cannot have more than that. If Kang Xia comes and she doesn't know about the situation here, you help her!"

At this moment...

Tang Xiu had known about Long Zhengyu's goodwill and he had a favorable impression of him. About the cosmetics business he was about to set up, he only told Long Zhengyu and didn't tell him any details. But Long Zhengyu trusted him wholeheartedly, and this made his heart warm.

With a strange expression, Gu Yuetao observed Long Zhengyu and sneered, "Young Master Long, you really have the wealth to burn, eh? How could you be this happy to foolishly spendthrift your money? 20 million in funds for a mere 5% share? And you

have to establish the connection and relations also? Have you really lost your mind? This kid said that he would be able to invite Kang Xia, how could it be possible relying on him only? Does he think that he's the country's first leader descendant, eh?"

Long Zhengyu's face turned cold as he replied with a disgusted tone, "Whether I'm crazy or not, you'll find about it later."

"Tin tin tin..."

At this time, the car's horn sounded...

Two black Mercedes-Benz limousines slowly approached and then stopped nearby, as 2 middle-aged men then got off. When they saw Long Zhengyu amongst the people, they suddenly smiled and then approached.

"Dad, how come you came over?"

Long Zhengyu approached and greeted him as he asked with a curious expression.

Long Hanwen's vision swept toward Tang Xiu and Gu Yuetao as he then laughed and spoke, "I'm free today, so I came with your Uncle Li to drink."

Long Zhengyu quickly turned toward the other middle-aged man and greeted, "Uncle Li, how have you been?"

He laughed and replied, “Little Yu, you’re good. Recently, I heard that you’ve performed a major achievement and put a few other youths in Star City into a miserable state. A tiger father indeed wouldn’t beget a dog son!”

With a humble smile, Long Zhengyu replied, “Uncle Li overpraised me. Actually, the one who has to be credited in winning the gamble is my brother. Dad, I introduce you Tang Xiu.”

Long Hanwen slightly squinted his eyes as he sized up Tang Xiu a few times. He then nodded and spoke, “As the saying goes, heroes emerge amongst the youth. Tang Xiu, you’re really amazing, good, very good. Later, when you have time, I’ll ask Little Yu and Lin to take you to our home. Your aunt will prepare a delicious meal for you!”

Tang Xiu nodded, “Well, thanks Uncle Long.”

Long Hanwen nodded with satisfaction.

Long Zhengyu then spoke, “Dad, Tang Xiu is preparing to set up a company and I want to buy some of the shares.”

Setting up a company?

Injecting funds and buying the shares?

Long Hanwen looked at Tang Xiu with an astonished expression. He had investigated Tang Xiu's background and knew that this youth came from the countryside. He did not have much capital to boast and was only a high schooler. Now he wanted to set up a company. Could it be that he wanted to make some pocket money?

Long Hanwen thought for a moment before he smiled and replied, "Then buy the shares! Even though Tang Xiu is still young, but I can tell he's very mature and has a steady nature. He would be a competent and important big shot in the future. Well, you'll arrange it and have a good chat."

"Wait!"

Tang Xiu felt somewhat a favorable impression toward Long Hanwen even though they only had a brief contact. The saying was indeed true that a good father would raise outstanding sons. Long Zhengyu was outstanding and his father was also excellent. Befriending Long Hanwen might help in completing his plan and purposes later.

Long Hanwen was confused, "Do you still have something to say?"

Tang Xiu gently nodded as his eyes fell on another middle-aged man's body, who was called Uncle Chen. He found that this middle-aged man named Chen had a problem within his body. After having carefully observed, he could tell that his observation was true.

“Stretch out your wrist.”

The middle-aged man called Chen, as well as the other two were clueless about it. He looked at Long Hanwen and Long Zhengyu first, but although he was puzzled by Tang Xiu’s purpose, he still extended his left hand out.

Under the gazes of everyone who looked at him with a puzzled expression, Tang Xiu checked the middle-aged Chen’s pulse. 10 seconds later, his fingers pressed the [Tanzhong point](#) and then spoke in a deep tone, “Try to breathe.”

Tanzhong point: or Danzhong point is an acupuncture point in the middle of the chest at the level of the breasts. Please google it yourself since I can’t find about the reference. I know about it since I’m also a martial art practitioner. I used the name in acupuncture technique not the name in my martial arts style since I think it would be easier to find in the internet.

Chapter 65: Condition

Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical was a leading major enterprise in Star City and its main business was the medical industry. It was one of the best companies in the medical business nationwide. Chen Zhizhong was the Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical's big boss with assets worth more than several billion yuan and also had a prominent status.

He looked at Tang Xiu in front him as particular strange thoughts emerged inside his heart.

“This youngster wants to check my pulse? Is he a Chinese Medical doctor? And how did he know that I have internal injuries? It's impossible! Apart from my wife, there is no other soul who would have known about it. It's impossible that he knows about it.”

Chen Zhizhong secretly shook his head and quickly cast out the absurd thoughts inside his mind. However, he looked at Long Hanwen's face and complied with Tang Xiu's request as he took a deep breath.

“Hiss...”

Piercing pain, as though it would rip his heart and lungs came from his chest. The painful sensation instantly made his eyes blackened and almost made him faint. At the same time, he could clearly feel some kind of intense burning sensation, as though it was scorching his internal organs.

Tang Xiu loosened his grip and spoke with a solemn expression, “Your internal injuries are very severe. It definitely couldn’t have been inflicted by an average person, else your injuries couldn’t have been severely injured like this, since your internal organs were likely to have been shattered. But I’m really curious, how come you’re able to move around everywhere with such injuries?”

At the side...

Even since the arrival of Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong, Gu Yuetao was cast aside. This kind of cold treatment made him feel especially uncomfortable. Coupled with the contempt Tang Xiu had given him, as well as seeing that the famous Long Hanwen highly praising Tang Xiu, envy and jealousy surged inside his heart. Seeing this opportunity, he shouted at once, “Tang Xiu! What have you done to Boss Chen? Are you acting like a deity and playing the devil to scam him? You’re just swindler!”

Tang Xiu sneered, “Whether I’m a swindler or not, it’s not yours to call. Mind your own business.”

“You...”

Gu Yuetao instantly raged.

Tang Xiu interrupted him and coldly snorted, “What’s up with me, huh?!! I’m speaking with others! You have no qualification to interrupt us. Either you move aside or get the fuck out!”

Gu Yuetao's face thoroughly turned crimson. If it were not for Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong's presence, he could have been immediately flushed and beaten Tang Xiu.

Chen Zhizhong looked at Tang Xiu with an inconceivable expression. Along with the pain that was gradually receding from his chest, he asked with a shocked expression, "Who are you? How did you know that I have suffered from internal injuries, much less gotten injured by others?"

Tang Xiu lightly replied, "Compared to you, I have received countless more serious injuries. My companion also... so I'm perfectly aware of the symptoms when someone has internal injuries. If I'm not mistaken, you definitely have taken precious medicaments, haven't you? Your injuries might have been temporarily suppressed, but after the medicine's efficacy has been completely dissipated and you don't take your medicaments for quite a while, your injuries would become more serious, even your life would be in a grave danger. Am I right?"

Long Hanwen was shocked, "Brother Chen, you... you really have internal injuries? How could it be?"

Chen Zhizhong nodded with an agonized expression. He deeply looked at Tang Xiu and smiled, "Brother Long. This place is not a suitable place to chat. Let's find a quiet place to speak!"

Long Hanwen looked at Tang Xiu with a strange expression as he nodded and spoke, "Little Tang, let's go!"

“Alright!” Tang Xiu nodded and followed.

When they were just about to walk out toward the Real Estate Management Office, Chen Zhizhong suddenly stopped as he looked at Gu Yuetao and spoke, “You are Secretary Gu’s son, aren’t you? We have important things to discuss and you’re not fit for this occasion, so leave and take care of your own business!”

HUH!

Gu Yuetao’s complexion instantly turned crimson. Never once have he ever dreamt that Chen Zhizhong would kick him out.

Waves of regret struck his heart. Had he not jumped and attacked Tang Xiu with his words and instead flattered him, he wouldn’t have been kicked out like this.

“Fuck!!! Damn bastard Tang Xiu!”

All of his resentment fell onto Tang Xiu. Gu Yuetao was perfectly aware that he couldn’t provoke the likes of big shots such as Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong. But had Tang Xiu not appeared today, such a shameful situation wouldn’t have happened, even Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong might say a few praises or encouragements to him.

At the Real Estate Management Office...

Inside a luxuriously decorated office, Long Zhengyu was busy making tea as Tang Xiu was sitting on the luxurious sofa facing Chen Zhizhong and Long Hanwen.

“Little Brother Tang, since you can see my injury condition, are there any ways to treat them? I won’t hide anything from you, my wife is also a Chinese Medical doctor and is very skilled at it. But she also felt helpless in treating my internal injuries, and could only temporarily suppress the injuries as to avoid it from suddenly breaking out.” A longing expression could be seen on Chen Zhizhong’s complexion as he intensely stared at Tang Xiu and asked.

Tang Xiu replied, “Your treatment is very easy.”

“Really?”

Chen Zhizhong suddenly stood up and asked with a surprised expression.

Tang Xiu nodded and said, “It’s indeed very easy. I could give you the prescription to treat your internal injuries, I can even write out some of them easily. However, since your internal organs have long been injured, it has caused your blood and qi to be clogged, leading to the declining of your body’s functions. Even if you took the medicine as per my prescription, it would take at least a year for you to recover to your previous condition.”

Chen Zhizhong was pleasantly surprised, “The long time is fine, I... “

He abruptly stopped talking as his expression became sluggish for a moment. He was perfectly aware that due to his condition right now, he must keep calm and not lose himself and become too excited.

“However, I can give you a treatment that will only take a short time.”

Tang Xiu then spoke with self-confidence.

Chen Zhizhong was silent for a moment before he seriously spoke, “Under what conditions?”

Tang Xiu said, “Help me handle some things.”

Chen Zhizhong said, “Do say. As long as I can do it, I’ll not refuse!”

Tang Xiu calmly replied, “It’s actually very simple. Help me lying to cover for some particular times in the past 2-3 days ago – you’ve come visiting me everyday at my villa in South Gate Town. You must testify that I have always been at home here.”

Chen Zhizhong was surprised, “Only this issue?”

“Yes!” Tang Xiu nodded and said.

Chen Zhizhong nodded, "I give you my word. But can I ask, to whom I should testify?"

Tang Xiu said indifferently, "The police."

Chen Zhizhong was startled as a thoughtful expression flashed in his eyes, but he still didn't inquire further.

Upon seeing the two of them had reached an agreement, Long Hanwen, who had been quietly listening to their conversation, suddenly saw Long Zhengyu as he then spoke in a deep tone, "Little Yu, go to the Villa District Monitoring Room and erase all the surveillance recordings for the last few days. If anyone asks about it, tell them that the monitoring system is broken and is being repaired by the maintenance personnel.

"Alright, I'll go right away!"

Long Zhengyu looked at Tang Xiu before he strode out of the room.

Tang Xiu gazed at Long Zhengyu as he left as he nodded and thanked afterwards, "I'll keep this big favor in mind. If later Uncle Long needs my assistance, please do tell me."

Long Hanwen nodded with satisfaction, even though a trace of a particular strange feeling emerged in his heart. Today was the first time he saw Tang Xiu. Although his two sons highly praised Tang Xiu before, but he did not believe it. Tang Xiu was after all only a

high schooler. Even though he was resourceful and powerful, to what extent did his capital amount to?

However...

Seeing by himself was better than hearing from many others.

It was a coincidence that he could see Tang Xiu today. Although Tang Xiu didn't speak much, however, he could tell from his words and performance that his calmness and bearing were not something some high schoolers could have. He even faintly felt a kind of imposing manner exude from Tang Xiu. He couldn't really tell what kind of sensation it was. It was as though the moon reflected on the water, but yet made him vigilant and constrained him.

18 years ago...

Long Hanwen once had ran into someone. He looked like an ordinary person, but he gave off a dangerous feeling, as though he was a fierce beast in slumber in a deep dungeon. Later on, he found that the person was an active soldier, and that man was also coincidentally surnamed Tang.

After having observed Tang Xiu for a few glances, Long Hanwen secretly suppressed that particular sensation down. He turned around and looked at Chen Zhizhong, "Brother Chen, Tang Xiu just said that you've been injured by someone. What happened? How could there be someone who dares to injure you?"

Chen Zhizhong looked at Tang Xiu before he replied, letting out a forced smile, “Brother Long, you only know me as a businessman, yet you don’t know about my martial artist status. I’m a disciple of an ancient martial arts style. Only a selected few of ordinary people are able to contact our society.”

Tang Xiu suddenly spoke, “Your cultivation is very low. Although you are now much stronger than I am, however, a true Martial Arts master would very easily deal with you.”

Chen Zhizhong was greatly shocked, “Are you also a cultivator?”

It was Tang Xiu’s first contact with the martial artist society, and he didn’t hide his intention to pry the information about today’s martial arts society situation from Chen Zhizhong. “I am indeed a cultivator. But mine is different from your cultivation. Speaking the truth, I am honestly clueless about the present cultivator society. Could you enlighten me a bit?”

Chen Zhizhong replied, “In fact, I also don’t know much about it. Some are learning martial arts as continued tradition, some from family heritage, and others are from school’s legacies. I only know a few martial artists from family heritages, in which some of them have reached Grandmaster stage with bodies light like a swallow, and are able to fight buffalos easily.”

A disappointed feeling surged in Tang Xiu’s heart. What he wanted to know was not martial artists’ society, but rather the cultivators’ society. Those martial artists Grandmaster Chen Zhizhong spoke of were not different from children in a cultivators’ eyes. Even a slightly powerful cultivator would easily

exterminate those so-called martial artists Grandmasters.

Afterward...

Tang Xiu and Long Hanwen finally knew that the one who wounded Chen Zhizhong was a martial arts expert. It was caused by the incident when Chen Zhizhong and his opponent took a fancy over precious medicinal herbs at the Star City Medicinal Herbs Market. After fiercely competing through financial power, Chen Zhizhong finally won the precious herbs, while his opponent then secretly attempted to rob it. In the end, even though Chen Zhizhong was able to kill his opponent, he was also severely injured in the process.

“It’s fine. Anyways, since I have other things to take care of, I’ll treat your wound first! Uncle Long, I’m really sorry for troubling you to keep guard here and let nobody disturb us.”

Long Hanwen replied, “Saving someone is like fighting fire – the faster, the better. You can rest assured that I will immediately arrange people to guard the door and let nobody disturb you.”

Feeling satisfied, Tang Xiu nodded. He then told Chen Zhizhong to take his clothes off, leaving only his big underpants. He ignored the awkward and embarrassed expression Chen Zhizhong had as he then fiercely punched his abdomen.

“Puff...”

Chapter 66: Half Master

Chen Zhizhong's pupil shrunk as his pupils turned into saucers. The acute pain made his vision darken, and he almost fainted and fell to the floor. He was confused and didn't understand. Tang Xiu said that he would treat and cure him. But why did he attack him? His punch was also very powerful and almost made him faint.

“Endure the pain.”

Tang Xiu quickly moved and stood behind Chen Zhizhong in a flash. His fist repeatedly punched Chen Zhizhong's back a few times. In the next moment, his fingers opened with the thumb on the Spirit Hall point, middle finger on Jueyin Transporter point, and pinky on the Reaching Yang point.

“Open for me!”

His fingers moved and pinched, as his other fist once again continuously punched Chen Zhizhong's back. Along with Chen Zhizhong's half-screaming half-coughing, a mouthful of pungent black blood spurted out from Chen Zhizhong's mouth.

Tang Xiu stopped for a few seconds as he walked around and stopped in front of Chen Zhizhong. His thumb accurately pressed on the Great Bell point on Chen Zhizhong's chest. After pressing it 3 times, his palm turned into a fist, then reducing his strength by a third, he punched Chen Zhizhong's chest again.

“Cough, cough...”

Chen Zhizhong spurted more blood again. However, this time the blood color was much redder than the previous ones.

“Down!”

Tang Xiu’s toe pinched Chen Zhizhong’s heel as he stood up and pressed it down with his two legs, after which he heavily smashed his back one after another, and almost made him drop down. However, Tang Xiu grabbed one of his arms in a flash, and with powerful strength, held Chen Zhizhong and didn’t let him get injured as he laid him down on the floor.

“Qilin bone, White Tiger’s veins, and Flying Ape’s long arms.”

Tang Xiu’s face gradually revealed an astonished expression, as his hands constantly traced Chen Zhizhong’s body. He then thought, “What a pity! Such a suitable body for cultivation and he has neither a supreme cultivation method nor a master to teach him. The body has now even been reduced into such a wrecked condition. It’s really unfortunate!”

While thinking about it, his hands suddenly lifted and then palmed Chen Zhizhong’s chest. His slaps were very rhythmic. Sometimes it was clear as hawk cries, and other times it was deep as drum beats. Gradually, the spot on Chen Zhizhong’s chest that got slapped gradually turned red as blood red lines then surfaced. Water-like appearance, as though running water could be seen, fluctuated and moved inside those lines.

At the side...

Long Hanwen looked at the scene in front of him with a flabbergasted expression. If it weren't that he realized that he was awake, he would perhaps have thought that he was dreaming. Tang Xiu was literally beating Chen Zhizhong constantly. What kind of absurd treatment was it? Chen Zhizhong had already had serious injuries; with such powerful hits, wouldn't it be the same as killing him?

“...”

He wanted to shout and stop it. But recalling Tang Xiu's words, he forcefully buried the worries he had deep inside his heart.

The time passed by slowly...

10 minutes later, Cheng Xuemei had arrived and was outside the villa's door.

Her complexion was ice-cold as she looked at the tall and ramrod straight security guards in front of her. She then spoke in a solemn tone, “I'm Cheng Xuemei from the Criminal Police Division. I need to see and inquire some information from Tang Xiu for a case investigation. As far as I know, Tang Xiu should be in this office building. Please make way!”

“I'm really sorry. We have received Boss's order that no one can enter the office.”

Cheng Xuemei angrily said, “Hey! Every citizen has the obligation to cooperate and help the police’s duty in investigating the cases. I don’t care who your Boss is, open the way. Otherwise, I’ll declare that you are obstructing the justice, and you will be subjected to legal sanctions under the law.”

“Sorry!”

The ice-cold voice was the only response she could get again.

“What happened?”

Long Zhengyu rushed and arrived in time. He glanced at Cheng Xuemei and the other 2 cops. He then turned around and asked the security guards.

Cheng Xuemei said, “Are you Long Zhengyu?”

Long Zhengyu was surprised, “You know me?”

Cheng Xuemei said, “Star City’s famous businessman. A new generation of a business group successor who has been covered on multiple financial and economic magazines. How can I not know about you? Anyway, I’m Cheng Xuemei from the Criminal Police Division, and I’m looking for Tang Xiu to inquire some information about a case. I’m asking you to cooperate and ask them to make way!”

Long Zhengyu smiled, “Ah, you’re Captain Cheng, right? I’m really sorry. Tang Xiu cannot be disturbed right now. Please wait for a while, I will go inside and notify him.”

“What?”

Cheng Xuemei was shocked. Never once would she ever had dreamed that seeing Tang Xiu would require someone else to notify him first, and the person unexpectedly was a well-known person in Star City — the Young Master of the Long Family.

Could it be that... the investigation about Tang Xiu was really flawed? Could it be that his identity was much bigger than Long Zhengyu, and even could make him guard his door?

Long Zhengyu opened and entered the room, and went out after a short while.

“How is it?”

Cheng Xuemei knitted her brows and asked.

Long Zhengyu said, “Tang Xiu said that right now is really inconvenient to see you.”

In the room...

After the last beating, Tang Xiu’s fingers were pressing Chen

Zhizhong's Heaven's Pivot point. After having stopped for a few seconds, he loosened it and then heaved a deep breath, finally relaxed.

“How does it feel?”

Tang Xiu looked at Chen Zhizhong's twitching body, who was still conscious and asked.

“I...”

Chen Zhizhong opened his mouth but his voice was stumped in his throat. His body twitched more intensely as his skin was red as though it had been boiled. In the next moment, traces of black and gray impurities seeped out from the pores all over his body, with a speed that could be seen with naked eyes.

As he struggled to sit up, he immediately sat cross-legged and closed his eyes.

Half an hour later...

Chen Zhizhong opened his eyes as a vigorous light flashed from his eyes. His body leaped up and directly jumped gently. He felt as though shackles had been removed from his body, and he felt very comfortable.

“My injuries?”

A stunned expression emerged for a moment, as he then immediately followed with an overjoyed expression. He could feel that not only were his internal injuries healed, but he also had broken through his cultivation bottleneck after having been bogged down in the third stage for so long. The blood and qi circulation in his body had turned vigorous and powerful as a comfortable sensation gave him the feeling as though his body suddenly became young again all of a sudden.

“Master Tang, thank you.” Chen Zhizhong’s state of mind was extremely excited as respect filled his eyes and he cupped his fists.

Tang Xiu waved and replied, “Take a bath first! I’ve given you the necessary treatment.”

Chen Zhizhong was surprised. After a moment, he then nodded and walked outside. However, when Chen Zhizhong was out of the door, Cheng Xuemei was a bit confused, since she faintly smelled a stench exuding from his body. Moreover, she felt like the dirty man was quite familiar.

“Little Yu, bring them in!”

Long Hanwen’s voice came from inside the room.

Cheng Xuemei glanced at Long Zhengyu before she strode into the room. As her eyes swept at Long Hanwen, she immediately knew his identity. She finally felt relaxed as to why Long Zhengyu would stand guard in front of the door.

Finally... Cheng Xuemei's sight fell on the Tang Xiu, as she watched Tang Xiu leisurely sitting on the sofa while sipping his tea. She then approached him and spoke in a serious tone, "Tang Xiu, we meet again."

Tang Xiu replied, "Ah, Captain Cheng? What issues do you want to find me for? Hasn't the prior case been fully investigated? In order to save others, I accidentally killed the wanted criminal who committed crimes at school!"

Cheng Xuemei coldly snorted, "Tang Xiu, don't play dumb and give me a clear answer. Are you the one who killed the criminals at the abandoned auto-repair garage on Deep Red Cloud Road, Peaceful Serene District?"

Tang Xiu intentionally put on a bewildered expression as he replied, "Captain Cheng, if you want to catch a couple in affairs, you must catch the both of them. You need to grab the dirt before moving to grab the thief. What relationship could I have with the homicide case at... what road? You are a policewoman! You also know what accusing and slandering would end up to."

Cheng Xuemei was impatient and Tang Xiu was playing "blaming the victim", causing her to be at a loss and not know what to do for a moment. However, she was, after all, one of the criminal police elites and quickly adjusted her state of mind. After quickly thinking about the words she had to speak, she then spoke in a solemn tone, "Tang Xiu, please let my words be cast aside and think of it as me just slipping my tongue. I apologize and I hope you ignored it. But I want to ask, why did you disappear the last

few days... Especially, where were you a few hours ago?”

Tang Xiu replied lightly, “I had something to do in the past few days, and have always been at my house in South Gate Town District. And a few hours ago, I was still at home.”

“Can you prove it?”

“Someone can testify for me because I have been with him all the time in the same place.”

“Who?”

“Chen Zhizhong.”

Cheng Xuemei frowned. She felt the name sounded familiar, but she couldn't remember it from where she had heard it. When she was about to speak again, the man's face who had just left the room suddenly appeared inside her mind.

The man just now was... the Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical's boss, Chen Zhizhong?

A few minutes later, Chen Zhizhong had finished taking a bath and returned to the room. It was unknown from where he had taken a bath and got clean clothes.

“Boss Chen, has Tang Xiu really been with you in the last 3-4

hours?” Cheng Xuemei asked.

Chen Zhizhong smiled, “Ah, Yes! Little Tang indeed has been with me here. I must say that he’s really powerful! I have some problem with my body, and he was able to help me treat it. So I have been visiting Tang Xiu’s house in South Gate Town the last few days for treatment.”

“This...”

Cheng Xuemei found that her guesses were all mistaken. Tang Xiu had witnesses to testify that he was in South Gate Town in the last few hours, and not at the abandoned garage on Deep Red Cloud Road in Peaceful Serene District. This meant that when the crime happened, he was not at the crime scene.

“Tang Xiu, Boss Chen, thank you for your cooperation. We still have other issues and won’t disturb you any longer.”

Tang Xiu’s expression was calm and unperturbed. He watched Cheng Xuemei and 2 other cops leave as he poured more tea and gently drank a mouthful of it. Having gone through this event, he became perfectly aware, that in the future, he must be one step ahead and plan good escape routes, especially when he had to deal with the police.

Chen Zhizhong and Long Hanwen didn’t ask Tang Xiu about what he had done. But deep inside, they made up their mind to send someone to investigate it later.

“Puff, bang...”

The moment the door was closed, Chen Zhizhong knelt in front of Tang Xiu.

“Huh? Brother Chen, what are you doing?”

Long Hanwen was dumbstruck as he looked at Chen Zhizhong with a dumbfounded expression as he exclaimed out loud.

Chen Zhizhong ignored Long Hanwen as he respectfully spoke with a frantic expression, “Master Tang, your martial arts boundary is at the level of which I haven’t heard of. You have cured my internal injuries, you’re my savior. Please accept me as your disciple, benefactor!”

“What?”

Long Hanwen was thoroughly shocked as he looked at Chen Zhizhong with an inconceivable expression. It was as though his old friend for decades was but a stranger right now.

What was this? World-level jokes?

He was the illustrious Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical’s boss, with billions’ worth of assets, as well as was a rich, powerful, and well-respected person. How could he even want to worship a high schooler as a master? Was Chen Zhizhong still sane? Or had the world gone crazy?

Chapter 67: Conversation Skills

Tang Xiu's complexion turned cold. With an aloof and indifferent expression, he looked at Chen Zhizhong, who was kneeling in front of him. In his view, even if Chen Zhizhong were to worship him as a master, he wouldn't have great achievements in his entire life. At the most, he would only be barely able to ascend to be an immortal with great difficulty.

In his previous life...

How many powerful immortals had begged him to become his disciple in the Immortal World? And what happened in the end? He only accepted a selected few of gifted people amongst them as unofficial disciples on a whim.

"I refuse!"

Tang Xiu rejected coldly. He then stood up as he looked at Long Hanwen and said, "Uncle Long, I still have other things to do. I'll go back first."

"..."

Long Hanwen looked at Tang Xiu with a strange expression, as he then looked at the kneeling Chen Zhizhong on the floor. His mouth twitched for a few times before he spoke with a smile, "Well, since you have things to do, then go first! Remember that if you have time later, call Little Yu and Little Lin to visit our home and have a meal together."

Tang Xiu nodded as he greeted Long Zhengyu and then directly left.

“Dad, I’ll escort Tang Xiu back.”

Long Zhengyu hastily replied after he saw such a shocking and hard to believe situation.

In the room, only Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong were left. Chen Zhizhong slowly stood up with a grayish complexion as a disappointed expression could be seen in his eyes. He then quietly sat back on the sofa.

Long Hanwen let out a wry smile and spoke, “Brother Chen, why are you like this? Even if Tang Xiu is very powerful, you wouldn’t have to go as far as kneeling down to worship him as master, right?”

Chen Zhizhong shook his head and replied with a bitter expression, “Brother Long, you don’t understand. Practicing martial arts is my biggest hobby and a dream for the entirety of my life. I’m well known as a hardcore fanatic of martial arts. However, because my family was too poor, I started to undertake the responsibility to take care of my family and began my business. But my obsession toward the martial arts had never reduced by the slightest bit, and instead was getting bigger along with time. The older I am, the more obsessed I become. I could tell that Master Tang is really very powerful, to the point that I really want to worship him as a Master.”

Long Hanwen then asked with a curious expression, “Didn’t Tang Xiu say that his strength is under yours?”

Chen Zhizhong shook his head again and replied, “You are mistaken. His strength is absolutely above mine! Do you remember the scene when he treated me? His movements are lightning fast with extremely accurate force control. And the most important of all, can you guess it?”

Long Hanwen was confused, “What is it?”

Chen Zhizhong answered in a deep tone, “My cultivation method is a family inheritance, and it’s a method to cultivate inner strength and mind. I have long reached the 2nd Stage 10 years ago. However, no matter how hard and diligently I’ve been practicing, I was unable to breakthrough to the 3rd Stage. And now, not only has Master Tang cured my internal injuries and saved my life through his treatment, but he also has given me a huge benefit. The moment I got cured, I just found out myself that I have broken through the 3rd Stage.”

“Hiss...” Long Hanwen was shocked.

Chen Zhizhong had been stuck in the 2nd Stage and unable to breakthrough for more than 10 years. But because of the treatment from Tang Xiu, he was easily able to breakthrough?

Chen Zhizhong spoke again, “Brother Long, you don’t know the meaning for breaking through from the 2nd Stage in my

cultivation technique. Let me show you that my power has become several folds stronger before Master Tang gave me the treatment.”

The moment he finished speaking, he slowly squatted down and then powerfully punched the floor.

“BOOM...”

The floor tiles’ broke and splattered everywhere, as an inch deep fist-shaped hole was then carved on the previously sturdy and smooth floor. However, Chen Zhizhong’s fist was fine without the slightest damage.

Long Hanwen suddenly jumped up from the sofa. He was shocked as though he saw an alien and exclaimed out loud, “How could it be possible? Your power...”

Chen Zhizhong replied solemnly, “If I must draw an analogy, my punching power before was only 100 pounds, but now it’s at least 300 pounds. Along with the longer I practice in the future, my strength would improve by leaps and bounds. Brother Long, now you understand how precious the fortune Master Tang has given me, right?”

Long Hanwen was dumbstruck and could only nod. He was stunned for a long while. The shock he got today was really too much.

At the villa in South Gate Town.

Tang Xiu had returned home. He went straight to the bedroom on the 2nd floor, and then stood on the balcony. He looked at the picturesque-like beautiful scenery in the villa district, before he took out his cell phone and marked out the phone number named “Kang Xia”. His thumb gently stroked the dial button, but had yet to press down on it.

A thoughtful expression flashed from his complexion as he was pondering the method to gain this world-ranked business legend figure’s trust, and then recruit her for his purposes. Long Zhengyu had given him the information about Kang Xia along with her number and the method to contact her. Hence, he approximately had a bit of knowledge about Kang Xia’s traits and situation.

“Cold and detached, tenacious, and has the adventurous spirit to take huge risks, loves to take unconventional moves, has a keen sense and accurate timing to grasp the opportunity, as well as being able to take decisive decisions and actions in a short amount of time according to the circumstances...”

Tang Xiu was recalling Kang Xia’s traits from the information he had memorized in mind. A smile gradually blossomed on his face as his thumb then immediately pressed the dial button.

A few seconds after the ringtone rang, the phone was picked up.

“Kang Xia speaking here, who am I speaking with?”

Whilst looking at the beautiful scenery in front, Tang Xiu then

spoke, “I am Tang Xiu. You haven’t heard about me, but I’ll be straightforward with you. My purpose to call you is very simple, I’m giving you a chance to struggle for the future. Are you interested?”

Kang Xia was silent for a few seconds and slowly replied, “To be frank, your straightforward and simple words sparked my curiosity. Tell me, what kind of path will you offer me?”

Tang Xiu said, “Before I tell you, you need to answer my questions. Say that there are two cosmetics products, one of which has strong whitening and moisturizing effect, and can improve a woman’s skin condition, as well as is 10 times more efficient than those high-end whitening products. Once this cosmetic product has been tested and thrown to the market, what chance do you think it will have?”

“The second product is a scar rejuvenating cosmetic which is able to eliminate acne and freckles. Please listen clearly. This product’s effect is real and also has a healing curative effect. Once this product has been tested and sold to the market, what chance do you think it will have?”

At a high-class resort in Beijing...

A devilish curvaceous figure with an angelic face, Kang Xia, was wearing a sexy bikini as she sat on a poolside couch. Her hand was wiping her wet long hair whilst the other hand holding her cell phone, as a slightly stifled expression was cast on her face.

The cold and detached expression she usually had when she wanted to hang up the phone was now entirely different.

The two questions might be simple, but it was nevertheless problematic.

If such products were to have such effects as the caller had told her, once those products had passed the test, being advertised and accepted by the market, it would create a great sensation in today's society, more so that the business would also certainly explode.

However, could there be such cosmetic products on Earth?

Kang Xia might not have realized herself that she was a woman with a keen sense of opportunity. She was silent for 2 minutes before she slowly replied, "Seeing from your number ID, it seems that you're from Star City. Fine, I'll give you 2 days to send the product sample to me, since you have already gotten my number and my address. Wait for me to experiment and test the sample first, and then we'll talk again."

Tang Xiu replied with an indifferent tone, "I don't like people who tell me what to do. The people I will hire, even though I give them the rights and privileges, must not be arrogant and bossy. Do listen that I want to set up the business, but I don't have much time to run it myself. What I mean is, I want to know about your capabilities as well as your intelligence. Well, I'll be waiting for you in Star City. If you've arrived, contact me."

After having said that, Tang Xiu directly hung up the phone.

At the resort's swimming pool in Beijing, Kang Xia was listening to the dull busy tones from her cell phone as a blank and disbelieving expression covered her face after the caller blatantly hung up the phone.

Who was she? She WAS Kang Xia!

She was the one who countless people have always been treating highly with flattery, with wishes that they could recruit her. She was an elite person who was the most sought after to be recruited in the business world. Previously, she was the one who had always been hanging up the phone first when anyone else called her. But the karma had turned against her this time, and this person hung up the phone first instead of her! Was that man insane? Or had her charms and values vanished?

And why would it seem and feel like... that... she was the one who begged him?

Kang Xia was somewhat angry as she threw the phone to the recliner next to the coffee table. She couldn't help recall that man's words in her mind.

Very arrogant! Extremely arrogant!

Kang Xia was pondering and analyzing the 2 questions the man had given her. She wasn't sure whether this was an opportunity or not. If it was true and she took it, her decision definitely would make everyone shocked. But if it was not, then it meant that she

had been played.

“Tang Xiu? From Star City??”

Kang Xia took back her cell phone and dialed a number. She then spoke in a deep tone, “Andy, help me investigate someone. I only have 5 clues — his name, living in Star City, a male, arrogant, and his cell number. How long will it take for you to find him?”

“1 day.”

A charming voice answered the phone.

Kang Xia replied, “Half a day.”

“...”

At South Gate Town.

After hanging up the phone, Tang Xiu then called Han Qingwu as well as Yuan Chuling. Since Yuan Chuling’s mother had fortunately been rescued, he asked him whether the one who saved his mother was Tang Xiu. Tang Xiu avoided answering him. As for Qingwu, it was somewhat quite troublesome.

A complicated, as well as helpless feeling, filled his heart. Han Qingwu’s appearance was alike with his wife in the Immortal World, and he couldn’t tell her what he felt about her. He

apologized to her on the phone, and promised to go school and attend classes tomorrow. After having gotten served a meal full of severe reprimand and critics, he temporarily got his forgiveness.

Having dealt with everything, Tang Xiu then thought about what Chen Zhizhong had run into.

“He found precious medicinal herbs in Star City’s Medicinal Herbs Market. It would be too early for me to take the advantage of this favor this time. Should I go to the Medicinal Herbs Market?”

Tang Xiu had a decisive and resolute personality. Once ideas emerged in his mind, he would immediately execute them. He got tens of thousands yuan from the criminals that were intended to be given to one-eyed’s grandmother, and he intended to borrow the cash first since he was short on money.

“Grrrrr ...” Tang Xiu’s stomach suddenly rumbled as though reminding him that he had yet to have breakfast and lunch.

Chapter 68: Being Tracked

Tang Xiu liked to be able to feel the hunger sensation which made him feel the smell of fire and smoke. He also recalled the time when he was still in the Immortal World as he usually didn't need to eat, and only ate exotic rare fruits whenever he wanted to eat.

Seven emotions and six sensory pleasures, as well as [delicious delicacies and exquisite beverages](#)...

The raws said five crops (millet, soybean, grain, sesame, rice) and the crops aside grain and wheat, but it doesn't quite fit for the flow, so I changed it to delicacies and beverages.

The taste and smell of the profane and mundane life made him somewhat enchanted. The thing he particularly cherished was that his mother was still here, and he had the opportunity to make up for the regrets he had for 10 millennia.

After a short while...

Tang Xiu left the villa as he wandered along the trail of flowers under the trees' shadows whilst enjoying the birdsongs, the fragrance of flowers, as well as the tranquil and peaceful atmosphere in the surroundings. South Gate Town was indeed worthy to be called the best luxury villa district in Star City. Every time he met the security guards, they stopped to salute, showing respect to him along the way.

“Money and wealth truly makes the world go round.”

Tang Xiu secretly savored this saying. The more he thought about it, the more he felt that it was true. The society he was living in today was entirely different from the Immortal World. The strong and powerful might be revered and respected in the Immortal World, but on Earth, the haves and the wealthy were people that gained respect.

“Hello, Mr. Tang.”

The tall and beautiful Real Estate Manager, Long Xueyao happened to pass by as she greeted Tang Xiu while smiling.

Tang Xiu also smiled and nodded. When he had just walked for a few steps, he suddenly remembered about the villa’s cleaning and maintenance problem. He immediately stopped and called Long Xueyao, “Manager Long, I have something to ask you.”

Long Xueyao smiled and replied, “Mr. Tang, please do say.”

Tang Xiu said, “Manger Long, does the South Gate Town Real Estate Management Office also give cleaning and maintenance service? I would like someone to come and clean.”

Long Xueyao said, “We indeed have a cleaning and maintenance service. But for that, we charge for additional fees. However, I’d suggest Mr. Tang to hire a few butlers or housemaids, since your villa has a lot of precious items. Although the Real Estate Management Office also has cleaning staffs, however, it’s best to avoid any accidents later.”

Tang Xiu replied, “Hiring housemaids or butlers would have to wait. For now, please ask someone to clean up my villa. As for the payment, I’ll give it to you now.”

Having finished speaking, Tang Xiu took a stack of hundreds yuan paper money from his bag and directly handed it to Long Xueyao.

Long Xueyao looked at Tang Xiu with a strange expression. She had never thought that Tang Xiu would carry so much cash. She could tell that this stack of paper money would amount to 10,000 yuan. Moreover, a moment ago, when Tang Xiu took the money from his bag, she could see a lot of stacked 100 yuan paper money.

“He’s a strange person!” Long Xueyao secretly whispered in her heart.

Nowadays, even though one were rich, only a few people would carry so much cash. The age had changed as the “Credit Card” in business had flourished and became popular amongst the people in the whole country.

“Mr. Tang, you don’t need to give me the money now. Each month’s charging fee is calculated and collected by the management office. By that time, a detailed and total expense report would be sent to you.”

Tang Xiu thought for a moment and then nodded, “Alright, then please send cleaning staff every 2 or 3 days. Anyways, I have

something to do first, so I have to go. Bye.”

“Take care, Mr. Tang!”

Long Xueyao quietly watched Tang Xiu’s back as a thoughtful expression filled her eyes. She was very curious about Tang Xiu, because the villa he was living in was the most expensive villa in South Gate Town. It was preserved for her cousin, Long Zhengyu. The interior design and decorations were specifically arranged by a specialist hired by her cousin. All the materials used for the building were the finest. But why would her cousin give the villa to this young man?

At South Gate Town...

Because the district was very large, it was quite a long time for Tang Xiu to go out of it. There was a bustling commercial street near South Gate Town with rows of upscale shops selling luxurious goods.

When Tang Xiu had just entered this commercial street, traces of food flavors floated in the air. He then walked forward and looked around as his eyes quickly fell onto a plaque decoration on top of an interesting and appealing restaurant that was being renovated. The plaque was carved with the “Immortal Drinking Place” words in a bold and cursive calligraphy style, giving off a bold and powerful look.

Tang Xiu entered the shop and then sat on the table near the window. He casually ordered 2 vegetable dishes and a staple food

when the waiter gave him the menu. He then calmly waited.

“Humph.....”

As Tang Xiu’s eyes saw through the windows, he keenly caught a few youths stealthily moving on the distant road junction. After he left South Gate Town, he had already been aware and had an intense feeling that some eyes were staring at him. However, as to avoid alerting and letting those people figure it out, he didn’t look around, and instead came to this restaurant and only observed them secretly.

He was somewhat worried that there were a few criminals that had slipped by amongst the criminals he had killed. He was not afraid of being retaliated against. However, it was very easy to guard against any attack in the open, but it would be hard to guard against hidden attacks from the dark. Much more, he was more afraid that the remaining surviving criminals would retaliate through his mother, just like they were retaliating against Yuan Chuling by kidnapping his mother.

At the street’s intersection...

Scarface Lee was leaning in the corner whilst smoking a cigarette and observing the “Immortal Drinking Place” where Tang Xiu was in. Half an hour ago, he rushed over toward South Gate Town, because he had received the money from a client to deal with someone. He didn’t know how many times he had done this.

“Big Brother, why didn’t we just act a moment ago? Looking at

that brat's looks, I can quickly fuck him up." A youth with bleached blonde hair asked with a puzzled expression.

"Right! We had the opportunity to clean that kid up when he just left South Gate Town, why didn't we hit him?" The other sturdy young man asked.

Scarface Li sneered coldly, "You two are too impatient. It's better to be very careful in our line of work. This time, young Gu has contacted me, but he also told me that this kid's background is not simple. So we shouldn't be careless and fail miserably."

The bleached blonde hair youth was unconcerned as he spoke, "Big Brother, Young Gu only asked us to break his 2 legs. Let's just swarm over and directly discard him. And then immediately rush and leave. Star City is big, even though he got beaten by us, he probably won't know who beat him!"

"Shut the fuck up!"

Scarface Li ruthlessly slapped the bleached blonde youth as he spoke then spoke with a grim and stern expression, "Do fucking remember!! Your carelessness will throw us into a deep pit. You've only been following me in this line of work for a few years. I've told you that we must be able to stand on the riverside without even wetting our shoes. I thought you already fucking knew about this. I don't want all our brothers to get implicated because of your fucking carelessness. Big Tiger, ask Little Cockroach where they are!!"

The sturdy youth was shocked and scared when he saw that Scarface Li was angry. He hastily relayed his instruction through the call. Shortly after, he hung up the phone and then reported, “Big Brother, Little Cockroach and the others will immediately rush here.”

Scarface Lee nodded and said, “Wait until Little Cockroach and the others have arrived, and then we’ll find the right time to act. With more than 10 people hitting that kid, even if that kid had 3 heads and 6 arms, he will never escape his fate of having his legs broken.”

“Uh huh!”

The sturdy youth repeatedly nodded.

On the 3-storied building rooftop nearby, Gu Yuetao was holding a binocular as he stood on the building’s edge. A middle-aged man with glasses and holding a briefcase was standing at his side.

“Young Master Gu, we have yet to investigate that kid’s background. Wouldn’t it be too rash if we hit him like this? He lives in South Gate Town, and I have always had the feeling that he not only he has a relationship with Long Zhengyu, but he perhaps comes from a special place.” The middle-aged man spoke his hesitation.

Gu Yuetao sneered, “He Gang, how come we haven’t clearly investigated that bastard kid’s background? If it weren’t for his good gambling skills, Long Zhengyu wouldn’t have given him that

house! If you ask me about his family's background, he comes from a rural village, and he's only a high schooler at Star City First High School. Hitting him won't cause anything. Much less Scarface Li, who is someone who will stick to the rules. Even if he failed, it's highly unlikely that he will sell me out."

He Gang was silent for a moment and eventually nodded silently.

He also thought that he was overly cautious. He knew clearly about Gu Yuetao's background. His father is the city's party's first secretary, while his mother was a family company executive with assets worth more than 100 million yuan. He was just Gu Yuetao's mother's secretary.

Inside the Immortal Drinking Place restaurant...

Tang Xiu was sitting alone on the table near the window. He calmly savored the meal. To him, this meal's flavor was bland and very ordinary. He had tasted every exotic delicacy and drank exquisite wines in the Immortal World. It was clearly impossible to compare them at the same level. Not to mention that he was also a chef, but a Master level one who had reached the pinnacle in gourmet and brewing skills.

"Ring ring ring..."

His cell phone loudly rang...

Tang Xiu took his cell phone and looked at the caller's ID. He

then pressed the answer button and spoke lightly, “Tang Xiu speaking, who’s this?”

“Master Tang, I’m Gong Dalong, Jia Ruidao’s first disciple. Could you please spare some time for us to meet? I have already arrived in Star City right now.”

Tang Xiu replied with an angry tone, “Haven’t I told you that I have no time?”

After having said that, he directly hung up the phone.

Tang Xiu had never liked the kinds of professional gamblers like Jia Ruidao. He did admit that Jia Ruidao indeed had amazing gambling techniques. However, there was always other people under the heavens that would be better than him, just like there was always a higher mountain over the other ones. If one day Jia Ruidao ran into someone who was more powerful than him, his fate would be very miserable.

Furthermore... Once a gambler had lost his reasons, he would definitely fall into grave problems. Once reason was lost, only recklessness and desperateness remained. In less severe cases, only family fortunes would be lost. But in more severe cases, it would invite calamities to thier family members as well as make their lives miserable.

“All gamblers are a group of fucking retarded people with insatiable greed. They are just like snakes that are never satisfied after swallowing an elephant. And greed is one of the biggest

original sins of all.”

Tang Xiu couldn't help but curse in his heart as he lost the appetite for eating his meal.

“Ring ring ring...”

The number which just called a moment ago was calling again persistently.

Coldness flashed in Tang Xiu's eyes. After a few seconds of silence, he put his chopsticks down and pressed the answer button again. He then spoke in a chilling tone, “I have already told you that I hate gambling! Much less that my friendship with Jia Ruidao is world's apart to the point it would be unlikely that I would stake my neck for him. I give you one last warning. If you dare to harass me again, you'll bear the consequences of my wrath!”

“Master Tang, I understand your meaning. But could you please let me finish my words? My Master is old, and he also has planned to quit from the gambling scene. However, my youngest brother had provoked trouble, and he is Master's son. Thus, Master had no choice but to gamble again. I'm perfectly aware that your friendship with my Master has yet to reach the point that you would help him. But, I still sincerely ask for you to help him.

“If Master Tang is willing to help, I will sincerely offer all of my assets to you. The amount is perhaps not much, only tens of millions of yuan. But you can count on us to owe you a huge favor from this one time help. If later Master Tang needs our assistance,

even if we are at the ends of the earth, we will immediately rush over at once.”

Chapter 69: The God Of War Incarnation

Tang Xiu quietly listened to Gong Dalong's words. The chilling coldness in his eyes then gradually dissipated. From his tone, he could tell and feel Gong Dalong's sincere feelings, as well as his care toward his Master, Jia Ruidao.

Wealth?!

He didn't have much concern about wealth. Its use was only to support resources for cultivation. Let alone tens of millions in asset, even if the amount were more than that, it was not impossible for him to obtain it once he set his mind to it.

But it was filial piety!

What he cared about was Gong Dalong's filial piety!

The proverbs had said, that of myriads of things, filial piety was the most important.

The ultimate bottom line of each person was this filial piety. This was the cornerstone of morality and virtue. This kind of character Gong Dalong had, was the true virtue that had always been held up high by Tang Xiu. He couldn't take back his vow before, and he valued Gong Dalong in regards to this pledge.

“Fine, where are you now?”

“Star City Airport!”

Tang Xiu spoke, “I’m going to Star City Medicinal Herbs Market now. I’ll be waiting for you, call me again later.”

The call ended.

Tang Xiu then received Long Zhenglin’s call. He was very excited when talking on the phone. He seemed to know Tang Xiu’s actions today. When he knew that Tang Xiu was having a meal in Immortal Drinking Place, he then hurriedly hung up the phone to rush over to meet Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu quickly finished his meal and then paid the bill before he left the Immortal Drinking Place restaurant. He originally intended to have a meal first, catch a cab and go straight to Star City Medicinal Herbs Market. However, these people who were stalked him were just like a fishbone stuck in his throat. He wouldn’t feel at ease if he didn’t solve this problem first.

Tang Xiu quickly identified the direction and then walked toward a remote place whilst using his spiritual sense to check on those people who were tracking him from behind. When he just entered the Immortal Drinking Place restaurant, he only saw 3 people tracking him. But now the number suddenly had increased to 14 people.

However, the thing that gave him a little peace of mind was that those who tracked him walked slovenly, and their footsteps were unstable. If they were just like those powerful wanted murderers,

he would probably have to fully exert his strength and be careful. However, dealing with street bullies like them was very easy for him.

10 minutes later.

Tang Xiu turned into a remote alley where people rarely passed by. Compared to the bustling commercial street from before, this place was less noisy and more quite.

Behind him, Scarface Li looked very happy. He didn't expect that Tang Xiu wouldn't return to South Gate Town and would come to this place after finishing his meal. This was simply an opportunity sent by the heavens!

“Chase him!”

Along with Scarface Li's order, a dozen youths scattered around him rushed forward, toward Tang Xiu. A few of them circled around to block Tang Xiu's escape route and trapped him in between them.

“Who are you?”

Tang Xiu was surrounded. But his expression was cold and chilling.

Scarface Lee's eyes squinted. He didn't send out an order to attack Tang Xiu yet and instead sized up him first. He couldn't help

but secretly think; because the previous ganging up and beating people he had done, his target would always show an anxious and fearful expression. However, the delicate youth in front of him right now was abnormally calm, and even didn't look to fear them.

“It seems that this little guy is not simple, it's not surprising that he could become Gu Yuetao's enemy.”

Scarface Li turned his head and looked around to his gang, as he then spoke in a deep tone, “Catch him! If he doesn't resist, just break his legs only.”

“Okay!”

A fiendish grin emerged on these young bullies' faces as they swarmed straight toward Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu's eyes were blazing as he acted as though lightning. The two youth bullies in front of him were sent flying upside down after he punched them with his fists. The moment he turned around, he kicked another youth bully, also sending him flying, as his body hit his other companions behind him and fell together to the ground.

“Bang! Bang! ...”

13 young bullies joined to gang up, and it only took half a minute for Tang Xiu to clean them up. To Tang Xiu, these youth thugs were simply just like embroidered pillow. However, since he had

yet to know their identity and the people behind them, he didn't want to kill them.

He wasn't afraid to kill, but neither would he want to add unnecessary trouble for himself.

Moreover, he could faintly guess the culprit who paid these bullies to attack him. However, he needed to confirm his suspicion.

Scarface Li's body was stiff frozen on his spot; it was even difficult for him to lift his hand to rub his eyes, affirming that the scene he was seeing was not an illusion.

It was 13 gang members!

How could his 13 gang members be so easy to hit and be thrown to the ground? Although they neither had undergone special training nor had basic martial arts skills, but still, they have been following him in countless fights and had rich fighting experience!

How could this be?

How could this bastard Tang Xiu be this powerful?

Scarface Li's subconsciously stepped backward a few steps, as he stared stiffly at Tang Xiu with a terrified expression in his eyes. He also practiced martial arts. He would be able to play with 3 or 4 people, although he would also have to put quite an effort into it.

But 13 people? He would have been beaten in minutes.

A Master!

This Tang Xiu was absolutely an expert amongst master experts. He had never run into such a powerful master!

On the 3-storied building's rooftop nearby, Gu Yuetao and He Gang had changed their position as they were also able to see the remote alley clearly. They were standing on the rooftop's edge and looking through the binocular, they were looking dumbfoundedly at the scene where Tang Xiu beat 13 youth bullies upside down.

“H-h-he... Is he possessed by the God of War? H-How could someone be so powerful? A person... fighting 13 experienced fighters. Those people are gangsters, they are protection money collectors, hired thugs. How could they be hit so miserably?” Gu Yuetao exclaimed out loud.

He Gang's mouth severely twitched a few times and secretly suppressed the fear in his heart. He then spoke in a bitter tone, “Even if he is not possessed by the God of War, but it's not much different. He's too frightening! He even hit 13 people down. Is he still human?”

Gu Yuetao's complexion was somewhat pale. He had sent someone to investigate Tang Xiu. He knew that Tang Xiu came from an ordinary family, had a car accident, and turned from a genius student into an idiot. Although recently there were signs that he seemed to have recovered... but it was nothing to worry

about. Moreover, apart from his amazing gambling skills that made Long Zhengyu treat him favorably, he seemed to have no other abilities.

But...But how could it happen this way?

“Young Master Gu, what should we do now?” He Gang strongly suppressed the fear in his heart as he asked in a whisper.

A pale color covered Gu Yuetao’s face. A dozen seconds after, he fiercely gnashed his teeth and replied, “Even if he can fight, how far could he play? He can beat down 13 thugs, but can he face and beat 13 expert martial artists? Humph...”

He Gang was surprised, “Young Master Gu, you mean to find...”

Gu Yuetao sneered, “Right, those Golden Phoenix Security Company’s chaps are usually very idle. Perhaps Lu Fuzhong would be very happy to get extra income!”

He Gang hesitated, “Young Master Gu, but if you want to hire these Golden Phoenix Security people, I’m afraid the expense will be very huge. If General Manager knows about this...”

Gu Yuetao replied in a grim tone, “I won’t use the money from the company. I’ll pay for it myself.”

Even though his tone was powerful, but his heart was actually bleeding. He didn’t know how much he should pay to invite those

chaps from Golden Phoenix Security Company... But he wanted to wipe out his shame and make Tang Xiu pay the price, so he had secretly made up his mind to sell his Porsche sports car.

At the remote alley...

Tang Xiu looked at the Scarface Li with a cold expression. He flipped his wrist, and skillfully and silently took out a Mitsubishi army knife, which he had taken after he solved those wanted criminals.

“This really fouled my mood. If people didn’t sell, I also will never buy it. But if a bastard like you wants to fuck me up, then I’ll fuck you up double. You bastards want to break my legs, huh? Then how about I break all 4 of your limbs? But, I don’t want much trouble, if you tell me the fucking bastard who hired you, I give you my word that you won’t have to live the rest of your life in a fucking wheelchair!” Tang Xiu spoke in a moderate pace, but the content was as though thunder blasted Scarface Li’s heart.

Spending the rest of his life... on a wheelchair?

What was he most afraid of? Definitely being disabled and spent the rest of his life in a wheelchair. He had done a lot of evil deeds and offended a lot of people these years. Those people hated him but didn’t dare to retaliate, because he was a quite formidable martial artist, coupled with having subordinate gang members under his command. But if his limbs were gone, those brothers of his would be just like rats leaving a sinking ship. By that time, countless people would come to find him and take their revenge.

When the tree had downed, the monkeys would scatter. If the wall collapsed, he would be cut by everyone.

Scarface Li was perfectly aware that if such a time came to him, he would probably die.

With such thoughts in his heart, he clenched his teeth and replied, "Are you sure?"

Tang Xiu lightly said, "Certainly"

Scarface Li spoke in a low tone, "Gu Yuetao."

It's really him!

Tang Xiu secretly sighed in his heart. He also had observed Gu Yuetao's facial features. From the simple exchanges when he met him, he also had figured out that that youth was narrow-minded, and always took revenge over simple grudges. Tang Xiu knew that he didn't offend him, and was only unwilling to respond to him. But it turned out that he was bearing a grudge over it.

"Waste your arm and get the fuck out!"

A chilling sensation gushed from Scarface Li's heart. He looked at the Mitsubishi army knife in Tang Xiu's hand before he quietly pulled out a dagger from his waist. He then stabbed his left arm

without hesitation.

“Puff.....”

Bloods splattered when the dagger was pulled out.

At this moment, Long Zhenglin's figure appeared at the alley's entrance. When he saw the scene in the alley, his complexion greatly changed as he dashed and sprinted very fast for hundreds of meters.

“Eldest Brother Tang, what happened?”

Tang Xiu lightly replied, “Just some fucking clowns. They are thugs hired by somebody to break my legs. But I have cleaned them up.”

Long Zhenglin looked at the youth thugs who were howling their painful cries everywhere. His eyes turned saucer as he exclaimed out loud in surprise, “Eldest Brother Tang, t-these bastards... D-did you beat them up yourself?”

“Yes!”

Tang Xiu nodded.

Long Zhenglin used his hand to rub his shiny big bald head as he shouted in admiration, with a disbelieving expression,

“AWESOME!!! IT”S SO FUCKING AWESOME!!! You are really fucking worthy to be this Long Zhenglin’s Eldest Brother!! THIS IS SIMPLY FUCKING AWESOME! 10... 13! No, no, no, also that bastard Scarface Li! You unexpectedly fucking cleaned them up! Man... I really have to worship you till I die!”

“Get lost will you...”

Tang Xiu couldn’t help but laugh as he let out a ridiculing swear.

Chapter 70: Relationship

Long Zhenglin let out a mischievous laugh as he then turned around and looked at Scarface Li. His complexion turned cold as he roared, “Fucking Scarface Li, it seems that you’re tired of living, eh? You even fucking dare to hit my Eldest Brother! Kneel down and kowtow to my Eldest Brother and apologize!!!”

Scarface Lee’s heart was as though fallen into an icy cave when Long Zhenglin came. Since Long Zhenglin recognized him, he naturally also knew him. He was also aware of Long Zhenglin’s identity as well as his power. He scowled miserably as a stream of curses toward Gu Yuetao flowed in his heart, for pushing him into a deep pit. With a flattering expression, he replied, “Young Master Long, I really didn’t know that Eldest Brother Tang was your Eldest Brother! If... if I had known about it earlier, even if I borrow any courage, never will I dare to provoke Eldest Brother Tang! It’s that Gu Yuetao bastard who pushed us to the pit like this!”

Long Zhenglin snapped angrily, “Gu Yuetao? This fucking-damned-motherfucker-cunt is really crooked. Humph... This Big Daddy will tidy him up later. But you better fucking not think that you’ll get out of this easily! Kneel down and apologize to my Eldest Brother!!!”

“Let it be!”

Tang Xiu stopped Long Zhenglin. He looked at Scarface Li and spoke in a desolate tone, “Take your gang and get lost! Do remember my words, evil people will be done in by evil people. And this Tang Xiu has never been a good person to begin with. I

will no longer prolong this matter with you since this is your first time provoking me. But if you dare to do any wicked deeds again, just be very careful in your acts, else I'll completely destroy all of you. Get lost now!"

Whilst enduring the pain, Scarface Li nodded again and again, "Yes yes yes! I'll be sure to remember. Even if I were to be given 100 points of courage, never will I dare to offend you anymore!"

Shortly after...

Tang Xiu gazed toward Scarface Li's gang as they left with distressed conditions. He then glanced at Long Zhenglin. When they were walking toward the commercial street, he asked, "Anyways, what are you looking me for? You're unlikely to have come only to flatter me, right?"

A trace of embarrassment could be seen on Long Zhenglin's face as his intention was exposed. His eager and helpless expression hung onto his face. He knew from his older brother Long Zhengyu about Tang Xiu's amazing and graceful style and bearing. He also learned from his father about how Tang Xiu treated Chen Zhizhong with an extreme and savage method. Those made his impression toward him skyrocket to the extreme peak.

How could he not know who Chen Zhizhong was? He was the big boss of Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical with several billion in asset, a famous man with a high social status as well as a rich and powerful person. Such a big shot that stood on a high mountain even knelt and begged Tang Xiu to be his disciple. Long Zhenglin felt that such a peerless skill and unique, graceful bearing Tang Xiu

had, had come to the point that it went against the heavens.

“Eldest Brother Tang, how come I can’t pay tribute and worship your peerless grace, eh?” Long Zhenglin wryly smiled as he probed and thickened his face.

Tang Xiu snappily cursed, “Beat it will you! Your brain is full of useless things. Anyway, I’m going to the Star City Medicinal Herbs Market, so I have no time to tag along with you. You go and do your things!”

“Eh, You’re going to the Medicinal Herbs Market?” Long Zhenglin was surprised, “Eldest Brother Tang, what do you wanna do there? Do you want to buy Chinese herbal medicine? You could have directly told Chen Zhizhong if you need them. Besides, he truly couldn’t wait to cling onto you and become your disciple!”

Tang Xiu’s expression turned gloomy as he replied with a solemn expression, “I have always solved my problems on my own and I won’t let myself trouble others if I can. The most difficult thing to deal with in life is to have a debt of gratitude toward others. Do you get it?”

Long Zhenglin gasped as he then nodded and replied, “What you say is true. For people who have a heavy sense of righteousness, they are bound by their words and promises. And a debt of gratitude is truly the most difficult of all! Okay then, I’ll drive you over there, okay?!”

“Eh, do you have a car?”

A trace of surprise emerged on Tang Xiu's face, but then he realized. Judging from Long Zhenglin's background, how could he possibly not have a car? His car might be a luxurious one.

“Of course, I have one fine damn car. Do you know how many hot chicks have wept because they want me to give them a free ride? But this young master, of course, has never looked them in the eye.” Long Zhenglin replied proudly.

As expected!

These second generation nouveau-riche were truly spoiled too much! They were simply clueless, and never understood the meaning of “hard-work and humbleness”. They were too drunk in indulging themselves in a life of luxury, squandering money like dirt, driving luxurious sport cars and throttling the gas pedal down; they forgot and were unable to realize that a lot of people were only able to get a half bowl of hot meal.

Tang Xiu walked along Long Zhenglin toward a Lamborghini sports car. Glancing at it a few times, he secretly shook his head. To such a big boy like Long Zhenglin, he couldn't be turned sullen of having such a sports car like this, could he?

As the saying goes, everyone gets what they have paid for.

A fine car was a fine car. After Tang Xiu sat in, he was able to feel a kind of cozy and comfortable feeling. Giving a few glances over the interior décor, he then spoke, “This stuff does really lives up to

technology, especially seeing such exceptional technology that resembles your taste. Ordinary people would at least have to struggle for decades to have this... ah no... it should be for a lifetime. Hey, how much is your car worth? Shouldn't it be a few million? A lot of people earn less than a few million in their entire life."

Long Zhenglin smiled with an embarrassed expression and said, "Eldest Brother Tang, never once have I ever thought that not only are your kung fu and medicine skills good, but you also have such a strong sense of humor! Man, the longer I know you, the more I realize that you're really a deep and far-sighted person. Looking at you is just like looking at Mt. Taishan's peak, really!"

"You bootlicker!"

Tang Xiu mocked and laughed.

Dragon Bay Resort.

Inside the classical-designed villa, Long Hanwen was holding a stack of documents as he read over it quietly. Steam was curling up from a teacup on the coffee table in front of him as faint tea fragrance lingered along, following the steam.

"Brother Chen, take a look at investigation's results."

A dignified expression was cast on Long Hanwen's face as his eyes read the last line of information on the document. He then handed

it to Chen Zhizhong at his side.

Chen Zhizhong silently received and read it. After having read it, his complexion was also unusually solemn. The documents were the investigation results regarding Tang Xiu, and particularly highlighted in the police investigation about his situation.

“There was a case at Star City First High School a few days ago. Tang Xiu indeed acted and killed the wanted criminal that was about to kidnap and take a student hostage. Furthermore, the criminal was an A-level fugitive and was a member of a group of human organ traffickers, who were then found killed at the abandoned auto-repair garage on Deep Red Cloud Road in the Peaceful Serene District. Each and everyone of them were also A-level wanted criminals. Since then Tang Xiu was being investigated by the police because he strangely disappeared in the last few days, I gave a false testimony for him. I think the one who killed those 5 wanted criminals was also him.” With a complex expression, Chen Zhizhong spoke.

Long Hanwen nodded, “This shouldn’t be wrong. At first, I thought that Tang Xiu was only a good, ordinary youngster. But now, it turns out that he’s not as simple as he seems on the surface! 5 A-level wanted criminals, with each and everyone of them being ruthless, and their hands having been drenched with blood. But all of them were completely killed by him. Adding the criminal he had killed at school, 6 people had died by his hands.”

Chen Zhizhong then replied with a solemn expression, “An extraordinary person, with extraordinary conducts and thoughts. For martial artists, in the strictest view, this could be seen that

even the police was unable to do anything against those human organs traffickers' abomination. But Tang Xiu didn't even make a mistake in getting rid of them. This... this is a Master... I must firmly set onto."

Long Hanwen confused, "Eh, are you really sure that Tang Xiu's strength is stronger than yours?"

Chen Zhizhong replied with a resolute and decisive tone, "Absolutely! He's absolutely better than me. Aren't we looking at the living examples right now? If it were me, it would be absolutely impossible to rescue Yuan Zhengxuan's ex-wife without getting injured. But he was also able to get out unscathed after killing so many wanted criminals!"

Long Hanwen said, "So you say. Anyways, I just recalled the information on the record. Tang Xiu actually saved Yuan Zhengxuan's ex-wife. It seems that Yuan Zhengxuan owed him a favor and a huge one at that. Tsk, tsk... who would have ever thought that 2 business society's big shots owe a huge favor toward a high-schooler. And right now, I don't even dare to imagine what frightening extent his achievements will be at in the future."

A trace of a happy smile emerged on Chen Zhizhong's face, "A chance to encounter a dragon would even change the weather. And how a Master that this Chen Zhizhong set my eyes onto would be mediocre?!!"

Long Hanwen let out a loud laughter before he spoke with a smile, "That's right. However, I just recalled that we only have an ordinary friendship with Yuan Zhengxuan, and our business

cooperation also is almost nil. Since he has a relationship with Tang Xiu, we also need to be close to him, yes?!”

Chen Zhizhong couldn't help laughing, “You're an old fox!”

“Hahaha ...”

When the two of them burst into loud laughter, Long Hanwen received an SMS. After reading it, he then looked at Chen Zhizhong with a strange expression and said, “Little Lin sent me a text, he says that Tang Xiu is going to the Start City Medicinal Herbs Market now.”

Chen Zhizhong abruptly got up and spoke without even thinking, “I'll also go there at once.”

Long Hanwen quickly pulled him back and said, “Hey, hey. If you directly go like this, Tang Xiu will definitely know that Little Lin has secretly informed us. I think that if you go there after you've found him, you must pretend that you met him by chance. Tell him that since your injuries have just been cured, you were going there to buy medicinal tonic and food supplements. I think this reason would be good.”

“Ah, that's right!”

Chen Zhizhong patted his head whilst grinning and mocked himself.

Star City Golden Emperor Villa District.

Yuan Chuling was sitting on an upscale western-style sofa as he watched dumbfoundedly at his father, Yuan Zhengxuan, who cuddled his mother, Zhao Jing's pregnant belly. A deep and confused expression could be seen on his face. He clearly remembered that his parents had divorced and even had been living separately. But now...

After a long while...

Yuan Zhengxuan spoke to Zhao Jing and comforted, "Now, I'll call the cops and ask about the situation at that abandoned auto-repair garage. I hope... I hope that your savior is safe and sound."

"Alright!"

Zhao Jing no longer wore her strong career woman appearance as she was previously, and obediently nodded.

Whilst looking at his father grabbing his cell phone, with a question in his heart, Yuan Chuling approached his mother and sat at her side as he asked in a whisper, "Mom, are you and Dad not..."

Zhao Jing glanced at her husband's back and whispered back, "Little Ling, please don't blame us for not telling you. In fact, our divorce was fake. There were some troubles, and we couldn't tell you about it yet. Please wait for a few years after you graduated from university, and you can live on your own and survive in the

society. We will tell you the whole truth by then. For now, don't ask about it and just study well."

Yuan Chuling stunned, he never dreamed that his mother would give him such an answer.

The divorce was fake?

This meant... that it was him who misunderstood his parents?

Suddenly, Yuan Chuling felt that he was way insensible and stupid. Recalling how he had abandoned himself and fell into despair, an intense remorse gushed out from inside his heart. Had it not been because for his Eldest Brother Tang Xiu, he would have still been in a deep pit, unable to move on from his self-abandonment.

A few minutes later, Yuan Zhengxuan hung up the phone as he looked at Zhao Jing and Yuan Chuling in front of him with a strange expression, "Wife, on the phone before, you've said that your savior is a young man? Do you know his name?"

Chapter 71: The Longstanding Enemy

Zhao Jing shook her head and said, “The situation was critical at that time, so I didn’t have the time to ask. He also didn’t want to speak anymore. Honey, has something happened to my savior?”

Yuan Zhengxuan replied, “There’s nothing with your savior, instead... those kidnappers of yours, they...”

Upon hearing that there was nothing happened to her savior, Zhao Jing was relieved as she curiously asked, “What happened to those kidnappers? The way I see it, he killed the kidnapper who was going to humiliate me. Honey, could the police hold him accountable for it? If so, we mustn’t stand by.”

Yuan Zhengxuan wryly smiled, “How will the police pursue your savior? They are clueless and got a headache about the one who killed those kidnappers! Those five kidnappers were all killed! And the youth who saved you has disappeared without a trace. Wife, you don’t know his name, but you should be recognized his appearance, right?”

“His looks...” Zhao Jing described the appearance that she deeply remembered.

The more Zhao Jing described him, the stranger Yuan Chuling’s expression was, as he quietly listened to her. The moment his mother finished speaking, he couldn’t help exclaiming, “It’s my Eldest Brother! That youth must be my Eldest Brother, Tang Xiu!”

Yuan Zhengxuan frowned and reproached, “Little Ling, don’t be ridiculous!”

Yuan Chuling replied with a serious expression, “Dad, I didn’t lie. If Mum’s description about her savior is true, then that person should be my Eldest Brother Tang Xiu. The kidnappers’ gang who attempted to kidnap my classmate at school that day, he was the one who killed him and rescued my classmate.”

“This...” Yuan Zhengxuan also knew the event a few days ago at the Star City First High School. But never once would he have imagined that his wife’s savior’s identity would be his son’s classmate.

“Little Ling, about your classmate, since your Mum knows her savior’s looks, if you have time, invite your classmate to our home and let your Mum recognize him.” Yuan Zhengxuan thought a moment and said.

“Okay!” Yuan Chuling nodded.

The Star City Medicinal Herbs Market was huge and had various kinds of medicinal herbs, of which, were shipped from all over the country, either for local sales or being transported to other cities.

Su Shangwen’s life was rough recently. Especially after his 40-year-old birthday party, a lot of his friends were alienating him. Each time he recalled the event and Tang Xiu’s face, he couldn’t help but clench his teeth.

Yesterday he had business talks and was now waiting for a formal contract signing. Today specifically, he ran to the medicinal market along with his wife to buy ginseng, caterpillar fungus, and other medicinal herbs to boil a good pot of duck soup to celebrate it.

“Honey, why do we have to buy these medicinal herbs by ourselves? This Medicinal Market is a mess! We could have ordered anyone to buy them.” Looking at the noisy market, Zhang Meiyun wiped the sweat off her nose and mouth with her fingers with a dejected expression.

Su Shangwen looked around as he shook his head and said, “No, I can’t trust anyone to buy these medicinal herbs. You don’t know about medicinal herbs. There are cultivated and wild herbs, and cultivated herbs don’t have much effect, only the wild ones do.”

“Haih, even the doorway is crowded.” Zhang Meiyun replied with a helpless tone.

Suddenly, Zhang Meiyun’s eyes squinted as she promptly raised her arm and spoke, “Hubby, do you see that person? Doesn’t he look like that little bastard Tang Xiu?”

Su Shangwen looked toward the direction his wife’s finger pointed. An angry expression suddenly surfaced on his face as he strode fast the same time and spoke, “He doesn’t look like him, he simply is that damn little bastard! Our business wouldn’t have been so miserable these days if it were not for him, even my old

friends are avoiding me as though I'm a plague. Let's go, I'm gonna fuck him up."

Su Shangwen's subordinate paid a number of small thugs a while ago to teach Tang Xiu a lesson the hard way. And the result? Not only were those damn small thugs unable to severely pack him up, but instead helped Su Lingyun in taking care of her restaurant business, resulting in a thriving and booming business.

"Tang Xiu!! You're really a rotten useless bastard! You even skipped classes to play around here? Your mother painstakingly makes money for your study, only to have you ditch school? Are you really a fucking idiot and have no feelings?" Toxic profanity came out from Su Shangwen's mouth.

Tang Xiu frowned as a look of loathing emerged from his eyes. He had never thought that he would run into this Su Shangwen couple. He knew clearly about them. If it were not because he did not want to make his mother sad, he could have dealt with this Su Shangwen couple a long time ago.

"Huh? Who the hell are you? Mind your own business!!!"

Tang Xiu glanced at Su Shangwen with a cold and detached expression as he snorted at him coldly.

Su Shangwen's rage sparked as he had the urge to drag this bastard nephew of his. He rolled his sleeves and shouted angrily, "Tang Xiu, bastard! You asked me who I am? I AM YOUR UNCLE! You say that I cannot discipline you as your elder? Apologize to me

and get the hell back to your school! Else, I'll tell the principal to kick you out from school directly and revoke your qualification for the College Entrance Test!!!”

Tang Xiu sneered, “Uncle? My uncle is a fucking bastard! Ah, I know. You want to become that bastard, do you? Besides, haven't you already had bought the school board and coerced them to kick me out by any means necessary? Well, I'm waiting. If you really have the ability, just fucking go! We'll see if the school will kick me out or you will get your face smeared by your own disgrace!”

At his side, Long Zhenglin's brows deeply wrinkled. His ability to discern people through their tone and mood was good, so he was sure that the man in front was Tang Xiu's uncle. But, such attitude and treatment from an uncle to his nephew was even... worse than an animal.

After seconds of hesitation, he walked forward and stood side by side with Tang Xiu. He looked at Su Shangwen with an indifferent expression and spoke, “I don't give a shit about who you are! You're humiliating Tang Xiu, and this is equal to humiliate me, Long Zhenglin. You better get lost now, else I'll pack you out.”

Only now did Su Shangwen realize that there was still a youth beside Tang Xiu. However, he had long been accustomed to act high and arrogant at his company and around his relatives. And a youngster now was clamoring in front him, causing him to rage more, “Eh, fucking brave aren't you? This bastard nephew of mine must be taught a lesson. Mind your own fucking business, take your fart and get lost! Else, I'll give you a lesson too!”

Long Zhenglin's anger ignited as he snapped, "Do you believe you have the ability to teach me? Apart from my old man, never once has this Long Zhenglin young master been afraid of anyone!"

With an ashen and cold expression, Tang Xiu's angry eyes stared at Su Shangwen as he turned around and said, "Long Zhenglin, talking with shitty people like him will only waste our time, let's leave!"

Long Zhenglin stared at Su Shangwen in a provocative manner as he moved his legs and followed Tang Xiu to leave.

"STOP!"

Su Shangwen stopped the two with a furious expression as he stormed out, "The heavens really are overturned. If I, Su Shangwen, don't clean two little bastards like you today, I'll change my surname!!"

"What damn bullshit!"

A sneer shouted from the crowd that gathered around.

Gong Dalong took the suitcase and came forward before Su Shangwen. He already recognized Tang Xiu, since he had seen his photo before coming to Star City. But, never did he think that someone would dare to provoke his master's savior.

Su Shangwen's expression slightly changed. He had never

thought that someone would step forward and halt him midway. He glanced at Gong Dalong and could faintly tell his status as well as feel a slight imposing manner from him. His attitude was weakened a bit even though he responded with an uncomfortable feeling, “Who are you? Are you here to mediate and meddle in others’ business?”

Gong Dalong ignored Su Shangwen and put down his suitcase. He stood in front of Tang Xiu and greeted respectfully, “Master Tang, I’m Gong Dalong. My Master sends his regards for you.”

Tang Xiu lightly nodded. He looked at Gong Dalong’s squared face, thick eyebrows, big and deep eyes, with no slightest hints of evil or crafty aura.

“Let’s talk about our matter later.”

Gong Dalong bowed deeply toward Tang Xiu as he then turned around to face Su Shangwen and said, “As for who am I, many people in Star City know me. If you have time, you can find out about me. Furthermore, Master Tang is my honored guest, and is NOT someone you can freely humiliate; otherwise, the consequences you’ll have to bear will be grave.”

Su Shangwen looked at Gong Dalong with a disbelieving expression. He was silent for quite awhile before he pointed at Tang Xiu and replied, “You said... he’s your honored guest? What the hell is this? A world’s joke? Nobody knows him more than I do. You couldn’t be mistaking him with others, could you?”

“My eyes are not blind!” Gong Dalong replied with a solemn tone.

Upon seeing than Gong Dalong’s aloof and stern attitude, a bit of a grudge was suddenly birthed in Su Shangwen’s heart. He quickly grabbed his phone and took Gong Dalong’s picture, adding some text and sent the message out promptly. Shortly after, his phone rang.

Su Shangwen received the call and heard someone speaking. Then, he hung up the phone after saying “I know”.

“Che, I know who you are. You’re just Jia Ruidao’s First Apprentice who makes a fortune from gambling, eh? Humph... Gong Dalong, I know that your Master has already fallen into a deep pit. And now you come after Tang Xiu, have you lost your mind?”

Anger appeared on Gong Dalong’s face. But when he was about to snap, a voice faster than him came over.

“I thought I heard a dog barking from far away. No wonder, there are many people gathered around here.”

Chen Zhizhong and Long Hanwen came together, and the one who was talking was Chen Zhizhong.

Su Shangwen was dumbfounded. He’s a businessman, how couldn’t he know about Chen Zhizhong and Long Hanwen? Compared with these two men, they were simply towering

mountains that he must look up to. It was just... judging from the meaning of Chen Zhizhong's words, it was as though it was aimed at him?

Chapter 72: Kneeling And Begging For Forgiveness

Su Shangwen furiously swallowed his saliva as he turned his head and stared at Tang Xiu wickedly. He had lost his face due to this bastard. He then smiled sheepishly, “Boss Chen, I didn’t expect to meet you here. Isn’t this Boss Long? I’m Su Shangwen, Shangwen Real Estate’s owner. Boss Long, my Shangwen Real Estate has reached the gentleman’s agreement to cooperate with the subsidiary companies under The Long Group. We will sign the contract of agreement a few days later.”

Long Hanwen sneered, “Su Shangwen of Shangwen Real Estate? Never heard of you!”

The moment he finished speaking, he took out his cell phone and dialed a number under the crowd’s eyes. He then spoke with a deep tone, “Who is the one who made an agreement with Shangwen Real Estate? Fire him! And cancel the agreement!! Mark my words, from now onward, anyone who dares to cooperate with Shangwen Real Estate will have to face the Long Group and have a rough life.”

What the hell?

Su Shangwen thought his ears were having a problem. He couldn’t believe it as he looked at Long Hanwen and exclaimed in surprise, “Boss Long, y-y-you are...”

Long Hanwen pointed at Long Zhenglin beside Tang Xiu and spoke with apathetic expression, “He’s my son. Someone was

barking that he will teach and humiliate my son. Which father won't act when seeing his son humiliated?"

It's done!

He also pointed at Tang Xiu and continued, "Tang Xiu is my Long Family's benefactor. We will always be behind him in whatever he does. As long as he speaks, my Long Family will not hesitate to remove your Shangwen Real Estate from this world at all cost."

"What did you say?"

Su Shangwen's expression instantly turned deathly pale. His eyes unceasingly shuttled between Tang Xiu, Long Zhenglin and Long Hanwen. He could accept the fact that Long Zhenglin was Long Hanwen's son. But, this little bastard beast, Tang Xiu... just how and when had he become the Long Family's benefactor?

In a flash, Su Shangwen's complexion was as though it turned older by several years. Waves of fear struck over and over again as it torn and sunk his heart.

He's finished!

He was perfectly aware of Tang Xiu's hatred toward him. He knew that his Shangwen Real Estate was on the brink of catastrophe because of this.

A surge of fear emerged in his eyes as his mouth opened at the

next moment.

After Long Hanwen finished speaking, Chen Zhizhong walked forward before Tang Xiu as he respectfully bowed and said, “Master, it’s my fault for coming this late, so you have been humiliated. But please be at ease, even if Brother Long won’t act, I will never let Shangwen Real Estate continue to exist. Please don’t refuse this disciple’s intentions.”

Tang Xiu looked at Chen Zhizhong indifferently and said, “Haven’t I told you that I have yet to promise and accept you as a disciple?”

Yet?

Chen Zhizhong keenly understood the meaning behind Tang Xiu’s words. He suddenly was overjoyed, and regardless of being surrounded by a large number of people, he straightly knelt in front of Tang Xiu and pleaded, “Master, please accept me! I will follow the ancient tradition to worship and follow your every word!”

Tang Xiu’s brow wrinkled as he waved his hand and replied, “You get up first. We’ll talk about this matter later.”

“Yes!”

Upon seeing that Tang Xiu didn’t directly refuse, Chen Zhizhong was overjoyed to the extreme. He was as though a child that was

obeying his elder's words, obediently and submissively standing beside him.

“Puff...”

Su Shangwen braved himself to kneel in front of Tang Xiu as he begged down with an expression of remorse on his face, “Tang Xiu, my good nephew. Uncle knows I have been treating you wrongly, and have done a thousand wrongdoings to you. But, you have a big heart and wouldn't lower yourself like me. Please ask Boss Long and Boss Chen to let me off. I vow in front of you, even my future grandchildren will be your servants. I beg you!”

Zhang Meiyun's face was as pale as a piece of white paper at the moment. She had long been accustomed to a luxurious and glamorous life. If Shangwen Real Estate was to...

“Whoosh ...”

A sudden uproar instantly clamored from the surrounding crowd.

They came over to watch the scene and were also faintly aware of the relationship between Tang Xiu and Su Shangwen. But never once did they ever thought that an uncle would treat his nephew so badly. Much to their surprise, they had never expected that even famous people would stand ahead and respect Tang Xiu. And the uncle even had no shame as he knelt and begged the nephew. For a moment, streams of shouts resounded:

“I have seen shameless people, but never once have I ever seen such a shameless man. The bird with balls truly stems from the jungle, eh!”

“Isn’t this too shameless? How could a man be this shameless to such a degree?”

“What the hell am I seeing today? An uncle kisses his nephew’s ass because of wealth? Is he still a man? Despicable!!!”

“A real man’s knell is very precious and belongs to his parents. Kneeling toward one’s parents is equal to kneeling toward the heavens! He even kneels toward his nephew... What a great and shameless bastard! If I were to have such a son, I would have choked him to death while I was still alive!!!”

“Fuck! This type of shitty man is really disgusting me. Judging from his attitude, he must have done a lot of evil deeds before. This... This will teach him perfectly well.”

“Don’t forgive him! This kind of fucking bastard must be thoroughly ruined as to never let him rise again!”

“Shameless...”

Listening to such curses, derogatory and condemning shouts, Su Shangwen’s heart was as though being sheared by a knife. He was bleeding. If there was a hole in the ground, he could have already sunk himself into it. However, as long as Tang Xiu forgave him,

Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong wouldn't act to get rid of him.

Through a millennium of experience, apart from the soft part toward his mother, Tang Xiu's heart had long been hardened as stone already. He didn't speak when facing Su Shangwen's pleading. He was perfectly aware of the hard truth, that Su Shangwen was the type of person that would never have a good ending even if he didn't act toward him.

On the other hand!

He also perfectly understood, that had he not long been acquainted with Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong as well as his millenniums of experience, he could have long been thrown into the deep pit by Su Shangwen. Recalling the facts until now, even if he was not dumped and sentenced to prison, he could have been severely injured by some thugs and have laid bedridden in a hospital.

A docile and good horse would always be ridden by a true man. While a good, weak, and well-behaved man would always be taken advantage of and bullied by other men.

But him... he never once considered himself as a good man to begin with. Even then, he had never taken the initiative to bully good people even once.

Tang Xiu turned toward Long Hanwen and calmly asked, "Uncle Long, how did you come to this place?"

Long Hanwen replied with a smile, “It’s because of Brother Chen’s injury. You’ve just treated and cured him! So he dragged me out to this Medicinal Herbs Market hoping to buy some traditional Chinese herbal medicine to nourish his body.”

Tang Xiu nodded and replied, “That being the case, please look for the medicinal herbs! Since I still have other things to do, I can’t accompany you.”

Long Hanwen didn’t reply and looked at Chen Zhizhong instead.

Chen Zhizhong quickly spoke, “Master... you’re here to buy medicinal herbs? If you really in need of them, you can tell me to buy it and I’ll send it to you at once.”

Tang Xiu waved and said, “No need. Come tomorrow night at South Gate Town!”

“Okay!”

Chen Zhizhong was overjoyed as he repeatedly complied with an excited expression.

Tang Xiu sent a hand gesture to Gong Dalong and completely ignored the Su Shangwen couple who knelt on the ground. He walked to the depths of Medicinal Herbs Market followed by the grinning Long Zhenglin.

Star City’s Medicinal Herbs Market was divided into two parts,

the booth area and the shop area. The most precious medicinal herbs in the Market were mostly in the shop area. The price of each and every precious medicinal herb was of course very expensive there.

Tang Xiu didn't go immediately to the shop area but rather wandered in the stall area to see the various Chinese herbal medicines.

At present, he had already cultivated the first stage of the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, with 9 spheres of stars inside his body, meaning that he was at the peak of the Vitality Tempering Stage. The next stage was the Skin Strengthening Stage, tempering his body and reinforcing his skin to the point that its toughness would make him invulnerable.

Had he had achieved this stage before he fought those human organ traffickers, he wouldn't have been afraid of their guns and would have been able to directly crush them at once.

A few minutes later...

Tang Xiu halted in front of a stall as his eyes fell on a tender and beautiful blood-colored flower. He recognized this flower. This flower was famous in the Immortal World with its illustrious name—Blood Spiral Shell. This Blood Spiral Shell was the main ingredient and had a huge role in concocting the Spirit Condensing Pill.

“Boss, how much is this Blood Spiral Shell flower?”

Tang Xiu asked the middle-aged stall owner.

That middle-aged stall owner glanced at the Blood Spiral Shell flower with a surprised expression, as he asked back with a confused expression, “Little Brother, this is not a Blood Spiral Shell flower! It’s called Chestnut Petal Flower. It has a very good effect for nourishing blood and vitality! But the price is quite expensive though.”

Tang Xiu said, “How much?”

The middle-aged stall owner hesitated before he replied, “500 yuan if you want it!”

500 yuan?

Tang Xiu’s heart was jolted as his eyes rolled. This Blood Spiral Shell flower was extremely precious, even countless people would fight fiercely over it in the Immortal World. But on Earth, such a precious medicine unexpectedly only sold as though it was a cabbage.

Long Zhenglin at his side suddenly interrupted, “Hey Boss! Do you think we’re spendthrift and foolish enough to get butchered? 500 yuan for this flower? I have a lot of this flower planted, do you want to buy it from me?”

“This...”

The middle-aged stall owner was speechless.

Long Zhenglin continued, “Boss, you need to treat the young and elders honestly in business, and such honesty is way too precious. Such an outrageous price is kinda fooling us. Sell it to us for 200. If you agree, we’ll pay you right away. If you don’t, we’ll leave.”

The middle-aged man looked at Long Zhenglin, and also glanced at Tang Xiu as he immediately smiled wryly, “Haih, fine then. This Little Brother truly is meticulous. Okay, you can have it for 200 yuan.”

Long Zhenglin looked at Tang Xiu with a proud expression in his eyes as he prepared to pay the flower. However, Tang Xiu had already taken his money and gave the middle-aged stall owner 200 yuan, taking the Blood Spiral Shell flower, and then left.

Tang Xiu had no hope previously for the trip to this Medicinal Herbs Market, he just wanted to try his luck. But never did he ever expect that he would pick up such a treasure. He also learned that slightly precious medicinal herbs on Earth were even outrageously priced. Even though he had tens of thousands of yuan in his bag, perhaps he wouldn’t even be able to afford the precious herbs he would find later.

Chapter 73: Unexpected Surprise

Luck sometimes would come and nobody would be able to prevent it. Tang Xiu had been wandering around the Medicinal Herbs Market's stall area for nearly an hour, and he had bought two precious herbs at a very low price. Although the preciousness could not be compared to the Blood Spiral Shell flower, but to the present him, these herbs were definitely good stuff.

“Eldest Brother Tang, are you really skilled in medical skills?”

Long Zhenglin had held himself back for quite a long time, and he was finally unable to bear it anymore and asked.

Tang Xiu replied lightly, “I know some.”

Long Zhenglin exclaimed, “Holy damn! You really deserve to be my Eldest Brother with all these abilities! Now I very much suspect that you even know more! However, what do you wanna do with these herbs? You don't have anything wrong with your body, do you?”

Tang Xiu rolled his eyes and said, “I'll have to face the College Entrance Test soon, and the pressure from studying is quite taxing. So I have to prepare and buy some medicinal herbs; to keep my body healthy. Anyways, I'll give you a prescription, and you buy the medicinal herbs yourself according to it. When you go home, boil it and drink it up. It will cure your problem.”

“My problem?”

Long Zhenglin's eyes rolled as he replied snappily, "Eldest Brother Tang, I'm strong and sturdy enough, how could my body be having problems?"

Tang Xiu said lightly, "Bah, you're a man! If your 'bird' can't dance vigorously on the bed, then you're sick. Besides, a man under 3 minutes shot... that's way too severe. Anyways, if you don't admit it, then forget it, I can save myself from trouble."

"..."

Long Zhenglin was shocked. Never once had he ever dreamt that Tang Xiu could see his most secretive private secret. He did have this problem. He could last for 7-8 minutes relying on sexual vitality supplements. However, since he was too excessive in getting laid recently, he was barely able to hold up to 3 minutes.

"Eldest Brother... no no no, Big Bro, my beloved-handsome Big Bro, quickly spit out the prescription for me. I'll give you anything you want!"

Tang Xiu grinned as his lips formed a charming curved arc. Giving Long Zhenglin the prescription was to kick him from his side; otherwise, this guy would have been like Tang Xuanzang's follower, who would stick to him and make him fall into depression.

Kidney function deficiency!

Kidney deficiency was precisely Long Zhenglin's problem, and it was quite severe at that. A man contracted with severe kidney function deficiency would almost certainly have premature ejaculation and be weak in bed. But for Tang Xiu, treating this problem was simple and easy.

"I'll look for paper and pen!"

Long Zhenglin immediately bolted without delay to the stall's side. After a moment, he already rushed over before Tang Xiu with a paper and pen. With such an eager-looking face, he made Tang Xiu feel funny and amused.

After having told him the prescription, Tang Xiu saw Long Zhenglin leave as he continued strolling toward the herbs stalls. Gong Dalong was silently following behind him and didn't speak. Tang Xiu didn't mind and temporarily ignored him. What he needed now was to find precious medicinal herbs and buy them at an extremely low price.

Unfortunately, his luck seemed to suddenly run out, since he didn't find any precious herbs for after a long time. With a disappointed expression, he changed the route and walked toward the shopping area.

There was a display showcase in each shop.

Tang Xiu carefully observed everything and didn't miss any medicinal herbs. But the ones which could enter his eyes were

outrageously priced sky high and were not something the current him was able to afford. And the ones that were priced slightly lower and could be afforded, were unable to enter his eyes

The light had dimmed as the night had fallen.

The street lights at the Medicinal Herb Market that had been lit as a lot of medicinal herbs shop began to close. Tang Xiu was still wandering around with a tranquil mood, without the quacking Long Zhenglin at his side. He looked up to the shining lights and saw that this medicinal herbs shop had no sign on top. Then, Tang Xiu entered the shop.

“Welcome! Is there something Young Master needs?”

A young clerk wearing a cheongsam dress approached him with a professional smile.

Tang Xiu said, “I’ll look around first, so you don’t need to escort me. If I find the medicinal herbs I would like to take, I’ll call you right away.”

“Alright, please have look Sir.”

Tang Xiu did not directly observe the medicinal herbs within the shop, and instead observed the appealing and interesting antique decoration in the shop. He saw that this medicinal herbs shop was as though designed and specifically arranged with a good Feng Shui pattern by someone.

He was very familiar with this method, especially this Feng Shui pattern, it was the most simple as he could see through the entire layout with only a glance. When his eyes fell on the wealth-fortune bringer cat on the counter, a smile suddenly emerged from his face.

“Ah, this shop’s owner is really interesting, sailing unfettered with the currents to invite wealth and amass the fortune.”

As the saying goes, in all trade and professions, if one were to put enough love and diligence into it, they would achieve outstanding results.

Even on Earth nowadays, Feng Shui was still used. Although most Feng Shui Masters were only scammers, there were still some who really had abilities. Feng Shui was after all, the treasured heritage that had been passed down by the ancestors for millenniums. The person who arranged this Feng Shui pattern was also quite an expert in this method.

Afterward...

Tang Xiu looked into the variety of herbs being showcased on top. To his surprise, he found hundreds of year old wild ginseng, even though his mouth twitched a few times due to looking at its price.

It was 7 digits!

Hundreds of year old wild ginseng were even priced at a 7 digit price!

Tang Xiu couldn't help thinking, if he were to sell his medicinal herbs he planted on a piece of herb field in the Immortal World on Earth, perhaps he would have been able to buy the whole planet!

As he slowly observed, a disappointed expression gradually thickened on Tang Xiu's face. It was just like in the other medicinal herb shops, the good stuff were outrageously priced sky high, and he was also disinclined to even look at the cheaper ones.

Could it be... that he really had to go back home now?

He was somewhat unwilling and looked over the herbs in the next showcase again. His footsteps abruptly stopped in front of the showcase as a strange expression suddenly emerged when he saw a kind of Spirit Fruit inside the showcase.

Holy Dragon Fruit? Earth had Holy Dragon Fruits?

Tang Xiu secretly suppressed the shock inside his heart. His eyes then fell on the price tag as he almost shouted a curse looking at it. This Holy Dragon Fruit was amazingly only 8888 yuan.

It really didn't value the resource!

Countless Supremes would break their heads and fight over this Holy Dragon Fruit in the Immortal World. If the fruit was to be refined and concocted into a pill, it would absolutely create a top-grade Primordial Chaos Pill. One must know that a grain of Primordial Chaos Pill would even be able to make an ordinary person ascend to immortality. If the lowest level Immortal took the pill, he would reach the Golden Immortal stage in a short time, and become the most revered Immortal in existence.

Tang Xiu estimated that even if the whole precious herbs in the entire shop area multiplied by 10,000 times the price, they would not be worth a dime compared to this Holy Dragon Fruit.

“Miss!”

Tang Xiu called the female clerk who greeted him before.

The clerk came with a smile, and said enthusiastically, “Sir, do you have anything in mind?”

Tang Xiu pointed to Holy Dragon Fruit and replied, “I want this.”

The female clerk smiled, “Your eyes are really good, Sir. This fruit is called Dragon Serpent Fruit. You can brew medicine with it, and it gives you enormous vitality. It’s very unfortunate that this Spirit Fruit is very difficult to obtain. Our Boss could only obtain this one from Qinghai through a lot of his contacts. Ah, right, it also has a magical case for it, that is a jade case to prevent it from rotting for a short time.”

Tang Xiu said, “Please show me! I will pay for it now.”

“Alright, please follow me, Sir!”

After a simple transaction, the Holy Dragon Fruit was completely Tang Xiu’s. With such a great harvest obtained, Tang Xiu lost his patience to continue wandering in the market.

After leaving the Medicinal Herbs Market, Tang Xiu looked at Gong Dalong who followed him and asked lightly, “Do you have a place to spend the night?”

Gong Dalong said, “Yes! But I don’t have much time, so I’m afraid that I have to go back earlier.”

Tang Xiu nodded and called the cab in the street corner. He brought along Gong Dalong to South Gate Town. He didn’t want to get involved with Jia Ruidao’s problem, and was only willing to see Gong Dalong due to his attitude.

Inside the villa...

The villa had been cleaned up, and Tang Xiu felt quite satisfied with the Developer Management Office’s cleaning staff’s performance. He gestured to Gong Dalong to sit down on the couch as he straightly sat on the opposite side.

“Tell me about what had happened.”

Gong Dalong smiled wryly as he spoke, “In fact, the one who incited the trouble is my youngest brother, Jia Yelei, and he’s also my Master’s son. Master has 3 disciples, I am his First Disciple, the Second is Zhang Tiechun, and the Third is Jia Yelei.”

“The Youngest was gambling a while ago, and he was set up by others’ machinations. Not only did he lose all the money he had, several of his properties were also lost. He called Second Brother, Zhang Tiechun to win those back. Second Brother’s gambling skill is much more powerful than the Youngest.”

“The results were that those two Younger Brothers of mine fell into the deep pit. Not only were their assets completely cleaned up, they even ended up borrowing tens of millions of yuan from their opponents. Similarly, those tens of millions yuan were also lost. Because they were completely broke and even had debt without money to pay it back, they bit the bullet and told Master about this matter.”

“At first, my Master only intended to pay up the tens of millions in gambling debt and let the matter go. But the Youngest didn’t want it and entangled Master for a few days to help him win it all back. Master was unable to ignore the Youngest’s unceasing pleads, and he went to gamble with the previous opponents, resulting in...”

Tang Xiu interrupted Gong Dalong’s words, “The results were that his opponents were much more powerful than him and your master lost to them, right? He lost miserably, didn’t he?”

Gong Dalong replied with a bitter expression, “Yes! My Master lost very miserably.”

Tang Xiu said, “Since his opponents were more skilled than him, then why didn’t he give up? What do you want my help for?”

Gong Dalong said, “It’s the nature of gambling. Once reason has been shrouded and darkened the eyes, even a Gambling Master would lose their mind. Besides, Master was prodded by the opponents and got agitated by his emotions, he even staked the jade pendant memento from Master’s wife on the table.”

“And he lost again, didn’t he?”

“Yes, he lost!”

Gong Dalong tightly gripped his fist as he lowered his head.

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, “So, even though your Master regretted it, he had no choice but to continue gambling, right? And he only wanted to win his wife’s memento back, and didn’t want the money back?”

Gong Dalong nodded and said, “Yes, my Master has borrowed a lot of money and gambled with them everyday, but he loses miserably in each and every gamble. Master has no other means left and sent me to ask for your help.”

Chapter 74: Back To School

Once gamblers lost, they would lose their reason, and lose their money to the bottomless pit. Even if their families' fortune were a lot to begin with, they were usually unable to suppress the urge to throw everything on the table. Tang Xiu even had once witnessed a gambler sell his children and wife after the gambler lost his family's fortune.

“Jia Ruidao still has yet to bet his life, hasn't he? So he's still lucky. I already know about your Master and disciples' matter. So if you have no other matters, you can leave now.” He said.

Gong Dalong's complexion was dull as he was dumbfounded. He had never thought that Tang Xiu would point him to the door even though he had listened to the whole story. What was his meaning? Refusing to help them?

“Master Tang, you ...”

Tang Xiu interrupted him and spoke, “Could it be that my words were not clear enough? I really can't do anything about this matter. Even though I sympathize with your problems, I have no way and ability to help you out.”

Gong Dalong asked with a difficult to bear expression, “Why? My Master said your gambling technique has to be more powerful than his. If there is somebody to teach you and train you a little bit, your gambling skill will far surpass my Master's.”

Tang Xiu replied with a smile, “I’ll have to rectify some points of yours. Firstly, I have no interest in gambling, not even the slightest interest to even train myself for it. Secondly, a professional gambler’s life is just like waiting to shoot birds all day long but finally getting downed after getting pecked by the wild goose. Gamblers like you should have been mentally prepared for getting bankrupt and losing your families’ fortune. Thirdly, I’m going to have the College Entrance Test within a month. Let alone to have a leave of absence from my school, if my Mother knew about, there’s no way I have a just reason to explain myself to her.”

Gong Dalong’s complexion was anxious, he walked straight in front of Tang Xiu as he knelt and begged, “Master Tang, I beg of you. Please help my Master! As long you are willing to help us, not only will I offer all the wealth my family has, I will obey your every word just like the way I treat my own parents. I will promptly be there if you ever call me to serve you!”

“...”

Looking at Gong Dalong, Tang Xiu suddenly recalled his old servant in the Immortal World. In order to pay a debt of gratitude, his old servant had always been following him with unbending loyalty and devotion. But after he had fallen to a scheme schemed and suffered, he didn’t know about him anymore.

Gong Dalong begged once again, “Master Tang, you spoke about the matter at your school and your Mother, right? I’ll take care about that, and I give you my word that it won’t give you any problems.”

Tang Xiu was startled and asked with a confused expression, “You can take care of it?”

Gong Dalong replied confidently, “Yes I can. If I can’t do it, I won’t disturb you anymore.”

Tang Xiu got up and spoke, “That being the case, then I’ll be waiting.”

Gong Dalong was overjoyed. He also had the thoughts that he must put in some effort to obtain Tang Xiu’s promise to help. But he didn’t expect that Tang Xiu would easily agree. A deep feeling of gratitude was suddenly bred in his heart. However, looking at Tang Xiu’s expression as he was seeing him out, he immediately spoke, “Master Tang, please wait for my news! It’s already quite late, I’ll leave and won’t disturb you any longer.”

“Take care!”

Tang Xiu calmly nodded.

The bustling and noisy night in Beijing...

A white Porsche Cayenne was moving in the traffic. Kang Xia was listening to the melodious light music in the driver seat. Her mind was wandering as she thought of something.

“Ring Ring Ring...”

Her cell phone rang abruptly, interrupting her train of thought...

Whilst putting on a Bluetooth earphone, she spoke, “Kang Xia speaking.”

“The information about Tang Xiu has been sent to your e-mail. But since you only gave me a little information, I have to filter out the data, and got 2 possible persons who meet your criteria.”

“Good!”

Kang Xia took off the earphone as she turned the steering wheel to turn right at the front intersection. After steering for 100 meters, she stopped at the roadside and immediately took a laptop from the front passenger seat and quickly opened her e-mail to read the incoming mail silently.

Shortly after...

A somewhat strange expression emerged from her face. She immediately tossed aside the information about the man called Tang Xiu who had a timber logging business. But the second one... how could it turn out to be a high schooler?

“Once a genius and turned idiot after getting into a car accident?”

Kang Xia’s eyebrows tightly wrinkled. An expression full of

thoughts flashed from her eyes. Had it been not for this note, she could have been thrown the idea inside her heart. After a moment, she put the laptop back onto the passenger seat and decided that she must personally go to Star City.

Kang Xia redialed the number which called her a moment ago, and then spoke, “Andy, help me book a plane ticket to Star City, and schedule it in advance for the morning flight tomorrow.”

“No problem!”

A sensual voice replied, but she then asked curiously after hesitating for a moment, “Boss, what do you wanna do in Star City? Could it be that you want to see that Tang Xiu?”

Kang Xia’s lips bent, as a curving smile emerged whilst she replied with a happy expression, “Didn’t you feel bored for having no struggles recently? I think I can smell a trace of an opportunity. If this trip to Star City is successful, you’ll get the credit. And you are about to start your job again.”

“Good Lord!”

The sensual voice was pleasantly surprised.

As the common saying goes, early planning was the key to success, and the ideas for the day came in the morning.

The bright and beautiful sunrise was illuminating the earth,

sending a warm and genial feeling to the world. After having been gone for quite a long time, Tang Xiu finally rushed to school.

He strode into Class 10 and saw that the students were gathered together at one place, and were gossiping in the usual messy and chaotic classroom. Yuan Chuling was quietly sitting in his seat, reading the textbook in his hands.

“What the...? Has this kid’s nature changed?”

With such a whisper in his heart, Tang Xiu strode toward his seat.

The moment Tang Xiu entered the classroom, the previously noisy and chaotic classroom suddenly turned quiet. Almost all students were aware of Tang Xiu’s arrival the moment he got there as their eyes tightly stared at him.

“What the fuck? That guy is truly bold and reckless! He even dares to attend the class today. Could it be that he doesn’t fear to be lectured by Teacher Han?” Voices suddenly broke out and immediately incited the clamors.

“That’s right! Teacher Han’s mood is way too damn bad the last few days. Even if she was in the class, her eyes were always staring at Tang Xiu’s seat. I bet that Teacher Han really wishes to kick that bastard out of the class, right?”

“Man, he’s always been damn rampant! But now he’s way too

fucking arrogant! It's as though he just comes back and cares for nothing else. It will be really annoying if Teacher Han doesn't lecture that bastard severely!"

"What a shitty rat, shit! A complete mess and rotten to the bone bastard! He's really making my blood turn upside down. How come this bastard can enter our class, huh? If I were Teacher Han, I would have used a broom and swept him out directly!"

"What an ignorant and good for nothing bastard!"

"..."

With his keen hearing ability, Tang Xiu was able to clearly hear every curse thrown at him by his classmates. But he simply ignored them.

Besides, it was a common occurrence to him. Even if he said anything, it would only be useless.

It was just like the famous words of wisdom, Even if the world were slandering me, bullying me, disgracing me, laughing at me, ignoring me, taking light of me, loathing me, and lying to me, the way to handle it was simply to endure them. Let them be, leave them be, avoid them, tolerate them, respect them, and finally ignore them. Just wait a few years later and then meet them again.

Also, Tang Xiu liked the other saying that bickering with an idiot would only make yourself an idiot. He clearly did not want himself

to become an idiot, so he might as well ignore them completely.

“Eldest Brother, you’ve come!”

Yuan Chuling finally realized that Tang Xiu had arrived as he quickly stood up with an excited expression.

Tang Xiu had never thought that Yuan Chuling would react so much, even giving him such a loud and powerful pat on his shoulder. He motioned him to sit down and then sat on his own seat. However, the thing that puzzled him was that Cheng Yannan, who sat in front him, then turned around and spoke in a low voice, which could only be heard by three of them, “Tang Xiu, were those human organ traffickers killed by you?”

Tang Xiu pretended to be confused and puzzled as he asked back, “What do you mean? I don’t get you.”

Cheng Yannan frowned and replied, “Was it not you? But my Big Sis said it was a youngster who did it. And since you’ve been gone from school for the past few days, I thought that you could be the chivalrous hero who got rid of those evils!”

Tang Xiu replied with a smile, “Haih, aren’t you reading too many Wuxia novels?”

Cheng Yannan’s face suddenly turned crimson as she quickly turned around.

Yuan Chuling cast a glance at Cheng Yannan's back before he leaned on very close toward Tang Xiu and whispered with a grateful expression, "Eldest Brother, thank you!"

Tang Xia was startled but quickly understood in a flash as he whispered back, "Do you know about it?"

Yuan Chuling nodded and said, "Mum told me everything. I know that you're the one who did it according to her description. Eldest Brother, I will hold onto this camaraderie deep inside my heart. If anything happens later, in any case, I will be your personal servant, you couldn't help but rely on me."

"Fuck it, get lost!" Tang Xiu replied back with a curse.

Along with their merry jokes, the classroom gradually quieted down as the Class 10's teacher in charge, Han Qingwu, walked in great strides toward the classroom with a cold expression. When she saw Tang Xiu, she immediately spoke with a solemn tone, "Tang Xiu, come out."

Tang Xiu raised his hand and traced the bridge of his nose. But seeing such a crimson flushed complexion on Han Qingwu's face, he thought that he would soon bump into a grim future. Glancing at Yuan Chuling, who looked at him with an expression full of sympathy, he stamped on Yuan Chuling's foot under the table, making Yuan Chuling involuntarily shout in painful voice, as he then stepped out of the classroom.

At the corridor...

Han Qingwu stared at Tang Xiu with a gloomy and steady expression. She didn't even speak for a long time.

A minute had passed, and Tang Xiu was finally unable to bear it as he broke the silence and spoke whilst smiling, "Teacher Han, the moment you saw me, you promptly called for me. You wouldn't have called me only to look at flowers that were growing on my face, would you?"

Having heard what he said, Han Qingwu suddenly snapped angrily, "You still have the nerve to speak with me and smile with such innocent face? And even dares to speak with such an oily mouth? Do you think I don't have the guts... to kick and clean you up? Now tell me, why did you lie to me a few days ago? You also ditched school, even deceiving me to escort you out of school personally. This is simply an unacceptable absurdity!!!"

"..."

Tang Xiu's head was suddenly full of heavy black lines.

Previously, he thought that Han Qingwu would be angry due to his school ditching. But never once he had ever expected that she had really taken to her heart about her escorting him out of school. But since he was in the wrong, with an awkward expression, Tang Xiu then replied with an embarrassed smile, "Ah, that was because... that was because I was really in a hurry to leave, Teacher Han. I swear that I had no time to tell you that time, but I know that what I've done was wrong. However, you're a great adult with

a tolerant and big heart right? You wouldn't lower yourself to the same level as this honest and well-behaved student, would you?"

"The hell with tolerant and having a big heart!"

Han Qingwu glanced at Tang Xiu angrily, as she even almost spat out that curse. Since when was he an honest and well-behaved student? If he were an honest student, there was no way that there would be honest students left on Earth nowadays. What kind of damn honest student dared to brazenly ditch school? The thing that was outrageously hateful was that he even dared to deceive a teacher to escort him out of school to skip classes.

"Fine! Since you have something to say, I'll listen to those reasons of yours and see whether you running away from school can be justified." Han Qingwu didn't want to let Tang Xiu go easily. She had been bitterly sullen inside for the past few days, she felt that it was necessary to push Tang Xiu to at least shed tears. Much less that the College Entrance Test was about to come, and there was not much time left. She must ensure that Tang Xiu would review his schoolwork and get good results on the College Entrance Test.

Chapter 75: The First Meeting

“Teacher Han, when you left to buy water at the supermarket, I happened to meet an acquaintance, and he was suffering from serious illness. Since I knew Traditional Chinese Medicine, he then took me away and I gave him treatment in the past few days. The heavens finally bestowed their blessings and I was able to cure his illness yesterday.” Tang Xiu had long thought about this good line of just reason for anticipation, as he threw the lie without even flinching.

Han Qingwu snapped, “What a bull! Even if you left to cure others, why did you go in such a hurry? And I don’t buy it. Since when have you learned Traditional Chinese Medicinal skills? I think you’re only talking big and not even a word that makes me believe you!”

Tang Xiu shouted loudly as though he was unjustly treated, “Teacher Han, all great masters have always been bound by their words! Even if I deceive the whole world, I wouldn’t dare to deceive you! If you don’t believe me, I can give you his number and you can ask him directly.”

“For real?”

Han Qingwu was doubtful and skeptical.

Tang Xiu straightened up his chest as he spoke with a resolute and decisive tone, “Yes, he’s a famous person. Ah, that’s right! I

think you may have heard of him if I tell you his name. His name is Chen Zhizhong, a businessman. And I do have a witness! You should have heard about Long Hanwen, yes? He's the Long Group's head."

Han Qingwu rolled her eyes. A moment ago, she was only skeptical hearing Tang Xiu's words. But now the tiny bit of trust just vanished in the blink of an eye.

Chen Zhizhong and Long Hanwen?

She certainly had heard about these two people. It wasn't just her. 99% of Star City's inhabitants would absolutely have heard about these two men. And, who was Tang Xiu? How could such an ordinary high schooler possibly know those big shots who were aloof and remote?

However, the reason she called Tang Xiu to come out was to vent out the iffy feeling in her heart and also to fix Tang Xiu's attitude toward his studying activities. Such said, regardless of the rubbish nonsense spat out by Tang Xiu, she didn't want to dwell and inquire it further, "Tang Xiu, I don't want to check out whether your words are true or not. In short, do bear in mind that there is only a month left to the College Entrance Test. I will ask other teachers to compile a set of exam papers for you to have a mock test. If your results are way down from the previous ones, do be very careful that I will cancel your qualification to attend the College Entrance Test."

"As expected, everything she says has always been about academic performance."

Tang Xiu secretly laughed inside. Again and again Han Qingwu declared her military command at him. But Tang Xiu believed that he could achieve it. Just as a diamond couldn't be polished without friction, a great man wouldn't be made without adversity. So he naturally wasn't afraid of a mock exam.

When he got back to the classroom, Tang Xiu saw Yuan Chuling wink at him with eyes full of a teasing expression.

“Eldest Brother, the day when you skipped classes, what message have you sent to Teacher Han? Her face was crimson, and everyone could clearly see it.”

That day?

Tang Xiu recalled his memory and suddenly couldn't help laughing involuntarily. Looking at the gossipy expression on Yuan Chuling's face, he secretly shook his head and no longer paid attention to him.

He needed a large number of medicinal herbs to reach the Skin Strengthening Stage in cultivating the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis; of which, he had yet to find the rest of the precious herbs. So Tang Xiu could only put on hold his cultivation first and collect all the medicinal herbs as fast as possible.

As for making money, he had thrown a long line and only needed to wait for the big fish to swallow the hook. As long as Kang Xia was recruited, he believed that with the Skin Care Lotion and Scar

Removal Cream formulas in his hand, he definitely would be able to make quite a fortune.

Soon after...

He sorted out everything he had done recently.

“Tang Xiu, you fucking dumb shit. What have you done to my parents?” A burst of loud yells sounded, as though a falling thunderclap suddenly resounded from the classroom’s door.

Then, with the speed of a 100 meters sprinter, Su Xiangfei stormed over toward Tang Xiu with a threatening posture. Although he knew that Tang Xiu was powerful, but he couldn’t help but ignore it this time. He recalled the situation at home, his raging father thundered the home appliances, his mother sat paralyzed on the sofa and wiped the tears from her face, making him wish to skin Tang Xiu alive and dismember his body into eight pieces.

Yuan Chuling suddenly looked up as his eyes flashed and stared at him. When Su Xiangfei was about to rush before Tang Xiu, he promptly stood up and kicked him, sending him flying a few meters away as his body smashed over the desks heavily.

“Aaaaaa...”

A scream, as though a pig was being butchered, came out from Su Xiangfei’s mouth.

Tang Xiu frowned. Whilst looking at the knocked down Su Xiangfei's forehead, who was struggling to stand up, he spoke with a cold and detached tone, "Su Xiangfei, if you are sick, drag yourself into the mental institution and check for yourself whether you're still sane or not. But if you are not sick, do not ever dare to provoke me. I'm not the one who provoked your arrogant and domineering parents, I'm even disinclined to even care about them. So, if you know what happened to them, take them to the hospital and have a check up with them. Understood?"

Su Xiangfei's eyes were as though about to spray a blazing fire as he stared at Tang Xiu and roared, "It must because of you! You bastard must have absolutely done something, else my Dad wouldn't have smashed things whilst cursing you loudly. Do fucking tell me! What have you done to my parents? Else, I won't rest until I kill you!"

Tang Xiu sneered, "You wanna kill me? Just depending on you? Previously, you framed me for stealing the money. Had it been that I wasn't softhearted, you could have been dumped into jail right now!"

Cheng Yannan suddenly stood up from her seat as she looked at the fierce expression on Su Xiangfei's face and spoke with a light voice, "Su Xiangfei, my Big Sis is the one who took care of this case. She told me that it was indeed you and your sister who had framed Tang Xiu for the stolen money. Also, this is a classroom! I hope you don't create trouble here, else once this issue turns bigger, the school absolutely will cancel your qualification to take the College Entrance Test."

Su Xiangfei's complexion turned crimson in a flash.

He had never thought that Cheng Yannan would even stand up and defend Tang Xiu. She even had exposed that embarrassing incident, making the entire class know about the incident's process from Cheng Yannan's mouth.

How would it feel to be shamed in public?

This was exactly the feeling Su Xiangfei felt at the moment. At the same time, he also hated Tang Xiu and Cheng Yannan to the bones, and the one who just gave him the kick, Yuan Chuling. If a stare could kill, he could have used it to kill these three thousands of times over.

A sudden uproar immediately rocked the entire students in the classroom.

"Heaven! Is that for real? Su Xiangfei went as far as to frame Tang Xiu? Man, I used to think that Tang Xiu was a troublemaker, but never once did I ever think that Su Xiangfei was full of evil tricks!"

"Man, we know him for a long time without even knowing his true nature. I really never thought that Su Xiangfei was able to do such a shameless thing. But, hearing the two's words, it's as though the both of them understood each other's meaning. What hatred could there be between their families?"

“Damn! I didn’t expect that my eyes could mistakenly judge others. I used to think that Su Xiangfei was a good guy. Only now do I know his true face. From now onwards, we should be wary and guard against him.”

“Su Xiangfei really has a bitch’s mind. “

“ ... ”

At this time, an enchanting and beautiful figure, with a graceful face, perfect body, and coupled with her fashion dress showed up at the classroom’s door.

Su Xiangfei didn’t notice it. He was shrouded with an ashamed and resentful feeling at the moment. His vision shifted from Cheng Yannan to Tang Xiu as he glared at him with anger blazing in his eyes as he roared, “Surnamed Tang, you fucking-idiot bastard have always been hiding behind women. Is that what a fucking real man could do? If you have the guts and ability, come fight me!”

“Hiding behind a woman is indeed not a real man. But if a man could make Kang Xia interested, I think he’s not the one who falls into this category.” The moment Kang Xia walked into the classroom, all eyes instantly got sucked toward her in a flash, bringing along the aloof and majestic feeling a Queen could have. She arrived and turned around in front of Su Xiangfei, and said it once again, “I must correct you. A real man doesn’t mean it has to be proved through fighting. I think people who solve the problems with their fists are either desperately forced or a fool. Now, think

for yourself, which kind of person are you?”

“I-I...”

The anger on Su Xiangfei’s face froze. With a foolish expression, he looked at the beautiful Kang Xia, whose gracefulness was not the slightest bit under the teacher in charge, Han Qingwu. His mouth was open but he didn’t know what to say.

Kang Xia cross-glanced at Su Xiangfei before she turned around and looked at Tang Xiu, and then lightly smiled, “It’s our first meeting. And yet seeing you’re this young makes me pleasantly surprised.”

Tang Xiu shook hands with her and calmly replied, “And I also have never thought that the legendary gold manager Miss Kang Xia would be beautiful and enchanting to this degree. Anyways, this place is not suitable, let’s talk elsewhere.”

“OK!”

Kang Xia shrugged her shoulders and replied.

Tang Xiu didn’t even glance at Su Xiangfei and blatantly ignored him, letting him feel more discomfort. After leaving the classroom, Tang Xiu saw the teacher Han Qingwu holding a thick stack of documents pass by.

“Tang Xiu! Are you going to skip class again?”

Seeing that Tang Xiu was going out of the classroom, Han Qingwu immediately cried out, as she felt as though she was bitten once and afraid to get bitter for the rest of the time.

A somewhat awkward expression emerged on Tang Xiu's face, especially because he was followed by Kang Xia. As for Kang Xia, she looked at Tang Xiu with a weird expression, as she suddenly smiled when she looked at Han Qingwu.

The moment she first saw Tang Xiu, she could feel that the youngster who was 5 or 6 years younger than her was very interesting. Kang Xia approached as she extended her hand to Han Qingwu, and said with a smile, "You are Tang Xiu's class in charge teacher, yes? How do you do? I'm Kang Xia, Tang Xiu's... friend. Is it possible that Tang Xiu could have a leave of absence? I have some matters to speak with him, and it would only need 2 hours at the most."

Han Qingwu looked at Kang Xia before she shifted her sight at Tang Xiu. In the end, she really couldn't figure out what had happened recently, as to why a lot of people came to find Tang Xiu. A moment ago, the principal summoned her to his office, and told her in a mandatory tone to give him a week of leave. But the most vexing thing and hard to accept for her was, that she had to lie to Tang Xiu's mother, telling her that he was going out to participate in a subject contest.

"Hello, how do you do? Anyways, since you have some matters, it's alright, please take care!"

Kang Xia nodded slightly as she took the lead and walked.

Tang Xiu said with a smile, “Teacher Han, then I can go, yes? This doesn’t count that I’m skipping classes, right?”

“Just roll quickly!”

Deep inside, Han Qingwu suppressed the peculiar feeling inside her as she snapped with a smile.

Tang Xiu only chuckled. The moment he brushed past Han Qingwu, his footsteps slightly halted for a second, as he whispered fast, “Teacher Han, to be honest, you are more beautiful than Kang Xia. In my opinion, that is.”

The next second he had already bolted toward Kang Xia!

“What the... T-This... this brat, even dares to molest me?” Han Qingwu was dumbfounded as she was at a loss of whether to laugh or cry. Her eyes furiously rolled as she stared at Tang Xiu’s back before she turned toward the classroom.

Chapter 76: Trusted Subordinates

At a Starbucks Café...

Tang Xiu and Kang Xia were sitting and facing each other. Both of them didn't speak and only observed each other. Tang Xiu didn't drink coffee, so he was holding a cup of water whilst watching Kang Xia, who was leisurely stirring her coffee with a spoon. Then, Tang Xiu turned his head and looked outside through the window.

Kang Xia's hand that stirred the coffee abruptly stopped. Her brows slightly slanted, although she was quickly back to her usual self in a flash. She just found that she couldn't see through Tang Xiu. It was a baffling feeling and was almost inconceivable to her.

She entered the society in her early years and had been struggling in the business circle for 7 or 8 years already. She had met and read countless people, and only a few amongst them she couldn't see through. And those few were either the elites of the business circle's elites or amazing people from rich families.

“Tang Xiu!” Finally, Kang Xia couldn't help but call.

Tang Xiu turned his head and calmly said, “I thought Miss Kang Xia wouldn't rush the thousands of miles distance to this Star City, only to get addicted to looking at me!”

“Pfft...”

Kang Xia couldn't help but laugh. She shook her head and replied, "You! You're a very interesting young man. I could tell that there are more amusing things for me to come. To be honest, I do want to know more about you."

Tang Xiu said with a smile, "Ah, you're a young woman. Please don't look at me with such kind of looks. I'll advise you in advance, don't develop any interest toward me or you will regret it later."

Kang Xia got her moment of surprise and then asked with curiosity, "Why will I regret it?"

Tang Xiu answered with a smile, "There is such hearsay, that once a woman develops interest in a man, she wouldn't be far away from falling into the man's lap and taking care of his household. I don't want you to fall in love with me. The only hope I have is just for you to be very good in making money for me after you're recruited."

"Pfft, Hahaha..."

Kang Xia couldn't help laughing, to the point where even tears almost fell.

"This is so damn interesting! Tang Xiu, even if we can't reach a deal to cooperate today, I will make you my friend."

Friend?

The happy expression on Tang Xiu's face vanished without a trace as a gloomy expression surfaced. If it were not because the trust he gave to his friends in the Immortal World, he wouldn't have ended up with such miserable fate. With a complexion full of detached expression, he said, "I don't need friends. What I need are subordinates only. If you have this intention, I advise to put it away and go back."

The smile on Kang Xia's face froze. She looked at Tang Xiu with a strange expression in her eyes. Only after quite a while did she speak to him, "Fine! I accept your advice. Now let's have the talk. What capital do you have in recruiting me as your subordinate?"

Tang Xiu replied straightforwardly, "Three things! First, I give you a free reign. Second, I have the skills. Third, I can help you achieve your ambition if you're able to make money for me!"

These were her soft ribs and Kang Xia's weaknesses. Those were the aspects even Kang Xia was unable to refuse. However, she was a hard-to-compromise person. She stared deeply at Tang Xiu and asked, "As far as I know, Mr. Tang has yet to register the company, and I have yet to verify the end products' test results."

Tang Xiu took 2 small porcelain bottles from his pocket and placed them on the tabletop in front of Kang Xia. Then, he calmly replied, "This one is the Skin Care Lotion and the other one is the Scar Removal Cream. Take and test them when you get back. I believe the result will come out in a week. As for the company registration, I indeed have yet to register one. If you need it, I will have it completed in a few days."

Kang Xia straightly took the two porcelains and asked, “How much funds do you want to invest?”

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, “I have no money with me right now.”

Kang Xia couldn't help looking at Tang Xiu straightly and said, “Are you joking with me? You want to register a company without money? And you even boast to help me achieve my lofty ambition?”

Tang Xiu said, “I can't say that I'm penniless though. I already sold 5% of the shares for 20 million yuan. But I want you to register the company as well as be responsible for managing the operation later.”

5% of the shares, sold for 20 million?

Kang Xia was dumbfounded. She suddenly felt that she just heard a massive joke. The company had yet to register, and the stock was already able to be sold? And at a sky-high priced at that?

“Mr. Tang, if you don't have any sincerity, I don't think we can continue this talk. What I need is a real Boss, not the one who plays with words and talks big.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before he took his phone and dialed Long Zhengyu's number.

“Brother Tang, what’s up?”

Long Zhengyu’s voice transmitted through the phone.

Tang Xiu said, “I need that 20 million investment funds from you in half an hour. If you can, send the money to the Starbucks Café near my school. I promise you to sell the shares, else I will have to look for other shareholders.”

“OK!”

Long Zhengyu directly hung up the phone.

Kang Xia looked at Tang Xiu with an astonished expression. Sending over 20 millions in half an hour? Was he joking?

Tang Xiu knew Long Zhengyu’s capital. Let alone sending 20 million in half an hour, if he were to say 10 minutes to him, he would probably be able to deliver it. But, the person who sent the money was likely his closest aide.

Time flew by...

20 minutes had passed in a flash.

Tang Xiu was silent. But, Kang Xia didn’t look anxious and impatient, and instead had an expectation. If someone really was

able to send 20 millions of yuan in half an hour, then it proved that Tang Xiu was not talking big. That would also mean that he had the ability.

At this moment...

A well-dressed middle-aged man rushed over into the café. After he looked around, he exclaimed, “Which is Mr. Tang Xiu?”

Tang Xiu raised his hand as he got up and looked at the rushing middle-aged man.

“I am Tang Xiu, Long Zhengyu sent you?”

The middle-aged man replied respectfully, “Yes! Chief Long is in a rush to Sun City. He couldn’t catch up within half an hour, so he sent me to deliver the money. Mr. Tang, this is the bankcard with 20 million, and the PIN is behind the bankcard.”

Tang Xiu took the bankcard. After sending away the middle-aged man, he directly placed the bankcard in front of Kang Xia and said lightly, “The money is in this bankcard, you check it.”

Kang Xia quickly took her phone. After a fast inquiry, her expression turned marvelous as an inconceivable and surprised expression was drawn on her face.

After quite a long while, she slowly handed over the bankcard to Tang Xiu and spoke seriously, “Mr. Tang, you have proved your

ability. If I've tested those two bottles of cosmetics and the products have side effects under the prerequisite, and the effect is very good, I think I will agree to join."

Tang Xiu didn't take the bankcard but calmly replied, "I am very confident of my products. I'll send you a short message for the formula to your mailbox, and you can take this 20 million as your starting fund. If the product's effect has been tested and proved good, I hope you can stick to your words."

Kang Xia asked with an astonished tone, "Do you really believe me?"

Tang Xiu said, "I need not to suspect the people who will work with me. This 20 million perhaps is an astronomical figure in the eyes of many people. But in my eyes, it's only a small amount that is worthwhile for the exchange of your first test."

Kang Xia raised her thumbs up, praising, "Ah, Ignoring the trivial matters to achieve great achievements. I'm hoping that these two cosmetics truly have the effect as you have said. Such being the case, I can work as your subordinate! Last question, apart from this fund, how much investment funds will you add later?"

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment and slowly said, "I don't know."

What? Kang Xia looked at Tang Xiu with a strange look. She suddenly felt that Tang Xiu was like a white wolf in the empty gloves, wasn't he? After hesitated, she smiled and said, "Since Mr.

Tang cannot answer my question, then I will change the question. If... If I said that I finally joined, what kind of treatment will I get?”

Tang Xiu replied without hesitation, “10% shares.”

“Only 10%?” Kang Xia spoke with astonishment.

Tang Xiu tranquilly replied, “Yes, 10% and no more!”

Kang Xia shrugged her shoulders. She smiled and said, “10%, eh? I hope I wouldn’t get kicked out if the company has gotten bigger in the future.”

Tang Xiu said, “Anyways, I don’t have the time to manage the company, so I need other’s strength to do things for me.”

Kang Xia laughed, “Understood. By the way, since everything has been said, I’ll go first.”

Tang Xiu nodded.

Kang Xia then asked with a puzzled tone, “Don’t you have to return to school?”

Tang Xiu smiled lightly and said, “I have long mastered all the subjects I need to learn at school. So it’s kinda boring if I have to stay there. Besides, I wanna take a break and relax.”

Kang Xia lazy smile, “Ah, it seems like that more or less, I’ve helped you in taking the leave of absence, haven’t I?”

“Yup.”

“Hahaha ...”

Along with Kang Xia’s departure, Tang Xiu believed that he had won her and she would join. So he can hand the rights and privileges to Kang Xia for registering the company, setting up, manufacturing, etc. All those coupled with Long Zhengyu’s help would make the initial period very smooth. But, the additional investment funds Kang Xia had mentioned before, more or less made him quite depressed.

“If... if Gong Dalong really can help me get a leave of absence and conceal it from Mum. I might have to leave with him and help Jia Ruidao. If I were to succeed, I could get some money back.” Tang Xiu secretly weighing his options.

“Ring ring ring...”

The ringtone abruptly interrupted Tang Xiu’s train of thought.

He took the phone and suddenly got a headache after he saw the caller’s ID. It was Han Qingwu. This was not even half the time requested for the leave before! Was she that afraid that he would run?

Even with vexed thoughts, he chose to answer.

“Hello, Tang Xiu? Your mother came to school, you’d better rush back here quickly.” Han Qingwu’s voice transmitted.

Tang Xiu’s complexion changed as he hastily asked, “Teacher Han, why would my mother go to school?”

Han Qingwu said, “I don’t know about the details, but it seems to be because of the matters with your uncle. In short, you should rush here quickly and see for yourself. And, isn’t Su Xiangfei your cousin? He seems to be very hostile to your mother.”

“FUCK!” Tang Xiu cursed in his mind.

Su Xiangfei hated him and of course, he would be very hostile to his mother. What he really worried was that Su Xiangfei would hurt his mother before he got back.

Chapter 77: A Truly Kind-Hearted Mother

Tang Xiu rushed back to school lightning fast and found his mother sitting in the office accompanied by Han Qingwu, who was chatting with her. Seeing this situation, the worries in Tang Xiu's heart slowly eased. He thought to assign someone to protect his mother secretly, in case one day he would provoke powerful enemies; of which, if they were unable to retaliate against him and target his mother, what would he do if that happened?

“Mum, why did you come to school?”

Tang Xiu looked at his mother and asked curiously.

Upon seeing her son had arrived, Su Lingyun promptly stepped forward to pull his hand and hastily asked, “Xiu'er, I've been looking for you in a rush. What have you done to your uncle? Your uncle and aunt dashed to our restaurant, kneeling and crying, wanting you to forgive them. What has happened exactly?”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before he answered, “Mum, I was shopping a couple days ago and met Su Shangwen and Zhang Meiyun. They wanted to humiliate me as well as coerce the school to expel me. At that time, my friend was tagging along with me, and he comes from a big business family 100 times bigger than Shangwen Real Estate. That time my friend stood up and defend me, for which, Su Shangwen insulted him. What we didn't expect was that his father actually passed by and flew into a rage, and swore to make Su Shangwen's life difficult. If I'm not mistaken, perhaps he will act to get rid of Su Shangwen, so Su Shangwen then ran to you for help, wanting me to talk good about him to my

friend's father.”

Su Lingyun's complexion greatly changed. Anger grew on her face as she spoke, “How could Su Shangwen be like this? Whatever it is, you are his nephew, his sister's son!! How could he treat you this badly? Son, you can rest assured, if he dares to use his contacts to make the school expel you, I... I will fight him!”

Han Qingwu at the side also looked angry. She also recalled some of school's leaders' attitude toward Tang Xiu. She also knew Su Shangwen's deeds and conducts. Immediately she said, “Big... Big Sis Su, you don't need to worry! While I'm still at school, I won't let anyone bully Tang Xiu and expel him from the school.”

Su Lingyun replied with grateful expression, “Beautiful teacher, thank you. I have heard about the matter before, thank you for standing up for Xiu'er. Our family's Xiu'er is very smart and well-behaved. It's just my fault that I have no abilities to protect him, and let him get wronged.”

Han Qingwu took Su Lingyun's hands and spoke cordially, “Please don't say that. A year ago, had it not been for Tang Xiu who saved me, he wouldn't have been hit by the car. This is only a natural act that I must do.”

Su Lingyun had already known that her son saved Han Qingwu. But still, she was full of gratitude. After quite a while, she turned her head and faced Tang Xiu, “Son, what should we do now? Your uncle and aunt... they are still in our restaurant and refuses to leave. I...”

Tang Xiu sighed in his heart. In the end, Su Shangwen was his mother's brother. And his mother was a kind-hearted woman to begin with. She was unable to steel her heart to withstand Su Shangwen's pleads and begging. She might be unwilling to see Su Shangwen end up in a miserable fate.

"It depends on you Mum. What do you think of it?"

Su Lingyun hesitated. She didn't know what to say for a moment. Besides, it was also caused by Su Shangwen himself. If it were not because of her son's friend, she was afraid that her son's student status would be implicated and be humiliated. Even his schooling would not have continued. But... blood is thicker than water, and she was caught in a dilemma with this situation.

Tang Xiu spoke in a bitter tone, "Mom, this time I'll tell my friend to talk to his father to let the matter go! But if Su Shangwen dares to humiliate us again, I swear I will not let him go easily next time."

Even though Tang Xiu spoke like this, but he was sneering inside. He couldn't let Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong to act, but he could still make Yuan Zhengxuan strike Su Shangwen. Much less, he had neither familial love nor did he have significant importance to Su Shangwen's family whatsoever.

Su Lingyun hesitated, "Xiu'er, will your words be heard?"

Tang Xiu nodded and spoke with confidence, "This matter is

caused by me. My words certainly will be heard by them. Don't worry! When we got back to the restaurant, you'll know about it Mum!"

Eventually, Tang Xiu was able to comfort Su Lingyun and advised her to go back.

At the office's door...

With a strange look on her face, Han Qingwu stared at Tang Xiu, "You didn't tell your mother the whole truth, did you? If your friend's father was really angry because Su Shangwen humiliated his son and wanted to kick him out, would even your words have any weight? Do me a favor and tell me the honest truth will you?"

Tang Xiu Xi laughed, "Teacher Han, if a woman is too clever, it would be bad for her."

Han Qingwu laughed with a happy and proud expression, "Who says a smart woman is bad? Now is not the era of 'a woman lacks talent is virtuous'. Eh, no no no. You only shifted the topic, kid. Now tell me quickly, what has really happened?"

Tang Xiu had no other choice and replied helplessly, "Haih, since you really want to know, I'll tell you. I've mentioned it to you before that I met Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical's Boss, Chen Zhizhong, remember? I really have cured his illness. So he owes me a favor. When Su Shangwen humiliated me, he happened to bump into us. He was very angry and insisted on making Su Shangwen pay the price."

Han Qingwu was surprised, “For real? It’s really Chen Zhizhong?”

Tang Xiu’s eyes rolled and spoke, “Anyway, tonight I’ll take a leave of absence and see Chen Zhizhong. Do you want to come along?”

Han Qingwu snapped angrily, “You want a leave of absence? Again?”

Tang Xiu wryly smiled, “Teacher Han, there’s no class at night. I want to talk to him about this matter, or you want my Mum to feel awkward and embarrassed?”

Hang Qingwu’s anger vanished quickly as she relaxed, “If that’s the case, then I’ll give you a leave tonight. Do remember that you must attend class tomorrow morning, and don’t be late.”

“Alright!” Tang Xiu smiled and nodded.

He had made an appointment with Chen Zhizhong tonight and was pondering how he would get a leave of absence. But, much to his surprise, he never thought that his mother would come to school, helping him obtain it.

Han Qingwu said, “Ah yes. The Principal talked to me today to give you a holiday for a week. Tell me honestly, what really happened?”

Tang Xiu said with a surprised expression, “He really complied and agreed?”

Han Qingwu snapped, “Only agreed? Bah, it’s far more than that! He even told me to lie to your Mother that you’re going to participate in the Subjects Competition. But, judging from your words, you know the reason, right? Be honest and tell me quickly, what happened?”

Tang Xiu’s mind rotated faster as he grinned, “Someone’s Master has gotten sick, and it’s quite severe. My medical skill is good, so he asked me to go to another city and help to treat his Master’s sickness. You also know, when have I had the time to go to another city? So to refuse him, I told him that I don’t have the time since I don’t have any just reasons to tell Mum and the school. But I never thought that he would see the Principal, even arranging to make you talk to my mother and covering this issue from her.”

“You didn’t lie to me?”

Tang Xiu raised his hand and vowed solemnly, “In the name of my future wife, I swear that I absolutely didn’t lie to you.”

“Pfft ...”

Han Qingwu glanced at Tang Xiu with a supercilious look, as she ridiculed with a smile, “You boy, how old are you, huh? Even talking about your future wife! Fine, I’ll handle the talk with your mother! But remember! You only have one week including today.”

Tang Xiu smiled wryly, “B-But, tonight is not included. It’s different!”

“You get what you deserve!”

Han Qingwu smiled triumphantly.

Su Xiangfei glared angrily at him when Tang Xiu entered the classroom. He only glanced and straightly chose to ignore him. He returned to his seat, watching Yuan Chuling studying diligently. Curiosity suddenly itched him as he asked, “Man, how come you changed so much today? I have never seen you this diligent before?”

Yuan Chuling lightly laughed, “That was my past confused-idiot me. Anyways, Tang Xiu, do you know something? My parent’s divorce is a fake. Although they applied for the divorce certificate, but their feelings for each other are much better than before.”

Tang Xiu asked in confused, “How so?”

Yuan Chuling shook his head and said, “I’m also clueless as to what happened. Mum told me that having a divorce was their last resort. They won’t tell me why as of now, and only told me to graduate from college and have the ability to survive in society. Only then will they tell me the whole story. Man, how stupid I was to fall into depression and abandon myself because I didn’t understand them.”

Tang Xiu suddenly realized as he patted his shoulder and smiled, “Want me to help you?”

Yuan Chuling confused, “Huh? How will you help me? There’s only a month left before the College Entrance Test. I’m racing against time right now to study. I wanna make my parents happy and get high scores on the test.”

Tang Xiu smiled again, “Wait for a week! Then I’ll teach you my experiences in studying. As long as you study with my method, your performance would improve by leaps and bounds.”

“Really?” Yuan Chuling replied with an overjoyed expression.

With a confident smile, Tang Xiu replied, “Haven’t you seen my previous grades? If I really want it, it’s easy for me to be the top student at school!”

At this moment, Cheng Yannan, who was secretly eavesdropping Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling’s conversation, suddenly turned around and spoke, “Yo, Tang Xiu, you cannot only favor him. We are also your classmates. Since you will teach Yuan Chuling your studying method, please teach it to me too! It shouldn’t be a problem, right?”

Tang Xiu couldn’t help laughing and replied, “Fine, I’ll be generous today and help you.”

Cheng Yannan nodded, but suddenly her eyes turned, “Can I bring along another 2 girls? Just imagine! If many students from our class got outstanding scores in the College Entrance Test, our teacher-in-charge, Teacher Han would get an award!”

Tang Xi hesitated for a moment before he nodded and said, “OK! But don’t bring along too many people.”

Tang Xiu hadn’t a good impression toward his classmates. He could see that his classmates were only accepting in what they heard from others and followed it blindly, even driving them to curse others. If it were not for Cheng Yannan, he would have refused to teach the other classmates of his.

Yuan Chuling said, “Eldest Brother, you said to wait for a week, why not start now?”

Tang Xiu smiled, “I got a leave of absence from Teacher Han for a week and will leave school this afternoon.”

“What the? You asked a week leave?” Yuan Chuling involuntarily exclaimed out loud.

And in a flash...

All the students in the class turned around toward Tang Xiu and Yuan Chuling. In their opinions, Tang Xiu was an ignorant and good-for-nothing student. He might have scored first in the previous test, but it was only by relying on luck, nothing more. He

even became more and more disliked by students with his unceasing class-skipping and leaves of absence.

Chapter 78: Unofficial Disciple

The days in June were as though the face of children, they changed from time to time. The sun shone brightly at noon, but when the night gradually approached, light rain floated and rhythmically dripped down from the sky. The entire South Gate Town was enveloped by a hazy-misty rain, and vaguely, lights were lit one after another.

In his villa, Tang Xiu sat cross-legged in his bedroom's balcony, and quietly sensed the inside of his body. After cultivating for a few days, the 9 spheres of stars had become increasingly bright. He could sense his strength surging like tidal waves even though he was sitting cross-legged. The power circulated into his limbs and all the 5 major bones of his body.

He knew that it was imperative to start cultivating for the Skin Strengthening Stage. He planned that after he finished helping Jia Ruidao and came back, he would give his all to find all the necessary medicinal herbs and Spirit Stones. If it was very difficult to find them in such a short time, he could only ask for some help from Chen Zhizhong.

“Treading on the cultivation path has always been full of dangers and hardships. But it's the inevitable adversities that I must brave. Only then will I step on brilliance again.”

In his previous life, it was very rare for him to get distressed due to lacking necessary cultivation resources. But the resources on Earth were scarce. If he wanted to cultivate the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, he must give his all to get the resources he needed,

even though it was extremely difficult. He was an eagle that must soar in the sky, flying bravely against the current to reach his lofty ambition. He believed that nothing would make him baffled despite the adversities he must face.

“Hmm?”

With his spiritual sense, he immediately sensed Chen Zhizhong's arrival.

At the first floor...

With an astonished expression, Chen Zhizhong observed the villa's decoration. He had to admit that his own place was not as good as this villa. He couldn't help but envy Long Hanwen for having a capable son with such exquisite vision and accurate judgment in investment. It absolutely could be regarded as a business elite with an outstanding talent.

“You have come!”

Tang Xiu walked downstairs with an indifferent expression.

Chen Zhizhong's heart tightened as he respectfully greeted and spoke, “Master!”

Tang Xiu didn't refute him. He walked toward the sofa in the living room and calmly spoke, “I once had a few unofficial disciples, and I'm perfectly aware of all the hardships when

teaching apprentices. So I don't have much time to waste on teaching disciples. But before you worship me as a Master, I have a request for you."

"Please do tell!" Chen Zhizhong hurriedly spoke.

Never once had he expected that Tang Xiu would have received a few apprentices at such a young age. That meant, didn't he already have a few Senior Brothers?

Tang Xiu said, "No hurry. I want to ask a few questions. If your answer can satisfy me, from now on you will be my disciple. If not, then you can go back. Everything you see and hear today must never be exposed to the outside."

Chen Zhizhong's mind moved and said, "Please do ask! I'll answer them."

Tang Xiu pointed to the top and said, "Do you believe that there's a heaven above the heavens and that there are higher existences above our Earth?"

Chen Zhizhong said, "Absolutely! The universe is vast and boundless. Who knows how many civilizations and new worlds there are."

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, "What I mean is not the universe, but planes. Have you heard stories in the world about Immortals which spoke of higher planes than the Human Realm,

such as the Demon Realm, Immortal Realm, and God Realm? Do you think such higher existences exist on those planes?”

Chen Zhizhong thought deeply before he slowly replied, “I don’t know.”

Tang Xiu asked, “If those planes exist, can you accept the fact?”

Chen Zhizhong nodded without hesitation, “Myriads of bizarre and strange things are capable of existing in the infinite universe. In a broader view, such existences like Demons, Immortals, and the God Realms are also possible. If those really exist, I naturally can accept that.”

Tang Xiu continued asking, “Next question. How much do you know about people who take the cultivation path?”

Cultivator?

Could it be ...

His mind rotated faster and spoke solemnly, “Cultivators, in my opinion, are people of legend. I only know about them from myths and fables. But never once have I seen them with my own eyes in real life. I did hear that there are 2 places that have these deity-like existences, but I cannot verify it.”

Tang Xiu asked, “Where?”

“Qinghai and Tibet.” Chen Zhizhong replied.

Tang Xiu silently nodded and said, “Even if I teach you something, you will be unlikely to have great achievements. Knowing this, will you still be willing to worship me as a Master?”

Without even thinking or hesitating, Chen Zhizhong answered, “As long as I can practice and improve my martial arts, I will worship you as my Master.”

Tang Xiu pointed to the door and said, “You answered the things I already knew, you can go now.”

Chen Zhizhong stared blankly as he instantly felt a coldness invade his body. He didn’t know what was wrong with his answer, even making Tang Xiu unwilling to accept him as a disciple.

“Could you tell me what was wrong with my answer that didn’t satisfy you?”

Tang Xiu said, “My disciples have no need for martial arts. What they need is a firm heart, with a firm will and conviction to brave adversities, and the courage to fight against fate. From the beginning to the end, my cultivation techniques that my disciples will have to learn thoroughly will defy the heavens. If you have the slightest carelessness, you will be consigned to eternal damnation and accidents beyond redemption. To make it short and easy to understand, if one were to study under me, the most important thing is to cultivate the mind and heart, and the next is cultivating

talent and morals.”

Chen Zhizhong immediately knelt in front of Tang Xiu and firmly spoke, “That conviction and heart, I have them. If I can be stronger, even if I must fight against the heavens, never will I back off from it.”

Tang Xiu looked at him deeply. Looking at the determination on Cheng Zhizhong’s face, he was silent for a long time before he nodded and said, “Go make tea and then kowtow to me.”

“You are... Ah, yes. I’ll go right now.”

Chen Zhizhong froze for a moment before he immediately cried with joy.

Serving tea! And kowtowing!

This was the simplest ceremony of apprenticeship, and would only take 2 minutes of time.

Tang Xiu motioned Chen Zhizhong to sit at the opposite side of the sofa. Only then did he slowly speak, “In fact, even if you take the cultivation path under my tutelage, your achievements wouldn’t reach the peak due to your age. It would be very difficult for you to ascend to immortality. You only have a minuscule chance to become a Supreme Immortal. But since you have entered my circle, I naturally will make you live longer and become stronger.”

“Ascending to immortality? Supreme Immortal?”

Chen Zhizhong’s pupil violently contracted as amazement filled his expression.

Tang Xiu spoke in a deep tone, “Yes, I am a cultivator, and I don’t practice the so-called martial arts you’ve spoken about. The Great Dao has myriads of paths, with each and every path being unique and different. I will teach you an immortal cultivation technique and guide you in your cultivation. As for your achievements, it will completely depend on your efforts and good fortune.”

A good fortune! This was indeed a huge fortune!

Chen Zhizhong was extremely excited he was about to shout loudly. But he didn’t dare because Tang Xiu was in front of him. Cultivators, he had heard about these people, but never once have he ever seen them. Such legendary figures were like the palatial mountain his eyes could only revere and yearn for.

“Master, thank you! Disciple will respectfully follow your teachings and earnestly cultivate.”

Chen Zhizhong knelt again in front of Tang Xiu as he knocked his head three times respectfully.

Tang Xiu’s brows wrinkled and spoke with dissatisfaction, “From now on, you’re not to kowtow to me easily. I can’t teach you much,

only if you encounter difficulties in cultivation will I answer the matters that makes you puzzled.”

Shortly after...

Tang Xiu selected a cultivation technique randomly and taught it to Chen Zhizhong. For a Supreme in the Immortal World, this cultivation technique might be unable to enter their eyes. But for those ordinary Immortals, this cultivation technique was tantamount to a godly supreme cultivation technique.

Tang Xiu’s present cultivation base was too low, he couldn’t use his spiritual force to instill the methods, so he could only teach it with literal instructions a bit. It took 4 hours to finish teaching this cultivation technique.

“Good. I have taught you the cultivation technique. Later on, when you truly have entered the cultivation path, I will teach you other knowledge such as pill concocting, tool refining, formation array, and some others. But do remember that you must not be impatient and rush your cultivation. Else you will be too obsessed and disturb your state of mind, and fall to a mental demon.”

“I’ll bear that in mind and follow Master’s teachings.” Chen Zhizhong replied respectfully.

Tang Xiu waved and said, “Well, you can go now. Remember, you must never expose anything I have taught you today to anyone, including your loved ones.”

“Yes!” Chen Zhizhong nodded immediately.

Tang Xiu sent Chen Zhizhong away and then picked up the phone to look at the time. There was an unread message, so he opened it. After reading it, only then did he remember that he had given his ID card number to Gong Dalong at noon for booking the ticket. He didn't expect that he had booked the plane ticket for the morning flight tomorrow.

“How would it feel to take a plane? Would the feeling could be compared to riding on a flying sword?”

Tang Xiu thought randomly for a moment as he felt that he was hungry. He went to the kitchen and smiled wryly because there was nothing in the kitchen, even his refrigerator was empty.

“This house doesn't have the nuance of a family atmosphere. If Mum lived here, it would have been better! Although the house is small, but if there are other family members, it would be very warm.”

With such emotions, he sighed a few times. Then, he accidentally found a menu list pasted on the wall behind the table. There were a lot of dishes listed on the menu list, and each was exceptionally sumptuous. After having read it, only then did he realize that this was the menu list left by the Real Estate Management Office for him. Due to the reason that he had meals outside, nobody had prepared meals for him, so they left the menu list here.

“Really, one get for what they have paid for. The grade of this

villa district truly has a meticulous and excellent Management Office.” A faint smile emerged on Tang Xiu’s face as he dialed the number on the list and called for takeaway food.

20 minutes later...

The villa’s door bell rang. Tang Xiu walked outside and found that his order had arrived. And the person who sent it was surprisingly not some stranger. It was Long Zhenglin.

“Why did you come here?” Tang Xiu asked with a surprised tone.

Long Zhenglin replied excitedly, “Eldest Brother Tang, I came specially to look for you. I just bumped into a delivery boy outside a moment ago, so I paid him and sent it away.

Tang Xiu helplessly replied, “Duh, how come I feel you’re haunting me just like a ghost? It’s enough to have you following all day long, but now you also run into me at night and want to sleep with me?”

Long Zhenglin shook his head forcefully, but still, the excitement on his face did not diminish, “Eldest Brother Tang, it’s for something else that I need to find you for. You gave me the prescription at noon, remember? So I immediately bought all the medicinal herbs on the prescription. Then, I went home and asked the maid to boil it. After that, I drank it up and felt like I was a new man. A babe who likes me was there by chance. So I just did it. You guess what had happened? A miracle happened!!! I lasted for 20 minutes! Man, I’m not telling you a lie. I did it whilst watching the

time. I can play for absolutely 20 minutes!”

“Fuck you! You are really damn sick. Why the fuck are you telling me this?”

Tang Xiu was at a loss whether he had to cry or laugh as he was dumbfounded and cursed.

Long Zhenglin shook his head again and said, “No no no! It’s an important matter, Eldest Brother! I hurriedly put my pants on and rushed to find you, because I saw a huge business opportunity from your prescription.”

“Business opportunity?”

Chapter 79: A Huge Business Opportunity

With a quizzical expression, Tang Xiu looked at Long Zhenglin. He really didn't understand why his prescription for invigorating the kidney turned out to have such great business opportunity.

“Tell me!” After having been dumbfounded for quite a long time, Tang Xiu finally sobered up as his curiosity was sparked and got him interested.

Long Zhenglin pulled Tang Xiu to the villa's living room. He put the takeaway food on the table, skillfully took his cigarette and ignited it, and started smoking. Then, he began to speak excitedly as his saliva spurted, “Eldest Brother, you seem to be unaware that you're sitting on a treasure mountain, aren't you? The prescription you've given me simply has amazing effects beyond doubt. Just think, how many men around the world are distressed because of this symptom? How many couples' marriages are in disharmony and have divorced? How many women are having affairs because their men are unable to satisfy them?

“A survey institute has once conducted a research and surveyed this issue. According to statistical data from their findings, the results show that from men around the world, 75% of them are unable to satisfy their partners, 37% are only able to last less than 10 minutes in sexual intercourse, and 11.8% fall into the premature ejaculation category. Of which, can only last under 5 minutes.”

“Although the validity of this research might be unreliable, but that institute has spent 4 years to survey tens of thousands of men around the world before they finally compiled those findings’

conclusion.”

Long Zhenglin wiped his mouth and continued again passionately, “Which man in this world doesn’t wish to be as strong as Hercules in bed, and don’t want to fall into depression and deep embarrassment because of this? NO! No man will ever want this, absolutely! Even gays have always hoped to carve their strong-ironman image deeply into their partners’ innermost feelings.”

“Your meaning?” As though he had realized something, Tang Xiu probed and asked further.

Long Zhenglin replied loudly, “There indeed are such sexual vitality supplements or drugs sold on the market. They do let men get their ‘sexual power’ back, but at the cost of facing big side-effects on their bodies. Even those who have been branded with the ‘impotency’ tag also don’t want to buy those drugs. But your medicine... it’s a whole different story. Not only does it treat the kidney’s dysfunction, it is also able to revive the glory of being a man. For this, the “Golden Gun” would firmly rise without falling. Your medicine is absolutely the Divine Tool to making a fortune!”

Tang Xiu quickly added, “This medicine is not only able to invigorate the kidney and rejuvenate the Yang energy for men. But it also gives great benefits to women due to the Yin energy nourishing effect, and also improves appearance.”

“Good Lord!”

Long Zhenglin jumped directly from the sofa as his staring eyes turned bigger, like a copper bell. After a moment, an angry expression suddenly emerged on his face as he glared at Tang Xiu and roared, “Eldest Brother! You, you, you... you are wasting such heavenly treasure all this time! Damn! Why? Why didn’t you tell me and give me this prescription earlier?”

Tang Xiu rolled his eyes as he stared at him and snappily replied, “Eh? How long have I known you?”

“Ugh!”

Long Zhenglin’s breath halted for a moment. The supercilious anger on his face suddenly vanished, and it was replaced with an awkward expression. He then spoke whilst smiling embarrassedly, “Ah, right! Blame me for knowing you too late. Had I known you earlier, perhaps I would have long knelt under your feet!”

Tang Xiao ridiculed him, “Bah, cut the crap. I know you came to me with the idea to make money from my prescription, yes? Tell me your idea then. Let’s see if you can put forward the plan and idea.”

Long Zhenglin immediately said, “Big Bro, do you have any means to add some flavors to this medicinal tonic of yours? Such as those drinks with sweet, creamy...”

Tang Xiu’s eyes turned bright even as his heart jolted.

He was unfamiliar with the domestic beverages' market. But he could estimate the huge potential the market had. He had once heard about a few drink products that occupied half of the market's share in the country. Those big bosses had successfully squeezed themselves into one of the domestic tycoons and became powerful people.

In the case that... if it was applied to a medicinal tonic and could be treated as a beverage product, and got thrown into the market, once the sales start to explode in the country, how many shares would it get? How amazing would the profits be? If the market expanded to the world, that...

Tang Xiu's vision fixated at Long Zhenglin as all kinds of ideas continue to churn inside his mind. After being silent for a long time, he slowly said, "Damn, your proposal is extremely damn good. As long as the promotion lines are perfect, once the product enters the market, it would create a great sensation. The profit also will be outrageously high. Long Zhenglin, how do you plan to work with me?"

Long Zhenglin probed more, "I just want to invest in the shares. As for management, how about you take it?"

Tang Xiu didn't answer, but asked back, "First, I wanna know! How many skills have you learned from the Long Group all these years? If you were to control a huge corporation, can you manage it?"

Long Zhenglin's complexion froze, as a bit of an embarrassed expression grew on his face when he shook his head and replied, "I

don't have any. I don't think I'm able to manage an ordinary company. But my elder brother surely will be able to manage a small corporation. But for a large corporation, it will also very difficult for him."

Tang Xiu said, "That being the case, I'll set up the company and hand the management to other people, and you can buy the shares. But, you also can join the management if you want to. Anyway, how much are you planning to invest for the starting funds?"

Long Zhenglin quickly said, "I can ask the money from my Dad! As for the shares, I'm fine with 5%. For the management aspect, I'm not good at it. The best I can do, would only be miscellaneous work."

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, "Don't ask your Dad! Your own money! How much can you invest? "

Long Zhenglin said embarrassedly, "I don't have much. A few million would be fine, but more than that, I will have to pawn the real estate under my name and sell my car. If those were sold, I think I can get 2 or 3 million."

Tang Xiu said, "If you invest 3 million yuan, 10% of the shares are yours. But you must do it yourself! I'm the Boss of the company, so I won't easily spread it out."

Long Zhenglin was curious, "If my Dad and my brother ask me, can I tell them?"

“Have it your way!” Tang Xiu replied calmly.

Long Zhenglin rubbed his hands and laughed lightly, “Ahaha, Got it! I knew it! Seems like following and tagging along with you, wouldn’t make me have to ask for a drink and meal again! Eldest Brother, I’ll cling onto you for the rest of my life. Even if you want to hug or kick me, I won’t even budge.”

“Fuck off!” Tang Xiu cursed and laughed.

Shortly after, Tang Xiu sent Long Zhenglin out. The villa turned silent again, and he began to think about the recipe for the new product. He needed to guarantee the new product’s quality while also adding a good flavor at the same time.

“How can I check other beverages’ recipes?”

With such crossing thoughts in his mind, Tang Xiu thought to leave but then decided to ask someone as he dialed Kang Xia’s number to ask.

“Tang Xiu, what’s up?”

Kang Xia’s hazy dim voice transmitted from the phone.

Tang Xiu halted for a moment and looked at the time. He suddenly realized as an awkward expression emerged on his face. After all, it was almost 2 AM.

“I’m really sorry. I forgot it’s sleeping time. There’s something that I want to ask you.”

“What’s the problem?”

Tang Xiu asked, “According to your business management vast experience, what should I do to find out about other beverages’ recipes?”

“Find Madam Du!” Kang Xia replied with a sour mood.

“Who’s this Madam Du? She knows those drinks’ recipes?” Tang Xiu couldn’t help asking back with a deep confusion in his mind.

Kang Xia’s soul abruptly sobered up. She replied with a dumbfounded tone, “Holy mother! Aren’t you the world’s new genius? How come you don’t even know about Madam Du? It’s BAIDU! Access the internet and find it via Baidu, you got it?! But you won’t find complete recipes from the internet and those labels on the products’ bottle. Besides, there’s no way the manufacturers would reveal their products’ secret.”

Tang Xiu said, “It’s alright, I know it too. Thanks.”

Kang Xia asked, “You want to set up a beverage business?”

Tang Xiu replied truthfully, “I do have this idea. But I don’t have

the recipe, so I want to study it.”

Kang Xia was speechless. She couldn't help but mutter in her heart, “Do you think the recipes are very easy to study? If it were so easy, there would have been countless beverage products popping up on Earth!”

But she suddenly recalled the 2 cosmetics' formulas from Tang Xiu and also mused, “Could it be that those 2 cosmetic formulas were also created by him on such a whim?”

Kang Xia's heart suddenly sunk...

Tang Xiu didn't know that his call had made Kang Xia's mood turn messy, even causing insomnia. He hung up the phone and tried to search other drink information on the Internet. But he was quickly stunned since he recalled that he didn't have a computer, he didn't even have the Internet quota on his phone.

“Ah, forget about it. Haste and impatience will only waste everything. I should buy a computer when I have the time. It wouldn't be too late to find it later after I have internet.”

Tang Xiu shook his head, put down all his thoughts and prepared to sleep. Besides, he must go to Jingmen Island with Gong Dalong tomorrow, so he had to be in top condition and full of spirit.

Jingmen Island was a large isolated island located in the South China Sea. After having undergone a few decades of development,

the island had transformed into a bustling international metropolis. It also acted as an important transport hub in Southeast Asia with prosperous tourism industries, which helped improve Jingmen Island's economy by leap and bounds.

At Jingmen Island's Airport...

Jia Yelei stood restlessly at the airport's exit gate. His eyes constantly fixated at the stream of unceasing tourists who were coming out from the airport. Along with the deep regret inside his heart, he also anticipated, and was full of hope that his First Senior Brother would be able to invite the Gambling Master whose gambling techniques was highly praised by his father.

He knew that his father was still gambling with those bastards who pitted him on those fraud games. Perhaps a minute later, the capital his father lost would likely increase more.

"If that Master isn't good, perhaps we will never rise again in our entire lives." He lamented with a heart full bitterness.

"Yelei!" A shout came from the corner of the people stream.

Jia Yelei followed the voice's source as a pleasant and surprised expression immediately appeared on his face. He quickly approached and greeted, "First Senior Brother, you finally came back. Is this the Gambling Master?"

Chapter 80: Paradise Club

Tang Xiu was standing beside Gong Dalong and saw that Jia Yelei's eyes only glanced at him. But then he looked around, looking for the "Gambling Master". Tang Xiu was slightly disappointed, especially because of his words. This Jia Yelei seemed to judge people solely by appearance. Now he understood why he was cheated by others, since he also had countless means to push such a person to a deep pit.

"Pa..."

Seeing through Jia Yelei's thoughts, Gong Dalong slapped his head and snapped, "Hey, he is Master Tang, and he's the Gambling Master that I specially invited."

Jia Yelei rubbed the spot on his head where he was hit. His vision was fixated on Tang Xiu, sizing him up, and then he exclaimed with an inconceivable expression, "First Senior Brother, are you throwing a massive, unfunny joke? He's so young, he even looks younger than me. How could he possibly be more skillful than Dad?"

"You damn moron!"

Tang Xiu cursed inside since Jia Yelei really made him speechless.

Gong Dalong was as though driven to the other world out of anger by Jia Yelei. If it were not for Tang Xiu's presence, he would

have already slapped this idiot Junior Brother of his to death. But, recalling the first time he saw Tang Xiu, he indeed also had doubts and contempt, because the first impression that came from Tang Xiu was, after all... well, he's too young.

However...

When he saw the dispute between Tang Xiu and Su Shangwen, although he stood up for Tang Xiu, but little did he play his role. Since Star City's 2 most powerful and rich big shots, Long Hanwen and Chen Zhizhong, already stepped forward to defend Tang Xiu. They also seemed to be interested in making friends with Tang Xiu by expressing their goodwill. This made him come to his senses and he clearly understood that he 'must never judge a person by his appearance, just like people were unable to measure the depth of the sea with a pint pot'.

Gong Dalong glanced at the cold expression on Tang Xiu's face. Then, he grabbed Jia Yelei and dragged him out of the crowd by tens of meters. After they came to a remote place, he powerfully slapped his face without hesitation, glared at him and angrily reprimanded, "Do bear in your little mind! Judging people only by their appearance is the death flag for us gamblers! Master Tang has won against our Master in a game. You think that Master will intentionally lie and deceive you? In the case Master Tang really does have no abilities, do you think Master will call him as a last resort for his life? You doubt Master Tang and that means you also look down on your father!"

"I....."

Jia Yelei covered his scarlet cheek as his eyes tried to find Tang Xiu. He suddenly had cold sweat. Only now did he realize that he was wrong and had broken the professional gamblers' biggest taboo and death flag. How could he forget not to judge people solely by their appearance? Regret quickly filled him as he bowed deeply and spoke, "Master Tang, I was really rude. With that broad mind of yours, please forgive me."

"Hmm?"

Jia Yelei did make Tang Xiu feel iffy. But, seeing that he easily admitted his mistake and also apologized straightforwardly with a sincere tone and expression, Tang Xiu was somewhat also saw him in a new light. People who were able to recognize their mistakes would be able to reform themselves, as the saying goes. Despite some shortcomings he had, Jia Yelei's character could be said that he was a promising youngster.

"Where's your father?"

Tang Xiu lightly nodded his head and calmly asked.

Jia Yelei carefully took Tang Xiu's suitcase and hurriedly replied, "He's still on the table because today is the deadline set by his opponent, so he must continue gambling with them. Otherwise, they would sell my mother's memento!"

Tang Xiu secretly shook his head. Jia Ruidao seemed to have fallen into a deep pit! He had been bitten by a viper and his opponents had hit him on his weak spot. Since his soft rib had

been grabbed by his opponents, he had no choice but to give in.

Rhythm!

Tang Xiu perfectly understood what this word meant. ‘Rhythm’ in particular had a deep meaning for people who were gamblers. In the case that professional gamblers controlled the gambling rhythm, they would undoubtedly win big. But on the flipside, once they lost their rhythm control, they would have to face countless hardships and difficulties in trying to win.

Jingmen Island, Paradise Club...

The regular visitors of Jingmen Island, the lot of them were usually hardcore gamblers. They knew everyone and everyone also knew them. The gambling usually was not held inside the building, but rather on a luxury cruiser at Jingmen Island’s Port. It was rumored that the big boss behind the Paradise Club was Ouyang Lulu, the eldest daughter of the Ouyang Family, and the Jingmen Island’s first family. This was, of course, an illegal type of business, with huge pieces of delicious cake that was being shared by a lot of hands. Otherwise, without such a safe haven, it would have been very difficult to defend against covetous people.

At this moment...

Inside the spacious and bright office of the Paradise Club luxury cruiser, Ouyang Lulu was entertaining her two classmates from Beijing.

“This Scarlet Oolong Tea is only produced in the Wuyi Mountains. It belongs to the black tea kind of excellent quality. It’s a kind of domestic special tea with tight strips on its contour and vivid greenish brown leaves. After brewing it, the tea water would be bright yellow and the leaves will turn reddish-green. The most distinguishing quality of this tea is the strong and long-lasting fragrance. This is obviously of high-class quality and brings along numerous effects.”

A smiling expression was hung on Bai Tao’s mouth as he looked at the elegant posture Ouyang Lulu had, who was making tea tediously, “This Scarlet Oolong Tea is of the best quality, it’s also very precious due to being very hard to find. My uncle once obtained it with hardships and in trying every means. Only from a big tea merchant from the Southern Province was he able to buy a few of them. But it seems that Miss Ouyang really has the ability to acquire this exquisite tea.”

Ouyang Lulu smiled and said, “Eh? Do you find me interesting to tease, old friend? Anyways, I never knew that you were a tea expert! I may have to find you later and learn about it when I have time.”

Bai Tao gasped for a second before he hastily replied, “No no no, it will be showing off in front of an expert. It’s better for you to ask the real expert I know of. He’s damn knowledgeable about tea. Mine is only superficial, I only know about it because I got influenced and only heard and saw about it.”

Ouyang Lulu was puzzled and asked, “Who is he?”

Bai Tao glanced at Chu Yi and chuckled before he replied, “It’s not far on the horizon though, and he’s just right in front of your eyes.”

As a smart person, Ouyang Lulu quickly grasped it, and suddenly turned around toward Chu Yi. With an astonished expression, she asked, “Eh, the tea expert turns out to be you, Chu Yi! How? And why are you keeping low-key even in front of your friend?”

Chu Yi couldn’t help but laugh and replied, “For one, I considered myself as a tea expert amongst the same generation. But seeing your tea-making technique, I’m convinced that there will always be someone who’s better than me. Miss Ouyang, you’ve given me a good lesson!”

Ouyang Lulu replied with a smile, “Cut it off. Modesty will only make you fatter. I can tell that you’ll be a big fatty in no time. Ah, right. How come the both of you are not busy this time? You even have time to come to Jingmen Island.”

Bai Tao was the one who replied as he smiled, “Actually, we just went to Star City to find that kid, Long Zhengyu, since we have an appointment to get some tickets to Thailand. But I never expected that he changed his mind because of some big project opportunity.”

Ouyang Lulu laughed, “Although I have yet to meet Long Zhengyu, I’ve heard his name a lot, especially from the both of you. Every time we meet, you two always mention him. Seems like that I have to meet this famous Young Master Long if I got the chance, to see what kind of outstanding person he is, which is even

worth for the two of you to have such a longstanding and deep friendship with.”

Bai Tao laughed, “Of course, he’s amazing! He’s not even the least bit inferior compared to us.”

Ouyang Lulu was dumbfounded and couldn’t help laughing, “You are praising and boasting about him? The both of you?”

Chu Yi’s expression suddenly changed and replied, “Lulu, Long Zhengyu is really a fine outstanding young man. Only a few youths from the younger generation could be more outstanding than him. But when we had the tour in Star City, we came across an interesting finding though. To be more precise, we heard about an interesting person.”

“What kind of person?” Ouyang Lulu was surprised.

Chu Yi replied, “I don’t know much about the details. What I know is that he’s also a youngster. And the most inconceivable thing is that he’s still a high schooler. And Long Zhengyu turns out to have gotten the help of that youngster in his big project. Even the aloof and proud Long Zhengyu seems to admire this youngster high schooler.”

Ouyang Lulu was surprised and asked, “Long Zhengyu admires a high schooler? Are you kidding me?”

Bai Tao said, “We absolutely won’t kid with you! I really could

tell that Long Zhengyu really admires him. When the both us were chatting with Long Zhengyu and had some tea, that youngster was called Tang Xiu by Long Zhengyu. He wanted Long Zhengyu to find him a professional manager. And you know what? Long Zhengyu's attitude at that time was simply... how should I say it? It was not like treating a blood brother. He was simply like bootlicking him."

Ouyang Lulu was confused, "A high school schooler wants to find a professional manager? What does he want to do?"

Bai Tao said, "That said, he's preparing to set up a company. Since he doesn't have time to manage it, so he asked Long Zhengyu to find a professional manager. And guess what? Since we were there at that time, Chu Yin got this rotten idea and threw it to Long Zhengyu, and let Tang Xiu invite Kang Xia. Lulu, I think you also have heard about the famous Kang Xia, haven't you? Geez... I really wanna see if that kid will be able to invite her."

Ouyang Lulu turned supercilious as she then smiled and said, "Aha, the two of you really deserve to be damned. Who doesn't know Kang Xia? The super elite who came back from Wall Street's World Finance Center... even a lot of big corporations wished to recruit her with countless of means and efforts, only to finally get rejected by her. The two of you are really not a good thing, you even tested a high schooler to invite her? It's not even a funny joke!"

Bai Tao laughed and replied, "Haha, it's just for fun!"

Chu Yi expression suddenly changed. He grabbed his phone and

dialed a number. After the phone was picked, he asked, “The thing I told you to investigate, is there any news?”

“Kang Xia went alone to Star City yesterday, the purpose is unclear.”

“Say what?” Chu Yi suddenly thought he misheard it.

Kang Xia went to Star City? Was she...?

What did she go to Star City for?

The shock in Chu Yi’s heart suddenly made his face suddenly turn serious, as though tidal waves were surging up unceasingly inside his heart.

Seeing such a strange expression Chu Yin had, Ouyang Lulu was curious and asked, “What’s up?”

Chu Yi hung up the phone. He looked to the both of them and replied, “I was just curious and sent someone to investigate Kang Xia’s next whereabouts. I just got the report that Kang Xia went to Star City yesterday. As for her purpose, it’s still unknown.”

“She went to the Star City?”

Bai Tao directly jumped over from the couch and exclaimed out loud with disbelieving expression, “Kang Xia went to Star City... c-

could it be because of Tang Xiu?... How could this be?”

Chapter 81: Learning Gambling Techniques

Tang Xiu?

Ouyang Lulu deeply etched this name into her heart. She knew perfectly well that if a person could make Chu Yi and Bai Tao greatly pay attention to, he must be an outstanding person. Much less that this was a person who was greatly admired by Long Zhengyu, which meant that he was absolutely not a small fish.

In addition, if the legendary gold manager Kang Xia really went alone to Star City to find him, then he was really amazing. Certainly, that regardless if Kang Xia would work for him or not, being able to make Kang Xia personally act, meant that he had a marvelous method.

“Hey, now my interest on this Tang Xiu is even bigger compared to my interest in wanting to meet Long Zhengyu.” With a smile blossoming on her face, Ouyang Lulu handed 2 cups of tea to the two of them.

With shock still filling his heart, Bai Tao took the tea cup and said, “I also feel the same. Chu Yi really got my curiosity and interest sparked up. If he’s really that amazing, I even want to be more than a friend.”

Chu Yi shook his head and said, “I don’t think it would be easy to befriend Tang Xiu. When we were in Star City, if I did not wrongly analyze, Long Zhengyu is not Tang Xiu’s genuine friend. Even if he gave Tang Xiu his villa, it seems like he didn’t give everything to

keep him. In this world, there are some people who would be easy to be friends with, had there been no conflict of interest between them. But once the benefits rise, wanting to become real friends is on par with soaring to the sky.”

Ouyang Lulu gave a shallow smile, “Well, let’s just forget about this first. Didn’t you two come to visit Jingmen Island, to find this old classmate of yours and talk about the old days? Let’s just talk about something fun, let’s see if I can help.”

Bai Tao and Chu Yi glanced at each other as Chu Yi chuckled and then spoke, “I got a call 2 days ago. My Little Brother in Jingmen Island had a gambling dealer subordinate and he told me that a kid recently gambled. The kid lost, after which, this kid’s old man showed up, of which, my Little Brother got a high-quality jade from. You do know that I’m very interested in these kinds of jades since I’m also in the jade business industry. So I come here to look at it.”

Ouyang Lulu laughed, “I know this. The pitted old man is called Jia Ruidao. He’s quite a well-known professional gambler and could barely be regarded as a Gambling Master. Unfortunately, he hit a solid rock this time. His opponent is one of the top 3 gamblers from Macao, the Golden Finger Ye Taifu. And, Jia Ruidao ended up losing miserably. Not only did he go bankrupt, but he also borrowed several hundred million from a few of his friends here. I think he will soon lose that money too.”

Chu Yi laughed, “I am not interested in gambling, but I do want that piece of jade.”

Ouyang Lulu looked at the clock and said, “Today, coincidentally is their gambling bout. You wanna pass some time and have a look? Ah right, since you came to my place, you should know that Ye Taifu and Jia Ruidao will have their game in my Paradise Club.”

“Knock knock...”

The door was knocked, and a middle-aged man entered the room.

“What’s up?”

Ouyang Lulu asked casually.

The middle-aged said, “Boss, the following gambling house, Ye Taifu VS Jia Ruidao. Jia Ruidao suddenly called the stop and left our Paradise Club. He said he wants the game to be rescheduled for tomorrow.”

Ouyang Lulu’s brows pricked as she looked at Chu Yi and smiled, “It seems today you cannot see the fun, eh? Anyways, let’s go! We’ll have dinner tonight, on me.”

“Alright!”

Chu Yi and Bai Tao didn’t look forward to the gambling house to begin with, so they didn’t feel disappointed.

Jingmen Island...

Outside the 5 Star Jarvis Hotel, Jia Ruidao's face was full of excitement. His eyes were fixated toward the intersection in the distance. At his side, his Second Apprentice, Zhang Tiechun was also filled with anticipation. Their savior has come, finally! They knew very well that the honored guest they were waiting was their last line of hope.

“Master, Master Tang should be coming soon, right?”

Zhang Tiechun raised his wrist and looked at the watch as he said that.

Jia Ruidao said, “Yes! They should have arrived by now. Could it be there was something on the way?”

Zhang Tiechun's eyes squinted as he pointed to the street, “Master, it should be that car, right?”

Jia Ruidao looked toward the direction his Second Apprentice pointed. He was suddenly struck with excitement and spoke, “Yes, it's your Youngest's car. Let's meet up with them.”

The car stopped.

Jia Ruidao sprinted to the car extended his hand to open the door.

“Brother Tang!”

At the first glance, Jia Ruidao saw Tang Xiu and then excitedly greeted.

However, his remark made his three disciples look at each other in dismay, with an ashamed expression on their faces. After all, even the youngest amongst them, Jia Yelei, was 5 or 6 years older than Tang Xiu. This remark, dropped their rank by one generation.

Tang Xiu nodded and said, “Eh, aren’t you having a gambling bout? How come you’re here?”

“I don’t have much money and I have to keep some for you for tomorrow’s gambling match. So I stopped midway and hurried back.” Jia Ruidao spoke with a bitter expression.

Tang Xiu said, “Let’s go! We’ll have the talk inside.”

Inside the presidential suite at the top floor, Tang Xiu and Jia Ruidao were sitting on the living room’s sofa. And Jia Ruidao’s three apprentices were standing behind him. Jia Yelei’s eyes glanced over toward his father from time to time with anxiousness, fear, and other expressions.

“Brother Tang, I don’t know what to say for this huge grace. You flew from thousands of miles away to help me. This gratitude will be carved inside my heart. If you need my assistance in the future,

even if I have to pass through mountains of flames and millions of knives, I will neither cower nor will I ever back off!” Jia Ruidao spoke sincerely.

Tang Xiu said, “Tell me about the opponent.”

Jia Ruidao immediately turned and nodded to the Second Apprentice, Zhang Tiechun. Shortly after, the information was handed to Tang Xiu. Whilst Tang Xiu was still reading the information, Jia Ruidao spoke, “Our opponent is called Chen Kai, a famous Young Master hedonist in this Jingmen Island. He spent a huge amount of money to invite Ye Taifu. Not only have my apprentices lost to them, but I also lost many times. Ye Taifu is one of the top 3 gambling Masters from Macao. He is also well-known as the Golden Finger, due to his cheating skill in gambling. I thought that even if he was better than me, the level wouldn’t be far away, but... alas..!”

Whilst trimming the documents, Tang Xiu also listened to Jia Ruidao’s story. After which, he finally knew the whole process of the story, as well as had a general knowledge about the opponent inside out.

“He’s an expert that’s hard to deal with.”

Tang Xiu secretly sighed. He looked at Jia Ruidao and said, “I can help gamble on your behalf with them, but with conditions.”

Jia Ruidao replied, “Do tell me!”

Tang Xiu said, “First of all, I need to clear out some points. About my gambling techniques, you also clearly know about it. The first time we met in that gambling bout, I stole your ability. So, if I were to lose this time, you cannot blame me.”

Jia Ruidao earnestly replied, “I absolutely will never do that.”

Tang Xiu said, “If I were to win, regardless of how much the value is, I’ll take half of it.”

Jia Ruidao without hesitation complied, “I only need my wife’s memento. Everything you win, all of it will be yours.”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “No, as I’ve said, I only need a half.”

Jia Ruidao hesitated. But seeing that Tang Xiu seemed to not want to haggle over it, he could only nod, “Alright.”

Tang Xiu looked at Jia Ruidao’s three disciples and then spoke, “I have said my condition. You also know that I don’t know anything about gambling techniques except for the dice game. As for the other types, I know nothing about them. So, what I need today, is for you to explain all gambling types for me, and also teach me those skills.”

“Alright!”

It was exactly what Jia Ruidao had in mind, so he happily complied.

Jia Ruidao promptly told his three apprentices to find a variety of gambling tools. Amongst all of them, Jia Ruidao was focused on teaching Tang Xiu Dice, Five-Card Stud, Domino, Mahjong, Blackjack, and Tie Golden Flower...

“You have played the Dice and you’re very good in this one, so I won’t teach you this. I’ll first teach you Blackjack, which is the most common gambling method. The games I usually play with Ye Taifu in the past few days, most of them were Blackjack.

“Blackjack usually uses 1 to 8 cards. The dealer gives two cards to each player with one card opened up. This is called as open card. The other face down card is called the dark card. The both of them will then be summed up...

“Average gamblers perhaps rely heavily on luck to win or lose. But real gambling experts rely entirely on various techniques. Frankly speaking, nearly all those techniques are smokescreen to deceive the opponents’ eyes.

“It’s as the saying goes, ‘out of ten games, nine cheat’.”

Along with his explanation, Jia Ruidao also demonstrated it for Tang Xiu. His hands were constantly changing as though shadows, as he skillfully shuffled and mixed the cards with lightning speed, even Tang Xiu was secretly praising him. In the myriads of the embodiment of life, there will always be one who mastered the skills of their field. Practicing gambling techniques to such a superb degree, the money one could get would absolutely overturn

the sky.

But of course, the premise, was there had to be the opportunity to win the money and still be alive to enjoy it.

“The second is the Five-Card Stud...”

“The third is the Pai Gow...”

“The fourth is ...”

“ ... ”

Time flew by slowly as night then came in the blink of an eye. Jia Ruidao and Tang Xiu didn't have a meal as though they forgot the feeling of hunger. They both felt like they were having fun in teaching and learning, enjoying themselves to the fullest, they didn't even realize that night had come.

“The last one is, Tie Golden Flower.”

Jia Ruidao took a pair of new playing cards and pulled out the King and Queen cards. He looked at Tang Xiu and said, “This game's rules are...”

Tang Xiu waved and said, “I can play this game, because I have seen others' play. You only need to teach me the techniques for this Tie Golden Flower.”

Jia Ruidao knew that Tang Xiu was outstanding. He had once experienced it before and today, his horizon was hit and opened. Each and every gambling skill he taught Tang Xiu, everything was learnt very quickly, even his proficiency and skills were progressing rapidly. So he didn't have even the slightest anger when Tang Xiu interrupted him, and instead, was secretly happy.”

“Tie Golden Flower mainly has two key aspects that we must pay attention to. First is cheating and deception. The quote from The Art of War is best to explain this that, ‘all warfare is based on deception’. This play relies on the mind. Some people might get small cards, but they could win big with this ‘cheating’ technique. Some might hold big cards, but due to the fear that the opponent has bigger cards, they give up.

“The second one is, steal the rhythm when switching cards. A lot of powerful Gambling Masters have secret cards hidden on their bodies. These kinds of cards are nearly impossible for others to see. And knowing them depends on the other's ability. Hence, fast hands plays a major role in gambling, especially such as this Tie Golden Flower...”

Chapter 82: The Sadness From The Past

Jia Ruidao skillfully shuffled the cards. Then, he sent 3 dark cards to Tang Xiu and himself. Putting the remaining cards to the side, he continued explaining.

“After the dealer finishes dealing the cards, he will place it on the table in front of him. I have once heard that a Gambling Master shot at a card with his hand in the remaining cards pile lightning fast and took the card he needed. But his original card was left in the card’s pile. However, the gambler who could do this was definitely someone who has reached the God Gambler’s level. Such as the casinos in Las Vegas, there exists such God Gamblers.”

Suddenly, Jia Ruidao patted his forehead and spoke in a distressed tone, “Uh, I forgot the key point, that is, memorizing and calculating the cards. You must keep observe the dealer’s hands frequently. Follow his rhythm and remember them, figure out and calculate the card’s position, especially when the cards are cut, you must accurately point it out.”

Tang Xiu touched his three cards as per Jia Ruidao’s explanation. When he saw the card numbers, he suddenly frowned. As he saw that Jia Ruidao had just put the card stack down, he shot a card out lightning fast, and completely exchanged the cards in an instant.

“Was it replaced with a smaller card?”

Tang Xiu secretly sighed.

He finally realized that not only must he look carefully at Jia Ruidao shuffling the cards, but he also had to memorize the cards' face and position. Jia Ruidao seemed to have yet to realize that Tang Xiu had swapped his card, as he took another card and swapped it once again immediately.

"4 of Spades, 5 of Hearts, 6 of Hearts, a straight?" Tang Xiu opened the card, "And you?"

Jia Ruidao said with a smile, "Your luck is good, I..."

Whilst he was talking, his hand moved extremely fast to sweep the card stack in front of him. But almost in an instant, Tang Xiu promptly acted and accurately grabbed his wrist. Since it was Jia Ruidao's playing hand, he failed to swap his card.

"You can never play the 'fast hand' in front of me."

Jia Ruidao's expression froze, he was dumbfounded. He glanced at Tang Xiu's hand with a disbelieving expression. His mouth twitched as he revealed a bitter smile, "Holy Lord, it's already unbelievable that your eyes can be that quick, but even your hands are fast to such a degree! I have very fast hands due to my talent and through decades of practice, but you..."

Tang Xiu lightly replied, "I'm a martial artist. I have always been vigilant and alert toward my surroundings. My fists and palms are lightning fast. Unless the person is faster than me, I will easily find it if he were to cheat in front of me."

Jia Ruidao was overjoyed, “Amazing! Brother Tang, I really have never thought that you were a martial artist. After teaching you and seeing you learn the skills today, I can finally feel at ease. Truthfully speaking, it’s a big loss for the gambling world since you don’t want to be a professional gambler. I can vouch that had you have the will to train in gambling techniques, it would only take you 3 to 5 years to be the most renowned Gambling Grandmaster.”

The Gambling Grandmaster?

Tang Xiu secretly turned supercilious inside. Had he had nothing to do, he could have fully given his all to become a Gambling Grandmaster. But, let alone having not the slightest interest in gambling, what he really wanted was to cultivate and enhance his strength, and then return back to the top in the Immortal World. He was racing against time and couldn’t afford to waste it.

“Grrr...”

Jia Ruidao’s stomach suddenly rumbled.

Tang Xiao smiled indifferently and said, “It’s already late. Let’s go out and eat something! I have already memorized all the gambling techniques you have taught me. I’ll practice again in the evening.”

Jia Ruidao’s mind had been consumed in the gambling bout during the day. And it was extremely taxing to the point that his state of mind was strained and stressed. After returning back and

teaching gambling techniques to Tang Xiu, he found that Tang Xiu had a natural gift and easily absorbed everything he learned. The distressed and dejected feeling he had was replaced with an overjoyed mood, causing him to suddenly feel tired. He naturally agreed after he heard Tang Xiu's suggestion.

“Brother Tang, my apprentices should have booked a private dining box, let's go now!”

After leaving the presidential suite, Jia Ruidao's First Apprentice, Gong Dalong, had been waiting outside the door. Upon seeing the two of them come out, he respectfully greeted, “Master, Master Tang. I have booked seats at the Everlasting Feast Hall. Second and Third Junior Brother are also waiting there.”

“Good!”

Jia Ruidao nodded with a satisfied expression. He looked at Tang Xiu and quickly said, “Brother Tang, this Everlasting Feast Hall is a special restaurant on Jingmen Island. It's an extremely upscale restaurant. Nobody would be able to enter if they didn't have a membership.”

“Hmm!” Tang Xiu didn't nod. He had no favorable impression for those who were dead set on chasing status and identity at upscale restaurants or clubhouses. Because for all he knew, this era seemed to uphold the slogan that ‘everyone was equal for the common cause in building a harmonious society’.”

However, the threshold restrictions as to which type of people

could enter, would only divide people into classes. Had it been in the cultivation world, where everyone strove to be immortal, Tang Xiu might have been able to get accustomed to it. But in this new era, more or less, this was giving him such a feeling of being a ‘hypocrite’.

Riding on a Mercedes-Benz through the feasting pleasure-seeking and bustling city, the car quickly changed direction as they approached the coastline. Lush and verdant greeneries were on both sides of the 2-lanes trail, as only dim yellow street lights were there with nearly almost nil cars passing by. Occasionally, security guard patrol cars were seen patrolling and passing by silently.

Gradually, the sound of ocean waves came, as though it were coming from the horizon. Along with the moving car, the sounds was becoming more distinct. Finally, up ahead, groups of stars were flickering as though flashing lights and appeared in front of Tang Xiu.

“Huh?”

After having observed those lights, Tang Xiu’s heart suddenly shook as he involuntarily exclaimed, “Water Block Dragon Pen Array?!”

Jia Ruidao at his side responded with a confused expression, “Brother Tang, what did you say?”

Tang Xiu heaved a deep breath as he could hardly control his breathing. He turned around and looked at Jia Ruidao, asking,

“How much do you know about this Everlasting Feast Hall?”

Jia Ruidao shook his head and said, “Little do I know about it. The owner belongs to the kind of ‘Dragon God whose tail and head are unable to be seen.’ According to rumors, when Jingmen Island was firstly developed, the Everlasting Feast Hall had already been here, and the scale expanded along with time. But, there’s a particular circumstance I know of.”

Tang Xiu said, “What particular circumstance?”

Jia Ruidao’s voice lowered as he said, “Even though Everlasting Feast Hall charges a sky high price for dining here, their delicacies and wines are absolutely exquisite, people would drool over them. Apart from the haves and wealthy people who come to this place, there are also other types of people who may enter, they are... martial artists.”

“People from the martial world?”

Tang Xiu was quite quizzical upon hearing Jia Ruidao’s words.

Jia Ruidao explained further, “Yes, martial artists. The most inconceivable thing is that, if those martial artists who dine in the restaurant are able to crack open the ‘Thousand Revolutions Array’ deployed by the owner, they can freely eat and drink there.”

“Thousand Revolutions Array?”

Tang Xiu's heart was as though rocked by a huge earthquake as his complexion instantly turned white like paper.

The memories from the Immortal World uncontrollably gushed out from inside his mind. In the palatial palace's martial training field, the tender, soft, infantile voice of a little girl in a white dress suddenly appeared and lingered in his mind:

“Master, Yan’er has broken through the 3600 days record in the Thousand Revolution Array. How’s my breaking through? But yet, Master is mean and acts so shamelessly. You’ve deployed the Little Golden Man on the Yin point, didn’t you?”

“Master, Yan’er has finally broken through. So Yan’er is very happy. You said that if Yan’er is able to break the 3600 days record in the Thousand Revolution Array, then Yan’er has grown up. And now, Yan’er has grown up, right?”

“Master, Yan’er has personally brewed nectar wine from hundreds of pure and rare flowers, please taste it...”

“Master...”

A trace of crystal beads swelled in Tang Xiu's eyes.

It had been 6500 years!

She was his favorite First Apprentice. She ventured alone to the most dangerous place in the Immortal World, the Infernal Dead

Sea, only to find a 10,000-years-old Soul of Ice to help him. From which, he had never heard about her again. The sadness for 6500 years made him vow to never accept any true disciples again.

“It’s absolutely impossible! Although I was the one who created the Thousand Revolution Array and Broken Lock Water Dragon Array, and she was the only one I’ve ever taught those arrays to, this should only be a coincidence. This is absolutely only a coincidence.”

Tang Xiu constantly repeated this sentence inside his heart.

Shortly after, the Mercedes-Benz parked inside a spacious parking lot. Jia Yelei, who had been waiting for a long time, strode forward to open the door as he watched Tang Xiu and his father come out.

“Dad, Master Tang, the private room has been booked in advance, it’s been waiting for the both of you.”

Jia Ruidao nodded slowly. He looked at Tang Xiu and said, “Master Tang, let’s go together.”

Tang Xiu was silent for moment before he responded, “Tell me the private room’s number. I’m quite bored and want to have some air outside. After, I’ll go to the booked room and find you.”

“This...” Jia Ruidao hesitated.

Tang Xiu waved and said, “Just go! I’ll be fine.”

Jia Ruidao nodded and said, “If so, we’ll go first. Brother Tang, if there is anything, quickly call me.”

“Alright!” Tang Xiu nodded silently.

After having sent away Jia Ruidao and his apprentices, Tang Xiu picked the path through the trail in the forest, walked around the fountain square and headed straight to the coastline. The stars filled the vast sky as its lights gleamed over the sea surface, as it was reflecting the sparkling lights back. A lone boat a kilometer away from the beach floated along with the sea waves. With his keen vision, Tang Xiu could clearly see a thin person’s back on the boat, giving off a dense sense of a desolate and lonely feeling.

Tang Xiu took a deep breath as he sat cross-legged on the beach sand.

“The Great Dao has myriads of difficult paths.”

“Braces forward through the thorn and thistles along the paths.”

“As the heavens is motionless, my soul casts away the restlessness.”

“The endless thoughts return to the soul within.”

“ ... ”

Reciting the “Great Sorrow and Happiness Soul Purification Incantation” secret art, Tang Xiu’s soul surged as the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi howled up from all directions and rushed toward him, as though it was a clear spring that washed away all the ripples inside his heart.

Ten minutes later...

A kilometer away, on the boat in the sea, the complexion of a beautiful girl who sat cross-legged suddenly changed. An astounded expression was casted in her star-like eyes as she then quickly turned around to look at the beach. With her keen sense, she could feel that the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi around her drifted away toward someone who sat cross-legged on the beach.

Chapter 83: Confessing Mistakes

The whole night sky was covered with stars as the sparkling lights were being reflected back on the sea's surface. The beautiful girl floated as though a fairy descended from the Nine Heavens. Her toes tapped gently on the sea surface as though she was treading on the sea waves as she traversed along the sea toward the figure who sat cross-legged on the beach.

After a dozen breaths...

Kilometers in distance had been traversed as the beautiful girl arrived. She stopped tens of meters away from Tang Xiu as her bright eyes carefully looked at him a few times. Then, she carefully pulled out a painting from her chest and compared the picture to Tang Xiu's face. Shortly after, a disappointed expression was drawn on her face as she shook her head and folded up the picture, putting it back into her bosom.

“Huh?”

Tang Xiu's eyes instantly opened. His eyes were instantly fixated on the beautiful girl with a cold expression in his eyes. The girl before him seemed 20-years-old in appearance. And much to his surprise, her cultivation was a lot stronger than his. He was even unable to sense her arrival, and only after she was tens of meters away was he aware of her arrival.

“Who are you?” The alluring girl asked with her clear and crisp voice.

Tang Xiu responded indifferently, “I’m just a guest to dine here. And you are?”

The girl said with a smile, “I am the owner of this place. I’m called Gu Xiaoxue. Just like you, I’m also a cultivator who takes the immortal cultivation path. What’s your name?”

Tang Xiu cupped his fist and said, “Tang Xiu, a loose cultivator.”

Tang Xiu? Gu Xiaoxue blinked. The face on the picture appeared again in her mind. The same name, but why was he so different? She felt that she had to probe further but then thought that it might perhaps be the same surname and name only. She didn’t dwell on it further as she smiled and said, “There are a lot of martial artists visiting our Everlasting Feast Hall. But after all these years. more than the last decade, only fewer than 10 cultivators have visited this place.”

Tang Xiu’s complexion changed. He could grasp the key point from Gu Xiaoxue’s words: cultivators and immortal cultivation.

After a moment of silence, he asked, “You have seen other cultivators?”

Gu Xiaoxue nodded, “Yes! I also have been to many places, inviting them to be a guest at my Everlasting Feast Hall. But, it’s unfortunate that cultivators who know alchemy and medicinal knowledge are really rare.” With that said, a dejected expression emerged on her face.

Tang Xiu's eyes squinted as he nodded and said, "Since you are this place's owner, can I ask you something?"

"Be my guest!" Gu Xiaoxue back to her usual expression and smiled.

Tang Xiu continued, "The moment I came here, I saw from the distance and overlooked that you have deployed a very powerful Formation Array. The array seems to be able to sever the water, contain the dragon, gathering spiritual qi, drawing spiritual vein, and takes advantage of the heaven and earth's feature, and I believe that this place has a very valuable Feng Shui pattern. Could you tell me what this Formation Array is called?"

Gu Xiaoxue exclaimed out loud in disbelief, "Y-y-y-you... you can even see the Water Block Dragon Pen? Heavens! Are you an Array Master?"

"Thump... thump..." Tang Xiu's heart thumped madly. A disbelieving expression filled his face. He was the one who created this Water Block Dragon Pen Array. Apart from him, only his first disciple knew about this array. And he had long lost information about her whereabouts. It was impossible for outsiders to know about this array. But, how would this Formation Array appear on Earth?

Who was it? Could it be her?

Tang Xiu's huge imposing manner skyrocketed fast, as the

overwhelming aura pressed toward Gu Xiaoxue. Beams of light flashed in his eyes as he looked at her and spoke in a deep tone, “Tell me, who deployed this Water Block Dragon Pen Array?”

Gu Xiaoxue was stunned. Never once she ever dreamed that the very same boy with weak cultivation in front of her would even be able to exude such a terrible aura. This aura made her greatly discomforted, as it brought along a menacing and threatening feeling. She subconsciously stepped back a few steps.

“It was my Master!”

Tang Xiu replied with a stern voice, “Who is your Master?”

Gu Xiaoxue’s black eyebrows pricked as a stream of anger welled up inside her heart. She was polite with him, and Tang Xiu unexpectedly gave her the rude attitude. She coldly snorted and resisted the pressing aura Tang Xiu sent her, and then spoke, “Why the hell should I tell you? Who are you to begin with? I warn you that I am not a girl that’s easy for you to bully. With such cultivation base of yours, it will be easy for me to knock you out.”

Tang Xiu’s breath froze a moment as he suddenly retracted back his imposing aura. A wise man knew better to hold back the fight if the odds were against him. And he admitted that he was not this girl’s opponent at present. He also knew that he had lost his manner because he was too anxious to know the person who deployed this Water Block Dragon Pen Array.

“I really apologize for losing my manners.” Tang Xiu cupped his

hands and spoke.

Gu Xiaoxue coldly snorted and also retracted back her aura. She then lightly replied, “As for who my Master is, you can forget it. I don’t like your attitude. The moment you finished your meal here, get lost quickly! And DO NOT ever come back to this place again!”

Tang Xiu’s complexion slightly changed and lightly said, “I am a guest and you’re the host. This truth, I think you understand it. I don’t eat and drink for free. And I can also pay.”

“We do not welcome you here.” Gu Xiaoxue knitted her brows and said.

A thought crossed Tang Xiu’s mind as he immediately said, “With that said, you seem to want to prevent me from coming, yes? Trying to shut me out?”

“You’re right!”

A happy and self-satisfied expression emerged on Gu Xiaoxue’s face.

Tang Xiu lightly said, “I heard that you have the Thousand Revolution Array here. It’s your rule that if one were able to break through this Formation Array, he doesn’t have to pay for his meals and drinks, right? I’ll try your array. Please lead the way!”

“You...” The proud expression on Gu Xiaoxue’s face suddenly

froze. The person who deployed the custom of breaking through the Thousand Revolution Array was her Master. As long as anyone was able to successfully break it, they would be Honorable Guests of the Everlasting Feast Hall. Not only would they be exempted from paying for their meal and drink, but they would also be given the best treatment.”

Tang Xiu calmly spoke, “How is it? I cannot challenge it?”

Gu Xiaoxue shook her head and said, “Of course, you can. But judging from your cultivation, you’ll never breakthrough the array. Even if you’re barely able to cross the first layer, but at the second layer, either you’ll die or you’ll be severely wounded for trying. There are a total of 7 layers in the Thousand Revolution Array. You’re said to be successful if you’re able to breakthrough all of them. And until now, there have only 2 people who were able to breakthrough to the fourth layer, but those two are cultivators who have been cultivating for centuries.”

Tang Xiu asked, “So, you don’t have any Honorable Guests then?”

Gu Xiaoxue shook her head and said, “No. The ones who were able to breakthrough into the third layer from the second layer, they could count it as their victory for several decades. Only a total of 6 people have successfully broken through from the second layer into the third layer.”

Tang Xiu’s heart turned supercilious.

This Thousand Revolution Array was created by him. He was perfectly clear about its true might. Even if ones were celestial beings, wanting to breakthrough from the first layer to the second, would prove quite difficult for them. A slightly powerful Immortal might be able to breakthrough to the third layer. But advancing forward, there was 80% chance that they would be severely hit and injured, or expelled.

“Let me try it!” Tang Xiu serenely spoke.

Gu Xiaoxue said apathetically, “It seems like you’re not one to give up before seeing the River of Styx. Since you want to challenge it, then try! Since I also am very bored right now, you can come with me!”

Tang Xiu did not speak again. He followed behind Gu Xiaoxue, traversing through the woods’ depth. They met groups of black-suited security guards along the way. A strange smiling expression covered their faces as they looked at Tang Xiu, who was following behind Gu Xiaoxue.

“Huh? It’s strange. Isn’t it the first time we see Little Boss with an unfamiliar young man? Who’s that youngster? Is he worthy to be personally accompanied by Little Boss?”

“Ah, Young Boss has grown up. Isn’t she also a normal girl who longs for a relationship with a man? Just look at the youth behind her. He’s surely unusual!”

“How could this be? Doesn’t Little Boss have a keen eyesight and

has always been aloof and picky? She usually doesn't spare a glance toward any men. How could an unfamiliar youngster walk with her?"

"That young man's looks are good. But he's definitely unworthy of our Little Boss. Nobody on Earth is worthy for Little Boss in my eyes."

"Damn, a toad wants to eat the swan. Little Boss is like a fairy. An average person wouldn't be able to win her over, right?"

"Ugh, they don't match at all..."

"..."

Tang Xiu and Gu Xiaoxue had sharp hearing. They were naturally able to hear those security guards' chats clearly. Gu Xiaoxue, who walked in front, had a deep smiling expression as the corner of her mouth curved. But the one who walked in the back, Tang Xiu, only wore a forced and wry smile.

Listening to those security guards' chats, it made him almost think that he was just like a pile of shit who wanted a fragrant flower such as Gu Xiaoxue.

"Bah!"

But when Tang Xiu was about to drive away those absurd thoughts from his mind, his eyes looked at Gu Xiaoxue at front. He

then spoke, “Your surname is Gu? Someone I know who has gone also surnamed Gu!”

Gu Xiaoxue turned her head as she looked at Tang Xiu with a contemptuous expression before he continued advancing forward, “You don’t need to try to get closer to me. Breaking through the Thousand Revolution Array is our sacred custom. Even if you oily-mouthed me, flattering and saying exaggerated things, I will never help you. Much less, people surnamed Gu are quite rare. But I absolutely have no relation whatsoever with them.”

Tang Xiu asked, “You don’t have any relationship with others? Then, you’re following your master’s Gu surname, right?”

“Yes!” Gu Xiaoxue raised her chin and responded.

Tang Xiu’s eyes tightly fixated at the back of Gu Xiaoxue, as the already calmed down emotions he had suddenly surged up again and made his heart ripple. His favorite First Apprentice was also surnamed Gu, and he was the one who gave her her last name.”

“Gu Xiaoxue, have you heard about someone named Gu Yan’er?”

“What?” She stared at Tang Xiu and said, “Who are you? How do you know my Master’s name?”

Was it true?

Tang Xiu’s heart was as though being thrown into the stormy

sea, as he looked at Gu Xiaoxue in disbelief and hastily asked, “Please tell me, how is your Master? Where is she right now?”

“I don’t know.” Gu Xiaoxue replied with an angry tone.

Tang Xiu said with a deep tone, “Please, answer me. It’s very important to me.”

Gu Xiaoxue sneered, “Hey, you haven’t even answered my question. How do you know my Master’s name? I know it. You should have heard her from your elders, right? Fine... my Master has never contacted any outsiders for the past decade. It’s impossible for you to see her.”

Chapter 84: Thousand Revolution Array

All kinds of thoughts were boiling and surging inside Tang Xiu's mind about Gu Xiaoxue's Master, as the feeling of déjà vu was becoming more intense inside his heart. But still, he felt that the timeline was wrong. He lived in the Immortal World for 10 millennia, and only 1 year had passed on Earth. But, 6,500 years ago Gu Yan'er went missing in the Immortal World. Even if she accidentally came to Earth, she should have entered a year timeline on Earth.

If... If she had been on Earth for decades, would it mean that she had been living for hundreds of thousands of years in the Immortal World?

After carefully analyzing the facts and reasoning deeply, Tang Xiu felt that the matter was becoming stranger. But, as he looked at the extremely cold expression on Gu Xiaoxue's face, he fell into a silence.

He had yet to have sufficient relationships to probe further! Empathy and emotional quotient were not his forte, but he was a highly intelligent person to begin with.

He perhaps lacked a lot of things in engaging with human relationships and feelings. But with his high intelligence, he believed that he was capable of analyzing almost everything and handling them. Gu Xiaoxue didn't want to tell him anything. And he had no abilities to pry it out forcefully from her. Therefore, he could only suppress the curiosity and no longer probe any further.

But still, piles of worries filled him. Because, even though he had long known his wife and brother for hundreds and even thousands of years, he still got betrayed in the end due to their own benefits. And now, could his First Apprentice even still remember him as her Master? After all, an extremely long time had been passed. Would she even have the loyalty and feelings of a master and disciple?

Upon seeing the silent Tang Xiu, a self-satisfied expression re-emerged on Gu Xiaoxue's face again as she then grunted, "If you want to see my Master, it's actually not that impossible. As long as you can breakthrough to the third layer, 3 months later I can take you to see her. However, judging by your cultivation, let alone breaking through the third layer, even when you enter the second layer, you will be severely injured and have to withdraw."

"Continue to lead the way, please!"

An extremely firm conviction could be felt from Tang Xiu's tone and expression.

Gu Xiaoxue sneered, "You really are someone who won't stop until you hit the wall! And it seems that you won't shed tears if you do not see the coffin yourself! Fine! Since you insist, don't blame me for not reminding you if you're out with severe injuries. Let's go!"

100 meters ahead...

They were stopped by a security guard in a suit, "Little Boss,

Master Shao and Master Miao have come, they are waiting for you before the Thousand Revolution Array.”

With a frown, Gu Xiaoxue said, “How come those two are here? Two years ago, they were trapped in the second layer, and they had no abilities to break into the third layer. Much more, their injuries were quite severe. Could they have recuperated from their injuries and improve their cultivation in these 2 years?”

The security staff said, “They do seem to have improved.”

Gu Xiaoxue turned her head and glanced at Tang Xiu. Then, she strode toward the Thousand Array Revolution’s direction. She felt bored as well as lonely recently. The Everlasting Feast Hall had people to manage operations, and she was only practicing and cultivating all the time. But today, she encountered Tang Xiu, who she felt was quite interesting, so she never thought that those two men would come at this time.

Deep in the woods...

A square plaza was surrounded by the lush and verdant greeneries. The open plaza was not too big, and had jadeites placed on each corner. 2 middle-aged men sat cross-legged near the corner as their eyes swept over toward the plaza in front of them with profound expressions on their faces.

“Brother Miao, how big of a chance do you think you have this time?” Shao Mingzhen broke the silence and asked.

Miao Wentang confidently said, “80%.”

Shao Mingzhen was surprised, “You’re that confident?”

Miao Wentang faintly smiled and said, “Brother Shao, I think you’re more confident than me, right? People who haven’t tried to break the Thousand Revolution Array might not know that this is not a Killing Array. This Formation Array seems to be deployed by a certain cultivator to foster his or her disciples. As long as we don’t recklessly rush trying, we don’t need to be worried about losing our lives due to injuries. But, even getting injured it is fine, really. Haven’t you also benefitted from the Thousand Revolution Array 2 years ago?”

Shao Mingzhen nodded and smiled, “Indeed. The person who created this Thousand Revolution Array is absolutely a genius in cultivation techniques. His strength definitely has reached a terrifying degree. Frankly speaking, if possible, I really want to study under the person who created this Array.”

“Haha, we do have the same thought!”

Miao Wentang laughed heartily.

“Ah, the two of you seem to be unsatisfied, even if you want to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array again. If my memory doesn’t fail me, you have already challenged the Array 3 times. According to my Master’s custom, you need to pay 1 million yuan the fourth time you challenge the Array again. Pay it up first before you enter!” Gu Xiaoxue walked slowly along with Tang Xiu. Her

expression was tranquil, even though a trace of coldness could be felt from her tone.

Upon seeing Gu Xiaoxue and Tang Xiu walking together, Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang were astonished as to guess about Tang Xiu's origin. But still, they hastily stood up and picked up the leather suitcase at their side, handing it over to Gu Xiaoxue and saying, "We have prepared the money, please accept it."

Gu Xiaoxue motioned a few security guards nearby as they took the two suitcases away, opening it and confirming the amount, and then quickly carried the cash and left.

"Ah Er, sound the Everlasting Bell!"

"Yes!"

The big man cupped his fist and bolted toward the distance.

A few minutes later...

"Dong dong dong..."

The bell sounded 18 times, as the sounds echoed in the vicinity and struck everyone's ears inside the Everlasting Feast Hall. A lot of guests came out from their private dining rooms as they were surprised to listen to the bell's sound, and inquired about it from the attendants.

“It’s the Everlasting Bell, some people will challenge the Thousand Revolution Array.”

“18 bells. Each person would be 6, so there are 3 people that will challenge the Array.”

“Martial artists will challenge the Array as the screening test to become our Honorable Guests.”

“The Everlasting Bell has been evoked. Everyone can go to the scene to watch.”

“The guests can broaden their horizons today.”

“...”

With an excited expression on their faces, the attendants explained, and under the guidance of the security guards, all the visitors in the Everlasting Feast Hall’s 100 private dining rooms rushed out and strode toward the Thousand Revolution Array’s direction.

Inside one of the private dining rooms...

Jia Ruidao and his three apprentices stared blankly as they listened to the attendant’s explanation. To them, the most important thing today was to serve and entertain Tang Xiu.

Otherwise, if Tang Xiu were to quit, not only would they go bankrupt, they would lose their reputation greatly in the professional gambler's society and no longer be able to rise again for a lifetime.

“The three of you, do you want to watch?”

After having explained, a young and beautiful attendant then asked.

Jia Ruidao waved with a fidgety expression and replied, “We’re not interested. Please leave!”

“Wait a minute.”

Gong Dalong suddenly stopped the attendant. He looked at Jia Ruidao and said, “Master, as far as I know, Master Tang seems to know martial arts. Maybe one of the people who will challenge the array is him. Please think about it! It’s a rare event for people trying to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array even in 1 or 2 years. But the moment Master Tang comes here, some people want to break through the array. I think that Master Tang is highly likely to be one of the people challenging the array.”

Jia Ruidao’s complexion moved. He also knew that Tang Xiu was a martial artist. He suddenly nodded and said, “Then, let’s go! Even if it is not Tang Xiu, perhaps he will also be there to watch!”

Shortly after, the woods surrounding the Everlasting Feast Hall

was filled with a lot of people, as the entire plaza's edge had been occupied. Dozens of Everlasting Feast Hall's security guards took positions outside the plaza and prohibited anyone from entering even half a step.

Gu Xiaoxue folded her arms. Her eyes occasionally swept Tang Xiu while mostly shuttling back and forth between Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang. She was curious, to what degree their cultivation has progressed. Could they be able to break through to the third layer?

“Little Boss, is it time?”

The Security Chief came at Gu Xiaoxue's side and whispered.

Gu Xiaoxue nodded slightly. She glanced at Tang Xiu, Shao Mingzhen, and Miao Wentang and then said lightly, “Today the three of you want to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array. Regardless of your life and death, the Everlasting Feast Hall will not be accounted or be held responsible for your fate. Anyone who can break through the third layer will be our Everlasting Feast Hall's Honorable Guest.”

Three people?

Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang looked at each other as their vision fell on Tang Xiu at the same time. Shao Mingzhen hesitated for a moment. He looked at Tang Xiu and said, “Little Brother, you want to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array? Anyway, this is not something you can joke about. If you're not a genuine martial

artist, perhaps you will lose your life inside.”

Miao Wentang also nodded and said, “That’s right! A young man with spirit is good, but don’t aim too high without having sufficient skill. Although this Thousand Revolution Array is very helpful for a practitioner’s cultivation, but if one does not have the sufficient strength, you will either be injured or you’ll die.”

“I’m aware of that.”

Tang Xiu glanced at the two men, who looked and judged him based on his appearance only. But he didn’t feel any antipathy toward them. He was the creator of this Array and he knew everything about it. However, he didn’t want to speak, and he believed that the fact will open their eyes.

Upon seeing Tang Xiu’s expression, Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang wryly smiled inside. They reminded him out of goodwill, but Tang Xiu seemed to ignore them.

“Damn!!”

A trace of anger was suddenly birthed in Shao Mingzhen’s heart as he indifferently spoke, “Since Little Brother wants to strive until the last minute, we will remind you no longer then.”

With that said, he turned toward Gu Xiaoxue and cupped his fist, and then strode into the plaza.

The entire plaza seemed to be only filled with randomly placed jadeites. But, the naked eyes were unable to see that these jadeites were the pattern of the Thousand Revolution Array. The moment Shao Mingzhen stepped into the Array area, his footsteps suddenly stopped as he began to move the next moment.

In the onlookers' eyes, Shao Mingzhen was only repeatedly moving around in the perimeter area of the ten square meter range, as though he was a fly that was moving around heedlessly. But for Tang Xiu, Gu Xiaoxue, as well as Miao Wentang, who had once challenged the Thousand Revolution Array, they knew that Shao Mingzhen was facing a different scene.

Inside the Thousand Revolution Array...

The split second Shao Mingzhen stepped inside, it was as though he had come to another world. He looked at the Oriole birds that flew above the grasses as high as a person's height in front of him, giving off the scene of the springtime, and the feeling of the blowing spring breeze. But, even then, he was in full concentration at this time. He had the knowledge of the first layer of Thousand Revolution Array, since he had challenged it before. He knew that even though the beautiful mountain forest he saw right now was a sight to behold, but it actually contained countless grave dangers.

Suddenly, spring thunder sounded as the bright and beautiful sunshine was shrouded with floating dark clouds. The entire world turned darker as light drizzle rain began to drip from the sky, bringing along the corrosiveness with them.

“It's coming!”

Shao Mingzhen's heart tightened. He vigilantly looked around and immediately found groups of mottled snakes as thick as person's arms from the surrounding woods as they gathered around him.

“Hmph.....”

Since he had once experienced it, Shao Mingzhen didn't panic. He took a yellow paper talisman from his chest, waved his wrist and ignited the paper talisman as a raging fire suddenly blazed and sprayed out toward the mottled snakes in the surroundings.

“Hiss.....”

A mottled snake was neighing in the sea of raging fire and died. But more and more mottled snakes dauntlessly slithered forward in waves. With a cold and chilling manner, the scarlet-colored mottled snake's eyes were tightly eyeing Shao Mingzhen. However, a sharp stiletto suddenly appeared in Shao Mingzhen's hands. Along with his foot's movements, he struck dead the mottled snakes that bolted toward him.

“Found it.”

Chapter 85: Self-Pride

A few minutes later, his sharp eyes saw a wrist-sized dark-yellow snake with a purple-crowned head. The snake was constantly hissing at the snake reinforcement army, as though it was commandeering the group of snakes to the battlefield, and machinating the movements of its soldiers to fight closer.

“Go...”

The stiletto in Shao Mingzhen’s hand flew fast in an instant as it accurately stabbed the dark-yellow snake’s weak spot under its head.

“Buzz...”

Following the death of the snake, the world around Shao Mingzhen changed. The previous scene of the beginning of spring world, full of exuberant vitality suddenly transformed into a brightly colored world with a scorching sun.

Outside the Thousand Revolution Array...

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes as he observed the plaza’s core 7 or 8 steps away from Shao Mingzhen. He secretly nodded. Although he couldn’t see the scene inside the Formation Array, but seeing that Shao Mingzhen was able to advance rapidly through the first layer, this could be said that he was quite good. Gu Xiaoxue and Miao Wentang beside him were also thinking the same.

“Damn, it’s really amazing! Brother Shao can pass through the first layer in such a short time. Had it been me, it would not have been easy. The first layer of Thousand Revolution Array is the Spring Carnage, and the second layer is the Summer Carnage. What would be the third one?” Miao Wentang couldn’t help sighing and exclaiming.

Gu Xiaoxue looked at him and said, “The Thousand Revolution Array has a total of 7 layers. The first four are respectively the four seasons. Spring, Summer, Autumn and Winter. The next one naturally is Autumn Carnage and Winter Carnage. But nevertheless, considering his age and the fact that he has challenged the array before, he’s too slow, and it’s quite the losing of face if you ask me.”

Miao Wentang’s mouth couldn’t help but twitch a few times. He was older than Shao Mingzhen. Had he broke the first layer slower than Shao Mingzhen, perhaps he would also be disgracing himself.

The surrounding onlookers were looking at the Shao Mingzhen inside the Formation Array with bewildered expressions. They could only see Shao Mingzhen walking around chaotically and igniting paper talismans as though he was acting in theatrical plays. He also pulled out a stiletto and randomly slashed once in awhile. The scene put everyone at a loss and were dumbfounded.

“Eh? Did he turn crazy or something?!”

“What kind of boring scam is this? Making us come and watch

such a scene?”

“What Thousand Revolution Array? The way I see it, it’s just only deliberately mystifying.”

“It’s damn boring! Our lively dinner party has just turned into watching an idiot in a play. This is way too dull.”

“What does the Everlasting Feast Hall want? To tease everyone?”

“...”

Listening to the onlookers’ comments and critics, Gu Xiaoxue suddenly motioned to the Security Captain. Immediately the Security Captain loudly spoke, “Ladies and Gentlemen, you don’t know the true reason. So, I’ll explain it to you. This Thousand Revolution Array is divided into 7 layers...”

Along with his explanation, the surrounding people suddenly looked to have understood something in a flash. But, they were still skeptical in some manners. Some people were even trying to inspect and verify whether it was true or not as they tried to pass through the security guards and step into the plaza.

However, because there were a lot of guests, the security guards unable to stop all of them. A dozen of people rushed into the Thousand Revolution Array! Then, seconds after, they stopped moving with a frozen body. Their eyes turned into saucers as their faces formed a disbelieving expression!

“Ah Er, get them out!”

Gu Xiaoxue shouted with a stern voice.

Suddenly, more than a dozen security guards rushed into the Thousands Revolution array lightning fast toward the dazed guests as they forcefully dragged them out from the Array area.

“Holy Lord... I-I-I... I’m not drunk, am I? What was that inside?”

“Illusion!! This is absolutely an illusion! Else, how could there be another world inside?”

“Is that a genuine Formation Array? This magic is really mysterious! Amazing!”

“Wife, can you pinch me? Let me know if I can feel pain!”

“Formation Array do exist indeed...”

“...”

The sobered up 10 people shouted in succession. The other guests immediately understood that the plaza in front of them perhaps really had a Formation Array deployed.

Tang Xiu remained silent. He watched Shao Mingzhen's constant moving, unceasingly brandishing his stiletto and attacking. He found that the Thousand Revolution Array being deployed here was only arranged in an extremely simple pattern. It was like a day and night difference compared to his genuine Array. If he were to go inside, he believed that he would break this array easily.

20 minutes later...

“Huh?”

Tang Xiu's complexion moved as he saw Shao Mingzhen approach a few steps toward the plaza's core.

Miao Wentang's expression turned solemn. Looking at the slightly paler Shao Mingzhen, he couldn't help feel a bit apprehensive. From his expression, he knew that Shao Mingzhen had broken through the second layer and stepped into the third layer. This implied that his strength was much stronger than 2 years ago. He even had reached the qualification to become the Everlasting Feast Hall's Honored Guest.

“Aaaah...”

A roar suddenly bellowed. When he had just broken through the third layer, Shao Mingzhen was directly thrown out from the third layer and fell outside the array heavily. After half a minute, he reluctantly propped himself up with his 2 hands as he spurted out a mouthful of blood.

“Brother Shao, are you alright?”

Miao Wentang strode hastily toward Shao Mingzhen's side. Trying to get him up, he quickly extended his hand and propped up his arm with a face full of concern.

Shao Mingzhen spat out a strand of blood. His complexion was slightly haggard as he shook his head with a bitter expression and said, “I'm fine. But I failed to break through the third layer. This Thousand Revolution Array is way too appalling!”

Miao Wentang gently patted his shoulder and said, “Don't aim too high. It's already amazing enough for you to be able to break through the third layer! I don't have that much of confidence myself. Much less you've successfully become an Honorable Guest of Everlasting Feast Hall. Even if you're unable to find anything to eat later, you'll be able to eat and drink here for free.”

“Hahaha...” Shao Mingzhen grinned as he felt eased a lot.

Miao Wentang stretched his muscles and bones before he walked toward the Thousand Revolution Array. Then he smiled and said, “Next is my turn. I hope I can reach your level and break through the third layer.”

Tang Xiu's gaze followed Miao Wentang into the Thousands Revolution Array. Then, he stepped toward Shao Mingzhen's side and took his wrist. Under the astonished Shao Mingzhen's expression, Tang Xiu lightly said, “Your internal injuries are serious. You need to immediately recuperate your blood and qi

flow. With your cultivation level, it would take at the least 10 days and 2 months to fully recover like before.”

Shao Mingzhen took back his hand and said in dissatisfaction, “Don’t talk such nonsense! I know my own condition! To cultivators like us, such injuries like this are but only normal occurrences.”

Tang Xiu lightly said, “It is normal, but healing will take and waste time. So the gain isn’t worth the loss. I can give you a prescription to heal your wound. As long as you take the medicine according to my prescription, it will only take you 3 days to fully recover from your internal injuries. But, since you’re quite rich, I will charge you a fee.”

Shao Mingzhen blankly stared for a moment before he looked at Tang Xiu again. With a skeptical and bewildered expression, he asked, “Are you really sure that I’ll recover in 3 days completely?”

“Absolutely!”

Tang Xiu replied confidently.

Shao Mingzhen spoke in a deep tone, “Fine, say the price!”

“1 million!”

Tang Xiu spoke calmly.

Shao Mingzhen exclaimed, “1 million for a prescription only? It’s a daylight robbery!”

Tang Xiu lightly replied, “It’s your choice whether you want to buy it or not. Had it not been for your sincere reminder for me before, not to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array, let alone 1 million, even if you give me 1 billion I wouldn’t even pay attention to you.”

“You...”

Shao Mingzhen seethed with anger. But, he was after all quite a figure with a good status. He took a deep breath, suppressing the anger in his heart and then spoke in a deep tone, “Fine, I’ll take your prescription. However, you tell me the prescription first. After I take the medicine and the effect is just like what you said, then I’ll pay you double.”

“It’s a deal.”

Tang Xiu nodded as his eyes back to the Thousand Revolution Array where Miao Wentang was in.

Gu Xiaoxue’s black eyebrows pricked. She was listening to the chat between Tang Xiu and Shao Mingzhen. Her sight was fixated on Tang Xiu. After having been in silent for quite a while, she leaned toward Tang Xiu and asked in a whisper, “Hey, do you... know about medicinal knowledge?”

“I know some!”

Tang Xiu replied casually.

Gu Xiaoxue quickly asked, “You know about the illness called Twilight Nightmare?”

Twilight Nightmare?

The raws for Twilight Nightmare is 光阴梦魔 (light/brilliance, Yin/shade/dark, dream/vision, demon/evil spirit)... these two characters >>> 光阴 form a word means time. So... when does the time when light and dark collide? It could be at dawn or dusk, right? But since night demon (梦魔) means evil spirit that disturb people's sleep and creates nightmare, plus the light and dark time—so I came up with twilight and nightmare. Thus, the Twilight Nightmare term was born. I was tempted to use Incubus, but since it was a sickness and not a creature, so I didn't use it.

Tang Xiu's expression froze as he looked at Gu Xiaoxue in disbelief and he exclaimed, “How do you know about the Twilight Nightmare? That is the most ruthless and sinister killing technique from the Shade Demon, Zhu Wushou's Great Twilight Secret Art. You...”

“I don't know what you're talking about. I only want to ask you, can you treat it?”

“No!” Tang Xiu shook his head and said.

It was not because he didn't want to treat it. It was because he indeed did not have the means to treat it. The Shade Demon Zhu Wushou was one of the Supreme Immortals Peak Stage in the Immortal World, and his cultivation level was comparable to Tang Xiu's. And the Twilight Nightmare was exactly his most powerful killing technique. Once one were hit by this technique, even if they were lucky enough and didn't die, they would fall asleep and be tortured with endless nightmares. They might occasionally sober up, but perhaps they would not be able to recover completely.

Treating this would need 2 kinds of extremely rare treasures—Chrono Crystal and Demonic Revival Grass.

Demonic Revival Grass only grew in the center of the Demon Realm, in a place with extremely thick Yin energy. Apart from a few Supremes of the Demon Realm who were barely able to reach the Demon Realm's core, others would find it extremely difficult to go into that dangerous place. Much less, they also would have to face thousands of difficulties in that place to obtain the Demonic Revival Grass.

[Chrono Crystal!](#)

As for Chrono Crystal, the raws is 时光晶石 (time/season/era, light/brilliance, crystal, rock/stone). But 时光 form a word which means time/era. The moment I read this word, I remember the old games, Chrono Trigger and Chrono Cross. So the Chrono Crystal is born... Hahaha. FYI, those two RPG games are PS1 games.

Rumors said that there were 2 Void Cracks in the Immortal Realm and the God Realm. But apart from the Gods, no Immortals

had the courage to enter them, because the slightest carelessness inside the Void Crack would create accidents beyond redemption and cost them their life.

For one to concoct the medicine to remove this Twilight Nightmare, one must first obtain Chrono Crystals and Demonic Revival Grass. Without the 2 treasures, nobody would be able to remove it, even Zhu Wushou himself.

Gu Xiaoxue looked at Tang Xiu with a disappointed look. Then, a detached, out-of-touch appearance was revealed on her face as she looked at Miao Wentang inside the Thousand Revolution Array.

More than half an hour later...

Miao Wentang had successfully broken through the third layer, although the time he spent was longer than Shao Mingzhen. But he lasted longer in the third Autumn Carnage layer than Shao Mingzhen.

“Cough cough ...”

Miao Wentang coughed up a few mouthfuls of blood. His complexion was pale as white paper. He was forced out from the Thousand Revolution Array.

“Brother Miao, are you okay?”

Shao Mingzhen propped his arm and asked with concern

expressed on his face.

Miao Wentang shook his head and squeezed out a trace of a smile, “I’m fine. I won’t die. But my injury is quite serious. If I don’t quickly heal in these 2-3 months, I might be unable to completely recover.”

Chapter 86: The Tides Of Shocks

Shao Mingzhen looked up and glanced at Tang Xiu. He hesitated for a moment before he eventually spoke to Miao Wentang about his deal with Tang Xiu. After that, he finally concluded, “I’ve promised him that if his prescription is good, I’d give him 2 million.”

Miao Wentang ridiculed, “Are you joking me? If there was such a wound healing panacea in this world, let alone 2 million for the prescription, even if you sell it for 20 million, I’d buy it.”

Tang Xiu lightly said, “You can try it if you want. But if you find the effect is just like I told you, don’t go back on your words and pay me 20 million.”

“Hmph, what a cheap mouthed youngster!”

Miao Wentang said coldly.

Tang Xiu coldly glanced at him. Then, he turned around and walked toward the Thousand Revolution Array.

Miao Wentang loudly said, “Hey, Tang Xiu? I advise you to give up. Although I don’t know how strong you are, but judging from your age, it’s far too much for you to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array. Don’t shame yourself!”

“Brother Miao!”

Shao Mingzhen quickly pulled Miao Wentang's arm as he called out in a low voice. Although he didn't like Tang Xiu because he thought that Tang Xiu was too arrogant. But they were men with status and it was quite improper for them to bicker with a youngster.

Gu Xiaoxue's mouth slanted upwards as she faintly smiled, watching Tang Xiu from the back with a slightly helpless feeling. She felt that even though Tang Xiu's aura was very strong, but with her cultivation, she could sense Tang Xiu's strength. So she could tell that Tang Xiu's strength was far inferior when compared to Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang. The both of them barely broke into the third layer, but for Tang Xiu, perhaps he wouldn't be able to enter the second layer.

Amongst the onlookers...

Jia Ruidao with his three apprentices had long seen Tang Xiu. However, he had never thought that Tang Xiu actually would challenge the Thousand Revolution Array. So he and his 3 apprentices didn't greet him. As an experienced person himself, Jia Ruidao also wanted to see Tang Xiu's bottom.

However, when he saw Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang's appearance and condition when they got out from the Array, he was worried. Because, tomorrow Tang Xiu would gamble, and it was quite a taboo for gamblers to be exhausted both physically and mentally before the game. If Tang Xiu were to be injured, how would he be able to gamble tomorrow?

“I must stop him!”

Jia Ruidao squeezed out of the crowd and rushed toward Tang Xiu as he exclaimed, “Brother Tang, please wait. I have to talk with you.”

Tang Xiu suddenly stopped. With a puzzled expression in his eyes, he looked at the rushing Jia Ruidao and then asked, “What’s up?”

Jia Ruidao revealed a forced smile, “Brother Tang, we’ll have the game with Chen Kai tomorrow. If you were to face some difficulties in this Thousand Revolution Array, then tomorrow...”

“You don’t believe me?”

A cold beam flashed in Tang Xiu’s face as he spoke with a cold tone.

Jia Ruidao smiled and said, “It’s not that I don’t believe you. But it’s quite a taboo for a professional gambler to get exhausted physically and mentally. Only in a 100% condition would you be able to win the game.”

Tang Xiu indifferently said, “You have always been resting well everyday, but I haven’t seen you win, have I? Hmph... I’ve my own way. I need not other’s words for it.”

With that said, he turned around and strode into the Thousand

Revolution Array.

Miao Wentang at the side burst into laughter, “Brother Shao, can you see that? Even his companions don’t believe him. Do you think he has the ability to break the Thousand Revolution Array? Just wait and see! We’ll have some funny jokes to look forward to.”

Shao Mingzhen smiled and secretly sighed. Apparently, he also agreed with Miao Wentang’s opinion.

Inside the Thousand Revolution Array...

The second Tang Xiu entered, he didn’t have the slightest surprise in seeing the changes in the world’s surrounding scene. He looked around before his vision locked on a high ancient tree. He flicked his toes and bolted forward as though arrow being released from the bow. In a breath’s time, he already sprinted toward his destination.

“Puff.....”

A sharp Mitsubishi army knife shot forward toward the ancient tree trunk as the dark yellow snake’s weak spot was pierced.

“Buzz...”

The world scene changed as the scorching hot summer emerged. Flowers bloomed with hundreds of birds chirping happily. Tang Xiu looked around at the surrounding and saw a track at the

distant. A stele was placed half buried in the middle of the track. Without the slightest hesitation, he sprinted fast toward it.

It was time! His cultivation was still low. Before he had a formidable strength and was able to act freely, he could only grab the opportunity within the given time. With a burst of effort, he sprinted toward the stele as he exerted all of his strength into his fist and punched the stele.

“Boom.....”

The stele was broken as the lions and tigers in the surroundings instantly vanished. The environment changed again.

Outside the Thousand Revolution Array...

Everyone's eyes were fixated on Tang Xiu. Strange looks, as well as disbelieving expressions were cast on their faces as they looked at Tang Xiu. They also clearly remembered that it took half an hour for Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang to step more than 20 steps toward the center of the plaza.

“How could this be?”

Miao Wentang exclaimed out loud. A disbelieving expression hung on his face, even his eyeballs were almost popping out. He even did exaggerated things as he rubbed his eyes only to affirm that he was not seeing an illusion, and then looked at Tang Xiu in the plaza again.

“Damn, I’m not hallucinating! H-h-he... how did he do it?”

Shao Mingzhen’s heart also thumped and jolted at the moment. A similar shock was also cast on his complexion, even his lips were squirming and twitching a few times. He then spoke in bitterness, “10 seconds! He only used 10 seconds to break through the second layer and rush into the third. This... is he still a human? But, with what way did he do it?”

Yes! How did he do it?

Gu Xiaoxue at the side was also gaping and tongue-tied as she looked dumbfoundedly at Tang Xiu. Her heart was struck with a storm. She clearly remembered that her Master had once said, that apart from one person, nobody would easily break through the barrier, even a group of the most powerful superb experts in the other worlds wouldn’t be able to do it.

“... even if it was Master, she could only barely reach this level, wouldn’t she? But who is he? How come he could see through the secrets of the Thousand Revolution Array? He was even able to find the layer’s core in such a short time?”

Gu Xiaoxue’s eyes were struggling to move from Tang Xiu’s figure to shift around to look at the shocked expression everyone had. Only then did she realize that she was not in a dream, someone had truly broken the first 2 layers in less than 10 seconds. He even had rushed to the third layer of the Thousand Revolution Array, the Autumn Carnage.

Tang Xiu didn't know that people outside were being struck with shocks at the moment. The scene of lush trees heavily laden with fruits of the Autumn Carnage was currently emerging in front of his eyes. It was an orchard full of fruit trees, with bright yellow fruits and bright scarlet fruits as a faint fragrant could be smelt, sparking people's appetite to eat them. A group of wild geese flew over the orchards, leaving a burst of their cries.

"This simplified version really lacks its true might."

Tang Xiu didn't rush to act this time. But he stood still, staring at a certain spot and quietly waited.

"Anyone who trespasses this array must die."

A roar came from inside the orchard. A ferocious-looking big man, winded with chains all over his body bolted from the inside of the orchard. His hand waved a sharp-spike mace as it glowed faintly, giving off a kind of cold and menacing feeling.

Tang Xiu squatted his body. He casually picked up a pebble on the ground and faintly smiled, "The first time I had just created this Formation Array, I really exerted my strength for it. But, I have left behind a secret gate for each layer. Do you believe me that I can beat you with this pebble?"

"Ridiculous!"

The ferocious big guy was as though having a spiritual wisdom. He waved his spiky mace and crushed down Tang Xiu's head.

“Down!”

Tang Xi fingers flicked as the pebble instantly hit the ferocious big guy's throat. Almost at the same moment, the ferocious big guy stood motionless as his mace hung a foot above Tang Xiu's head. Along with the burst of autumn breeze, the unwilling ferocious big guy turned into ashes being turned by the passing breeze.

“Buzz ...”

The world scene changed once again. The cool autumn breeze turned into the freezing winter solstice wind. The place was no longer the orchard heavily laden with fruit trees, but turned into the world of ice and snow.

The vast sea of whiteness of the endless snow, as far as eyes can see.

“Winter Carnage?”

Tang Xiu sat cross-legged as he stabbed his sharp army knife straight into the snow on his left side.

“Aroooo...”

The billowing sounds of the howling wolves came from the distant horizon. A few seconds after, countless Snow Wolves, as though flying in the sky of snow, rushed forward and howled.

Outside of the Thousand Revolution Array...

Miao Wentang's body greatly shook a few times. With his chaotic blood and qi circulation, coupled with the shocks that struck his heart, it suddenly made him sit down on the ground. But due to his distress and embarrassment, he wasn't even aware of it. He looked again at the Tang Xiu, who walked 6 or 7 steps, with the feeling as though a thunderclap had blasted inside his heart.

The fourth layer! It was absolutely the fourth layer!

Miao Wentang suddenly recalled the mocking and cynical remarks he had said to Tang Xiu before he entered the Thousand Revolution Array. He thought that Tang Xiu wouldn't be able to break through the first layer. But never once he had ever dreamed that Tang Xiu not only would cross through the first layer, but he also rushed through the second, third, and now directly bursting into the fourth layer.

At this very moment, he really wished that a pit would appear in front of him, so he could immediately throw himself into it and wouldn't come out again out of disgrace.

Shao Mingzhen's mouth twitched severely. He even found it hard to turn his head as he looked at Gu Xiaoxue at the side.

However, Gu Xiaoxue was also struck with shocks at this moment. She looked at Tang Xiu with a foolish expression. She even almost raised her hand to slap her own face. She clearly knew Tang Xiu's cultivation level. But, she had never dreamt that Tang Xiu would actually be able to break through the fourth layer. The Thousand Revolution Array was not an ordinary Formation Array. Even if the cultivators' strength might be more powerful than her's, they were not necessarily able to burst through into the fourth layer.

However, how was Tang Xiu able to do it?

How was it possible to break through into the fourth layer?

Gu Xiaoxue clearly remembered what she had said to Tang Xiu before. Tides of regrets were billowing inside her heart. Had she known that Tang Xiu had the ability to break through the fourth layer, how would she dare to disgrace herself?

She was just like a frog living in the depths of the well!

It was this saying that thundering inside Gu Xiaoxue's mind. Reminding her that this saying was truly what she was like at this moment.

“Miss Gu, Tang Xiu, h-he...”

Chapter 87: Apathetic

Gu Xiaoxue was surprised when Shao Mingzhen suddenly asked her. He calmed her down before she wryly smiled, “Your guess is correct, why you must ask me? Truth be told, his cultivation is far lower than yours. But... who could have thought that he would be able to break through into the fourth layer?”

“It’s really the fourth layer?”

Shao Mingzhen was stunned. He only guessed it. But now after getting confirmation, he also shared the shocks. He was not a run of the mill person with good judgment abilities regarding other’s ability. But only now did he realize that he had been mistaken. He really couldn’t judge a person by looking only at his appearance, just like you couldn’t measure the depth of the sea with a pint pot. And this time, he was really wrong beyond reason.

Gu Xiaoxue added, “I don’t want to admit it but the fact is right before your eyes.”

Shao Mingzhen furiously swallowed his saliva and was unable to say anything for a moment. He had seen a genius cultivator before. But for a monster such as Tang Xiu, never once had he heard or encountered one.

“I suspect that he should be a formation Array Grandmaster!”

Gu Xiaoxue hesitated for a moment before she continued in a low voice.

“What the hell? Is this a joke?”

Miao Wentang reluctantly propped himself up from the ground and exclaimed out with a hoarse voice.

Gu Xiaoxue coldly glanced at him as she humphed and said, “Hmph! If he isn’t an Array Grandmaster, how could he easily break the first three layers of the array, then? I can see that his cultivation is not deep, I’m 100% sure about it. Your cultivation is much higher, but can you breakthrough to the fourth layer?”

“T-This...”

Miao Wentang was left speechless. He could only feel his face burning as though he was slapped with invisible hands, leaving him to feel a kind of dejected and ashamed feeling!

A few meters away outside...

Jia Ruidao looked at Tang Xiu’s figure dumbfoundedly. His mouth gaped, big enough that he could even swallow a duck egg. His first disciple at his side, Gong Dalong whispered, “Master, Master Tang seems like he’s very powerful! He’s even able to walk further into the center of the plaza compared to the two men before.”

Jia Ruidao slowly turned his head. The vacant expression on his eyes greatly diminished as he replied with a bitter tone, “But still, I

don't want him to continue rushing into a higher level right now. If he were to continue rushing, the possibility of him getting injured is also bigger. He could be seriously injured.”

Gong Dalong also froze and fell into silence.

His Master's concern was true. If Tang Xiu was to be seriously injured, then tomorrow's gambling match would have been implicated, even all of them would have been finished completely.

Inside the Thousand Revolution Array...

Tang Xiu kept observing as more Snow Wolves approached. The smile on his face was getting bigger. Had it been for others, they would have been trembling and scared shitless. But, he was not some other guys. He was the creator of this Thousand Revolution Array and knew everything about breaking this array.

“Aroooooo...”

The wolves' howling voice turned into a stretch line of sound that filled and shocked the entire sky. But a strange thing happened. The group of wolves that came from all directions stopped tens of meters away from Tang Xiu, as their chilling greenish eyes tightly preyed on something else than Tang Xiu. It was the Mitsubishi army knife they were staring at.

The key point in a formation array was the knowledge of the pattern's crux.

Not only did Tang Xiu know about the crux, but he also knew the pattern layout. The spot that was stabbed by his Mitsubishi army knife was exactly the connection point to the crux. As long as he didn't pull the knife out, the Snow Wolves wouldn't attack him. The key point in breaking the Winter Carnage of the fourth layer was to withstand against time. As long as one was able to withstand a burning incense stick's worth of time, the fourth layer would eventually collapse by itself.

Shortly after, a burning incense stick's worth of time had passed.

“Buzz...”

The surrounding scene changed as the world of ice and snow dissipated and was replaced with the yellow sandy pathway. There was an unceasing surging river behind the trail.

A man clad in a raincoat was holding an olden fishing rod as he sat alone on the small boat in the river. The boat turned and automatically approached Tang Xiu slowly the moment he appeared.

“Ferryman!”

Tang Xiu spoke calmly.

The old man smiled and said, “I welcome your arrival. It's honor to serve you.”

Tang jumped onto the boat and calmly replied, “I want to cross the river.”

“At your service!”

The old man nodded and smiled.

The boat glided and slowly moved into the middle of the river. However, the old man suddenly disappeared and was replaced with a howling gale. The boat began to shake violently as Swordfishes unceasingly leaped up above the surrounding river water and aimed at Tang Xiu. At the same time, a group of Vermillion Birds blazing in fire suddenly flew in the sky as they swarmed over Tang Xiu with their sharp beaks and talons.

“Xiu’er, Mum misses you.”

An illusion appeared in Tang Xiu’s eyes. He was at home as his Mother shed tears as she rushed over at him.

“Hmph.....”

Tang Xiu snorted coldly as his aura suddenly exploded and destroyed the surroundings scene in an instant. He had experienced this illusion in this dreamland countless of times. Had it been before, he could have drowned himself in this dreamland for a long time even though he was clearly aware that his mother was only an illusion. It was because he missed his mother deeply.

But at present, since he had come back from the Immortal World and could see his mother in flesh easily, he didn't need to suffer the again and did not have the slightest disturbance on him.

“Destroy!”

He slashed his army knife again and moved fast. With his low cultivation right now, he only had 3,000 pounds of strength, so it would be very difficult for him to kill theses Swordfishes and the Blazing Vermillion birds. A slight carelessness would get him severely injured or killed. But with his vast fighting experience, such a scene was easy for him to solve.

Besides, the key point to break through this layer was not to kill all of those Swordfishes and Blazing Vermillion birds, but to cross the river and get to the other side with the boat quickly.

Outside the Thousand Revolution Array...

The terrifying speed Tang Xiu had shown in breaking the array had constantly shocked Gu Xiaoxue to the point of numbness. She originally thought that the fourth layer would be Tang Xiu's limit. However, the current scene made her flabbergasted and put her at a complete loss.

She was very strong, to the point that she could kill Tang Xiu with only a pat. But if she were to ask herself, she would never be able to achieve Tang Xiu's level. She had been challenging the array since she was 10 years old for hundreds and even thousands of times. And never once did she break into the fifth layer.

What kind of world was the fifth layer?

She only heard about it but had never seen it!

“Even if one were an Array Grandmaster, they’d never be like him, would they?”

Regret filled Gu Xiaoxue because of the contempt and despise she had and did toward Tang Xiu. Such a heaven-defying ability Tang Xiu had shown to break the array had broken her common sense.

At this moment, Miao Wentang’s face was just like a sheet of paper. He looked at Shao Mingzhen and was barely able to hold the urge to pull Shao Mingzhen and run away due to his embarrassment.

This was a disgrace he brought upon himself and now he finally tasted this bitter feeling, which was even more bitter than goldthread rhizome medicine.

“Amazing!”

With vacant eyes, Shao Mingzhen murmured.

But his words were just like a sharp knife that ferociously stabbed at Miao Wentang’s heart, the pain even almost drove him to cry.

As for the spectators, although a few onlookers had left, but most of them still waited. They didn't know what layer Tang Xiu had broken into, but seeing that Tang Xiu had walked further than Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang, they knew that Tang Xiu was stronger than the both of them.

“Impossible!”

A loud shout came from Gu Xiaoxue.

In the next moment, everyone also found that Tang Xiu was walking 7 or 8 meters forward toward the center of the plaza.

Shao Mingzhen turned his head and hastily asked Gu Xiu with an aghast expression, “Miss Gu, Tang Xiu, H-He... He succeeded again?”

“Yes!”

With mind already numbed with shock, Gu Xiaoxue nodded and answered.

Shao Mingzhen mumbled with a blank expression, “The fifth layer, he broke the fifth layer and not into the sixth layer. ... Isn't this way too inconceivable?”

“It's damn appalling!”

A complicated expression filled Gu Xiaoxue's eyes. An unfathomable feeling filled her heart looking at Tang Xiu's figure. She recalled the moment she met Tang Xiu until now, only then was she aware that she couldn't see through him. He was as though a moon reflected on the water, covered and shrouded by illusions.

Shortly after...

Tang Xiu came out from the Thousands Revolution Array. His complexion was slightly paler, but there were no hints that he was getting distressed as all eyes fixated on him the moment he came out.

“Now, I'm qualified to be an Honorable Guest of the Everlasting Feast Hall, yes?”

Tang Xiu calmly asked when he came in front of Gu Xiaoxue.

Gu Xiaoxue subconsciously nodded. But she sobered up immediately and hastily asked, “Tang Xiu, your cultivation is obviously very low, but how could you break into the sixth layer? My Master is the one who deployed this Thousand Revolution Array decades ago. Although only a few people have challenged this array, but even the most powerful from all of them were only able to break through into the fifth layer... Never once had it happened that anyone was able to get into the sixth. How did you do it?”

Tang Xiu said, “No comment.”

“You...”

Gu Xiaoxue's heart was as though a cat being caught, struggling and unable to calm down. But, she was helpless even though she was angry at getting such an apathetic attitude from Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu no longer looked at her and turned toward Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang, and said lightly, “I will give you the prescription later. But do remember your commitment.”

Having said that, he glanced at the surprised Jia Ruidao and his apprentices, and walked toward the elegant classic attic in the woods. Although he was afraid to confirm the possibility that Gu Xiaoxue's Master could be his disciple, but he was absolutely sure that they should have a close relationship.

When he first heard his favorite disciple, he was ecstatic. But after having gone through to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array, his heart finally calmed down. Recalling that even his wife and trusted friend could betray him, then if...

Tang Xiu was afraid to delve down further. He couldn't withstand such a traumatic blow again, so he directly chose to give up about it.

The most crucial thing for him right now was to cultivate himself. Giving his all to go back to the Supreme stage of the Realm he once was. For that time, for all those people who had betrayed him, they must pay a hefty and painful price.

His heart was neither made of steel or stone. But he was also neither a pushover nor softhearted person to begin with. He would never provoke others, but if others provoked him, they must pay 10 times the price.

He prayed. He prayed to the whole heavens, to the Gods and Buddhas for them to protect and bless those who had betrayed and injured him. For them to remain safe and sound until the time came for him to personally visit them, and ask for payment of their overdue debts.

Chapter 88: One And His Enemies Are Bound To Meet

The Everlasting Feast Hall had a total of three floors with interesting and appealing antique interior decorations. The first floor was an open-style dining hall with 200 dining tables. The second floor was for 108 private dining boxes with a spacious and comfortable environment. And the third floor was for the Honorable Guests area. And the number of people who were eligible to enter this floor could be counted with one's hands.

The restaurant manager had already been notified about Tang Xiu's arrival and greeted warmly, "You're Mr. Tang, yes? I'm the manager of Everlasting Feast Hall, Chu Yanqing. Little Boss has already informed me that the Honorable Guest's lounge on the third floor has already been prepared. You and your friends can dine there right now. Your necessities are on us, free of charge."

"Please lead the way!" Tang Xiu calmly nodded.

Jia Ruidao was somewhat quite excited and followed Tang Xiu at his side. He then smiled and said, "Brother Tang, we've been sucked into a limelight just because we're with you. Do you know that countless dignitaries want to dine on the third floor and got stopped by the security guards? I have never thought that I could also dine in the Everlasting Feast Hall's Honorable Guest Lounge today."

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, "It's just a mundane life enjoyment. It has no significant meaning."

Jia Ruidao smiled wryly, “Each person has a different pursuit in life. For you, it’s only trivial and mundane, and such a person like you is very rare!”

Tang Xiu thought that Jia Ruidao’s words were quite reasonable. Everyone had their own pursuit. Some were after fame and mundane life enjoyment. Some others pursued spiritual balance and advancement. He himself also only pursued 2 points, wanting to be with his mother and make her happy, and cultivating himself.

The third floor had a total of 18 private halls, with each nearly 200 square meters big. Although the interior decoration was also filled with antiques, but it was luxuriously and exquisitely designed. Even though Tang Xiu wasn’t an antique expert, he could see that those objects inside were antiques.

“Ah, Along the River During the Qingming Festival painting?” The moment Jia Ruidao entered the private hall, he found the wall was filled with calligraphies and paintings. After having observed for awhile, he suddenly exclaimed.

The restaurant manager smiled, “Our boss once participated in an auction at the port area. So she bought this painting from there. I heard she had spent 9 digits to win the bid.”

Tang Xiu’s complexion moved and asked, “You have seen your boss? What I mean is, not your Little Boss.”

The restaurant manager nodded and said, “Of course! I have seen her when I got bankrupt due to my gambling addiction. I even listed the company and lost my CEO position. My family was broken, we couldn’t even have a decent full three meals a day that time. It could be said that life for me was falling into the abyss. Then, I met Boss. She paid my debt, taught me martial arts, and let me manage this Everlasting Feast Hall for her. Time does fly fast. It has been 20 years since I’ve been here.”

Tang Xiu asked, “What’s your Boss’s name? How old is she?”

The restaurant manager answered, “We cannot easily expose our boss’s name. But for her age... I have seen her 4 times in the last 10 years. When I first met her, she looked like she was in her 20s. And the last time I saw her in the last 10 years, she was still just like in her 20s. And this also made me feel strange. It is as though time doesn’t leave any traces on her at all.”

20-year-old appearance? Wasn’t it almost the same as Gu Xiaoxue?

Tang Xiu frowned. A little girl’s appearance emerged in his mind. The first time she left him, her appearance was in her 18s.

Tang Xiu suddenly said, “Please help me find a pen and paper.”

“Please wait a bit!”

Restaurant manager immediately informed Tang Xiu’s request to

another attendant through his walkie-talkie. He then put the menu in front of Tang Xiu and the others. When Tang Xiu and the others had finished ordering the food, he handed the pen and paper to Tang Xiu. Whilst waiting for the ordered dishes to come, Tang Xiu painted someone's face on the paper.

It was his first apprentice's appearance in the Immortal World that he was painting. He painted her in her 18s' appearance, the blooming flower-like age. Along with Tang Xiu's drawing, a vivid-lifelike girl portrait gradually presented itself. It was as though the painting was alive, and the girl was very beautiful, she would even be able to conquer people and country alike with her smiling appearance. The girl being portrayed on the paper was smiling, as though the painting was alive.

"What a beautiful painting!" Jia Ruidao and his apprentices said inside the hall, as well as the restaurant manager who was being attracted deeply by the girl painted by Tang Xiu. They were as though in a trance seeing such a country-toppler-gorgeous girl. It was as if she was standing and smiling in front of them.

"Take a look, did she look like this?" Tang Xiu turned and spoke to the restaurant manager, and asked in a deep tone.

The restaurant manager was abruptly awoken from his trance-like fascination. He reluctantly moved his eyes from the painting, shook his head and then replied, "What you painted is a fairy. Although our Boss is very beautiful, but she's completely different from your painting."

"Is it not her?" A trace of loss and a disappointed feeling arose

inside Tang Xiu's heart. But, a trace of relief also surfaced. He did indeed want to see his first apprentice that he had brought up and cared about, but he was afraid that she was also involved with those who had betrayed him.

“Forget it, then. Thanks, you can go back to your work!”

“Alright!”

The restaurant manager complied and then left the hall.

Delicious and exquisite delicacies, as well as exquisite wines were unceasingly sent to their dining table. 2 young pretty attendants didn't leave the hall as they served and filled wine cups for Tang Xiu, Jia Ruidao, and the others.

“The wine is decent enough!”

This was the first time Tang Xiu had drunk wine after he had come back to the modern times. He sipped the wine and carefully savored the taste, and nodded to praise it. He had drunk countless types of wine and was also a Master in wine brewing. The good wines from The Everlasting Feast Hall could be considered as having a good taste for him.

Decent enough? The wine was only decent enough?

Jia Ruidao who drained a cup of wine in a gulp was struck by something and suddenly froze when he heard Tang Xiu's

comment. He had lived for more than 60 years, and this was his first time tasting such delicious and exquisite wine. But why would Tang Xiu give such “decent” evaluation?

Tang Xiu’s comment also made Jia Ruidao’s three apprentices shake their heads. They also loved wine. But tasting this level of such exquisite wine was also a first. So they couldn’t help but ridicule Tang Xiu’s comment inside secretly.

“Brother Tang, I can vouch that this is not your ordinary wine. I dare say that we don’t have such a wine in the second-floor private box. Even though the wine served on the second floor are also good wines, but compared to this one, it’s just like comparing day and night.” Jia Ruidao retorted and laughed.

Tang Xiu gave a toast and said, “Let’s toast and drink some more.”

It was midnight sharp...

Tang Xiu, Jia Ruidao, and his apprentices drank and feasted to their fill. After that, they directly left the restaurant. Since they didn’t need to pay the bill, Jia Ruidao could save a lot of money. One must know that booking private boxes on the second floor would cost at least 100,000 yuan. And it was for the cheapest box and services. Such an exquisite sumptuous feast like they just had, in Jia Ruidao’s secret estimation, it would have cost them more than 1 million yuan had they must pay for it themselves.

Under the dim light of the night...

Five people were striding along the wood pathway. Cicadas and other small insects were lingering around the pathway's dim lights. When they were about to arrive at the parking lot, the pathway was blocked by people as a mocking laughter struck their ears.

“Aha. Isn't this Master Jia Ruidao? The loser during the day, actually still has the mood to have a feast in the Everlasting Hall? What a great way, to cast away sorrows with liquor, don't you think so?”

There were 12 people in front of them. The one who was speaking was one of the 3 young men in front. Tang Xiu didn't know him, but Jia Ruidao and his apprentices knew him. He was exactly their opponent, Chen Kai. He was a famous hedonist playboy from Jingmen Island.

Jia Ruidao stepped forward and coldly spoke, “Chen Kai, such a rude attitude is unnecessary. The humiliation you've given me, you will pay it back by hundreds of times.”

Chen Kai burst into laughter and loudly shouted, “What did you say? Have I misunderstood your spits? You thought you still have the chance to rise tomorrow, did you? Tomorrow, you will find out why these flowers are bleached with red! Hahaha...”

“You...” Jia Ruidao was furious.

“Chen Kai, is he that Jia Ruidao? The famous professional

gambler?” Another young man asked.

Chen Kai stared at Jia Ruidao with a provocative attitude. But he replied to that young man with a flattering expression, “Big Brother Chu, he’s indeed Jia Ruidao, the loser who even almost sold his pants after losing to us. Those 3 guys behind him are his apprentices. Ah right, the youngest one, is his son, this prodigy has messed up his own family.”

The young man observed Jia Ruidao, nodding his head and said, “Chen Kai, do remember to behave yourself, we might meet them later. In case they give in, this matter ends here. I like that fine piece of jade pendant and I don’t want any troubles after having it later.”

“Ah, alright then. Consider that I’ve given you that jade as a gift, Big Brother Chu.” Chen Kai replied with a happy expression.

Jia Ruidao was stunned. His vision shifted back and forth between Chen Kai and the youth as he then raged over and roared, “Fuck your fart, Chen Kai! That jade pendant is a memento from my wife! I’ve been preparing to get it back. If you dare to give it to others, don’t blame this old man for forcing you by any means necessary!”

Chen Kai mocked in disdain, “Buzz off! The things I have won are mine! It’s my own business to do everything I want with it. Why should I fucking listen to your fart? If you really have the balls and abilities, just bring it on! This young master will never cower.”

“Chen Kai!” The young man who had just spoken shouted in a low tone.

Chen Kai shrunk back and laughed dryly, “Big Brother Chu, this damn old fogey started it.”

Jia Ruidao’s eyes turned bloodshot, even blue veins sprouted on his head. It was as though he would eat and swallow him. He stared preying at Chen Kai and said, “The things I’ve lost, I will win them back tomorrow. I’ll have your life look better tomorrow.”

The youth named Chu only spoke lightly when he saw Jia Ruidao angry, “The things that I’ve obtained are also never lost from me. If you want that jade pendant back, you can look for me. Ah, I forgot to introduce myself. I’m Chu Yi from Beijing.”

Tang Xiu took a step, looked at Chu Yi and said, “You have just said before to behave properly in life in case we might meet again in the future. Since the jade pendant is a memento from his wife, you ought to give him the chance first. In case that he wins tomorrow, then give it back. But if he loses then we will never mention about this jade pendant matter anymore. And everything must be over after the gambling house ended tomorrow. How about it?”

Chu Yi squinted his eyes, looking at tang Xiu and asked with a faint smile, “Who are you?”

“Tang Xiu!”

Chapter 89: Everything Was The Same Just Like Before

Chu Yi's eyebrows wrinkled as he looked at Tang Xiu a few times. He shrugged his shoulders and said, "You're also called Tang Xiu? It seems that this name is very popular and a lot of people have this name. Fine then, looking at your name, I'll give him the chance. We'll see you again at Paradise Club tomorrow."

"I'll see you again later!" As to avoid being seen to be too excited by them, Jia Ruidao shouted loudly and didn't wait for Tang Xiu to speak.

Chu Yi lightly humphed and walked toward the Everlasting Feast Hall. Chen Kai followed him after he motioned to slash his own neck with his finger toward Jia Ruidao. Then, he left with a triumphant attitude.

10 minutes later...

Inside the private dining box on the second floor of Everlasting Feast Hall, the restaurant manager was smiling as he came inside, along with bottles of wines. He looked at several people before his vision fell onto Chen Kai. He smiled and said, "Young Master Chen, you've only visited our Everlasting Feast Hall a few times recently. Could it be it was because our hospitality and services didn't satisfy you?"

Chen Kerry waved and smiled, "There's no such thing. I was fishing recently. And I got a really big fish this time, so I haven't

the time to visit this place. But, since 2 honorable guests from Beijing came to visit, I brought them here. Big Brother Chu, Big Brother Bai, this is the restaurant manager. He's the one responsible for managing the restaurant during the week hours."

Chu Yi and Bai Tao glanced at each other. They were also smart people who had been swimming in the business world for several years. The experience had made them mature. They could immediately tell that this character Chen Kai personally introduced was not some run-of-the-mill character. Even if he was only a restaurant manager, but the man's identity was perhaps not as simple as he looked.

The both of them immediately nodded at the restaurant manager.

The restaurant manager said with a smile, "Ah, I bid our welcome to the two honored guests. We're really blessed with such happy events again and again today. But it's a pity that you've come too late and didn't see tonight's great show. I'm afraid that it would be very difficult for you to see it even 1 or 2 years later."

Chen Kai was confused, "What kind of major show was it?"

The restaurant manager answered, "Young Master Chen, since you're our regular patron, you should know about Everlasting Feast Hall's custom, yes? A few hours ago, there were 3 martial arts experts who challenged the Thousand Revolution Array. 2 of them successfully broke through into the third layer, and became our Honorable Guests and another one..."

He intentionally paused after having spoken up to there.

Chen Kai suddenly stood up as he asked with an astonished expression, “For real? Someone has broken through the array? And 2 of them? Holy Lord, that’s really amazing! Have those 2 Honorable Guest already left? I want to visit them personally!”

“They have left already!” Restaurant manager replied with a trace of regretting tone.

Chu Yi said, “Hey Chen Kai, don’t interrupt others’ speech, he hasn’t finished speaking.”

The restaurant manager’s eyes beamed and then said, “Ah, another expert who broke the Thousand Revolution Array is very young. But he was able to break through into the fifth layer successfully. After he successfully entered the sixth layer, only then did he come out. To this day, he is the Honorable Guest of our Everlasting Feast Hall who had broken into the highest layer. Even our Little Boss was also shocked.”

“What? The Little Boss also went to the scene?” Chen Kai had just barely sat down, but he jumped up again as though his ass was on fire.

“Yes!” The restaurant manager replied.

A deep loss and regret surfaced on Chen Kai’s face as he said,

“Haih, if I knew it earlier, I could have taken Big Brother Chu and Big Brother Bai to come here! Damn! It’s really regretful!”

Chu Yi glared at Chen Kai with an angry expression. He looked at the restaurant manager and then asked, “You said the other expert is a young man? What is his name?”

“Tang Xiu!” The restaurant manager answered with a smile.

“What?”

“What was he called?” Chu Yi and Bai Tao exclaimed involuntarily at the same time.

A confused expression was faintly revealed on the restaurant manager’s face as he said, “Yes, his name is Tang Xiu! I’m responsible for recording the register, so I know his name and his age.”

Chu Yi closed his eyes and opened it again a few seconds later. He quickly took his phone out and dialed a number.

“Who is it? Hey, it’s the dead at night and you’re calling me at this hour?” A complaining voice roared from the phone.

Chu Yi said, “Yo, the Famous Young Master Long. It’s me, Chu Yi. Don’t go to sleep first. I wanna ask you something.”

“What’s up?”

Chu Yi asked, “The idol you are worshipping who called you a friend, Tang Xiu, where’s he now?”

“Tang Xiu? Ah, he seems to have gone to Jingmen Island. My little brother told me this evening at dinner, so I know about it! Why are you asking about Tang Xiu at this time?”

A wry smile surfaced on Chu Yi’s face. He then glanced at the dull-gasping look on Bai Tao’s face and spoke with a quite distressed tone, “If my guess is true, I’ve bumped into Tang Xiu tonight and have had a little conflict with him.”

“Hey! What had happened?” Long Zhengyu’s soul was as though being shocked and quickly asked.

Then, Chu Yi told the whole things before he finally spoke with a helpless tone, “Young Master Long, you know what? That idol of yours seems like to have rocked and done amazing things on Jingmen Island.”

Long Zhengyu said, “From your words, then it should be Tang Xiu. Tang Xiu indeed knows Jia Ruidao. Do you remember that Tang Xiu has helped me once? He was the one who beat Jia Ruidao in the gambling bout. It’s just that, I didn’t expect they would have any contact with each other. Fine then, I’ll call Tang Xiu and tell him about you. But, about that jade pendant...”

Chu Yi interrupted him decisively, “I’ll give it to him.”

Long Zhengyu quickly said, “Don’t! Tang Xiu might look like he’s a docile and friendly person. But he’s absolutely a proud person to the bone. If you give him the jade just like that, you will only ignite his antipathy. I’d advise you not to lose intentionally on the table. He’s extremely smart and he should be able to see it. Once he knows about it, he will think that his win was only a cheap scam and his impression about you will only get worse.”

“This...” Suddenly, Chu Yi couldn’t help but feel that the jade pendant he just got had become a hot potato. He angrily stared at Chen Kai and spoke in a helpless tone, “Fine, then! I know what to do. And thanks, I’ll hang up the phone.”

Chu Yi ended the call and sent away the restaurant manager. He looked at Bai Tao and said, “We’ve just bumped into the wrong person tonight. He’s really him.”

With a complex expression, Bai Tao smiled wryly and said, “This Tang Xiu guy really makes a big storm wherever he goes. What should we do now?”

Chu Yi said, “Just let everything happen naturally tomorrow. Regardless of winning or losing, we should approach him and show him our goodwill.”

“OK!” Bai Tao nodded. Although he had yet to confirm that Tang Xiu had successfully invited Kang Xia, but nevertheless, it was best to be just like a devoted monk who was devoted in his prays even

though he had never seen Buddha to better avoid troubles later. Besides, Tang Xiu had a good relationship with Long Zhengyu, and they were Long Zhengyu's friends. It wasn't worth it to have a falling out and break a friendship only for a piece of jade.

Chen Kai was dumbfounded as he looked at Chu Yi and Bai Tao. He had never dreamed that these 2 people would know Jia Ruidao's friend. The most apprehensive thing was, they unexpectedly wanted to show their goodwill to him. Suddenly, he felt as though his efforts to flatter these two turned out to be putting himself under the horseshoe.

“Big Brother Chu, should I give back all the money I have won and the jade pendant to them?” Although he was anxious and pained, Chen Kai probed.

Chu Yi shook his head and said, “Don't. Just carry on the gambling house as usual tomorrow. Do remember, Do not let that that Ye Taifu know about the matter tonight and let him turn on the water.”

“This.....” Chen Kai was laughing inside even though he showed a hesitating expression on the surface.

“Just do as I say.” Chu Yi spoke with a decisive and firm tone.

At the Jarvis Hotel's presidential suite, Tang Xiu was focusing on practicing the gambling technique skill taught by Jia Ruidao. In the short 3-4 hours, he repeatedly practiced, and with his amazing strength control, he had mastered the ever gambling technique

taught to him.

“This isn’t even a challenge at all!” Tang Xiu attempted to steal cards from the card pile easily. His hand’s speed was extremely fast with an accurate strength control. Even if he gambled with others and in the casino, nobody would be able to know his actions.

He suddenly recalled the day when he had his spatial ring. If he had a spatial ring he could have easily put any gambling tools in it. If he had one, even if he were cheating, nobody would be able to find any clues.

The next day...

Tang Xiu woke up late. But since the gambling house was scheduled at 2 PM, he intentionally woke up at 10 AM. His mood and spirit had been restored. After having a bath, he called Jia Ruidao and had a meal with the five of them. After which, they drove to Jingmen Island’s Paradise Club.

During the last few days, a lot of people on Jingmen Island who got addicted to gambling had heard about the gambling house in Paradise Club. Yesterday, after Jia Ruidao was stopped midway and left the gambling house, it created an uproar, and a lot of people concluded that the final bout would be held today.

With such rumors, when Tang Xiu, Jia Ruidao, and his apprentices rushed toward Paradise Club, a lot of guests had come to the Paradise Club. A lot of people looked at each other in such a crowded situation.

“This must be because of that bastard Chen Kai. That damn bastard intentionally spread the news and wanted to disgrace us.” Jia Yelei was not an open minded person. Seeing such a scene, it drove him to suspect the worst to the bad side. He gnashed his teeth and spoke those words.

“Shut up!” Although Jia Ruidao was also suspecting such a thing inside his mind, but with Tang Xiu’s presence, he didn’t want Tang Xiu to think that the father and son were narrow-minded people and only dared to foul-mouthing others behind their back. Through their interaction these days, he was perfectly aware of Tang Xiu’s personality and conducts. If their conducts were bad, Tang Xiu would be disappointed and displeased.

The guests that had come and surrounded the venue also had found and seen Jia Ruidao and his apprentices at that moment. Each one of them stopped as they pointed at them and whispered at each other.

“Do you see that? That’s Jia Ruidao. Those three beside him are his apprentices. To the right is his son who has incited the troubles, the black sheep prodigal son of the family.”

“What an unlucky old man Jia Ruidao is. This time his hard bones are being gnawed at. Damn, I hope his teeth are still intact after he gets the shocks! But, who’s that other youngster? I have never seen him before!”

“The father has fought to build the empire, only to see his empire

destroyed by his own son. Such a son Jia Ruidao has, is really like a blood sucker of the family. If I were to have such prodigal son that will destroy the family, I would have strangled him to death early.”

“It’s really miserable and pitiful! Some people have estimated that in just a short time, Jia Ruidao and his people have lost at least 500 to 600 million. It is said that he even had lost a jade pendant. The only memento his wife had left.”

“Winning and losing. All professional gamblers will sooner or later be drowned and lost inside the game.”

“ ... ”

Chapter 90: Who's The Sacred Being?

Even though the guests' voices in the surrounding were not loud, but Jia Ruidao and his three apprentices could still hear them clearly. The same expression could be seen on their faces. Especially for Jia Yelei, his handsome-graceful face had turned scarlet with anger.

Tang Xiu walked toward Jia Yelei's side and lightly spoke, "If you cannot even endure such a shame and humiliation, you won't walk too far in your life. We might as well directly admit our loss and forfeit the gambling house today."

"..."

The anger that burning inside Jia Yelei was as though being put out by icy water and thoroughly extinguished. The hope he had right now was for Tang Xiu to take back everything and avenge their resentments. If Tang Xiu forfeited the gambling house today, then they would have bit the bullet and lost all their hopes.

"Master Tang, please be at ease. I'll do what you say." Jia Yelei replied and bowed.

Tang Xiu nodded. Then, he stepped onto the Jacobs ladder of the anchored luxury passenger cruiser.

The passenger cruiser was 135.06 meters in length, 16.5 meters in width, 24320 tons of Gross Register Tonnage with 10.3 meters topsides in height from the water lines to the main deck. The ship

was able to carry 2000 passengers and crew. It had a 4 layer deck, with the lowest one being the engine and power room. The second deck was the main deck for passenger rooms, the third deck was for entertainment and recreation area such as the dining room, ballroom, karaoke, gyms and other pleasures and entertainments. And the casino was exactly located on the top deck.

Jia Ruidao was already familiar with the layout, as the five of them then entered each passenger room on the second deck. They quietly waited for the passenger cruiser to sail to the ocean. Gambling was illegal by law, so the cruiser would sail to the international waters whenever gambling houses were held.

“The power of science and technology truly cannot be underestimated!”

After Tang Xiu was bored for staying alone in the room, he then went outside to the deck. The passenger cruiser had already set sail, but it was moving slowly as it braved the waves and winds. There was only the vast boundless sea in the surroundings along the sails. A lot of tourists had already come out to enjoy the ocean scenery, causing the atmosphere to turn noisy. Tang Xiu, who wanted a tranquil scenery, frowned. He looked around before his eyes fell and stopped at the glass window at the fourth deck.

At the fourth deck...

Tang Xiu entered the scenic view room and sat near the window. There were only a few people here. Only 2 or 3 people sat there as they talked in low whispers.

“Huh?”

A few minutes later, a successful-looking middle-aged man surrounded by a group of men came, making loud noises. The middle-aged man approached and came in front of Tang Xiu.

“Hello, Mr. Tang.”

The first time he saw Tang Xiu, Miao Wentang originally wanted to quickly leave, because seeing Tang Xiu reminded him of the shameful event where he shamed himself last night. However, he had no choice but to acknowledge that Tang Xiu was really powerful. After contemplating and criticizing himself for a night, he admitted that he was in the wrong. He was the one who spoke improperly, and finally said and did something wrong. After he admitted it, a feeling of admiration toward Tang Xiu was spontaneously birthed inside his heart.

“Ah, it’s you?” Tang Xiu’s brows wrinkled. A bit of a cold and detached expression surfaced on his face.

Miao Wentang keenly sensed Tang Xiu’s attitude as an awkward and embarrassed feeling suddenly rose in his heart. He thickened his face since he wanted to mend his relationship with Tang Xiu and also wanted to know more about him. Then, he immediately said, “Mr. Tang, I didn’t sleep last night and did some self-review and contemplation. I want to apologize to you for my words and attitude last night. So, I sincerely ask if you can forgive me.”

Tang Xiu sat tight and firmly as though a mountain. He indifferently said, “Your attitude is commendable.”

Miao Wentang quickly said, “It’s my fault, so naturally I have to correct it myself. Master Tang, I want to make up for yesterday’s fault. I hope you could give me face today and let me invite you to the Paradise Club. So I can officially apologize to you.”

“No need!” Tang Xiu directly refused.

A few middle-aged men around Miao Wentang were all elite businessmen. For people like them, their status and identity were a taken for granted capital, and it was only natural that others should respect them. And Tang Xiu’s attitude stroke at their bottom line, because Miao Wentang was their honorable guest. But, Tang Xiu didn’t even give the face and brazenly reject Miao Wentang. This meant that he was also humiliating them.

“Big Brother Miao, this person is?” A middle-aged man couldn’t accept Tang Xiu’s manner, so he openly asked.

Miao Wentang was still looking at Tang Xiu with an awkward and embarrassed expression, but the sudden question from the middle-aged man abruptly pulled him away from the awkward situation. Even though he was barely able to break away from that embarrassed situation, but he was a veteran businessman who had been through a lot and met countless people. He was smart enough to tell that Tang Xiu didn’t like to be disturbed. So he answered with a simple introduction, “This is Mr. Tang.”

Immediately, Miao Wentang took business card holder from his pocket and put his business card on the table in front of Tang Xiu and said, “Mr. Tang, this is my business card. If you have the time, you can call me anytime. I owe you an apologizing feast.”

After having said that, he did not even ask Tang Xiu’s business card. He turned around and nodded to the people around him and then strode toward another scenic room. A few of his businessmen colleagues around him looked at each other, as their hearts were struck with riddle and mystery.

Who was he? Was he a sacred being?

Miao Wentang was the president of the Qingzhou’s Miao Group, a very famous and powerful figure in the entire Qingzhou. Furthermore, he was also rumored to be a very formidable martial artist, and his security service company was listed in the top 10 in the whole country. But, how would such a powerful figure become so timid in front of a young man?

These several Jingmen Island’s business elites exchanged looks between each other. Then, they pulled out their business cards and placed them on the table in front of Tang Xiu. They introduced themselves in the simplest words and then quickly followed Miao Wentang to leave.

“These people are such a boring bunch!” Tang Xiu muttered in his heart. He grabbed and saw a few business cards but didn’t put them in his pocket. Dealing with others was not his forte since he was not good at interpersonal relationships. Even when he was in the Immortal World, he...

Recalling past events made Tang Xiu's mood sank. Because of Jia Ruidao's issue, he wasted a few days, so he firmly decided that, regardless of the outcome of winning or losing, he must put this matter to an end thoroughly today. After that, he must find a large number of rare and precious medicinal herbs, ores, and ingredients to aid his cultivation.

At the other scenic view room...

A middle-aged man turned his head and glanced at Tang Xiu. Then, he looked at Miao Wentang and whispered, "Big Brother Miao, that surnamed Tang kid, what is his origin? And where does he come from? Such a brat like him doesn't even want to give you face?"

"That's right! What kind of sacred being could he be? He's way too rampant and arrogant." Another middle-aged added with a bit of disgusted tone, but still, he was talking with a very low voice.

Miao Wentang smile let out a forced and wry smile and said, "You should have heard about the event at Everlasting Feast Hall last night, yes? Shao Mingzhen and I have successfully broken into the third layer of the Thousands Revolution Array. And we become the Everlasting Feast Hall's Honorable Guests. But he... he amazingly broke into the sixth layer."

"What?"

"How could it be possible?"

“Heavens!”

Flabbergasted expressions were suddenly revealed on those Jingmen Island’s business elites’ complexion as they immediately exclaimed out loud in shock.

Miao Wentang wryly smiled, “Those shocked expression of yours also happened to me. I thought it was impossible. But the fact was there, and I witnessed it personally, so how would I make a mistake about it? The reason I apologize to him was because I mocked and ridiculed him before he challenged the Thousands Revolution Array, and I disgraced my own face.”

A middle-aged whispered, “Big Brother Miao, but he’s way too young! I could tell he’s even under 20 years-old. How could he be that powerful?”

Miao Wentang smiled, “You can ask me, but to whom should I ask? In short, with such a talent and intelligence, we’d better off not provoking this unfathomable youth. In this world, having a lot of friends are way much better than having a lot of enemies.”

“Yes Yes Yes!” Those people nodded and complied repeatedly.

Noon, 1:50 PM...

Tang Xiu came over to the casino on the fourth deck. A lot of people were coming to the casino at this moment. The casino was

filled with all kinds of gambling machines, stuff, and tools, as they were surrounded with gamblers who wanted to try their skills. Paradise Club provided the gambling venue but didn't involve themselves in the gambling bouts. However, for each gambling game being held here, they got 1% shares for the total amount of money being staked on the table. But, even though it was only 1%, considering the number of days and people who gambled, the profit was quite big.

“Master Tang, the gambling house will be held in a VIP private room. My Master has already been waiting for you in the VIP room.” Gong Dalong was waiting in the Casino Hall as he immediately approached and respectfully greeted Tang Xiu the moment he saw him.

“It seems that only a few minutes are left before the gambling bout is held. Lead the way and let's finish the game. Besides, I still have other things to take care of..” Tang Xiu nodded and said.

“Alright!” Gong Dalong respectfully complied.

The VIP private room was a few hundred square meters in size, with all kinds of gambling tools already prepared. Apart from Jia Ruidao and his apprentices, and Chen Kai with his highly paid professional gambler, Ye Taifu, there were hundreds of people who came to watch. The people who were eligible to enter this VIP private gambling room were of extraordinary statuses. They must at least obtain a recommendation from others before they were permitted to enter. Aside from Miao Wentang, amongst the spectators, there were also several business circle elites from Jingmen Island.

Miao Wentang also saw Tang Xiu's arrival. But a blank expression suddenly revealed on his face since Tang Xiu seemed to know the side who would gamble. A few other people were also looking at each other with puzzlement.

Even though there were many people in the VIP private room, but it was orderly with more than 20 black-suited security guards in the room to ensure that there would be no disturbance in the course of the gambling house.

“Ah, you finally came, Brother Tang! The game is about to begin!” Jia Ruidao and the others who had already burned with anxiousness and impatience, quickly greeted him.

Tang Xiu said, “Relax, I know my discretion.”

He looked at Chen Kai at the opposite side of the table and could see the erratic expression from his eyes. On the contrary, the bald middle-aged man at his side seemed very eager and rubbed his hands. Tang Xiu stepped forward. Under the gaze from all spectators, he looked at the middle-age man and spoke with a deep tone, “You're Ye Taifu? A professional gambler from Macao, called the Golden Finger, yes?”

The middle-aged man raised his chin and looked at Tang Xiu contemptuously and said, “That's me, yes. And who are you? Jia Ruidao has lost the gamble and then he doesn't dare to play. So now, you're going to gamble in his stead?!”

Tang Xiu pulled out a chair and sat on the opposite side of Ye Taifu. He indifferently said, “Yes. Today I’m the one who’ll be playing with you. But, I’m afraid that people are afraid of trouble and don’t like complex gambles, how is it?”

Yutai Fu asked, “How simple?”

Tang Xiu said, “How about we play Tie Golden Flower and compare the number?”

Tie Golden Flower and compare the number?

Ye Taifu sized up Tang Xiu with a strange expression. He chuckled and then smiled, “Are you sure you want to gamble by comparing cards? But I’ll have to tell you beforehand, I don’t want to have a small gambling stake... how about 1 million in deposit as the lowest stake? Do you dare?”

“Why should I be afraid? Deal!” A cold beam flashed inside Tang Xiu’s eyes as he happily replied.

Chapter 91: First Win

Upon hearing it, Jia Ruidao, who stood beside Tang Xiu, immediately reminded, “Brother Tang, my jade pendant...”

Tang Xiu glanced at him and lightly said, “Be patient. Since he has given the word and chance, I believe that they won’t take it back.”

“Alright!”

Even though Jia Ruidao was quite reluctant, he didn’t dare to refute Tang Xiu.

A strange expression emerged on Miao Wentang’s complexion. He was also amongst the spectators and was quite surprised since he had never thought that Tang Xiu would be with one of the gambling parties. He knew that Tang Xiu was a cultivator and even an Array Master. But, never once did he expect that Tang Xiu was also a gambler.

In fact, he was only being pulled by these few Jingmen Island business elites and was quite reluctant to be here. But now, his interest had been sparked.

He knew that Tang Xiu had a heaven-defying ability in breaking through the formation array, and now he really wanted to see, how powerful could he be in gambling?

At this time...

Ouyang Lulu, with a middle-aged woman wearing her white gloves, appeared in the VIP private room's door followed by Chu Yi and Bai Tao.

“Ladies and Gentlemen, welcome to my Paradise Club. As the name implies, this is a paradise for all of our guests. I’m sincerely hoping that all of you can play to your hearts’ contents in this place. I’ll introduce myself. I’m Ouyang Lulu, the owner of this Paradise Club. And I must inform you that this one is the most outstanding gambling dealer in our Paradise Club’s casino. I can absolutely guarantee that she will preside over the gambling house fair and square for all of you.” Ouyang Lulu spoke whilst looking at Tang Xiu and Ye Taifu a few times with a smile.

“Clap, clap, clap...”

A warm applause echoed in the VIP private room. The effect and influence of a beauty had always been great, and if a beauty was added with an honorable status, the effect and influence would be even better. And Ouyang Lulu had everything, the perfect body and looks, everything was a world-class beauty. Only a few words from her and the entire hall was filled with applause.

A graceful female dealer came to the gambling table and then spoke with a smile, “Have the two of you picked the game you want to play?”

Ye Taifu replied, “Tie Golden Flower.”

The dealer's expression suddenly froze for a second before her lips let out a smiling expression. She was the best dealer in the Paradise Club and was experienced in presiding over important gambling games. But only a few people would play Tie Golden Flower in such a big gambling house. Moreover, there were only 2 players right now. She looked at Tang Xiu and asked with a smile, "Have you set the rules? How much deposit have you decided on? Stake increment for the stake increase? And how much for the upper limit?"

Ye Taifu stood up with both of his arms on the gambling table. He chuckled and smiled, "Hehe, this Little Brother is pretty much haughty I guess, so I suggest 1 million deposit with the stake increment not lower than 1 million. Lastly, no upper limit."

The dealer looked at Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu replied indifferently, "It's fine with me."

"Since the two of you have already decided, then, we'll respect and stick to these rules. Now, please show me your chips."

Jia Ruidao quickly took the chips from his son at the side and placed them in front of Tang Xiu. He then spoke with a wry smile, "Brother Tang, because I've lost the game before, the remaining of the borrowed money is only 56 million. Take a look..."

"It's sufficient!" Tang Xiu replied lightly.

Upon hearing Jia Ruidao's words, Ye Taifu, who sat a few meters away at the opposite side of the table suddenly laughed and spoke loudly, "I thought today's gambling would be great. But you only have 56 million? Bah, it's so damn boring! Hey Jia Ruidao, you're more or less also a famous professional gambler. Why don't you borrow again from others? Or, are you unable to borrow again? Hahaha..."

Many people amongst the spectators had seen the gambling bout between Ye Taifu and Jia Ruidao, so they knew that Jia Ruidao had lost quite a fortune. However, the winner had always been hailed as the king and the loser would be regarded as the bandit, and people who lost money would never get the praises. In an instant, a conversation suddenly sprung:

"Huh, Jia Ruidao looks strong at the surface and weak inside, eh? How much has he lost? Only a few hundred million and he couldn't borrow money anymore? Is he unreliable? Or has he no good friends?"

"He really gets what he deserves, only having such trivial capital but daring to continue gambling with others. He really doesn't know when to stop. A few days ago, I saw him lose and go broke completely, even staking the only memento from his wife. He even lost that exquisite jade pendant."

"I thought I could see a thrilling and matchless gambling bout today, but I never thought that Jia Ruidao was already broke to this degree. 56 million? Today's game will be over faster than before."

“Damn! With such a capital and he let that youth play. Isn’t this the same as giving money to the other player? Even if I’ve seen such stupid act, I’ve never seen such stupidity to this degree!”

“Bah, I regret coming here!”

“... ”

Jia Ruidao was a professional gambler and had excellent gambling techniques. His hearing ability was naturally very keen. He could clearly hear those remarks from the spectators. For a moment, he felt so ashamed that even his old face turned scarlet as his eyes was full of a dejected expression. Even his three apprentices’ eyes were blazing with anger as they glared at Ye Taifu as though they wanted to break his tendon, skin him alive, and put him under the scorching sun.

Tang Xiu looked at Ye Taifu with an indifferent expression and secretly sneered inside. One who stood at a high place might look high and remote, but once he fell, he would fall very hard. If only one were to lose in the gamble, then it was still fine. But if one only wanted to win a trivial fight and make light of the battle, even the slightest carelessness would cause him to lose everything. Perhaps when that time come, his arrogance would make him regret it to the core.

“No need for meaningless talk, let’s begin!”

Ye Taifu arrogantly looked at Tang Xiu with provocation in his

eyes before he sat back in his chair. He then spoke with a cold tone, “Begin!”

“Ding...”

The dealers nodded and sounded the bell. Immediately, the entire VIP room turned quiet.

She took 8 playing cards from the attendant, putting them on the table and took out a new playing card. After a dazzling showcase of card shuffling, she said, “Both sides please examine the cards.”

“No need!”

Ye Taifu trusted Paradise Club casino’s fairness and directly refused.

Tang Xiu also shook his head. He was not afraid of any plays Ye Taifu had. Besides, if Ye Taifu really wanted to showcase his tricks, even if he examined the cards, he wouldn’t find anything fishy.

The dealer nodded slightly. She cut the end of the cards and sent three cards to each player and then put the rest of the cards on the table in front of her.

Tang Xiu picked his card and looked at it calmly before he revealed a faint smile. He had observed the dealer when she shuffled the cards. Others might be unable to follow the series of dazzling movements, but he used his Spiritual Sense and could see

it clearly. He even knew the number and pattern of each card in that playing card stack.

“A pair of 2, and 5 of Hearts.”

Tang Xiu looked at his cards whilst observing Ye Taifu with his Spiritual Sense. He was satisfied since his card was bigger than his. Ye Taifu only had an Ace of Spades, 5 of Hearts, and 3 of Hearts.

“1 million!”

A trace of a smile was revealed on Ye Taifu’s face. He grabbed the chips in front of him and pushed them to the deposit spot in the middle of the table.

Tang Xiu pretended to hesitate. Then, he also grabbed the chips in front and followed. However, Ye Taifu who was observing, keenly caught Tang Xiu’s split second expression. He grabbed the chips again and threw them out and said, “2 million.”

Tang Xiu also directly threw 2 million in chips and said, “I’m in!”

Ye Tau sneered inside. He looked deeply at Tang Xiu’s eyes and threw 2 million in chips again, “Continue.”

From his card, Ye Taifu was clearly aware that he only got small cards. But he didn’t want to be the first one to pass. Especially since he was also keenly aware of that split second expression Tang Xiu had, so he guessed that Tang Xiu’s cards were definitely small.

Besides, this session was only an appetizer. Even if he really lost, it was only a few. Chen Kai had promised him that he would have 500 million for the gambling stake today.

“I am in!” Tang Xiu said again.

Ye Taifu sneered as he directly pushed a pile of 10 thousand chips to intimidate Tang Xiu, and then spoke in a deep tone, “10 million.”

This time, Tang Xiu really was startled. He didn’t understand where Ye Taifu had that self-confidence to bet 10 million all of a sudden. Added with the previous stakes that he had bet on the table, he had taken 14 million. However, regardless of any intentions he had, his cards were bigger than his, so he didn’t cower because of this.

“20 million.” Tang Xiu pushed his chips and calmly spoke.

Ye Taifu’s eyebrows slanted. He looked at Tang Xiu’s expression. He thought that Tang Xiu was pretending to look calm, and only intimidating him to deter his moves. Once again, he pushed 20 million chips and lightly said, “It’s just only an appetizer. We don’t need to play that big. Fine, I’ll give you 20 million and open your cards.”

“Are you sure?” Tang Xiu asked calmly.

Ye Taifu sneered, “Definitely! Why don’t you open your cards?”

Tang Xiu didn't speak but directly opened his cards.

In just a split second, Ye Taifu's complexion burned scarlet as an unwilling expression could be seen from his eyes. He could see that he really guessed correctly that Tang Xiu's cards number were small, but they were still bigger and enough to beat his cards. However, as to not let Tang Xiu gain momentum, he pretended to throw the cards in his hands and lightly spoke, "As an expert, I'll give you a leeway to win the first of the three games since you're still a youngster, so you can taste the feeling to be a winner. After that... you should mentally prepare yourself!"

Tang Xiu looked at the stack of chips in the middle of the table. Apart from the 1 million chips deposit, the rest were pushed toward him. A smile surfaced on his face as he nodded and smiled, "Ah, thanks a lot, for letting me win. I'll wait and see for the latter."

The first win! He won a total of 34 million.

He couldn't help sighing after seeing this kind of situation. Winning at gambling sure was easy. It was no wonder that so many people loved to gamble! Besides, getting rich overnight was everyone's dream, nobody would refuse it.

A trace of joy appeared on Jia Ruidao's face, who was standing beside Tang Xiu. It was a grand start for Tang Xiu; a good luck and fortune. His three apprentices were also smiling as a feeling of joy filled them to the fullest in seeing the Tang Xiu win the first game.

A look of astonishment, as well as a flabbergasted expression, was worn by all spectators' who watch the battle. Never even once had they ever thought that an unknown youngster would be able to win again the famous Ye Taifu. Even though Ye Taifu said that he gave a leeway to Tang Xiu, but still, everyone could see that it was not his true intentions.

Chapter 92: Four Consecutive Wins

The second game...

The dealer shuffled the cards. After she finished, she looked at Tang Xiu and said, “Since Mr. Tang won the first game, you have the first right to speak.”

Tang Xiu didn’t open his three cards this time. It was because he used his Spiritual Sense to read the cards. He was also able to see Ye Taifu’s cards. This ultra-mysterious-cheating-technique was an absolute Divine Tool for cheating.

“10 million.”

Tang Xiu opened 10 million chips for the stake and spoke without batting an eye.

Seeing that Tang Xiu didn’t even open his cards, Ye Taifu didn’t want to fall under the wind in imposing manner. He also didn’t open his cards and followed 10 million directly, “I’m in!”

“20 million!”

Tang Xiu pushed the chips again without even a blink.

Ye Taifu frowned before he pushed 20 million once again and said, “I’ll follow.”

“50 million!”

Tang Xiu spoke with a calm expression.

“What?”

Ye Taifu stared blankly as disbelief filled his eyes. He had been diving in professional gambling for more than 20 years. And this was his first time coming across such a type of player like Tang Xiu. This was merely the second game and Tang Xiu didn't even look at his cards, and directly threw 80 million chips in.

One must know that the game they were playing was Tie Golden Flower. Tang Xiu had just won 34 million. Summing up with his starting capital, he only had a total of 90 million. In other words, in the case that Ye Taifu followed suit, his cards would be subjected to Tang Xiu's. And this also meant that it would become the last bet in the game.

Under his hesitation, his hand extended and traced his three cards—

7 of Hearts, 7 of Spades, 5 of Clubs...

His biggest cards were only 7 pairs?

Ye Taifu was silent for a moment. He pushed 100 million chips

and spoke in a deep tone, "I'm in. Open your card."

Tang Xiu smiled faintly and opened his cards— Jack of Hearts, Jack of Spades, and 3 of Diamonds. It was a Jack pair.

In a split moment, Ye Taifu's complexion turned ashen and pale. He had never dreamed that the second game would turn into this kind of situation. It was needless to say that he had lost the game, but he also had lost a total of 131 million. Added with the 34 million from the first game, plus from this short second game, he had lost 165 million.

Ye Taifu looked up and glanced at Chen Kai at the side, and saw his unsightly expression. A weak anxious feeling suddenly sprouted in his heart. However, he still believed that it was because Tang Xiu's luck was good. And he simply had yet to use his real gambling skills.

Streams of comments came from the spectators in the surroundings:

"Amazing! Wasn't it just a few minutes? That unknown youngster has won a total of 165 million. I daresay that this speed of making money is even faster than the fastest money printing machine in the entire world!"

"There has always been new genius coming out in each generation everywhere, and a talent that only appears in a decade. Ye Taifu's reputation as a professional gambler in the world has been spreading far and wide. But he unexpectedly lost twice to an

unknown youngster. It's indeed the young generation that will surpass the older ones in time!"

"Damn. No wonder so many people like gambling. Money is rolling in fast! Look at me, I couldn't help but want to play a few games!"

"I thought that the game today wasn't worth watching, but only now do I find that I was completely mistaken. I'm really hoping that young man will showcase his skills and create a miracle."

"Good luck? Could luck be this good?! Much less that young man's guts is truly amazing, he didn't even need to see his cards and threw 80 million in directly. Awesome..."

"At last, I finally experienced it today, that to become a big man, one must have a powerful spirit and soul."

"..."

Jia Ruidao, as well as his three apprentices at Tang Xiu's side, were wild with ecstasy. Even Miao Wentang in the crowd saw him with respect. For Chu Yi and Bai Tao, it was their interest that was sparked. The only one who only had the slightest interest amongst the crowd was perhaps only one person, the owner of this Paradise Club, Ouyang Lulu. She believed that the two wins Tang Xiu had were merely because of his good luck.

The third game...

The dealer shuffled the cards again. After having finished the dealing, she looked at Tang Xiu again, “Master Tang, it’s your call, please speak!”

With his Spiritual Sense, Tang Xiu had already observed the cards for the both of them vividly. His cards were— Jack of Spades, and 8 and 2 of Hearts. As for Ye Taifu, his three cards were— King of Hearts, and 9 and 5 of Clubs. His cards were much inferior to Ye Taifu’s.

“10 million!”

Tang Xiu directly opened with 10 million chips with a calm expression.

Ye Taifu at this time didn’t choose for the dark cards but directly picked up the cards. When he saw his cards, he secretly shook his head and sent a pass sign with his hand and said, “Pass.”

Tang Xiu smiled faintly as he watched the dealer pushed the chips at him and said, “You let me win thrice. I hope next time you don’t give me leeway anymore.”

Ye Taifu snorted coldly, “You can count it. I’ll make you leave weeping!”

Tang Xiu replied indifferently, “The game has yet to end. Tongues might be light, but no need to talk big.”

The fourth game...

The dealer shuffled the cards, dealing them and then said, “Mr. Tang, your call, please speak first.”

With his Spiritual Sense Tang Xiu had seen both of their cards. He immediately chuckled secretly inside and directly opened with 10 million chips again and said, “10 million.”

Ye Taifu was silent for a moment. He also chose a dark card and followed the 10 million stake.

Tang Xiu still didn't see his card and pushed 50 million chips.

For a moment, Ye Taifu stared blankly. A bad premonition suddenly sprouted in his heart. He firmly trusted his gambling skills. Even if the dealer's dealing gave him small cards, he also had the means to turn the tides. He directly pushed 50 million chips and lightly said, “I'll follow.”

Tang Xiu straightly pushed all the chips in front of him and spoke with a faint smile, “I have a total of 222 million chips. I'll stake all of them. If you can win this game, I'll leave immediately. If you lose, you can slap your own face with that arrogance of yours. Whichever it is, whether you want to follow or not, it's yours to decide.”

Ye Taifu's eyelids twitched violently. The bad premonition he

felt was getting more intense. Tang Xiu was going all out and pushed out all his chips. That meant that at this time he had staked 161 million. If he followed the stake right now, he must stake the same amount as Tang Xiu, which meant that he chose dark cards. But if he opened his cards, once he lost, he must pay double.

‘What to do now?’

‘Follow the stake?’

‘Or pass it?’

Ye Taifu thought for a moment. He finally decided to see the cards— Ace of Diamonds, 8 of Diamonds, 5 of Diamonds.

‘Golden Flower? But also a gold?’

A trace of a smiling expression surfaced on Yen Taifu’s curved lips. He directly took out 222 million from his inventory and lightly said, “I’m in. Open your cards.”

Tang Xiu laughed inside as his fingers flicked the second card out of his three cards and instantly shot the pile of cards in front of the dealer in a minuscule split second. That second card ejected another card and remained in the card pile, as the ejected card then hurled at him in an oblique angle.

With a lightning fast movement, he exchanged the card with another card.

Naked eyes were unable to see their trajectories. Even experts such as Ye Taifu and Jia Ruidao, as professional gamblers who practiced their visions and had keen eyes, they were unable to sense it in the slightest.

However, there was someone amongst the spectators who could see it. He was also a cultivator, Miao Wentang! Nobody knew what had really happened, but Miao Wentang showed a faint expression like a seemingly smile but not.

“Three Aces.” Tang Xiu opened his cards and spoke lightly.

With this, it was very clear that Ye Taifu had lost. Moreover, he lost with principal rules and had no chance to even use his cheating skills to exchange cards.

“IMPOSSIBLE!”

Upon seeing the opened cards Tang Xiu had, Ye Taifu suddenly jumped up from his chair. His eyes were staring as though saucers, as disbelief covered his eyes. He had calculated everything. He even had been preparing himself to use his cheating skill. But never in his dreams had he ever thought that Tang Xiu’s cards turned out to be Three Aces.

How would he change his own cards?

Replacing them by the smallest suit of cards of 2, 3, 5?

Apart from this suit of cards, no other suit could beat Tang Xiu's. However, he didn't have the preparation to exchange the card to the smallest suit of 2, 3, 5!

Tang Xiu looked at Ye Taifu's foolish expression that lost his calm and manners before he lightly said, "What? Maybe you still have a chance to win. Open your cards!"

Ye Taifu's complexion was as though dying embers. With a blank and dazed expression, he turned to Chen Kai and spoke with great difficulty, "I'm sorry, I lost. I'm powerless to reverse such cards."

Powerless to reverse the situation?

These words were as though a heavy hammer that severely smashed Chen Kai's mind. Ye Taifu had lost 333 million in this game only. In the last games he already lost 166 million. His total loss was 499 million.

He took out 500 million for this game. But in just a short 4 games, the only remaining money was 1 million. This was the appalling result that was unbearable for him.

The spectators in the surroundings were suddenly boiling and seething with excitement. Everyone's eyes were fixated on Tang Xiu with disbelief. Their hearts sped up crazily, even the exclamations were becoming more heated than the previous ones.

“What an amazing show! He walked on stage and got 4 consecutive wins, only leaving the opponent with 1 million?! This is it! This must involve a heaven-defying method! There’s only one word, awesome!!!”

“He’s the God of Gamblers!!! Ye Taifu is already amazingly powerful. But the moment this young man shot, Ye Taifu was crushed completely. It looks like tonight forwards, this young man called Tang Xiu will absolutely become very famous in the gambling world.”

“He’s simply a deity. Four games and nearly 500 million!!! This must be the craziest gambling house in the recent years, right?”

“This Tang Xiu is truly unfathomably deep. Ye Taifu has been shamed and disgraced today. Being so rampant and arrogant all the time and finally being made shamelessly. This really reminds me of the saying that the higher one stands, the harder he would fall!”

“It’s just like the waves in the sea. The last wave will push the old wave in front of it, and the old ones die after reaching the sand on the beach.” [1]

“ ... ”

Ye Taifu sat back in his chair with a blank and desolate expression as he painfully closed his eyes. He was once a winner who was admired by countless people. But today he had fallen to pieces from up high in the clouds.

He was finished, a complete game over!

He knew perfectly well that his reputation in the future would fall freely to the abyss. Even if he were to return to the casinos in Macao, the treatment he would get would fall to the extreme.

In the crowd, Chu Yi and Bai Tao looked at each other with bewildered expressions. They were quite sure that Ye Taifu absolutely didn't turn his back, because Chen Kai absolutely didn't have this kind of boldness to give Tang Xiu 500 million yuan.

However, how could Tang Xiu so easily win? He won four times consecutively in such a way.

And who was Ye Taifu? Even if they didn't like gambling, they knew the famous Ye Taifu!

Chapter 93: The Final Bout

Amongst the spectators, Chu Yi glanced over at Tang Xiu with a bit of admiration and whispered, “Long Zhengyu was right. Tang Xiu is really deep and unpredictable.”

Bai Tao nodded repeatedly and said, “True. Now I get the feeling that he will create storms wherever he goes. Either in Everlasting Feast Hall or here, it’s the same. It seems like we must find the chance to get to know him.”

After having silence for a moment, Chu Yi who was mature and had an excellent mental nature whispered, “I thought that if we take the initiative to do it, he would simply ignore us. If we want to get to know him, we need to find what he wants and likes first. Fine then! We shall investigate him and then see what he needs!”

“That’s a good idea!” Bai Tao agreed.

Ouyang Lulu who was in front of them looked at them with an astonished expression. She looked at the winning Tang Xiu and suddenly remembered something. She immediately turned around and asked Chu Yin and Bai Tao behind her, “Eh, I suddenly recalled something. Didn’t you tell me about a young man who was named Tang Xiu? His name and the gambler at this game are the same.”

Bai Tao smile, “It’s even far more than that. They are simply the same person.”

“Say what?”

Ouyang Lulu was stunned. She never once imagined that the Tang Xiu in front right now was the youngster who was praised by Bai Tao and Chu Yi. The youngster that was able to make the famous professional manager Kang Xia personally rush to Star City from Beijing, and the very same person Long Zhengyu admired.

But, who was he? How could he be this amazing?

Ouyang Lulu suddenly felt that the little handsome high schooler boy in front of her was shrouded with a mysterious aura. He was as though being shrouded by a thick layer of fog, and it was very hard to see him.

“Well? Do you still wanna play?”

Tang Xiu pushed all the chips in front of him to the dealer and immediately smiled at Yen Taifu and said,

“Let’s play!”

A vicious voice came over. It was not Ye Taifu’s but from Chen Kai who spoke with a furious expression.

Tang Xiu shrugged his shoulders and said, “But you have no

money. 1 million chips is only enough for the deposit. Do you really think you can play?”

Chen Kai took out a piece of jade carved with a coiling dragon and phoenix pattern and shouted with a cold expression, “Having no money doesn’t mean that we have no rights no continue the gamble. This piece of jade is Jia Ruidao’s. So the next gambling house shall determine, who’s the winner and loser. If you lose, all the chips in front of you are mine, but if you win, this jade pendant is yours.”

With his keen sense, Tang Xiu was aware that Jia Ruidao’s breathing turned faster the moment Chen Kai took the jade out as a wager, as hope could be seen from his eyes.

“What’s your decision?”

Tang Xiu looked at Jia Ruidao and asked.

A battle stormed within Jia Ruidao’s for quite a long while before he finally clenched his teeth and spoke with quite difficulty, “Do it.”

Tang Xiu nodded as he looked Chen Kai and said: “Then, I’ll accompany you to play again! However, whatever happens, whoever wins or loses, everything will end here, and there will be no debts and grudges between all of us!”

“Deal!”

Chen Kai happily complied since he knew the extraordinary background Tang Xiu had, much less he was also a cultivator. Even if Tang Xiu did not say it, he would not dare to easily offend him.

Tang Xiu glanced at the dealer as he nodded and asked, “What kind of play do you want to have our game on now?”

To recollect his state of mind and increase his confidence again, Ye Taifu spoke with a deep tone, “You are the winner of the previous games, so I’ll give you the rights to choose.”

Tang Xiu asked with a strange tone, “Are you really sure?”

Ye Taifu replied with a firm self-confident, “Yes.”

Tang Xiu shifted his sight toward the dealer and said lightly: “I’ll have to trouble you to prepare new playing cards.”

The dealer nodded and took out new playing cards. He handed it over to Tang Xiu and asked, “How do you want to play?”

Tang Xiu looked at Ye Taifu and said, “Gambling skills are nothing but having keen eyesight, hearing, and fast hands. We are the people that walk on the path of the God of Gamblers. Let us ask the dealer to throw this set of playing cards into the air and then we move at the same time, grab a card each and then compare our cards. The one who gets the biggest card is the winner, and the smallest one will be a loser. What say you?”

Yen Taifu was quite surprised. He had never once expected that Tang Xiu would choose an unconventional method, even choosing this kind of play. He was well known as a gambler with quick hands and eyes, that was needless to say since he had eyes with the sharpness and keenness of an eagle.

“I agree!”

Tang Xiu nodded and said: “Then, let us begin!”

The dealer looked at Tang Xiu and Yen Taifu Fu, and then said, “The two of you, please come along with me to the open area at the side. I’ll ask everyone to move three meters of distance from each line. Each one of you will stand on the line, and I will throw the playing cards upwards. Each one of you grab one card at the same time and the one who wins this game will be the one with the biggest card.”

“Fine!”

“Agreed!”

Tang Xiu and Yen Taifu nodded at the same time.

Chen Kai was still shrouded in his anger amongst the spectators. Upon hearing the game that would be played by Tang Xiu and Yen Taifu, he was somewhat anxious and agitated. He felt that something was not right and was unable to pinpoint the amiss. He

could not say anything for a moment and could only glare with an unsightly face toward Jia Ruidao, as he and his three apprentices wore happy expressions.

“Isn’t this like some kind of redemption?”

From another direction, Miao Wentang was at a loss whether he had to laugh or cry as he looked at Ye Taifu with an expression full of sympathy. Others might be unaware about Tang Xiu like he was. Such a person who was amazingly able to break through the sixth layers of the Thousand Revolution Array was definitely very strong. Regardless of eyesight or hand speed, his level was absolutely high.

A few minutes later.

The dealer stood in the middle between Tang Xiu and Ye Taifu. She looked at the two of them and then said, “Both of you, I’m ready to throw the playing cards and I hope the both of you are able to grab the key point for this game. Now, I’ll count in three in reverse. The moment I count to the last number, I’ll scatter the playing cards to the air.”

“3,2,1,0.”

The dealer threw her arm and tried her best to scatter all the cards in her hand over the top of her head.

“Humph.....”

Before the dealer scattered the cards, Tang Xiu's Spiritual Sense had already firmly locked onto the "King" card. After the cards had been scattered, he moved lightning fast and caught the "King" card even though the card had yet to reach its peak. Almost at the instant, the cards were thrown upwards, he had caught it and landed from his jump.

As for another side...

Ye Taifu's movement was slower by a few seconds than Tang Xiu's. His eyes spun faster, seeking to find the "King" card. When he saw Tang Xiu moved first, his complexion suddenly changed and made him hesitate. He did not see the "King" card but saw a "Jack". In that instant, his body jumped into the air and successfully caught the "Jack" card as he continued looking at the scattering cards everywhere.

10 seconds later.

The remaining cards had all dropped to the floor with some cards opened and some facing down.

The dealer walked back between the two of them. She smiled and said, "The two of you have already grabbed the cards you want. And now I hope that the two of you will show the cards you've taken."

Yen Taifu still did not find that "King" card, neither did he find it amongst the face-up cards on the floor. Anxiousness slightly

invaded his heart as he looked at the expressionless Tang Xiu. He secretly prayed inside and hoped that Tang Xiu did not grab the “King” card. Otherwise, he really would have a crushing defeat.

“Jack!”

“King!”

The both of them showed the cards in their hands at the same time.

In this split second, Ye Taifu’s heart as though had fallen into an ice cave, as his body turned stiff as a stone. His complexion no longer revealed an apprehensive and anxious expression, but a strong disbelief and... pain.

This was the final bout. The last lifeline for him to grasp onto. But now, only then did he realize that the last line of hope he longed for, turned out to be unable to help him, but viciously stamp him into pieces instead. Wasn’t this the same as though adding fuel to the fire? Wasn’t this successive misfortunes that were fallen one after another? This last game was precisely the perfect manifestation of these words.

“Whoosh...”

The atmosphere suddenly boiled as everyone’s complexion and eyes were burning hot. And the one that they were looking at was Tang Xiu, not Ye Taifu.

Eyesight and fast hands...

These were the most fundamental as well as the most important abilities gambling masters must have.

But at present, Tang Xiu had shown that he did not rely on chances or luck. But he relied on his ability to win this game. The fact made everyone who thought that Tang Xiu's previous wins were only completely on luck, completely changed at this moment. For masters to move, luck only accounted for a few points, with gambling skills playing the major role. The so called out of 10 games, would end up with 9 losses, was because the others gamble and bet on 8 cheatings.

With a sympathizing expression in her eyes, the dealer quickly looked at Ye Taifu and then spoke, "Mr. Tang has picked the King and Mr. Ye the Jack. So I announce that this game's winner is Mr. Tang."

"Puff....."

The anxiousness and extreme anger created a severe mental attack for Yen Taifu. Under such a huge psychological blow, a mouthful of blood sprayed out from his mouth as his eyes blackened and he fell backward with a stiff body.

"Fucking waste!"

Chen Kai's complexion was ashen and unsightly. He was like a wild dog, as he looked down at Ye Taifu. Not only did he not sympathize with him, but instead rushed over and kicked him ferociously a few times. For this gamble, he had lost both the money he won from Jia Ruidao and even lost his initial capital which drove him to be very angry.

“What the hell? This Chen Kai is so shameless? Only able to accept wins and cannot afford to lose? Even though Ye Taifu did lose very miserably today, but he has helped him win quite a fortune before. But now he treats others like this because he lost?”

“What a damn bastard behavior! The Chen Family is really thick-skinned. He really deserves to lose. Only using people who are only useful to him and throwing them out when they have no other uses anymore. What a shameless bastard! This really makes my blood boils.”

“That's it! I have decided to terminate every business relations with the Chen Family. Such kind of attitude and moral in all likelihood is no different from how the Chen Family will treat others. It's really a pity for Ye Taifu. A master gambler of this age could even fall to this kind of a miserable fate.

“Bah! How I really wanna fuck Chen Kai up! He nevertheless is still one of the honored and famous people of Jingmen Island, but to not have the slightest elegant demeanor at all is unexpected. I was really fooled by him.”

“This Chen Kai bastard has stained our Jingmen Island's face with filth!! If you lose then just lose, take the wins and lost with

equanimity. Is there any need to make such a despicable act? He's way too fucking outrageous!"

"He simply has no sense of shame!"

Chapter 94: Driven Out

Chu Yi and Bai Tao were looking at Chen Kai with a disgusted expression at the moment. They were secretly regretting the trip to this murky and muddy water of Jingmen Island, and then left quietly after the gambling house ended.

As for the Paradise Club's owner—Ouyang Lulu, she did not stay any longer and looked at Chen Kai with contemptuous looks before wandering for a moment and finally fixating her eyes on Tang Xiu. She looked deeply at him before she chased Chu Yi and Bai Tao. She wanted to hear more about Tang Xiu from them, as to why she could not see through Tang Xiu.

Crystal tears dripped down from Jia Ruidao's eyes who just received his wife's memento, the coiling dragon and phoenix carved jade pendant

Previously, he thought his life was over. Not only did he lose his fortune, but also had huge debts outside, he even lost the last memento from his wife. However, Tang Xiu's win gave him the feeling of going back to heaven from hell!

“Brother Tang... Thanks, thank you!”

Jia Ruidao's voice was somewhat masked with sobs, but a thick and deep sense of gratitude filled his every word.

Tang Xiu had neither been accustomed nor could he bear to have others be grateful to him. He also was not used to communicating

with others in this way. He apathetically shook his head and said, "Come on, let's us just go back to the hotel! Moreover, if possible, it's best for you to book a plane ticket and schedule it in advance for me to go back to Star City tonight or tomorrow's flight."

Jia Ruidao quickly said, "Brother Tang, Long'er said that he has helped you get your one week holiday. Only 2 days have passed, so you don't need to rush back that quick. Besides, we need to exchange the winning money and transfer them to your bank account. Another thing is, I must express my thanks and take you to wander around Jingmen Island and have your time well spent here. You might not know that Jingmen Island has a lot of good places to visit. And I promise that you'll like it."

"This..." Tang Xiu hesitated.

He hadn't the slightest interest in the fun places Jingmen Island might have. His biggest interest was that huge sum of money. From the previous agreement between him and Jia Ruidao, he would get half of that 500 million gambling money.

Upon seeing Tang Xiu's hesitation, Gong Dalong quickly said, "Master Tang, my Master's words are true. We need to exchange the chips into money and then transfer them into our bank account, that would take some time. I also know a private manor which not only has a beautiful scenery but also has precious wild carnivorous meat. I heard that a few days ago, the manor has hired more than 10 martial art experts to hunt down a Sea Spirit Flood Dragon on a nearby island. This private manor has been established for more a few years and this is the second time they have gotten a sea flood dragon. The first time they got one, I heard

from a lot of people who have eaten the sea flood dragon meat that the meat was very delicious!”

The Sea Spirit Flood Dragon would do!

Tang Xiu’s eyes brightened up as his heart thumped with excitement.

He was in dire need of various parts of fierce beasts for his cultivation such as skin, flesh and blood, bones, sharp claws and many other things. He needed all of these basic ingredients to refine the Body Refining Liquid, especially if he could come across a higher grade of fierce beast, he would be able to refine a higher grade of medication that would be most suitable for concocting the Golden Bell Liquid to aid his cultivation in Skin Strengthening Stage.

“What is that Villa?” Tang Xiu asked.

Gong Dalong replied with a smile, “Seaside Strait Manor.”

Tang Xiu asked again, “When can we go?”

Gong Dalong quickly said, “If you still have the time, we’ll wait for this ship to moor tomorrow and then we can immediately go there.”

Tang Xiu nodded and said, “Fine, I’ll stay in Jingmen Island for 2 more days! However, I need a good rest in the passenger cabin and

I don't want anyone to disturb me.”

With a respectful manner, Gong Dalong replied, “You can rest assured that we will never let anyone disturb you. But you'll need to tell us your bank account number, so we can transfer you the money after we exchange the chips.

“Alright!”

Tang Xiu sent his bank account number to Gong Dalong through his mobile device and then left the VIP private room under the gazes of a lot of people. However, he did not return to his room and instead came toward the guest area on the aft deck. Overlooking the distance of the rough sea with billowing high waves, while feeling the blowing breeze as he suddenly felt a sense of comfort spontaneously.

He had always been busy recently. So many things happened and he had to run around and was rarely idle whilst thinking about his next steps. Moreover, it was as though a pair of invisible hands were holding him and dragging him forward unceasingly. He did not like this kind of feeling of having no control over a lot of things.

“If I can return to the peak, I'll change this part of a heavenly law in this world!”

Beams of light brought along a coldness within flashed inside Tang Xiu's eyes as he felt some helplessness inside his heart.

“A lonesome and a very quiet place here.”

A clear pitched voice suddenly sounded behind Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu turned his head and found the Paradise Club's owner, Ouyang Lulu. Looking at her appearance, she seemed to be only a few years older than him with graceful and smiling looks. Tang Xiu replied with an indifferent expression, “This place is indeed very good.”

Ouyang Lulu observed Tang Xiu and said with a smile, “Congratulations for winning the gambling house.”

Tang Xiu shook his head and did not speak again.

He did not want to be disturbed by anyone at the moment, but Ouyang Lulu = now came here and it gave her some frustration. If it was not for Ouyang Lulu's identity, he could have immediately driven her away.

“Do you feel disturbed and not want me here?”

Ouyang Lulu had was a sensitive person and she was keenly aware of Tang Xiu's attitude and immediately asked.

Tang Xiu said indifferently, “I just wanna be alone and have some quiet time.”

Ouyang Lulu was quite annoyed and angry. She had come across countless men ever since her childhood and they fell for her, wave after wave. Even those who pretended to repel her, but actually wished to be the one who could be her man in their heart. However, what she felt from Tang Xiu was really repelling her, and that she was really unwanted here and it was kind of the same as having no interest in her.

“Hey, are you still a man?”

Under her anger, Ouyang Lulu boldly asked this question. However, the moment she finished speaking, only then did she realize that she had lost her manner and was secretly regretting it.

Tang Xiu looked at Ouyang Lulu with cold and detached eyes and he then said indifferently, “Whether I am a man or not, do you really want to try? I don’t mind to have a one night stand with you though.”

“You...”

Ouyang Lulu was furious as she looked at the detached and cold expression on Tang Xiu’s complexion. She almost lifted her feet to send out a fierce kick to Tang Xiu’s face. However, she knew about her fighting prowess as she then took a deep breath and turned away.

A few hours later.

After having returned to his room, an SMS came and 250 million had been transferred to his bank account

“Jia Ruidao and his three apprentices are really bound by their promises it seems.”

There was not the slightest ripples inside Tang Xiu’s heart because of this huge sum of money. Wealth was but only a tool to aid his cultivation. If it were not because he needed money to buy a lot of things for his cultivation, he would have ignored wealth and money, even if there was a mountain of gold and silver, it would never be able to make him care and glance over at it.

At Paradise Club, inside the General Manager’s Office...

Ouyang Lulu was sitting in the boss chair with a furious expression as shattered glasses could be seen under her feet because she smashed her teacup. Never once had she ever dream that Tang Xiu would blatantly disregard her. She was eager to get close and try to get to know him after having been trailing Tang Xiu from a surveillance video.

And he! He was even thinking of such a disgusting thing even though he was that young!

“Men are really some fucking bastards. One would only really know someone’s true nature after having known them for a long time.” Ouyang Lulu secretly whispered inside.

“Knock, knock, knock...”

The door was knocked on.

“Come in!”

Ouyang Lulu quickly adjusted her iffy mood and spoke.

The door was pushed open as Chu Yi and Bai Tao then came in the office smiling. They casually sat on the sofa at the office corner and watched Ouyang Lulu personally serve and pour tea for them. Then, Bai Tao asked, “Fellow classmate, you have gone experiencing it yourself today, haven’t you? We did tell you that Tang Xiu is unfathomably unpredictable and deep. But still, we have never thought that he would win today’s gambling house so easily.”

Ouyang Lulu lightly replied from the side whilst serving the tea, “He only has some ability, but he’s way too arrogant of a man. I just don’t like him.”

Chu Yi grinned and said, “Hehe, I did say Lulu is the type of big beautiful lady. It’s alright for you to not like him, but I do think that there are a lot of women that like him! Haven’t you seen today, a lot of young and beautiful women were watching Tang Xiu with hot and burning eyes full of feeling?”

Ouyang Lulu coldly snorted and said “Bah, could those women be compared to me?”

Chu Yi stared blankly for a moment before he involuntarily laughed and said, “True, if you are as though a fresh flower, then they could be regarded as green foxtail grass and there’s no way for you to be compared. However, judging from your tone it’s as though you’ve met alone with Tang Xiu, yes?”

Ouyang Lulu replied with a snap, “Damn right, I’ve met him. But only to find him a bastard. I know men are shameless, but such a shameless bastard like Tang Xiu is really rare to find.”

Chu Yi and Bai Tao looked at each other whilst a strong interest in their hearts was suddenly ignited.

“Old friend, what did Tang Xiu do to you?” Bai Tao asked curiously.

“Yes! I know that Tang Xiu is extremely bold, so what kind of wicked deeds has Tang Xiu done to you?” Chu Yi also quickly asked.

Ouyang Lulu rolled her eyes as she looked at the both of them before she replied snappily, “He dares to...!”

Afterward, she told everything her meeting process with Tang Xiu from beginning to end and then concluded with her final words with an angry and agitated tone, “Now you tell me, is he still a man? This grand lady’s looks is like a very beautiful flower, an outstanding beauty, even a lot of men want me. But that Tang Xiu blatantly disregarded this grand lady and that is way too

outrageous. If this grand lady has a little bit of prowess in martial arts, I could have given him a hard-to-forget lesson.”

“Don’t!” Bai Tao quickly interrupted.

Chu Yi also quickly said, “Old friend, I tell you, just forget about teaching Tang Xiu a lesson in your mind. And ignore it, really. You don’t know that Tang Xiu is way more powerful than you can imagine!”

Looking at the panicked reaction from the both of them, Ouyang Lulu was quizzical and then said, “Huh? What happened to the both of you? Even if Tang Xiu is really powerful, but he only has 2 arms and legs, there’s no way he has a superhuman power and has 3 heads and six arms, am I right?”

Chu Yi let out a forced and wry smile and said, “That Tang Xiu is way more powerful than a superhuman with 3 heads and 6 arms! You are the local boss of Jingmen Island, so you should have heard about The Everlasting Feast Hall, right?”

“Of course I know about it! I’ve even seen the Little Boss of that Everlasting Feast Hall. I even had a meal, drank, and chatted with her all day. But, what do you wanna tell me with all these things?” Ouyang Lulu said.

Chapter 95: Unexpected Surprise

Chu Yi looked at Ouyang Lulu deeply as he spoke with a deep tone, “Old friend, your Ouyang Family’s strength on Jingmen Island should be ranked as one of the best and your intelligence network is also unmatched here. So you should have heard the event at The Everlasting Feast Hall last night, yes?”

Ouyang Lulu was surprised and said, “Of course! But tell me what’s the meaning of this?”

Chu Yi said, “Last night, three masters challenged the Thousand Revolution Array in Everlasting Feast Hall, and one of them was Tang Xiu, and he was the one that amazingly broke through to the sixth layer of the Thousand Revolution Array.”

“What?”

Ouyang Lulu suddenly stood up as the half-empty teacup in her hands dropped from midair, sprinkling the tea water and its leaves. She had quite a close relationship with Gu Xiaoxue—the Jingmen Island’s Everlasting Feast Hall’s Little Boss, she has been friends with her for nearly a decade. Although their relationship was not as close as a boudoir friend, however, they knew each other very well. Ouyang Lulu knew about the Thousand Revolution Array and was aware that only a few capable and powerful cultivators were able to challenge the array. Had it been for average people, the probability that they could have died in there was high.

“Cultivator? Tang Xiu is a cultivator?”

The news caught Ouyang Lulu off guard and made her shocked. But it was certain that it was not because of Tang Xiu’s identity as a cultivator but much more to the fact that he had broken into the sixth layer of the Thousand Revolution Array.

That was the sixth layer, what kind of terrifying strength must one have to break into it?!

The fact was that the Thousand Revolution Array had been deployed for more than a decade but nobody had been able to break to the sixth floor.

Chu Yi looked at the shocked Ouyang Lulu and said with a smile, “Old friend, now you should understand why I stopped you, right? I couldn’t see through this guy, but I can be sure of one thing, that he’s really powerful to the point that it is outrageous and could make your blood boil. So don’t go provoking him. A person like him could only be a friend and never be an enemy.”

Ouyang Lulu’s sensual red lips wriggled a few times before she finally let out a forced smile helplessly, “What you said is true. Had I offended this kind of expert, let alone myself, even my entire family would be unable to face it. More than 20 years ago a large family in Northwest China had offended a fearful master and caused their entire family to be killed overnight and not even one of their lines remain.”

Chu Yi was astonished and said, “You even know of this matter?

Hasn't this matter been suppressed by the Country's Godfather as to not divulge it to the public?"

Ouyang Lulu whispered, "My great uncle was the person who was responsible for dealing with this matter during that time."

"Your great-uncle is the godfather?" Chu Yi and Bai Tao exclaimed in unison.

Ouyang Lulu waved and said, "What the hell are you talking about? What's the godfather's surname and ours? What I mean is the godfather sent my great uncle to process the funeral!"

"Ah, so that's what happened!" Chu Yi and Bai Tao immediately understood.

Ouyang Lulu then said, "But what I really don't understand is, how Jia Ruidao would know such a powerful person? And Tang Xiu is this powerful despite his young age, if it were his school or sect's Elders and Masters, how terrifyingly powerful would their cultivation base be?"

"Elders and Masters of the sect?"

"Cultivation base?"

Chu Yi and Bai Tao looked at Ouyang Lulu with a puzzled expression.

Ouyang Lulu rolled her eyes as she looked at them and snapped, “Haven’t you had realized that Tang Xiu is a cultivator? Don’t tell me that with your family’s intelligence network you don’t know such people existence in the world!”

Chu Yi and Bai Tao were petrified!

Cultivators!

They had heard about these people but have never seen them. Coming across such people from legend could be said as their blessing and fortune, it was normal to not meet them. But at the moment, Ouyang Lulu said that Tang Xiu was a cultivator, it caused their hearts to be stormed by heavy waves.

However, the more they carefully thought about it, the more they could tell that Ouyang Lulu was right. Tang Xiu was this powerful and if he were not a cultivator, could normal people even be able to achieve things that were almost impossible to achieve?

“Damn, this won’t do. We must investigate Tang Xiu immediately and find out what he needs! If we cannot take advantage while he’s still young and have a good relationship with him, once he’s truly grown, it would be extremely difficult for us to do so.” Chu Yi spoke with a decisive tone.

Bai Tao also nodded and said, “I’ll immediately pass the news back to my family. Even if I have to use the entire family’s contact, we must find out what Tang Xiu wants. Even if we use all the

means we have and can not be a genuine friend with him, we still must do everything possible and let him owe us a big favor.”

“Correct!” Chu Yi heavily nodded.

Ouyang Lulu looked at their serious expressions as her mind was also rotating faster. She had guessed Tang Xiu’s true identity, so how would the idea did not cross her mind?

After drifting for a night, the luxurious passenger cruiser finally moored at Jingmen Island Port at noon on the second day. Along with the leaving guests, Tang Xiu, Jia Ruidao, and his apprentices leisurely left the passenger cruiser.

Lunch was about to arrive but the five people did not stay as they took a car and went to the Seaside Strait Manor. It was because Gong Dalong had made a call when they were still at sea to book a private box in advance, so they decided to have lunch at Seaside Strait Manor.

Jingmen Island West Coast.

It was a magnificent and large villa area, and the Seaside Strait Manor was located in this place. Two cars arrived at the entrance and was only allowed to pass after having gone through inspection. The thing that made Tang Xiu surprised was that there were a lot of security personnel at this place, patrolling everywhere. Each one

of them was very strong and had extremely steady footsteps, signifying that they were obviously skilled martial artists.

“What is the origin of this Seaside Strait Manor?”

Tang Xiu was sitting in the back seat as he asked and looked at Jia Ruidao who sat in the passenger seat.

Jia Ruidao said, “I’m also unclear about their specific origin. However, I do know that the Master of this Seaside Street Manor came from Beijing and has been here for business for more than 20 years, it has a powerful force and influence. But in the recent years, since the Master of the Manor is very old and his health is deteriorating, the one who manages the Manor right now is his son, Tang Dong.”

Tang Xiu nodded as he spoke with great interest, “Ah, I really want to see the Master of this Manor to talk about some topics, we might have something in common.”

Jia Ruidao involuntarily laughed and then said, “Brother Tang, meeting the Master of this Manor is probably quite difficult. I don’t how many dignitaries in Jingmen Island wished to visit but were shut out. I have heard that even some government big shots must make an appointment in advance for half a month before they can get half an hour meeting opportunities.”

“They are that arrogant?” Tang Xiu asked with astonishment.

Jia Ruidao replied with a smile, “It’s not that they are arrogant though, but it’s because they truly have a huge background, so they showcase their strong capital. In fact, I can guess their origin, but I’m not 100% sure about the reliability.”

Tang Xiu said, “Tell me your guesses!”

Jia Ruidao said, “They are surnamed Tang. And the only big family surnamed Tang is the Tang Family from Beijing.”

Tang Xiu said, “Is this respected family from Beijing really that powerful?”

Jia Ruidao replied without hesitation, “Yes! They are very powerful to the point that they could be called terrifying. I think that there are only 5 families in the entire country that could be compared to the Tang Family’s power and influence. Just think about it! Amongst 145 million families in the entire country, only five families have equal power and influence to the Tang Family, so you can imagine how strong they are!”

“Well, it’s indeed very strong!” Tang Xiu nodded and said.

Having entered the Manor’s interior, the two cars stopped inside a wide parking long as 4 big middle-aged men in a suit quickly stepped and greeted them, quickly opening the car’s door for everyone.

“Welcome.” A middle-aged man with glasses had been waiting in

this place as brilliant beams of light flashed from his eyes from time to time as he said with a smile.

Jia Ruidao surprised, “Chief Hu? How come you personally...”

Hu Xinyu laughed, “I’ve heard Grandmaster Jia has returned triumphantly from The Paradise Club, so it’s natural that I have to greet you. Besides, I also have to pay my tribute toward the gambling Grandmasters.”

Jia Ruidao said with a smile, “Chief Hu, you are really fast on the news! Come, let me introduce you to Brother Tang. He’s the one who helped me in winning the gambling house. Brother Tang, this is the experienced reception manager of this Seaside Strait Manor, Hu Xinyu.”

Hu Xinyu observed Tang Xiu. Although he already received the news that Tang Xiu was young, but he never imagined that he was young to this degree. A bright smile was revealed on his complexion as he quickly extended his hand to shake and said, “Welcome Mr. Tang. You are honoring us with your presence. About your elegance in the casino, it has been passed to my ears yesterday. Had it been you were not in The Paradise Club and still at sea, I could have immediately rushed over to learn from you.”

“You’re too polite!”

Tang Xiu had never liked social niceties, but still, he extended hands and could not slap people who smiled at him. Since the other passionately greeted him, it would be better to give face to

the host.

Hu Xinyu said with a smile, “Gentlemen, please come with me! Your private box and meal have already been prepared, so you can have your meal soon.”

Shortly after, under Hun Xinyu’s lead, everyone came to a luxury villa designed in full European-style. Only then did Tang Xiu realize that each villa in this manor area was used to entertain a group of guests.

“Please wait, I’ll call the kitchen to quickly serve the meal.”

“Please wait!” Tang Xiu stopped Hu Xinyu.

“Mr. Tang, do you have some orders in mind?” Hu Xinyu asked.

Tang Xiu said, “Could you recommend me to the old Master of Seaside Strait Manor? I’d like to see him.”

“This...”

Hu Xinyu hesitated. After a short moment, only then did he speak with a forced and wry smile, “Mr. Tang, our old Master is old, and in the recent years he avoided to pay attention to outside affairs. So, this request is out of my capabilities.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment and said, “Since I cannot see

your old Master, but it should not be a problem to introduce me to see the person in charge—Tang Dong, yes? I have a few questions I want to ask him.”

Hu Xinyu said, “I shall convey your request to our Boss. If he is willing to see you, you’ll hear the news from me.”

“Thanks!” Tang Xiu said.

A loud and clear voice suddenly sounded from outside of the villa as a figure appeared at the villa hall’s door a few seconds after.

“The heavens are measureless and unpredictable. This poor monk comes uninvited and hopes for gentlemen to forgive.”

Chapter 96: Fellow Cultivators

The one who came was a Taoist monk clad in a Taoist robe, giving off the vibe of a Taoist immortal with chignon combed hair, duster in hand, feet in cloud shoes, as an indistinct smiling expression hung on his thin and peaceful face.

“You are?”

Hu Xinyu was the reception manager of the Manor. Upon seeing an old Taoist monk come uninvited, he immediately stood and asked. After all, if Jia Ruidao and Tang Xiu didn't want to see this old Taoist, he was responsible for sending this old Taoist out.

The old Taoist's eyes carefully swept over everyone before his eyes were fixated on Tang Xiu. He then spoke with a smile, “This old Taoist comes from Xibei's Ziyang Monastery. My Taoist name is Dao Master Ziyi, and was invited by someone to be a guest in Jingmen Island. This one accidentally heard about what happened at the Everlasting Feast Hall yesterday, so this one has come here to visit Benefactor Tang.”

Jia Ruidao asked with a deep tone, “How do you know that Brother Tang is that person?”

Dao Master Ziyi said with a smile, “Surely you're Benefactor Jia, aren't you? It's just someone has recognized you and says that you and Benefactor Tang has come together, so this Poor Taoist infers that this should be Benefactor Tang.”

Tang Xiu nodded and said, “I’m Tang Xiu. I wonder, how may I help you with?”

Dao Master Ziyi replied with a smile, “This old Taoist would like to invite Benefactor Tang for a cooperation to challenge and break into the Evil Dragon Sea Area. I don’t know whether Benefactor Tang has any interest to cooperate with this one?”

“Evil Dragon Sea Area?”

Tang Xiu had never heard about such a name and immediately asked, “Where is this Evil Dragon Sea Area? For what purpose will we break into that place?”

Dao Master Ziyi asked with a surprised expression, “Benefactor Tang doesn’t know about Evil Dragon Sea Area?”

“I don’t know about it!” Tang Xiu shook his head.

Dao Master Ziyi then said, “Evil Dragon Sea Area is located thousands of miles away from Jingmen Island. It’s a narrow waterway small strait in the South China Sea. It’s because our Ziyang Monastery’s best ability is in tool refining, so this Poor Taoist prepared to collect some fierce beasts’ materials and special ores. So this one has prepared to hunt and kill some fierce beasts. However, this Poor Taoist knows of the feeble strength this one has; it would be very difficult to come out of that place unscathed had this one gone alone. Since this one has heard about Benefactor Tang’s extremely high achievement, this one wants to invite you to go together.”

Evil Dragon Sea Area? Killing fierce beasts and seeking for special ores?

Tang Xiu's mind was as though shook by tremors and immediately asked, "When will we embark? Only the two of us?"

Dao Master Ziyi said with a smile, "It seems that Benefactor Tang has agreed. Yes, only the two of us. This Poor Taoist wants to invite a few people, but this one only has a few personal contacts. Besides, this one doesn't have the means to invite other Dao cultivators on Jingmen Island."

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment as 2 faces immediately emerged in his mind. They were Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang, as he was considering as if he should invite them both to go together or not.

Others might be clueless about this matter, but he was crystal clear about it. His cultivation at present was only at the first layer of Stars Tyrannical Body, the Vitality Tempering layer peak. If he were to fight experts such as Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang at a close distance, he might have been instantly killed by them.

The more helpers they could get, the more chance to live they would have.

Tang Xiu quickly made a decision and said, "Since Dao Master Ziyi cannot invite others, then, I'll invite 2 people! And to be honest, I'm also in need for materials from fierce beasts. Please

wait until I invited them. And about our harvest, how about we share equally between the four of us?”

Dao Master Ziyi slightly hesitated before he nodded and said with a smile, “Then, this old Taoist will follow Benefactor Tang’s words.”

Tang Xiu took his phone and pulled out Miao Wentang’s business card he gave him and dialed his number on the back of it.

At this moment...

Miao Wentang and Shao Mingzhen were staying at a five-star hotel as they chatted about what had happened at the Paradise Club. Shao Mingzhen attentively listened to Miao Wentang’s vivid narration as he secretly regretted not going there to spectate it.

“Ye Taifu’s loses were not his fault. Comparing eyesight and speed with someone from the cultivation world is only courting himself with troubles. However, Tang Xiu’s action and style are really unpredictable. Such an honored cultivator, but he even went out to help someone in gambling houses. What an interesting young man!” Shao Mingzhen said and laughed.

Miao Wentang continued whilst smiling, “True! Cultivators have always been cultivating and tempering their mind and soul, and diligently promoting their cultivation. This is the first time I came across someone from the cultivation world gambling. However, I’ve apologized to Tang Xiu for my previous little conflict. But if he doesn’t forgive me, then I have no other means left.”

Shao Mingzhen shook his head and said, “I don’t think so. Tang Xiu is not the type of narrow-minded person that will bear a grudge over small things. Since you’ve apologized to him, I don’t think he will pay in mind about that matter.”

“I really hope so!” Miao Wentang said with a forced and wry smile.

Shao Mingzhen no longer mentioned the topic about Tang Xiu and shifted to other subjects, “Brother Miao, can you get the admission ticket for the annual Violet Redbud Auction tonight? The true reason I rushed over to Jingmen Island is actually for 2 things. First was to challenge the Thousand Revolution Array, and second was to participate in the Violet Redbud Auction.”

Miao Wentang replied with a smile, “In fact, I also have this purpose. Yesterday, some Jingmen Island’s business circle friends gave me a few tickets. So we can go together in the evening! However, I should give you a forewarning! I’ve prepared quite a lot of money with me right now to buy a few things I need!”

Shao Mingzhen lightly laughed, “Bah, I don’t want to follow your evil intentions on competition. But if I really need something, I will go all out. Besides, there are only a few useful things for cultivators like us in this annual Violet Redbud Auction.”

“I know!” Miao Wentang nodded.

“Ring ring ring...”

A cell phone ringtone sounded and interrupted their conversation.

Miao Wentang took his phone out and found that the caller ID and number was unfamiliar. According to his previous habit, he just wanted to hang the phone up directly. But when Tang Xiu's face suddenly emerged inside his mind, he immediately changed his idea and pressed the answer button, saying, "Miao Wentang speaking, who's this?"

"I'm Tang Xiu!"

Tang Xiu's voice was transmitted through the phone.

Miao Wentang's pupil shrunk as a somewhat happy expression was suddenly revealed on his face as he quickly asked, "Mr. Tang, do you need something that requires my assistance?"

"Yes! Someone called Dao Master Ziyi invited me to hunt and kill fierce beasts in the Evil Dragon Sea Area. Do you have any interest to go with us?"

Miao Wentang quickly glanced at Shao Mingzhen's eyes and spoke in a deep tone, "I know about Dao Master Ziyi and have been friends with him for more than 2 decades. I do want to join you, but can I bring another person? Shao Mingzhen happens to be here with me right now."

“It’s fine!” Tang Xiu said.

Miao Wentang then asked, “When will we go out? And where can we meet?”

Tang Xiu said, “If you can, come to Seaside Strait Manor now! When you have arrived here, find Manager Hu Xinyu and he’ll take you to us.”

“Alright, we’ll catch up with you immediately.”

The call ended...

Miao Wentang narrated Tang Xiu’s words again as he grinned and smiled, “Brother Shao, Tang Xiu seems to be a really broad-minded person. He invited us to go to Evil Dragon Sea Area to hunt fierce beasts. I think that this is a good chance to create a good relationship with him.”

Shao Mingzhen stood up and replied with a smile, “This indeed is a heaven-sent opportunity. However, the Evil Dragon Sea Area is a very dangerous place, so we’ll have to be very careful on this trip.”

“OK!”

Inside the Seaside Strait Manor, Tang Xiu put his phone back and looked at Dao Master Ziyi as he spoke, “Please stay here together and have a meal! I believe that the 2 people I’ve invited will come over after lunch. I don’t have much time, but since we’ve reached

an agreement, we'll immediately leave after they have arrived."

Dao Master Ziyi said with a smile, "Ah, this one didn't expect Benefactor Tang to be so swift and decisive. This Poor Taoist really admires you. This one will follow your arrangements."

Jia Ruidao looked at Dao Master Ziyi and Tang Xiu. Only now did he realize that he just saw a special circle of people, one that he couldn't squeeze himself into. However, he was someone with a slippery and sleek personality, so he immediately warmly invited Dao Master Ziyi with hospitality to take a seat.

The lunch was very sumptuous, the most sumptuous one Tang Xiu had until now; he even felt that it was somewhat too luxurious, giving him the feeling of frustration at the same time. Such as the 2 main courses, the ingredients were good grade fierce beast meat. If these fierce beast meat were given to him, he could have been able to use these meats as the main ingredients to refine the Golden Bell Liquid.

"Unfortunately, the spiritual essence inside the meat has been cleanly consumed, so it has no benefits for the body."

With Tang Xiu's sigh, their lunch finished.

Jia Ruidao previously had the intention to accompany Tang Xiu for some time, but since he knew that Tang Xiu had something to do later, he motioned to his 3 apprentices to get up and leave. Tang Xiu didn't detain them, he didn't even say any polite words to them and only quietly watched Jia Ruidao leave.

“Benefactor Tang, this Poor Taoist heard that you have broken through the Thousand Revolution Array in Everlasting Feast Hall. It’s really amazing. To tell you the truth, this Poor Taoist has once also challenged that formation array, but unfortunately, this Poor Taoist’s cultivation is limited and was only able to break through the third layer. After that, this one had no choice but to quickly withdraw.” Dao Master Ziyi spoke whilst holding his duster as he spoke to Tang Xiu who sat on the opposite side.

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, “My cultivation is very low and my strength is very weak. However, I have a deep knowledge in breaking formation arrays, so it’s only natural that I’m more powerful compared to other cultivators in breaking the array. In any case, I’m afraid that I can’t give much help in hunting high-order fierce beasts in the Evil Dragon Sea Area.”

Dao Master Ziyi hesitated and was silent for a little while before he spoke in a serious tone, “Benefactor Tang, you don’t need to belittle yourself. In my opinion, an Array Master is much stronger compared to powerful cultivators. For our hunting trip, Benefactor Tang only needs to deploy a Killing Array to hunt, while we will direct the fierce beasts to the array. So our hunting trip would be much easier.”

Tang Xiu quickly understood Dao Master Ziyi’s meaning as he nodded and said, “It wouldn’t be much a problem in deploying the formation array, however, I would need some materials though.”

Dao Master Ziyi asked, “What kind of materials?”

Tang Xiu said, “Jades. The better the quality, the better formation array I can deploy. Moreover, I would also need to draw some paper talismans to use them in line with the array.”

Dao Master Ziyi replied with a smile, “These are only small problems. This Poor Taoist has a friend who has a jade business on Jingmen Island. This one will contact him right now and send you the jades as quickly as possible. As for the paper talisman, I can only trouble Benefactor Tang for that.”

“It’s alright!”

Then, Tang Xiu continued, “To draw the paper talismans, I would have to buy some things. Well, you wait here for the two people invited by me, whilst I go out to buy those things. Wait for me to finish drawing the paper talismans before we set out on our trip.”

“Alright!”

Chapter 97: Violet Redbud Auction

Tang Xiu had just come out from the villa's hall when he bumped into a middle-aged man at the entrance. The man had a square face, a well-shaped figure, 1.8m in height, and sparkling eyes that were full of spirit.

“Who are you looking for?”

“I’m looking for Tang Xiu.”

Tang Xiu’s brow slanted as he sized him up and said, “I’m Tang Xiu, who are you?”

“I’m Tang Dong! I heard that you wanted to see me?”

Tang Dong also sized up Tang Xiu as a quizzical expression could be seen from his eyes. He didn’t understand why the young man who was recently famous in the last 2 days on Jingmen Island wished to see him.

Tang Xiu nodded and said, “Yes, I originally wanted to see the Old Master of the Manor. But since I heard that it was very difficult to see him, I wanted to see you to ask you about something. Can we find another suitable place to speak?”

Tang Dong looked at Tang Xiu’s villa as he turned around and said, “Come with me! There’s a villa specially used as a teahouse nearby. It’s usually not open to the public though.”

Shortly after...

They arrived at the villa as the attendants then served tea. Whilst savoring the taste of the tea, Tang Dong looked at Tang Xiu and asked, “Then, tell me! For what issues are you seeking me for?”

Tang Xiu said, “I’m interested in the ingredients you’re using for the main course. If I may, could you tell me the place where you have hunted the fierce beasts?”

Tang Dong replied with a smile, “Ah, it’s for this matter. In fact, there are a lot of people who know about the place where we hunt fierce beasts. There’s a marine trench near Jingmen Island called the Eyes of Death. There are some fierce beasts there, with each one of them being very ferocious, even the majority of them have simple spiritual wisdom.”

Tang Xiu said, “Hunting these ferocious beasts couldn’t have been easy, could it?”

Tang Dong replied with a helpless expression, “Naturally, it’s not easy. Every time we go to the Eyes of Death, some of our staff are injured and even die. This is also the reason why the meal pricing at our Seaside Strait Manor is very expensive.”

Tang Xiu replied with an expression of understanding, “I could tell that your Manor’s security personnel are martial arts expert. If you pay a little bit of attention, you could use tip pointed weapons to hunt the fierce beasts. Lastly, does your Manor sell the fierce

beast bodies?”

Tang Dong frowned as he asked with a puzzled expression, “You need fierce beast bodies?”

Tang Xiu said, “Yes, that’s right!

Tang Dong shook his head and said, “Our Manor does indeed have fierce beast bodies, but they are not for sell. Because hunting fierce beasts is very difficult and it’s also our Manor’s specialty since we need the ingredients from fierce beast bodies. So... I’m very sorry.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a while before he slowly spoke, “If I don’t need fierce beast meat, can you sell me the fierce beast skin, claw, scales, bones, blood, and other materials?”

Tang Dong then asked with a curious expression, “What do you need these things for?”

Tang Xiu calmly answered, “I’m going to deploy formation array and need these things in particular.”

Tang Dong asked with astonishment, “You can create a formation array? Isn’t that some kind of ancient art of deploying formation for divination and making yourself invisible?”

Tang Xiu nodded and said, “I believe you’ve heard about me having broken through the sixth layer of the Thousand Revolution

Array at the Everlasting Feast Hall, yes? If I have no knowledge about formation arrays, how could it be possible to break through the array?”

Tang Dong patted his forehead as he smiled and said, “Ah, how could my head be this murky at this time? Anyways, since you need these things, I can sell them to you. But since we’re businessmen, what price can you give me for these?”

Tang Xiu thought for a moment before he replied seriously, “For one fierce beast’s remaining skin, claws, scales, bones, and other materials, I’ll pay you 5 million, how about it?”

5 million?

Tang Dong looked at Tang Xiu with a dumbstruck expression. He never once dreamed that Tang Xiu would offer such a high price. His Manor only used the meat from the fierce beast’s body and had nearly no other uses for the remaining parts. Even so, all the meat taken from fierce beasts as food ingredients were only sold for about 10 million. As for the remaining parts, they sold them at a very low price.

“What? Is the price not enough?” Tang Xiu asked more.

Tang Dong waved his hand and said, “No no no. It’s satisfying enough. Your price is fair so we have a deal. Are there any other things you need?”

Tang Xiu said, “If you have them at present, I can directly buy them right now.”

Tang Dong immediately got up and spoke seriously, “Our Manor happens to have the remaining parts of fierce beasts. I’ll take you there to see them.”

“Alright!” Tang Xiu then got up immediately.

However, when he just followed Tang Dong for about 10 steps, only then did he remember that he also should buy the materials to draw paper talisman, so he immediately spoke and said, “May I ask for another favor?”

Tang Dong replied with an amiable expression, “Please do say!”

Tang Xiu said, “I was planning to go out to buy some things. Could you send someone to help me buy them? Those materials are not easy to find but are cheap. I believe that if you ask around, you can find and buy them.”

Tang Dong replied whilst smiling, “It’s alright. Write the things you want to buy on a note and I’ll send someone to buy them immediately. You can pay for them later after he comes back.”

“That’s fine!”

10 minutes later.

Tang Xiu and Tang Dong came to the kitchen deep inside the Manor area and went over to a large warehouse behind the kitchen. A large ice compartment was beside the warehouse with 2 dead frozen fierce beasts inside. After being dissected, the other fierce beast body parts were then piled on the stockpile outside.

“These are remaining body parts from 4 fierce beasts, and we have no uses for them. If you find them satisfying, then we’ll sell them to you according to your price.” With some expectation on his face, Tang Dong looked at Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu scrutinized them for a few minutes as he nodded and said, “I’ll take them and transfer the money to you immediately. But could I ask for another favor again?”

“Do tell me!” Tang Dong happily replied.

Tang Xiu said, “I come from Star City, but I have no time and means to ship these things back to Star City. I’ll give you my address, could you send them to my place? After you deliver them, I’ll arrange some people to receive these things there.”

Tang Dong replied with a smile, “No problem.”

4 fierce beasts remaining body parts for a total 20 million. Since Tang Xiu had just learned to transfer through mobile banking, he transferred 20 million to Tang Dong.

“For six months, for every fierce beast your Manor hunts and dissects, please send all the remaining body parts to me. Save my mobile number and send them to Star City, and then I’ll transfer you the money immediately.” Having finished the transaction, Tang Xiu added again.

Tang Dong stared blankly as he then replied with astonishment, “Only half a year?”

Tang Xiu said, “Yes, only half a year! The fierce beasts you’ve hunted are only low-order fierce beasts and are only useful for about 6 months to me. After 6 months, unless you can hunt more powerful fierce beasts, they are no longer useful to me.”

Tang Dong suddenly understood as he smiled and said, “Rest assured! Since it’s only half a year, I will naturally send people to the Eyes of Death to hunt for a larger number of fierce beasts.”

Tang Xiu nodded and said, “That being the case, I’ll go back to the villa where I had my meal first. I’ll pay for the meals and the things I need to buy directly to the person you have sent.”

Tang Dong waved and said, “I already know the things you must buy. The money you’ve paid is already enough so you don’t need to pay more.”

He wasn’t a fool. He already got a high price from the fierce beasts’ remaining body parts. So he didn’t care about a small amount of money. He might as well give a little discount as a favor since he had a future transaction agreement with Tang Xiu to sell

fierce beast materials.

“Then, that’s good!”

Tang Xiu only simply complied and left directly.

Tang Dong squinted his eyes as he looked at Tang Xiu’s back. A peculiar feeling sprouted in his heart. Tang Xiu was obviously only about 20 years old. But his attitude and mannerism were unlike a young man, and instead felt like a mature and experienced man, even giving off a vibe of a person with a distinguished status. This kind of feeling made him feel that it was absurd and ridiculous.

Tang Xiu returned to the villa where he had his meal before and found that Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang had arrived as they were chatting with Dao Master Ziyi.

“Mr. Tang!”

“Mr. Tang!”

Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang got up and greeted with a slightly cordial tone.

Tang Xiu nodded at them and said, “You need to wait for a while. I’ve asked someone to buy the materials to draw the paper talismans we would need, and they soon will be sent to me. Just wait for me to draw the paper talismans and we can begin our journey.”

Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang glanced at each other and they did n't speak.

Dao Master Ziyi then spoke with a smile, "Benefactor Tang, this Poor Taoist has never thought that the 2 friends you've invited turned out to be Benefactor Shao and Benefactor Miao. This Poor Taoist has been acquainted with them before but didn't know that they also visited Jingmen Island. I've just chatted with them and heard about the Violet Redbud Auction. If we may, can we reschedule the trip to the Evil Dragon Sea Area for tomorrow?"

Rescheduling and delaying the time?

Tang Xiu's eyebrows wrinkled. He was somewhat unhappy inside, but did not directly show it, and instead asked, "What is this Violet Redbud Auction?"

Miao Wentang quickly explained, "The Violet Redbud Auction, is a nationwide large annual auction where some useful items for cultivators would sometimes be auctioned there. I've participated in a few events of Violet Redbud Auction and obtained a big harvest, even though I did spend quite a large amount of money. If we miss it this time, we have to wait again next year."

"Things that are useful to cultivators?"

Tang Xiu thought for a moment and then slowly spoke, "That being the case, then we'll leave tomorrow. However, when will Violet Redbud Auction be held? Is there any chance for me to

participate?”

Miao Wentang secretly felt relieved. He was really afraid that Tang Xiu would not agree. Upon hearing Tang Xiu's inquiry, he immediately replied, “2 days ago my friends on Jingmen Island had given me 4 tickets to the Violet Redbud Auction. I originally planned for me and Brother Shao to go, but added with the two of you, the tickets are sufficient.”

Tang Xiu said, “That's good then. Fortunately, I have a little cash to spare. I'll have a look whether there would be something that I need to buy there.”

Miao Wentang and Shao Mingzhen glanced at each other as they secretly smiled wryly in their hearts. They wanted to form a good relationship with Tang Xiu. If they happened to eye the same thing as Tang Xiu, they probably would not choose to compete with Tang Xiu.

Chapter 98: Determined To Win

It was evening...

Tang Xiu, with a pale face, followed by Miao Wentang and three others came to the Violet Redbud Auction venue. The auction was held at Jiangmen Island's International Business Conference Center.

On the 18th floor.

The venue for the auction was huge. Over a thousand tables and chairs, and one-third of them had been occupied, with more people rushing in from the outside.

Four people casually found a seat and sat down as the auction venue's attendants presented them with the list of items that would be auctioned and had been prepared in advance.

Tang Xiu sat in his chair as he skimmed over the items list that was being auctioned. The detailed list was 3 pages long and presented each item with pictures and a text description. The first 2 pages made him quite disappointed. Although those items were good objects, but he simply had no uses for them.

But, when Tang Xiu opened the last page and skimmed over the list, his vision suddenly froze as disbelief filled his eyes.

Void Crack Stone? It turned out to be a Void Crack Stone?

If the taken photo was true, then this was definitely the main material to refining a Spatial Ring, the Void Crack Stone.

In that instant, Tang Xiu's heart accelerated and beat faster as a determined expression could be seen on his face. At first, he had his worries since he would go to the Evil Dragon Sea Area. If they were to hunt a large number of fierce beasts with large fierce beasts bodies, how would they transport them? But if he could refine a Spatial Ring, shipping them back would not be a problem.

“Such a low price of 5 million? With the increase being 500 thousand for each bid?”

Tang Xiu thought for a moment. He thought that he had the funds right now, so it wouldn't be a problem to compete and successfully bid for this fist-sized Void Crack Stone.

After the gamble with Ye Taifu at Paradise Club, the money he won after having subtracted 250 million for Jia Ruidao's shares, he got 250 million. He used 20 million to buy the fierce beast body parts, so the remaining money he had now was 230 million.

“The Void Crack Stone's floor price is 5 million. I have 230 million, so it wouldn't be a problem to purchase this thing. If it's not enough I can borrow money from Jia Ruidao! When I get more money, I can pay him back!” Tang Xiu secretly calculated in his mind.

“Huh?”

Tang Xiu's heart was struck with surprise again as his eyes then fell on the list below as he found another useful thing, a 1000-year-old wild ginseng.

Had it been in the Immortal World, let alone a 1000-years-old wild ginseng, even 10-thousand years-old wild ginseng, he never lacked of these ginsengs. He used to feed 1000-year-old wild ginseng to spirit beasts. But for the present him, this thing was very precious. If he could buy this 1000-year-old wild ginseng, he would have the main ingredients to concoct the Golden Bell Liquid, and the efficacy would absolutely be excellent.

“Buy! I must buy it!”

Tang Xiu looked at the offered floor price as his eyes suddenly filled with disbelief.

“50 million?”

This 1000-years-old wild ginseng floor price turned out to be 50 million. Moreover, the amount of bid increase must not be under 2 million.

Tang Xiu's lips wriggled, “If, if I moved all of the 1000-year-old ginseng in my herb field in the Immortal World, I should be able to buy more than 10 Planet Earths, right? This price... is really too appalling, a scam!”

His eyes looked downward and also found other few items that would be useful for cultivators, but he had no big uses for them.

He finally decided and locked his target. They were the Void Crack Stone and 1000-year-old wild ginseng. He silently calculated the final expense he must pay to obtain these two things.

“Mr. Tang, what objects have your eyes set onto?”

After Shao Mingzhen had read the auction’s list of items in his hand, he turned around and looked at Tang Xiu at his side as he whispered to ask.

Tang Xiu pointed at the Void Crack Stone and 1000-years-old wild ginseng as he said, “I need these two things. And I must get both at all costs!”

Shao Mingzhen looked at the Void Crack Stone with some astonishment. It was because he didn’t know what this stone was. The auctioneer only described that the ore was rare and extremely hard, and suspected that it was from a meteorite from space. However, for that 1000-years-old wild ginseng, he couldn’t help lament since he was also targeting it.

At the present time on Earth, a 1000-year-old wild ginseng is extremely rare, to the point that its price had no fixed market price. Even if some people wanted to spend a large amount of money, nobody heard of a 100-year-old wild ginseng being sold for so many years. Let alone a 1000-year-old wild ginseng. Even more, 500-years-old wild ginsengs were extremely rare and very few to be

seen nowadays.

“Ah, I should forget it and give it up then!”

Shao Mingzhen secretly sighed inside as he turned and touched Miao Wentang, preparing to tell him about the 2 items Tang Xiu wanted to buy.

Miao Wentang was also targeting the 1000-year-old wild ginseng. But just like Shao Mingzhen, he finally intended to give it up after knowing that Tang Xiu wanted it.

As for Dao Master Ziyi, he just came to the venue, and was purely acting with ‘everything was none of my business’. Even if there was something he liked, he wouldn’t try to even bid. It was not because he had no desire to buy, but because he was poor to the point that he only had penny money and simply couldn’t afford anything.

8 PM sharp...

Along with the auction’s stage opening, a young beautiful woman at the prime of her life walked onto the stage. The originally noisy auction venue suddenly quieted down as everyone’s eyes were fixated on the young beautiful woman.

“Ladies and gentlemen, we welcome you to the annual Violet Redbud Auction. This year’s auction is held on Jingmen Island, and all the items that will be auctioned have been listed on the

auction's detailed list. My name is Xiao Ai, and I'm also this year's Violet Redbud Auction's auctioneer."

"The auction's session will soon begin, and I believed that all the Ladies and Gentlemen have already seen the auction's list of items. It is my sincere wish that everyone will be able to obtain the items you want and return back with a rewarding journey." said Xiao Ai.

"I hereby announce that the 21st annual Violet Redbud Auction has officially begun. The following first auctioned item is a precious antique, a blue-white porcelain vase produced by the late Ming and early Qing Dynasty's Royal Kiln. Everyone mustn't look down on this blue white porcelain vase, the seal above it shows that it is the Imperial Household's seal, and was used only for the Emperor. It's highly likely that the vase was used in the Emperor Palace of the Great Qing Dynasty..."

Tang Xiu sat quietly under the stage as he listened to the grandiloquent introduction from the auctioneer. As the auction was announced to officially begin, he looked at the following hundreds of guests of the Violet Redbud Auction as they competed in bidding for the items, giving off a peculiar strange feeling to him.

It was as the saying goes that, when the world was in chaos, opportunity arises, but when the world was in a golden age, amassing wealth is flourishing.

And now, he was deeply appreciating the true meaning of this sentence. Each item was being auctioned at a high price and each item would be bought at sky high prices. He couldn't help but sigh.

At present, there were a lot of rich people, and they loved to amass wealth and become richer. Certainly, he also had another kind of thought, that rich people were foolish. Buying pieces of dead objects and bringing them home with such meaningless significance.

The auction had lasted for 2 hours and Tang Xiu had yet to bid even once. In contrast, Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang had bid once and bought the items they needed.

“For the next items we will auction, it is a rare ore. This rare ore is very hard and we suspect that the ore came from the space and crushed down to Earth as a meteorite. I believe that this will be a very precious collection of valuable minerals. Perhaps, this space item’s value will be more valuable in the future and would be very difficult to estimate. The floor price is 5 million, and every bid increase must not be under 500 thousand. Let us begin the auction now.” The auctioneer held the Void Crack Stone in her hand and explained in an excellent voice and expression as she announced the start of the auction.

“It has come!”

Tang Xiu’s spirit shook as his eyes tightly locked on that piece of Void Crack Stone. He didn’t rush to bid because during the last 2 hours of observation, he could tell that from the initial bidder, only very few of them would really want to buy. They were as though throwing the brick to attract the jade, and only initiated the bidding, and if some people called for the biddings, they would immediately renounce it. If nobody called for the bid, they might be able to obtain the item with little money, but still buy it as one

of the things they took a fancy at.

“6 million.”

A voice sounded, as the person also raised his flag sign.

“6.5 million!”

“7 million!”

“7.5 million!”

“...”

Shortly after, the Void Crack Stone’s price had risen to 9.5 million. However, after the last person called the bid, nobody raised the bid after 10 seconds.

A sweet smile hung on the auctioneer’s face as she said, “That gentleman has bid for 9.5 million, any other guests calling for a higher bid? Everyone, don’t take lightly of this rare ore with its mysteriousness. Perhaps its value would be 10 times higher in the future compared to the present.”

“10 million!”

As the auctioneer’s voice fell, another voice sounded.

Tang Xiu took a deep breath as he raised his sign and said, “10.5 million.”

“15 million!”

The voice sounded again.

Tang Xiu lifted his sign and exclaimed, “20 million.”

“Whoosh...”

Everyone at the auction venue turned around and looked at Tang Xiu as streams of comments sounded.

“Who is throwing away money, more silly people, ah? An unknown ore with unknown uses? Even if it is rare, it’s not worth 20 million, right? Believing the auctioneer’s cons to get rich quickly in the future?”

“What a world-level joke is this? Buying a piece of ore for 20 million? Even 10 million is way too much! Rich people this year really don’t value money!”

“What a spendthrift young man. I don’t know the prodigal juniors from which family he comes from. If I had such a junior, I would have broken his leg absolutely and grounded him at home to reflect on his mistakes in seclusion.”

“That young man, could he have taken a liking to the auctioneer girl? Wanting to showcase his worth in front of her?”

“Wow, this is really interesting!”

“...”

With his sharp hearing, Tang Xiu clearly heard a lot of people's commentaries in the conference hall. But he still wore his indifferent expression. For those who had no knowledge about the truly precious things, he didn't want to even pay notice to them. And for that absolute reason, there wasn't even a chance that he would tell them about the Void Crack Stone's uses. Besides, in his hands, Void Crack Stone was a treasure, but for people who wouldn't refine the stone into a Spatial Ring, it was only a lump of rough stone.

The auctioneer looked at Tang Xiu deeply as she smiled and asked, “The handsome young man has bid 20 million. Are there any higher bids than 20 million? If not, this precious rare ore will be sold to that handsome young man.”

The auction venue was silent for a while.

When the auctioneer was about to speak the final word and announce that the Void Crack Stone was sold to Tang Xiu, a voice suddenly sounded,

“50 million!”

Chapter 99: The Bidding Race

Everyone in the entire of auction venue was all shocked by the sudden voice. Even if Tang Xiu regarded money as though it was a dirt and didn't think much about it, however, almost nobody amongst people in this era would recognize this Void Crack Stone. And it was unexpected that someone would be willing to bid such a high price for it.

Tang Xiu followed the sound source as he found the bidder guest. He was an old man who wore a black Chinese tunic suit, with a full set of white hair, and an amiable benign face, giving off the impression of a philanthropist. However, facing the gaze of everyone's eyes, he revealed a proud expression. Especially when he realized that Tang Xiu looked over at him as he particularly tilted his chin up and showed a provocative look in his eyes toward Tang Xiu.

“So troublesome!”

Tang Xiu sighed inside as he raised his bid once again, “60 million.”

Whissh...

The entire auction venue boiled as all eyes shifted back and forth between Tang Xiu and the old man. And as such, as the saying goes that in each abnormal event, there must be some kind of reasons and causes, and some people were even secretly thinking, was this piece of rare stone perhaps really a treasure?

However, guesses were still guesses, and still nobody joined the race. The reason was pretty simple. Even if the stone was precious, they simply had no knowledge about it. In the case that they bought a worthless item, that meant they were really the biggest idiot of all. Much less, that the old man's complexion had turned ugly and no longer called for a bigger bid anymore!

The previously expressionless Tang Xiu looked at the distant with a smiling expression that was gradually revealed on his face. The old man's complexion turned unsightly as though he was a widow that had been left with her dead husband and was forced to marry an old gramps. Tang Xiu could see that the old man's lips wriggled a few times as he wanted to speak and call for a higher bid before he was eventually able to control it.

“Eh, what's it all about?”

Tang Xiu originally calculated that he could have spent a large amount of money, but he didn't expect that the old man would stop right there.

Excitement flashed in the auctioneer's eyes as she spoke with an agitated and spirited expression, saying, “There is a saying that the eyes of the people are as bright as a snow, but for me, I want to quote the modern slang, don't miss any chance that passes by! If this ore is not precious enough, then how could it be priced highly in an auction? I'm really very lucky and feel happy because I'm able to witness people who have good taste and discerning eyes with a strong mentality, as though bright and burning torch as being able to recognize this treasure.”

“That handsome gentleman has bid 60 million. Is there anyone who wants to bid higher? If there’s none, this piece of rare treasure will belong to that gentleman.”

“Anyone?”

The auction venue which usually full of bidding shouts turned into complete silence along with the auctioneer’s conclusions. Everyone’s eyes wandered between Tang Xiu and the old man. Everyone was very curious, would the old man call a higher bid? Some people even had been preparing to immediately snatch the bidding once the old man raised his bid again.

But, as the auctioneer had said, ‘do not ever miss the chance that passes by.’

In the case that if the stone was really a rare treasure, even if they were unable to recognize it for now, but they could slowly study it, so the might be crossed into a huge surprise.

However, a lot of people were disappointed since the old man didn’t raise his bid again.

So many people were disappointed that the old man did not offer another bid again.

It was also quite regretful for the auctioneer. But she was still excited inside, since never once in her dreams did she think that

the stone would shoot to such a high price. As an auctioneer, she would get a percentage commission for each item sold at the auction. Since this item auctioned for 60 million, that meant she unexpectedly got money easily.

“Then, I hereby I announce that this precious ore is sold to that gentleman. You may proceed to the backstage to complete the transaction now, or wait until the auction ends and then go to the backstage...”

Tang Xiu didn't hesitate and immediately rushed to the backstage. This Void Crack Stone was an urgent material he needed right now, so he must obtain it as quickly as possible.

Inspecting the item and accepting it, then pay the sum of money!

The transaction went very smoothly, as Tang Xiu quickly returned back to his seat at the auction venue with the Void Crack Stone.

A smiling expression hung on the corner of Miao Wentang's mouth, even though he was fully confused as to why Tang Xiu bought the stone. But since it was Tang Xiu, he didn't ask, but smiled and said in a low voice, “Congrats, Mr. Tang, for obtaining the treasure.”

“Thanks!”

Tang Xiu nodded. After having hesitated for a moment, he said,

“Let’s change our remark, and call me Tang Xiu directly later on, and I will call you by your name.”

“That’s great!”

Miao Wentang looked at Tang Xiu’s indifferent expression as he secretly smiled in his heart.

The next auctioned items proceeded in a quick manner. Tang Xiu really admired the auctioneer’s speech ability. A lot of items’ original value were not high, but it was her unceasing speech, that was like strings of pearls that sparked people’s interest, making them generously spend their money, causing the auctioned items’ price to climb.

“She’s gifted!” These words suddenly appeared inside Tang Xiu’s mind.

Hours later...

The auction would soon be finished and also enter the final climax.

“The next auctioned item is our second to last item. This is also the item that a lot of people have been heavily paying attention to, the 1000-year-old wild ginseng. It is public knowledge that along with today’s rapid development in technology, our mountain range’s forest is being severely exploited nowadays. Thus, finding a genuine wild ginseng has already been a difficult thing to do,

much less, a 1000-year-old wild ginseng. It is as rare and difficult as finding phoenix feathers and unicorn horns, a rare and far between object.”

“And tonight, to whom will this precious treasure belong to?”

“Thus, I hereby announce that the true auction has begun!”

The moment the auctioneer Xiao Ai had finished speaking and stepped back, the auction venue boiled with guests competing in the biddings.

“60 million!”

“70 million!”

“75 million!”

“80 million ...”

“...”

Tang Xiu, however, didn’t rush to participate. He was waiting for the final bidding race.

However, the prices climbed up to 180 million in just 2 minutes. This was the price that he could afford with the funds he had right

now.

“The difference is only 10 million right now, and the amount would probably change shortly after. Should I look for Jia Ruidao to borrow some money? Jia Ruidao’s shares are 250 million and added with his capital, it should be around 300 million. However, he also has a debt loan. So if his money is subtracted by his loan, perhaps he also only has a small amount remaining left.”

Tang Xiu’s mind raced faster as he thought to look for Jia Ruidao to borrow some money. Borrowing money was easy, but to pay it back, it would be quite difficult, wouldn’t it? After all, the amount was hundreds of million at once. Even if the funds could be used for Kang Xia in establishing the company and all ready to run the business and make money. However, how long would it take to pay back the money to Jia Ruidao?

Half a minute later...

Tang Xiu’s had made up his mind to borrow money.

He believed in his ability, and he didn’t want to miss this 1000-years-old ginseng.

Tang Xiu left the seat and went toward the corner end of the auction venue to make a phone call. Finally, he knew that Jia Ruidao had a debt loan of 220 million, and his remaining money now only amounted to 80 million. Tang Xiu didn’t hesitate to borrow that 80 million directly.

“Ding.....”

A few minutes later, his phone received an SMS that 80 million had been transferred to his bank account.

“218 million, is there another higher bidder? If there’s none, this 1000-years-old wild ginseng will be that gentleman’s.” The auctioneer looked excited and loudly asked.

Tang Xiu looked at the silent guests in the surroundings as he slowly raised the sign in his hand and said, “220 million.”

The auctioneer, Xiao Ai’s eyes brightened up as she said with a smile, “The hero indeed comes from youths. That gentleman has offered 220 million, a truly amazing capital. Today’s scene truly makes me think, that a great man always come out amongst youths. However, could it be that the old ginger is no longer hotter than the young ones? Anyways, shouldn’t somebody bid higher than this handsome gentleman? If not, this 1000-years-old ginseng will be this handsome gentleman’s!”

“...”

An agitated expression surfaced on a lot of people’s faces in the auction venue. They did approve the saying that ‘heroes came from youths’. However, listening to ‘old gingers are no longer spicy’ ignited their anger and made their self-pride rage inside.

A plump middle-aged man who sat in the front row near the

beautiful young girl, forcefully pulled the gold necklace on his neck, along with the few millions yuan of Vacheron Constantin watch as he spoke with a hoarse voice, “230 million.”

“250 million!”

A beam of cold light burst from Tang Xiu’s eyes as he shouted with a deep voice.

That fat middle-aged man pushed the beautiful young girl at his side as he turned his head and stared at Tang Xiu, and then motioned his middle finger at him whilst exclaiming, “300 million!”

“Whoosh...”

Everyone inside the entire auction venue was all shocked by the fat middle-aged man’s bid.

300 million?

1000-years-old wild ginseng auctioned for a sky-high price of 300 million yuan?

Everyone began to whisper to each other.

“From where is that silly fatty’s origin? Even coming up with 300

million to buy a 1000-year-old ginseng? I can tell that the food he has eaten becomes the fat in his body and doesn't go to his brain, absolutely! A 1000-year-old wild ginseng value is at the most only priced at 150 million! More than that, he's just a spendthrift fool!"

"Stupid, even if the 1000-year-old ginseng is precious, it's not worth to the point where one has to spend 300 million, is it? He's obviously aiming to strive over that youth ferociously!"

"What a damn idiot. Too many idiots sprouting up nowadays, especially this year. Is this fatty really drunk and has a fever of his riches?"

"Idiot people with money are indeed out there!"

"..."

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes as he looked at the provocative expression on the fat middle-aged man's complexion. He secretly sighed inside. He couldn't afford it. The highest offer he could bid was only 250 million, and he couldn't follow the race any longer.

"In life, one sometimes has to wait for the end, and there's no need to push forward when something is not fated."

This sentence appeared in Tang Xiu's mind as he finally let out an unceasing forced smile. He was once very rich, everything he had taken a liking was his. So he was perfectly aware of the power of money. However, at present, he just restarted from the scratch

again with a severe lack of funds.

Finally, the 1000-year-old wild ginseng was bought by the fat middle-aged man.

“A good scene will soon be coming.”

Some faint excitement could be heard from Miao Wentang, who sat at Tang Xiu’s side.

Tang Xiu asked with a surprised expression, “Isn’t the 1000-year-old ginseng the most expensive item on the auction’s list of items? Shouldn’t it be the last auctioned item? Is there another thing not listed on the list?”

Miao Wentang whispered, “Mr. Tang, err... Tang Xiu, you didn’t participate in the previous Violet Redbud Auction, so you don’t know about its custom. For each auction’s event, there has always been auctioned items that are not on the list as the last finale of the play.”

“Ah, so that’s how it is. I see!”

Tang Xiu suddenly realized. For this last item, he had a bit of anticipation. Since he didn’t spend money to buy the 1000-year-old ginseng, maybe the last auctioned item was what he needed.

Suddenly, all the lights at the auction venue were lit, as a band of dim white light was shone on top of the auctioneer’s body.

Eventually, the projector cast the pictures onto the wall behind the auctioneer.

Chapter 100: Unhesitating By Any Means And Cost

All eyes were fixated on the projector screen inside the dark auction venue as a video was then played.

The waves surged forth from the roaring, vast, and boundless sea, as it spread over and surrounded an isolated island that was like a mosaic gem inlaid. The eagle view hovered and dived down toward the isolated island. It was a quiet large island which was a few square kilometers in size, with rolling ranges of hills, verdant lush greeneries, and trees, as well as birdsongs and gorgeous brilliant flowers with butterfly groups flying around to play above them.

A European style castle stood magnificently at the central peak of the island as a smooth pathway at the hilltop branched out toward 3 areas, the road leading to the castle, one path to the nearby parking lot, and the other one to an aircraft parking ground.

Looking through the isolated island's landscape, the astounding sceneries uncovered 9 ranges of hills that spread out to the sea. A European style small pavilion was built at the end of each hill as each hill had a road along downhill that was connected to the sea area with a private dock, where a few passenger ships were moored.

“Nine Dragons Spitting Beads?”

“How could it be?”

Tang Xiu's pupils contracted unceasingly as a burst of disbelief was emitted from his eyes. His body slightly shivered as stormy waves struck inside his heart unceasingly.

When he was in the Immortal World, he had once possessed a treasured land with this great Feng Shui pattern. The place had a rich Heaven Earth Spiritual Qi, with strong and thick spiritual energy. Cultivating in that place would definitely lead to double the result for half of the effort. But the place was called the "Nine Dragons Spitting Beads Secret Region" there.

The video playback ended.

The lights at the auction site were re-lit again, followed by the auctioneer's voice who spoke with a shallow smile, "We've seen the video. That is the last auctioned item for this auction today. The Nine Dragons Island is located at the Pacific Ocean nearby another island called the Southern Bird Island, which is 2,000 nautical miles away from each other."

"This private island was originally owned by a European Financial Consortium owner. However, it was unfortunate that after the island has been developed for 2.5 years, the Financial Consortium owner had no choice but to sell this private island due to special circumstances. And it happens that the Big Boss of this auction has a good relationship with this private island's owner, so the owner entrusted the auction rights to us."

"I believe that each and every guest participating in this Violet

Redbud Auction is one of the richest and powerful people in our country, and I'm sure everyone is interested in this Feng Shui treasured island. Thus, without further ado, the auction for this private island will begin now!"

"The floor price is 500 million yuan, and each bid increase is to be no less than 10 million. And now the auction officially begins."

Along with the ending of the auctioneer's voice, the following hundreds of people under the stage who were participating in the auction were talking in a whisper. After all, this was related to a 500 million business transaction. Although they were filthy rich, but 500 million was not a small amount of money, even for them.

"That private island is damn good."

A bit of a smiling expression was cast on Miao Wentang's face. But he didn't wish to compete in bidding for this island. He glanced to Tang Xiu at his side before he turned his sight toward other direction and looked at Shao Mingzhen. He then asked with a smile, "If I remember correctly, you're planning to buy a mansion overseas, aren't you? How about it? Do you have any interest?"

Shao Mingzhen was silent for a moment before he slowly shook his head and said, "This private island's floor price is indeed not high. If it could be bought for 500 million and then sold afterward, you can still make money off it. And this, everyone is crystal clear about it. So I thought that even if it were to be sold at 1 billion, I don't think I can afford it. I'm not one of the local bosses, so there's no way I can be compared to you. Thus, I'm gonna just

watch and enjoy the fun!”

Miao Wentang smiled and said, “Well, if you really want to buy it, I can lend you some money. But I can’t get more than 1 billion in fluid capital though.”

Shao Mingzhen lightly laughed and replied, “Well, I’ll just take a look first!”

Tang Xiu stood up as he went to the back corner of the auction venue and then dialed a number.

Star City.

Chen Zhizhong had just bought a villa near the Gazebo King Villa at South Gate Town. As he sat cross-legged in his study room, he was carefully practicing the cultivation method and technique Tang Xiu had taught him. He used to be a martial arts practitioner, but what he had been cultivating before was cultivating True Qi, which was very different than an immortal cultivation method and technique.

However, the Great Dao had a myriad of paths, with each path being unique but leading to the same origin.

Because of his previous foundation, he was now trying hard to transform his True Qi into Origin Qi.

“Ring ring ring...”

The phone suddenly rang and abruptly awakened Chen Zhizhong from his cultivation practice. A slight anger immediately surfaced on his complexion as he quickly grabbed his mobile and looked at the caller ID on the screen. Then, the angry look quickly vanished without a trace, and was replaced with a respectful expression as he then pressed the answer button.

“Master, are you looking for me?”

“I need money. The more the better. How much money can you transfer in 10 minutes?”

“...”

For half a minute Chen Zhizhong fell into a silence. His mind unceasingly thought about it deeply. Only after half a minute had passed did he reply, “About 3 billion yuan. The time is too tight, if you can give half a day, I can gather up to 5 billion or more.”

Tang Xiu said, “I’ll send you my bank account number. 10 minutes later, transfer 3 billion yuan to my account.”

“Yes!”

Chen Zhizhong quickly complied and no longer gave a thought to

continue practicing as he began to make a phone call without stopping.

Jingmen Island, at the auction venue.

Shao Mingzhen and Miao Wentang were having a private chat as they suddenly aware that Tang Xiu had left his seat. They immediately looked at each other. Tang Xiu had left his seat before, made a phone call and then came back to participate in the 1000-years-old wild ginseng auction.

“Brother Miao, could it be Tang Xiu also wants to participate in this auction? Does he want this private island?” An astonished expression flashed in Shao Mingzhen’s eyes as he asked in a whisper.

Miao Wentang whispered back, “It could be very possible. You also saw his serious expression. I could tell it for sure. However, I really don’t get him. He’s very young, why would he want to run away and buy a private island in the Pacific Ocean? Is it possible that he wants to move there to seclude himself and cut off from the rest of the world?”

Shao Mingzhen let out a forced smile and said, “I don’t get him, moreover, I can’t understand him in the slightest! To tell you the truth, seeing Tang Xiu’s age and appearance, he gives me a contradictory feeling. Basically, I can’t figure him out. He’s too young of a man, but his words, conducts, and actions are not that of a young man’s. In contrast, doesn’t he look like a deep and wise

old man?”

“He’s a freaking genius or a monster.” Miao Wentang said his final judgement.

Tang Xiu returned back to his seat and quietly waited for the funds to be transferred to his account. Although he saw the strange expressions on Miao Wentang and Shao Mingzhen’s complexions, but he didn’t speak nor explain anything.

He did want the 1000-years-old wild ginseng, and very much at it. But this private island, he was determined to obtain it at all costs. Even if he must snatch it forcefully, then rob it he will.

“510 million.” A newly rich plump middle-aged man was the first to open the bid.

“520 million.”

“550 million.”

“...”

This was the last round of auction, and only a few number of people were involved in this auction compared to the previous ones. However few bidders in numbers there were, but the price was in constant increase. And one of the most spirited and jubilant in bidding was the fat middle-aged man who wore the gold chain. 7 or 8 minutes later, the price had climbed up to 1.48 billion.

“1.5 billion!”

A bead of sweat permeated on the fat middle-aged man's forehead as he called for the bid.

“2 billion!”

Another old man over his 70s raised the sign in his hand and shouted.

The fat middle-aged man suddenly turned his head as he stared at the old man with eyes full of anger. He heavily breathed a few times before he shouted again, “2.1 billion.”

Up to this price, there were only the old man and the fat middle-aged man. The old man's complexion was expressionless as though he turned a blind eye to the fat middle-aged man's angry stares and face as he shouted his bid once again, “2.2 billion!”

“2.3 billion!”

The fat middle-aged man's voice turned a bit hoarse, but he still insisted on bidding.

However, his anger was quickly replaced with happiness, because the old man silently shook his head and no longer bided.

“Huff...”

The fat middle-aged man wiped the sweat from his forehead and secretly felt relieved inside. It was actually his limit, if the price increased again, he would have to renounce it.

The corner of the auctioneer's mouth was curled as she smiled with sparkling eyes and said, “The price of the Nine Dragons Island has risen to 2.3 billion yuan. This is indeed a terrifying amount of money, but I do still think that some people have yet to bid. After all, this is a few tens of square kilometers island with completed construction and development. If this private island were to be used accordingly, it definitely would be a paradise on earth, the one and only kingdom for its owner.”

“There's no legal and public law on the Nine Dragons Island, the master of the island is the king, the sole sovereign of the land. If the island's owner wills it, he can apply to international laws to establish a new country.”

“This island is the dreamland, a paradise. Now, I would like to ask once more, is there no one who wants to increase the bid? No one wants to be the owner of this Nine Dragons Island?”

A deathly stillness and silence filled the entire auction venue.

Everyone was watching each other. The auctioneer's words did instigate them and ignite their emotions and desires completely. But still, they couldn't get so much liquidity, for their enterprises they would be seriously hit by the impact and would severely

influence their companies and fracture them!

Hearts were palpitating!

But they were struck with helplessness!

This was the deepest and truest portrait to depict their hearts.

A trace of a disappointed expression was revealed on the young auctioneer's elegant face, Xiao Ai. Despite the 2.3 billion price already exceeding her expectations, she still hoped to sell the island at a higher price.

In contrast, the fat middle-aged man was in the opposite mood as a smile emerged on his face; a proud expression could be seen on his complexion. His vision swept over to the last bidder, the old man, and then subconsciously glanced at Tang Xiu.

“2.5 billion!”

Tang Xiu's voice finally reverberated inside the auction venue.

In just a split second, everyone inside the auction venue showed a very strange expression. Not even one of them had ever thought that Tang Xiu, who couldn't buy the 1000-year-old wild ginseng before, was now participating in this private island auction. He even bidded with such outrageously sky high price.

Did he have so much money?

From where did he get so much courage?

Furthermore...

Who was he?

Each and every question surged and bubbled up inside everyone's mind.

Miao Wentang, Shao Mingzhen, and even the immortal-manner-like Dao Master Ziyi who were sitting beside Tang Xiu, were shocked and shaken by Tang Xiu's courage. They looked at Tang Xiu in disbelief. And never once did they expect that Tang Xiu was able to come up with so much money!

Shao Mingzhen gently touched Miao Wentang and whispered: "You persuade him as not to act recklessly in this place. The hidden big boss behind this auction is very powerful, and someone we must absolutely avoid to offend."